

NUNC COGNOSCO EX PARTE



TRENT UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY

RECORDS
OF THE AMERICAN-AUSTRALIAN
SCIENTIFIC EXPEDITION TO
ARNHEM LAND

1

ARNHEM LAND EXPEDITION

1. *Art, Myth and Symbolism*


by Charles P. Mountford

Three more volumes to follow:

2. Anthropology and Nutrition

3. Botany and Plant Ecology

4. Natural History



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2019 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation



Cave painting, Inagurdurwil
A pied goose

RECORDS
OF THE AMERICAN-AUSTRALIAN
SCIENTIFIC EXPEDITION TO
ARNHEM LAND

1

Art, Myth and Symbolism

by

CHARLES P. MOUNTFORD



MELBOURNE UNIVERSITY PRESS

LL 378 . f17 R 2 75 1

First published 1956

Melbourne University Press, Carlton, N.3, Victoria

London and New York: Cambridge University Press

*Printed and bound in Australia by
Brown, Prior, Anderson Pty. Ltd.,
430 Little Bourke Street, Melbourne*

Registered in Australia for transmission by post as a book

FOU... 203

FOREWORD

IT IS WITH pleasure that I write the Foreword to this, the first of a series of volumes describing the scientific results of the 1948 Arnhem Land Expedition. Thus, the hopes for the eventual publication of the expedition's findings, expressed seven years ago by the Hon. Arthur A. Calwell in the Preface, are being realized.

The Arnhem Land Expedition, which the foresight of Mr Calwell, then Minister of State for Information, made possible, was a joint project of the National Geographic Society of America, the Commonwealth Government of Australia and the Smithsonian Institution of the United States of America. It was planned, organized and led by Mr Charles P. Mountford, then a member of the staff of the Department of Information and later an officer of my Department, with Mr Frank Setzler, of the United States, as deputy leader.

Until the expedition went into the field in early 1948, Arnhem Land was one of the least known parts of the Australian continent. It is no longer so. As this volume and those which will follow it will show, the expedition made important findings in the fields of aboriginal art and mythology, ethnology, archaeology, nutrition and health, botany and zoology.

In addition to advancing the frontiers of world knowledge in all these fields, the expedition consolidated and extended the co-operation and mutual respect already existing between academic circles in the United States of America and Australia.

W. S. KENT HUGHES
Minister of State for the Interior

Canberra, A.C.T.
December 1955

PREFACE

WHAT HISTORY will come in time to know as the 1948 Arnhem Land Expedition has recently concluded.

It was my privilege to have been associated with the expedition from the inception of the idea in 1945 to the return of the scientists from the remoteness of Arnhem Land on 17 November last, after nine months of intensive research.

The formation of a joint Australian-American expedition to Arnhem Land was suggested to me by Mr Charles P. Mountford, a valued senior officer of my Department. Recognizing the important contribution to scientific knowledge that could be made by the joint endeavours of distinguished American and Australian scientists operating in one of the least known parts of the earth's surface, I endorsed the plan which Mr Mountford and his American associates have now translated into an accomplished fact. It was the largest expedition in Australian history dealing with medical, nutritional, ethnological and natural history research.

Years must elapse before the findings of the scientists are finally proven and collated but I now express the hope that eventually the work of the expedition in its various fields of research will be published for the enrichment of scientific knowledge the world over.

The Australian poet, Bernard O'Dowd, described this continent of ours as 'Last sea-thing dredged by sailor Time from Space'. It is my hope that the Arnhem Land Expedition will be but one of many in which scientists of the United States and Australia will co-operate to uncover more secrets from this island continent.

ARTHUR A. CALWELL

Minister of State for Information

Canberra, A.C.T.

December 1948

INTRODUCTION

THE NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC SOCIETY-Smithsonian Institution-Commonwealth of Australia Expedition to Arnhem Land was planned as a result of negotiations between representatives of the Australian Government and the National Geographic Society of Washington, U.S.A.

The attention of the Society's officials had been drawn to the possibilities of research in the remote parts of Australia by two coloured films on aboriginal life, 'Tjurunga' and 'Walkabout', which had been made by Mr Charles P. Mountford whilst he was leader of the 1940 and 1942 Adelaide University anthropological expeditions to Central Australia. These films attracted the attention of the Director-General of Information, who decided to send Mr Mountford on a lecture tour to the U.S.A., as part of the Australian overseas information programme.

During the tour, the largest and most enthusiastic audience was four thousand members of the National Geographic Society, in the Constitution Hall, Washington. The interest of the Research Committee of the National Geographic Society stimulated Mr Mountford to submit a proposal for a scientific research expedition to Arnhem Land. To this proposal the National Geographic Society agreed, appointed Mr Mountford as leader, and after negotiations between the Australian Minister at Washington, Sir Frederic Eggleston, and the Minister for Information, the Hon. A. A. Calwell, the Commonwealth Government offered to make Mr Mountford's services available and to provide transport for the expedition.

The original expedition party suggested by the National Geographic Society was to have been small, an American biologist from the Smithsonian Institution, Washington, and Mr Mountford, to study the various phases of aboriginal life.

This was, however, further considered by the Australian Government. Realizing that such an expedition afforded a great opportunity both to better the good relations between Australia and the United States of America, and to investigate one of the least known parts of Australia, the Minister for Information arranged for the party to be much more comprehensive, consisting of both American and Australian naturalists and ethnologists.

Arnhem Land¹ was chosen because, being an almost unknown country, there had been very little research into its natural history and ethnology; for it is a curious fact that although the Gulf of Carpentaria and Arnhem Land were the first parts of Australia to be discovered, they are still the least known parts of the Australian continent.

As early as 1606 Willem Janszoon, in the yacht *Duyfken*, had sailed down the east coast of the Gulf of Carpentaria, turning back at Cape Keerweer, without realizing he had discovered the largest unexplored land mass in the world.

1. Map, Fig. 1.

INTRODUCTION

Seventeen years later Jan Carstensz, with his two ships *Pera* and *Arnhem*, sailed along the shores of Arnhem Land. It is from the name of the latter vessel that the region takes its name. In 1644, Tasman mapped part of the coastline and discovered Groote Eylandt (Large Island), on which we were to establish our first base camp. Between 1649 and 1803, when Flinders surveyed the coast of the Gulf of Carpentaria, no Europeans sailed in those waters.² And since Flinders' departure, although means of transport have improved immeasurably, Arnhem Land has remained practically unknown.

Since the expedition, however, the resulting publicity, its films, and what was already known about its scientific results, have increased the interest in its ethnology and the natural history of this remote part of Australia.

W. A. McLAREN

Secretary

Department of the Interior

Canberra, A.C.T.
December, 1955

² It is possible that the *Baijini* people were an isolated group of Europeans (Dutch or Portuguese) who once visited Port Bradshaw. See p. 334.

MEMBERS OF THE EXPEDITION³

LEADER, ETHNOLOGIST AND FILM DIRECTOR: Charles P. Mountford, O.B.E.,
F.F.A.A.A., F.R.A.I., F.R.G.S.

Honorary Associate Curator in Ethnology, South Australian Museum

DEPUTY LEADER AND ARCHAEOLOGIST: Frank M. Setzler, PH.D.

Head Curator, Department of Anthropology, Smithsonian Institution

ORNITHOLOGIST: Herbert G. Deignan, B.A.

Associate Curator of Birds, Smithsonian Institution

MAMMALOGIST: David H. Johnson, PH.D.

Curator of Mammals, Smithsonian Institution

ICHTHYOLOGIST: Robert R. Miller, PH.D.

Associate Curator of Fishes, Smithsonian Institution

BOTANIST: Raymond L. Specht, PH.D.

Lecturer, Department of Botany, University of Adelaide

ANTHROPOLOGIST: Frederick D. McCarthy, DIP.ANTHROP.

Department of Anthropology, Australian Museum, Sydney

PHOTOGRAPHER AND STAFF WRITER: Harrison Howell Walker

National Geographic Society, Washington

HONORARY SECRETARY: Bessie I. Mountford

GUIDE AND LIAISON OFFICER: William E. Harney

CINE-PHOTOGRAPHER: Peter Bassett-Smith

TRANSPORT OFFICER: Keith Cordon

COOK AND HONORARY ENTOMOLOGIST: John E. Bray: COOK from 12 August
1948: Reginald Hollow

The Institute of Anatomy, Canberra, also attached a nutritional unit to the expedition to study aboriginal health and food. Its members were:

MEDICAL OFFICER: Brian Billington, M.B., B.S.

NUTRITIONIST: Margaret McArthur, M.Sc.

BIOCHEMIST: Kelvin Hodges, B.Sc.



PLATE IA. Expedition party at Oenpelli

Reading from left: Peter Bassett-Smith, Reginald Hollow, David Johnson, William E. Harney, Frederick D. McCarthy, Herbert E. Deignan, Bessie I. Mountford, Brian Billington, Margaret McArthur, Kelvin Hodges, Charles P. Mountford, John E. Bray, Frank M. Setzler.
Absent: Raymond Specht and Robert Miller.



PLATE IB. Unbalanja Hill from the expedition camp

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I CANNOT ACKNOWLEDGE separately all who helped me so generously on the Amhem Land expedition, they are so many. But I can offer them my sincere thanks.

It was Dr Gilbert Grosvenor, President of the National Geographic Society, Dr Alexander Wetmore, then Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution, and Mr Arthur Calwell, then Australian Minister for Information, whose support and help made the expedition such an undoubted success. To these gentlemen I am especially thankful.

I am grateful, also, to the members of the party for their loyalty, forbearance and good-fellowship, and to my wife who, in a purely honorary capacity and under considerable hardships, carried out the multitudinous duties of secretary and treasurer. Without her unstinted help I could not have brought the expedition to such a successful conclusion.

And last, but by no means least, my thanks are offered to Mrs J. A. Truran, who not only assisted in the preparation of the manuscript, but prepared many of the illustrations, and to Miss B. M. Ramsden for her patient and careful checking of the manuscript and proofs.

C.P.M.

CONTENTS

Foreword, by the Hon. W. S. Kent Hughes	v
Preface, by the Hon. Arthur A. Calwell	vii
Introduction, by W. A. McLaren	ix
Members of the Expedition	xi
Acknowledgments	xiii
The Story of the Expedition	xxi
<i>Part One</i> ABORIGINAL ART OF AUSTRALIA	1
1. The Function of Primitive Art	6
2. Art Styles and Distribution in Arnhem Land	7
3. Mediums of Expression	8
4. Techniques	10
5. The Artists	13
<i>Part Two</i> THE ART OF GROOTE EYLANDT	17
1. The Arawaltja Ceremony	21
2. Bark Paintings, Myths and Songs	60
3. The Cave Paintings of Chasm Island	102
<i>Part Three</i> THE ART OF OENPELLI	107
1. Cave Paintings	112
2. Bark Paintings and Myths	181
<i>Part Four</i> THE ART OF YIRRKALLA	265
1. Bark Paintings, Decorated Objects and Myths	267
2. Smoking Pipes and Myths	389
3. Body Paintings	400
4. Sand Figures	401
5. The Relationship between Social Organization and Design	405

CONTENTS

<i>Part Five</i> CARVED AND PAINTED FIGURES	413
1. Human Figures in Wood and their Ceremonial Objects, Yirrkalla	416
2. Ceremonial Objects from North-Eastern Arnhem Land	437
3. Carved and Painted Human Heads	439
4. Human Figures in Bark	443
5. Figures Moulded in Wax	445
6. Creatures Carved in Wood	445
7. Decorated Implements and Weapons	450
8. Ceremonial Objects of Western Arnhem Land	460
9. Message Sticks	466
 <i>Part Six</i> ASTRONOMY	 477
1. Groote Eylandt	479
2. Oenpelli	487
3. Milingimbi	488
4. Yirrkalla	493
 References	 505
Index	509

ILLUSTRATIONS

COLOUR PLATES

Cave painting, Inagurdurwil. A pied goose	<i>frontispiece</i>
Bark painting, Yirrkalla. The rain-makers, Wuluwait and Bunbulama	<i>facing p. 267</i>

PLATES

1A. Expedition party at Oenpelli	xii
1B. Unbalanja Hill from the expedition camp	xii
2A. <i>Phoenix</i> on a reef at Boucaut Bay	xxvi
2B. <i>Phoenix</i> unloading at Milingimbi	xxvi
3A. Wet-season bark hut, Arnhem Land	9
3B. Painting a design on bark, Oenpelli	9
4. Artists of Arnhem Land	14
5-6. Totem places, Bickerton Island	26, 29
7. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt	32
8. Totem places, Bickerton Island	34
9-10. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt	36, 38
11. Ceremonial poles, Groote Eylandt	41
12-16. The arawaltja ceremony	43-57
17-18. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt	61, 64
19. Totem places, Groote Eylandt	66
20-22. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt	68-72
23. Totem places, Groote and Bickerton Islands	74
24-25. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt	76, 78
26. Water-craft, Groote Eylandt	80
27. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt	83
28. Totem places, Chasm Island	85
29-30. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt	87, 90
31. Totem place, wild honey	93

ILLUSTRATIONS

32.	Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt	99
33.	Cave paintings, Chasm Island	101
34-40.	Cave paintings, Unbalanja	129-40
41.	Cave and bark paintings, Oenpelli	142
42.	Cave paintings, Unbalanja	149
43.	Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil	162
44-45.	Cave paintings, Obiri	164, 171
46-47.	Cave paintings, Obiri and Cannon Hill	172, 175
48.	Cave paintings and stencils, Oenpelli	179
49.	Bark paintings, Oenpelli	184
50.	Cave paintings, Unbalanja	186
51-56.	Bark paintings, Oenpelli	188-201
57.	Cave paintings of spirit people, Oenpelli	204
58-61.	Bark paintings, Oenpelli	207-13
62.	Increase centres, Oenpelli area	215
63-80.	Bark paintings, Oenpelli	217-55
81-82.	Bark and cave paintings, Oenpelli	257, 259
83.	Bark paintings, Oenpelli	261
84.	Bark paintings and ceremonies, Oenpelli	263
85-90.	Bark paintings, Yirkalla	272-86
91.	Totem places and sand figures, Yirkalla	288
92-96.	Bark paintings, Yirkalla	290-302
97.	Totem places, Jalboa	304
98-100.	Bark paintings, Yirkalla	306, 310, 314
101.	Bark paintings and painted skull, Yirkalla	316
102-3.	Coffins, Yirkalla and Milingimbi	318, 320
104.	Coffins and wax figures, Yirkalla	322
105.	Coffins, Milingimbi	324
106-8.	Bark paintings, Yirkalla	330, 335, 337
109.	Painted paddles, Yirkalla	339
110-24.	Bark paintings, Yirkalla	344-84

ILLUSTRATIONS

125-7.	Bark paintings, Milingimbi	386, 388, 390
128.	Painted pipes and ceremonial object, Yirkalla	401
129.	Body designs of initiates, Yirkalla	403
130-33.	Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla	420-26
134.	Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla and Milingimbi	428
135-41.	Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla	430-46
142.	Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla and Groote Eylandt	449
143.	Waxen figures, Yirkalla	451
144.	Carved figures, painted paddles and ceremonial objects	453
145.	Painted paddles, Groote Eylandt	455
146.	Painted spear-throwers, Groote Eylandt	457
147.	Log gongs, Milingimbi and Oenpelli	459
148.	Ceremonial objects, western Arnhem Land	461
149.	Carved and painted objects, western Arnhem Land	465
150-1.	Bark paintings, astronomical, Groote Eylandt	480, 483
152.	Bark paintings, astronomical, Groote Eylandt and Oenpelli	486
153.	Bark paintings, astronomical, Yirkalla and Oenpelli	490
154.	The pearly nautilus	491
155.	Bark paintings, astronomical, Yirkalla and Oenpelli	494
156-7.	Bark paintings, astronomical, Yirkalla	497, 499

FIGURES

1.	Arnhem Land, showing expedition camps	xxii
2.	Distribution of art styles in Arnhem Land	7
3.	Techniques and tools of bark and cave painting	12
4.	Groote Eylandt	20
5.	An engraved ceremonial tjuringa from Central Australia	28
6.	The arawaltja ceremonial ground and houses	40
7.	Tracing of a Malay prau (Pl. 32A) showing names and disposition of rigging	100
8-9.	Cave paintings, Chasm Island	103, 105

ILLUSTRATIONS

10.	Oenpelli area	110
11A.	Cave painting sites, Unbalanja	113
11B.	Cave painting localities, Oenpelli	113
12-29.	Cave paintings, Unbalanja	114-44
30.	Cave painting sites, Inagurdurwil	144
31-48.	Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil	145-66
49-55.	Cave paintings, Obiri and Cannon Hill	167-77
56.	Spirit people, Unbalanja	182
57.	Yirkalla area	268
58.	Engraved paddles, Yirkalla	342
59-60.	Engraved smoking pipes, Yirkalla	392, 394
61.	Plan of fish-trap	395
62-63.	Engraved smoking pipes, Yirkalla	397, 399
64.	Clan designs, Yirkalla	408
65.	Ceremonial message sticks and bark figures, Yirkalla	468
66-67.	Secular message sticks, Yirkalla	470, 472
68.	Message sticks, Yirkalla and Oenpelli	474

THE STORY OF THE EXPEDITION

IN 1946, when planning began for the expedition to enter Arnhem Land early in 1947, full co-operation came from many quarters. The National Geographic Society and the Smithsonian Institution of Washington offered to make members of their staffs available; the Minister for Information undertook to meet all travel and transport costs; the Minister for Air offered air transport, wherever it was possible; the Minister for the Army allowed the expedition to draw on Army stores for food and equipment; the Minister for Health arranged for a unit of three scientists from the Institute of Anatomy to join the expedition, their object being to study aboriginal health and nutrition; the Minister for the Interior, who placed his Northern Territory organization at our disposal, later helped us greatly, assisting in the transport arrangements and the forwarding of mails and supplies; and the Council for Scientific and Industrial Research released a navigator and engineer to man the 66-foot Army trawler which had been promised from the Disposals Commission. With so much co-operation and help, considerable progress was made toward completing the arrangements for the expedition by the end of 1946. The Australian authorities, however, considering that a postponement of a year would allow time for a better arrangement of staff and transport, suggested such a course to the National Geographic Society and the Smithsonian Institution of Washington. Both agreed to the postponement.

By the beginning of 1948 the final party had been selected and the arrangements for transport and supplies completed, except for the boat, the non-provision of which was the sole cause of the delays, misfortunes and disorganization that beset our movements. The first contingent of the American party, Dr David Johnson and Dr Robert Miller, from the Smithsonian Institution, and Mr Howell Walker, from the National Geographic Society, reached Sydney by air on 21 February. Two days later Mr Frank Setzler and Mr Herbert Deignan, both from the Smithsonian Institution, arrived in Brisbane by boat.

Their arrival completed the scientific party, which consisted of Frank Setzler, deputy leader and archaeologist; Robert Miller, ichthyologist; Herbert Deignan, ornithologist; Howell Walker, staff photographer and writer; Brian Billington, medical officer; Miss Margaret McArthur, nutritionist; Kelvin Hodges, biochemist; Raymond Specht, botanist, from the University of Adelaide; Frederick McCarthy, anthropologist, Australian Museum, Sydney; and myself as leader, ethnologist specializing on aboriginal art, and film director.

Other members of the party were: Mrs Bessie Mountford, honorary secretary; Peter Bassett-Smith, cine-photographer and wireless operator; Keith Cordon, transport officer; John Bray, cook and honorary entomologist. No previous scientific expedition in Australia had covered so many interlocking fields of natural history, medical science and ethnology.

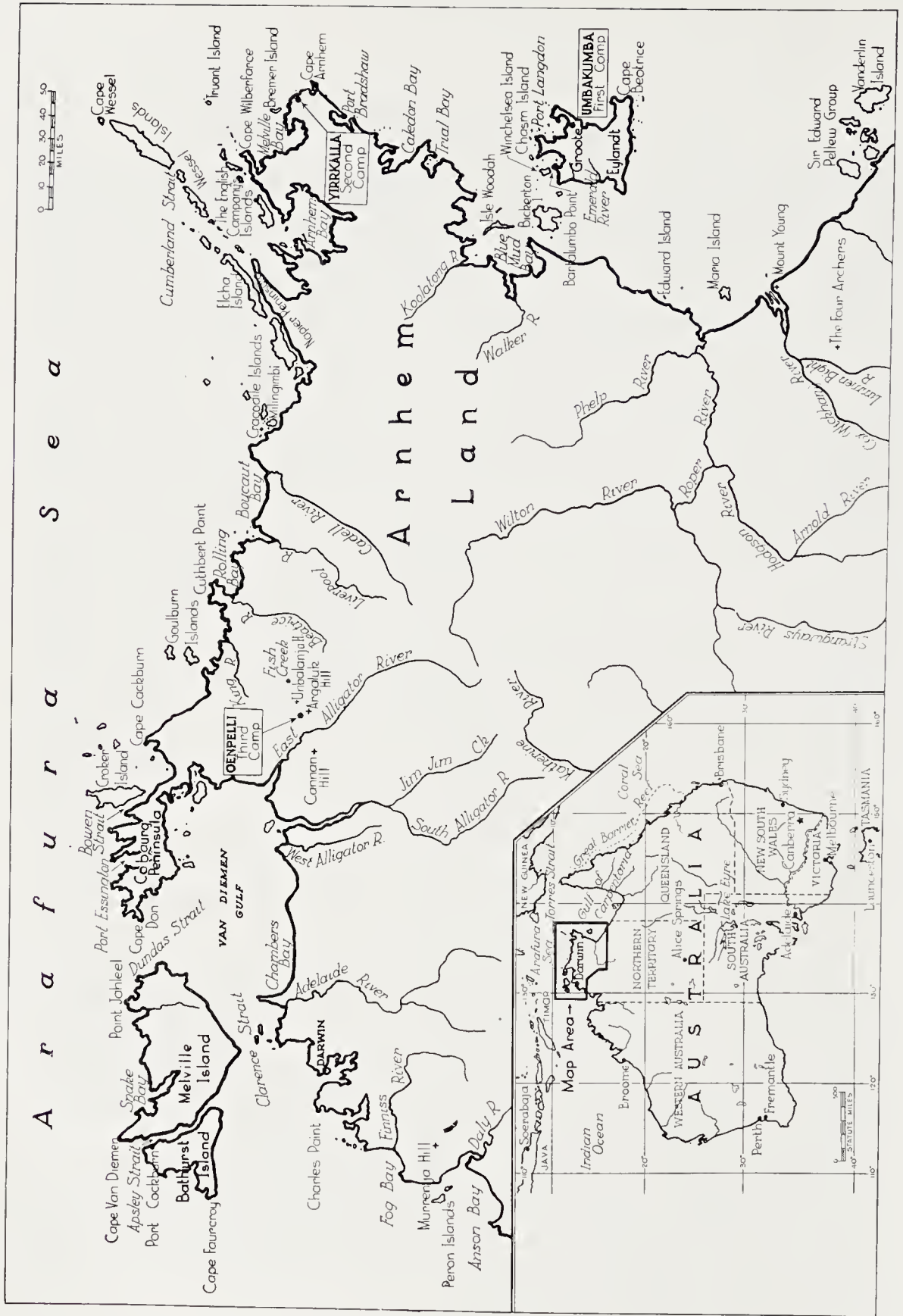


FIG. 1. Arnhem Land, showing expedition camps

After being entertained at vice-regal, civic and academic receptions in the capital cities, in a manner seldom accorded a scientific party, members assembled in Adelaide during the second week in March. On the morning of 18 March, all left for Darwin, over two thousand miles away, in a Royal Australian Air Force plane and well before sunset we reached our destination. The delivery of heavy equipment, which had been sent overland, delayed the party for ten days in Darwin. The naturalists, however, were fully employed, for the sea coast and jungles adjacent to the camp were particularly rich in fauna and flora.

It was planned to establish four research camps and to stay in the field from March until November, leaving before the oncoming wet season would hamper, if not prevent, our movements. Each camp would be situated in different topographical conditions, conditions which not only determined the distribution of the fauna and flora, but also influenced the aboriginal way of life.⁴

The camps were to be:

- (a) Groote Eylandt. This was an island camp, with a somewhat stony hinterland and a distinctive aboriginal culture.
- (b) Roper River. A fresh-water river and swamp environment and an aboriginal way of life which depends largely on river and fishing techniques.
- (c) Yirrkalla. Situated on the sea coast in north-eastern Arnhem Land, with fresh-water swamps and eucalyptus forests in the rear. The culture of the aborigines has been somewhat influenced by Macassan fishermen who, until about forty years ago, regularly visited those parts.
- (d) Oenpelli. On the western escarpment of the Arnhem Land plateau. This camp has a particularly wide range of topographical conditions, each with its own distinctive fauna and flora. To the east is the rugged Arnhem Land plateau, in which there are many aboriginal cave shelters. At the base are lines of fresh-water lagoons, the home of a multitude of water-birds and fish and, to the west, the widespreading flood-plains of the Alligator Rivers.

By 1 April the heavy camp equipment and supplies had reached Darwin and the party was ready to move to our first camp at Groote Eylandt. However, although the Royal Australian Air Force was able to fly us to Groote Eylandt in Catalina flying-boats, it did not have planes capable of transporting our forty-seven tons of food, camp gear and scientific equipment. Providentially (at least, so it seemed at the time) the owner-skipper of a 200-ton, flat-bottomed wooden barge called the *Phoenix*, which had been commissioned to bring dismantled material to Darwin from an old flying-boat base at Groote Eylandt, offered to carry the supplies on the outward journey, promising to reach there within fourteen days of our departure.

4. Map, Fig. 1.

As the *Catalina*, by making two journeys, could take the party, a skeleton camp, and twenty-one days' supply of food to Groote Eylandt, I arranged for one group to leave on 3 April and the second to leave two days later. But heavy storms and monsoonal rains so reduced visibility that the flight on 3 April was impossible. Next morning we set out, reaching Little Lagoon, a small, almost land-locked harbour on the north of Groote Eylandt, about midday. We established camp at Umbakumba, a native settlement under the control of Fred Gray, and on 6 April were able to welcome the remainder of the party with the exception of David Johnson, Herbert Deignan and Howell Walker, who were travelling on the *Phoenix*, the two naturalists to collect over a wider area, and the latter to gain local colour and photographs for his *National Geographic* articles.

The early days of our camp at Groote Eylandt were marred by a series of misfortunes, all associated with communication and water transport. When Peter Bassett-Smith installed his short-wave set, he found that the valves had been damaged and the set would not function. This meant that we had no communication with the outside world, except through a distant mission station, and then only with the aid of native runners.

By 14 April food was getting low and, as we were unable to get news of the *Phoenix*, I decided to walk to the mission station. There, by the aid of the radio, I could find out if the *Phoenix* had left on time and, if not, could arrange for a further supply of food to be sent out by air. We boarded Fred Gray's launch, to cover part of the journey by sea, but a particularly heavy storm drove us into shelter and we returned to camp four hours later, with nothing accomplished. Early next morning Fred Rose, a visitor, Gordon Sweeney, a patrol officer of the Native Affairs Branch, and I, with a number of aboriginal men, set out to walk to the mission station on the Angoroko River, thirty-eight miles distant. It had been raining for days. Five inches had fallen on the day our boat was driven into shelter and, as it turned out, three inches on the day we walked. The track was an old Army road, which for most of the way had been turned into a water-course by continuous rains, the streams were filled to overflowing, and the swamps, sometimes waist-deep, extended for miles.

When at 10.30 p.m. we completed that strenuous journey, we found, to our chagrin, that the Angoroko River was too heavily flooded for us, in our exhausted condition, to cross. So after all the strenuous effort we had to spend the night, sleeping in the mud around tiny smouldering fires, on the *wrong* side of the river. Even when, next morning, we did succeed in reaching the opposite bank, the heavy static prevented wireless communication until the evening. When I learned that heavy weather had kept the *Phoenix* at Darwin I contacted the Army and Air Force, who quickly co-operated, and before I was able to return to Umbakumba a *Catalina* flying-boat had delivered food to the expedition camp, and, for the time being, our troubles were over.

But not for long. On 5 May Bassett-Smith, who had by then succeeded in getting his wireless set to work as a receiver, intercepted a message from Johnson, saying that the barge *Phoenix* was on a reef in Boucaut Bay,⁵ but that the staff and supplies were safe. Knowing that a spell of rough weather would break up the ancient barge I arranged with Fred Gray to take us to the wreck, about three hundred miles distant, in his little 33-foot launch, and, if necessary, bring back the members of our party with what scientific equipment we could salvage.

For five days our little craft battled against heavy seas to reach the barge. When we arrived at Milinginbi, in the Crocodile Islands, we saw, to our great relief, the *Phoenix* unloading cargo with her flat bottom resting on the mud.⁶ She had floated off the reef on the high tide of the previous day. Finding our supplies were safe and the staff well, we loaded up some of the scientific instruments and equipment (we were not short of food in the main camp) and, taking Deignan with us, set out for Umbakumba. It took six days to return to Groote Eylandt, the weather conditions being even worse than on the outward journey, and on 24 May, six days after our arrival and five weeks after her scheduled time, the *Phoenix* entered Little Lagoon with the supplies for which we had waited so long.

With all the party together and ample supplies, work started in earnest. Billington and Hodges, having finished their medical examination of the aborigines at Umbakumba, moved to the mission station on the Angoroko River; Miss McArthur, who had already completed one nutritional camp at Hemple Bay, established another at Bickerton Island, accompanied by Specht, the botanist, and Howard Coates, an officer of the Native Affairs Branch; while Setzler and McCarthy spent a few days at Winchelsea Island, excavating Malay graves. Later, McCarthy examined cave paintings within the area. In general, the naturalists did most of their collecting around the main camp.

My duties as leader kept me, for most of the time, in the main camp. I was able, however, to make a brief stay at Bickerton Island, visit totemic places along the west coast of Groote Eylandt and, with McCarthy and others, examine the cave paintings at Chasm Island which had been discovered by Flinders in 1803. I was also able to view a totemic ceremony of which, previously, we had little knowledge.

The late arrival of the *Phoenix* necessitated the abandonment of the Roper River camp. But the added length of stay at Groote Eylandt was advantageous, because it allowed members of the party to increase their knowledge and natural history collections of this interesting island environment.

After fourteen weeks at Groote Eylandt a Catalina flying-boat and a mission launch moved the party to Yirrkalla. This was by far the most pleasant of all our camps. We pitched our tents on the crown of a sandhill carpeted with a mat of thick grass, a welcome change after the soft sand of Umbakumba. Before us was an open curving beach, on which the waves thundered day and night, and

5. Pl. 2A.

6. Pl. 2B.



PLATE 2A. *Phoenix* on a reef at Boucaut Bay



PLATE 2B. *Phoenix* unloading at Milingimbi

behind us a fresh-water swamp, shaded by large trees, fringed with luxuriant grasses and intersected with a stream of clear water. The weather, too, was at its best. The mists of morning gave way to warm dry days, while the nights were chilly and refreshing. As we sat at meals we could look across the tumbling waters and watch the aboriginal children at play, shooting the breakers in their small canoes, spearing fish, or drawing pictures in the glistening sands.

The day after reaching Yirrkalla, we received a pleasant surprise in the form of a visit from the American Consul for South Australia, Mr E. Seibert, who had made the journey to see his American colleagues; the Administrator for the Northern Territory, Mr A. R. Driver; and the Director-General of Information, Mr Kevin Murphy.

The only change of staff happened at Yirrkalla. Cordon, the transport officer, returned to Adelaide because of sickness in his family. Bray became transport officer and the position as cook was filled by Reginald Hollow.

We had no sooner settled in our camp than the Northern Territory patrol launch *Kuru* visited us. With it came W. E. Harney to act as guide to the expedition. Harney's knowledge of Arnhem Land, especially of the Gulf of Carpentaria, is extensive; of the aboriginal people, deep and understanding; and of the fauna and flora, considerable. As a story-teller and singer, Harney entertained us, individually and collectively, for hours with his tales of cattle thieves, droving and journeys with the aborigines. Merely stopping to pick up Miss McArthur, Miller, Setzler, McCarthy and Harney, the *Kuru* continued her journey to Port Bradshaw, where Setzler dug out more Malay graves, Miller caught fish by line, poison and net, and McCarthy and Harney examined a small group of cave paintings at Jelangbara. Miss McArthur had asked to be allowed to establish a nutrition camp, with no other companions but her two aboriginal interpreters, a man and his wife, claiming that she could get a truer picture of the aborigines in their natural environment if she were by herself.

On the return of the party from Port Bradshaw, Setzler and McCarthy flew to Milingimbi to carry out archaeological research, whilst the remainder of the scientists concentrated on their own special interests near the base camp. During this time, the botanist, mammalogist, ornithologist, and particularly the ichthyologist added greatly to their collections. Billington and Hodges set up their nutrition laboratory in the mission hospital, a much more comfortable place for work than Umbakumba. Bassett-Smith and I photographed many aspects of aboriginal life on colour cine film. The aboriginal men also produced for me many unusual bark paintings as well as carved and painted figures.

But again sea transport troubles arose. During the period of the Yirrkalla camp I had flown into Darwin and arranged with some Chinese merchants to send their forty-ton landing barge *Triumph* to Yirrkalla, load all the gear and, with members of the party aboard, take the barge around the north coast and up the East Alligator River to our next camp at Oenpelli, a journey of about six hundred miles. Although the journey would not have been comfortable, this

move would have been much simpler than by any other means. But a few days before the barge was due to set out from Darwin its engines failed, leaving us to reach Oenpelli as best we could. Again the Air Force came to our rescue and, on 9 September, moved most of our supplies and party to Darwin, about two months after we had landed at Yirrkalla.

Two of the party, Johnson and Bassett-Smith, travelled with the remainder of our supplies in the mission lugger *Victory*. Johnson disembarked at Cape Don to collect mammals, Bassett-Smith continuing the journey to Oenpelli. By 20 September the remainder of the party had reached Oenpelli and were ready to start work.

In selecting Oenpelli I had estimated that it would be the most spectacular, the most productive and, at the same time, the most uncomfortable of our research camps; all these expectations were fulfilled.

Looking from our tent doors, we could see a placid lagoon, dotted with water-lilies and numberless birds and fringed with green rushes; on the distant shore was the eucalyptus forest; beyond that the brown buffalo-grass flood plain, and behind that, again, the high escarpment of the rugged Arnhem Land plateau, blue with the haze of distance.

Oenpelli offered a varied field for all: the naturalists, the anthropologists and the photographers.⁷ It has three distinct physical environments, each rich in its own flora and fauna; the open savannah woodlands, the black soil flood plains of the Alligator Rivers, and the forbidding plateau country in the caves of which we were to find relics of early man and innumerable aboriginal paintings.

But in physical comfort Oenpelli had little to recommend it. Although the early mornings and late evenings were sometimes pleasant, the hours of daylight were the reverse. The widespreading plains and rocky hillsides reflected the burning heat of the sun, and the hot winds and smoke from the grass-fires lit by the aborigines⁸ added to the discomfort. Every day, the temperature within the tents rose to over 100° F., and on several occasions reached 108° F. Nor were the nights much better, for when writing up our notes or preparing the specimens gathered during the day, the mosquitoes attacked us and myriads of moths, beetles and other flying things crawled into our eyes and became entangled in our hair and clothing.

Although everyone found the conditions somewhat trying, I think that Billington and Hodges worked under the greatest disadvantages. Their laboratory consisted of two Army tents, set end to end in a dusty paddock. The high temperature and the dust, where cleanliness is so important, were a continuous trial. Yet these two kept going without complaints and finished their allotted task.

Setzler and McCarthy carried out a series of archaeological excavations in the cave floors at Unbalanja Hill,⁹ about a mile west of the main camp, and working

7. Pl. 1A.

8. At the end of the dry season, the aborigines burn the grass so that they can travel more easily.

9. Pl. 1B.

conditions there were also unpleasant. The temperature among the rocks was high, the humidity oppressive and the dust from the sieves so dense that it was sometimes difficult to see the archaeologists.

After a while McCarthy left and went to Fish Creek with Bray and Miss McArthur, leaving Setzler to carry on with only the help of two aborigines. At Fish Creek Miss McArthur studied the diet and food habits of an aboriginal group, and McCarthy noted their methods of food-gathering; Bray added many insects to his entomological collection.

The reduced size of the lagoons at the end of the dry season had concentrated the fish. Miller declared that they were the richest waters in which he had collected. He netted his specimens in both the fresh-water lagoon and the tidal East Alligator River.

For the ornithologist there were birds everywhere, on the water, in the grass, among the trees and the tumbled rocks of the plateau. Oenpelli was a prolific field for Deignan. For the botanist, too, the conditions were equally good and Specht's collection grew by leaps and bounds. Bassett-Smith and I concentrated on making a coloured film on the varied bird and plant life of the lagoons. And in the caves of the rugged plateau I found extensive galleries of unusual cave paintings.

On 19 October, just as the party was farewelling Miller on the eve of his departure for U.S.A., Johnson reached Oenpelli after walking 160 miles from Cape Don, without a native to guide him. He had been successful in making a collection of mammals which can be compared with that made by the naturalist Gilbert over a hundred years ago.

But, even to the end, transport troubles followed us. The Chinese merchants, having repaired the landing barge *Triumph*, had arranged to send it up the East Alligator River to Oenpelli, load our supplies and, with the party aboard, transport us to Darwin. We had partly dismantled our camp, when the news came through by wireless that a widespread measles epidemic had broken out in the Darwin area and the movement of all aborigines was prohibited. As the barge was manned largely by an aboriginal crew, that meant the *Triumph* could not leave Darwin. It seemed as if we might have to wait, in a partly dismantled camp, for an indefinite time, but after many negotiations I was able to arrange for Harney and myself to be flown into Darwin to form part of the crew. The final difficulty was overcome when Harry Moss, the pilot of the little plane that carried us to Darwin, generously offered to act as our pilot along the treacherous East Alligator River.

We left Darwin at midnight, and two days later, on 1 November, reached the Oenpelli landing. Most of that night, and all the next day, we worked incessantly transferring the supplies by motor from our camp, several miles inland, to the river bank. Then, as the brief tide (we were seventy miles from the sea) lifted the barge from the muddy bottom, everyone, expedition members and aborigines alike, rushed the goods on board hoping to get away before the tide went out.

But a tangled anchor rope delayed us and we were left stranded in the mud for another twelve hours. By next sunrise, however, we were on our way down the river and by sunset, two days later, we were berthed at the Darwin jetty. The field work of the expedition was over.

The results of the expedition could hardly have been richer, both from the standpoint of human companionship and scientific results. I cannot speak too highly of the good fellowship that existed between members of the party during the eight months we were together, a good fellowship not always present on expeditions where members have been together for extended periods. The gross results of the collections, too, were impressive: 13,500 plant specimens, 30,000 fish, 850 birds, 460 animals, several thousand aboriginal implements and weapons, together with photographs and drawings of a large number of cave paintings from Chasm Island, Groote Eylandt and Oenpelli. There was also a collection of several hundred aboriginal bark paintings and two hundred string figures. In addition to the physical collections of natural history and ethnological specimens, each scientist had written extensive field notes as a basis for his scientific papers. There were also many hundreds of monochrome and coloured photographs as well as several miles of colour film on aboriginal life and natural history.

Two articles on the expedition have been published in the *National Geographic Magazine*: 'Cruise to Stone Age Arnhem Land'¹⁰ by Howell Walker and 'Exploring Stone Age Arnhem Land'¹¹ by myself. Four coloured cine films have also been completed, with Bassett-Smith as photographer and myself as director: 'Arnhem Land', a survey of the natural history and ethnology of that region; 'Aborigines of the Sea Coast', dealing with native life at Yirrkalla; 'Birds and Billabongs', picturing the birds and the water-lilies of Oenpelli lagoons; and 'The Arawaltja Ceremony' of Groote Eylandt.

This volume is the first of a series which will describe the scientific results of the Arnhem Land Expedition. General subjects which will be published in the succeeding volumes are: Ethnology, archaeology, ornithology, mammalogy, hepherology, conchology, botany, ichthyology.

The ethnological and natural history specimens collected on the expedition will, when the research work on them is completed, be distributed between the Australian and American institutions, with the exception of the botanical collection. A duplicated collection has already been presented to the major herbaria in Australia; to the Kew Gardens, London; to the Arnold Herbarium, Harvard University, Boston; to the United States National Herbarium, Washington; and to the Rijksherbarium, Leiden, Netherlands.

Many of the cave paintings discovered at Oenpelli, and bark paintings collected at Groote Eylandt, Yirrkalla and Oenpelli, have been reproduced in colour by UNESCO in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*.

C.P.M.

10. Walker (1949), pp. 417-30.

11. Mountford (1949), pp. 745-82.

PART ONE
ABORIGINAL ART OF AUSTRALIA

I

ABORIGINAL ART OF AUSTRALIA

THE BASIC ART of the Australian aborigines consists of abstract geometric designs, which cannot be interpreted without the aid of the artist who produced them. This art form covers the greater part of the continent. In three areas—the Hawkesbury River basin, with Sydney as a centre, north-western Australia and Arnhem Land—this simple form has been overlaid by a more advanced naturalistic art in which identifiable paintings of animals, birds, fish, reptiles and human beings predominate.

For many years it was thought that the Tasmanian aborigines had no form of artistic expression. Recently, however, discoveries of rock engravings have been made in three different localities—Mount Cameron West, Devonport and Trial Harbour.¹ Those at Mount Cameron West were cut into a soft calcareous limestone, but those at Devonport and Trial Harbour are in much harder materials, the former in diabase, the latter in granite. The designs, which are made up of circles, concentric circles and straight lines, are similar to those the aborigines carved in the rocks on some parts of the mainland. The Tasmanians also painted designs on sheets of bark.²

Victoria and southern New South Wales are poor in examples of aboriginal art. No rock engravings have been found in Victoria, and only four localities of cave paintings are known. Three of these are in the western part of the state and the fourth in the Lake Tyers area of Gippsland.³ Though there is a paucity of cave paintings, however, the engravings made by the aborigines on their shields and spear-throwers indicate that they possessed an unusual ability for decorative design. The Victorians, like the Tasmanians, also painted designs on the walls of their bark shelters.⁴

The dominant art in north-eastern South Australia and western New South Wales is that of the rock engravings, of which many thousands have been discovered.⁵ Although the designs are similar to those of the Tasmanians, the technique of producing them was different. Whereas the Tasmanian engravings appear to have been cut or pounded with a boulder, those in South Australia were made by striking the surface of the rock with a sharp-cornered pebble, producing a series of pits, or indentations. In some instances the subject is only outlined, in others the whole design is removed to the depth of a few millimetres. There are a few rock engravings in the soft Miocene limestone which forms the banks of the River Murray.⁶ These engravings resemble those at Mount Cameron

1. Luckman (1950), p. 25.

3. Davidson (1936), p. 77.

5. Mountford (1935), pp. 207-13.

2. Péron (1807), Pl. 15; Bunce (1857), pp. 49-50.

4. Smyth (1878), vol. 1, p. 292.

6. Sheard (1927), pp. 137-40.

West in Tasmania, both in appearance and design.⁷ It is possible that the soft rock in both places has allowed the use of similar techniques. In the caves of the River Murray, and in the ranges of South Australia and western New South Wales, are scattered groups of cave paintings.⁸ Although in these caves there are many naturalistic figures, the curvilinear abstract forms, similar to those of the rock engravings, are present in equal numbers.

New South Wales has three distinct art forms within its boundaries, rock engravings and cave paintings on the western section, carved trees, commonest in central New South Wales, and rock engravings of the Hawkesbury River basin.

The carved trees extend over a large part of New South Wales and southern Queensland, extending from the Shoalhaven River in the south, to the Tweed River in Queensland, and westward as far as Bourke, on the River Darling.⁹ While we know nothing of the purpose of the forms of art already mentioned, we do know, from the writings of early settlers, that these carved trees were used for two purposes. Some were associated with the *bora* (initiation) ceremony, and others with the burial rituals. The living trees were carved with designs, sometimes as long as nine feet, made up of an interesting combination of diamonds, circles, spirals, and other curvilinear patterns; the human figure was seldom used. The labour of cutting these complex designs into the large number of tree-trunks required for a *bora* ground must have been considerable. Black¹⁰ records that there are still over eighty carved trees standing at the Bannaway *bora* ground on the Barwon River.

The aborigines of the Hawkesbury River basin developed an art form which consisted largely of huge outline engravings¹¹ of human beings, fish, animals, birds and reptiles cut in the soft sandstone. The sea-creatures predominate (as is to be expected on a sea-coast), some of them reaching a length of sixty feet, and there are numerous examples of kangaroos up to twenty-two feet, human beings fifteen feet, and emus thirteen feet long. These large engravings were cut in the soft sandstone either with a sharp-pointed stone tool, or by drilling a series of holes, about three-quarters of an inch in diameter, along the outline of the design, after which the intervening sections were broken or rubbed down. As with the rock engravings of Tasmania and South Australia, and the designs on the carved trees of New South Wales, we have no evidence from the aborigines themselves either of the meanings of these engraved figures, or of the mythology associated with them. The artists who produced these remarkable engravings, and the aborigines who knew their meanings, died many years before we became sufficiently interested to inquire about their art.¹²

7. Luckman (1950), Pl. 1-8.

9. Etheridge, Junr. (1918), Pl. 39; Black (1944), p. 25.

11. Campbell (1899).

8. Black (1943).

10. Black (1944), p. 34.

12. In recent years, some workers are placing their own interpretations on the more abstract of these figures. As such interpretations could not have been obtained directly from the aboriginal who produced them, nor from any aboriginal who has seen them produced, and as there are no references in early literature about the meaning of these figures, as given by aboriginal artists, such interpretations should be accepted with considerable reserve.

Little research has been carried out on the primitive art of Queensland, but, as far as we know, that state appears to be poor in examples of either the cave or rock engraving art. In a few widely separated places rock engravings have been found, resembling those of South Australia both in technique and design.¹³ The cave paintings in Blackall, Princess Charlotte Bay,¹⁴ and Carnarvon Ranges, too, like those further south, are made up of both abstract and naturalistic figures. It is in the decorating of his weapons and implements, particularly of his large fighting shields, boomerangs, and spear-throwers that the Queensland aboriginal has excelled.¹⁵ The shields are often up to three feet in length, and on their surface the aboriginal artist painted pleasing geometric, seldom naturalistic, designs, in soft yellows, reds, black and white, symbolic of one of the many mythical ancestors of the tribe.

Over the parts of Australia with which we have already dealt, the aborigines have either died out or discontinued their rich ceremonial life. Because of this, it is seldom possible to find out the meanings of the designs that they painted in caves, carved on tree trunks, or engraved on rock surfaces.

However, the aboriginal culture is still intact in central and northern Australia, and we were able to ask the artists themselves the meanings of the designs they were producing. We found, whether dealing with the simple curvilinear art of Central Australia, or the rich naturalistic art of the north coast, that, almost without exception, the designs illustrated mythical stories that explained the aboriginal's conception of his creation and the surroundings in which he lived.¹⁶

The aborigines of Central Australia practise the simplest art of all living people. Except for remarkably few naturalistic, but highly formalized figures on the cave walls, those engraved on the sacred objects,¹⁷ painted in ground drawings¹⁸ and on human bodies during ceremonies,¹⁹ are made up almost entirely of combinations of circles, concentric circles, spirals, meanderings and straight lines. This simple curvilinear art has a wide distribution. It is present in Tasmania, South Australia and Central Australia. It reaches to within two hundred miles of Darwin on the north coast, within an equal distance of the Queensland coast, and extends to the west coast of the continent. As these curvilinear designs approach the north-west coast, however, the concentric circles change to concentric squares, and the meandering lines to zigzags.²⁰ They retain this form until they are absorbed by the naturalistic designs of the north-west aborigines.

The dominant and important elements in the cave art of north-west Australia, particularly in the Kimberley area, are the *Wandjina* figures.²¹ These cave paintings, up to fifteen feet in length, depict a human being, with a halo-like band round the head, but usually without a mouth. The *Wandjina* paintings owe their importance in tribal life to their association with rain, rain-making, the rainbow-

13. Goddard (1941), p. 371.

15. McConnel (1935), pp. 49-68.

17. Mountford (1937a), p. 84.

19. Spencer (1928), ch. 19.

21. Love (1917), p. 37; (1930), p. 1.

14. Hale and Tindale (1933-4), pp. 146-55.

16. Davidson (1937), Figs. 68-71.

18. Spencer (1928), Figs. 303-7.

20. Davidson (1937), Figs. 52-7.

serpent, spirit children and the increase of natural species. At certain seasons of the year, the aborigines repaint the *Wandjina* to ensure that rain will fall, and the spirit children will leave the body of the rainbow-serpent to become human beings.

But these *Wandjina* figures dominate the art only within a limited area. As one moves further east, particularly around Napier Broome Bay,²² some of the caves are filled with many strange figures of human beings, which bear more than a passing resemblance to cave paintings in western Arnhem Land. Still further east again, at the headwaters of the Gregory River,²³ there are large twelve-foot figures of mythical men, also associated with rain and rain-making. Other figures in the adjacent caves are naturalistic, depicting men, women, and the animals of the country.

It is in Arnhem Land, however, that the most interesting and varied forms of aboriginal art have been found. These will be described in the following pages.

1. THE FUNCTION OF PRIMITIVE ART

There are two schools of thought on the function of primitive art. One contends that to paint pictures is a propensity of the human mind, and that all true art, either primitive or modern, is a spontaneous activity carried out for its own sake. The other school takes the opposite view, and claims that primitive man is essentially practical; that he paints pictures, say of kangaroos, not specifically because he takes pleasure in the act, but because by so doing he gains a magical control over the creature and can thereby capture it more easily.

My research into the art of the Australian aborigines has convinced me that their art is predominantly non-magical, that is, the aborigines paint because they want to, and not for some material advantage. In a number of places in Australia, however, magic is definitely associated with some aspects of the art, e.g. among the Luritja tribes of Central Australia,²⁴ and some tribes of north-western Australia.²⁵ The same holds true of the art of Arnhem Land and especially Oenpelli where, although most of the cave art is purely representational and non-magical, there are certain cave paintings associated with malignant magic and food increase ceremonies.

A review of the evidence gathered from the examination of the cave paintings, bark paintings, ceremonial objects and body decorations of Arnhem Land, suggests that the art of this area can be roughly divided into four classes: (i) art for art's sake, in which the artist paints pictures in caves or on sheets of bark for the pleasure which he gains in so doing; (ii) sacred art, such as is seen in the decoration of the body and of the ceremonial objects;²⁶ (iii) magical paintings, by means of which the aborigines believe they can control nature, punish enemies, and increase the supply of the food animals;²⁷ and (iv) didactic bark paintings,

22. Mountford (1937), pp. 30-40.

24. Mountford (1943), p. 93.

26. p. 400.

23. Davidson (1936), p. 64.

25. Love (1930), p. 3; Elkin (1930), p. 277.

27. See Pl. 62B.

ABORIGINAL ART OF AUSTRALIA

used at the initiation and age-grading ceremonies to teach the young men the myths and folk-ways of the tribe.²⁸

2. ART STYLES AND DISTRIBUTION IN ARNHEM LAND²⁹

The basic art of Arnhem Land, which consists of single or multiple figures on a plain ground, covers the greater part of that area, extending from Groote Eylandt in the east, to the western edge of Arnhem Land, southward as far as the upper Roper River, where it meets the simple, abstract art of Central Australia, and northward, until it is absorbed by the more advanced art of the north-east. Pl. 20D, from Groote Eylandt, is a typical example of the basic art.

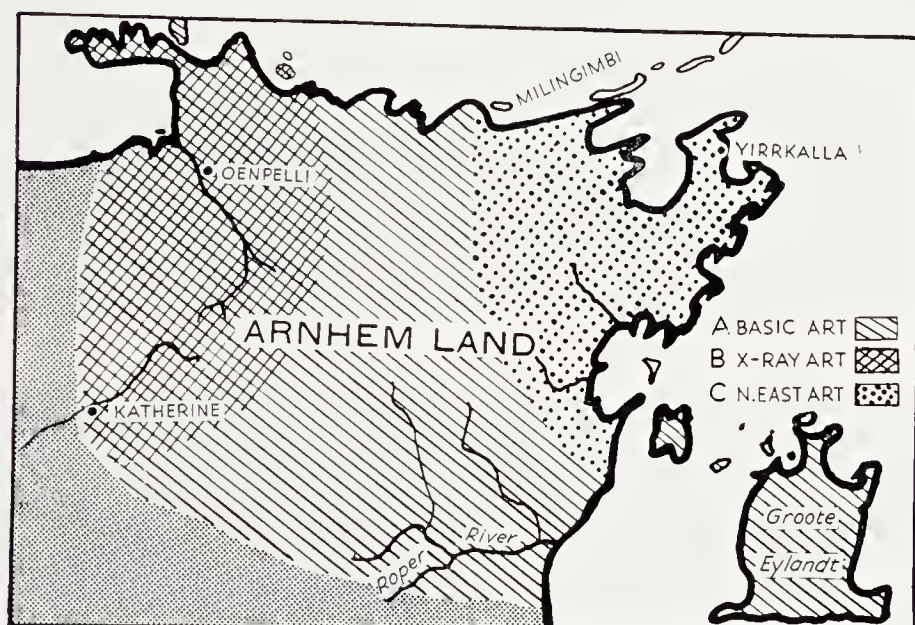


FIG. 2. Distribution of art styles in Arnhem Land

Although, on the western edge of Arnhem Land, this art still consists of single or multiple figures on a plain ground, it is modified by the curious X-ray art. In this, the internal as well as the external details of the creature are shown (Pl. 75B).

As far as we know this X-ray art occupies a limited area, extending from Goulburn Island³⁰ in the north, along the western edge of Arnhem Land, to possibly the Katherine River. It does not extend far east or west (Fig. 2B).

The more complex art of north-eastern Arnhem Land seems to be confined to an area extending from Blue Mud Bay, in the Gulf of Carpentaria, to Cape Stewart in the north (Fig. 2C).

28. This was the practice at Oenpelli, p. 224. Warner (1937), p. 318, describes 'a bark house . . . on the ceremonial grounds. . . . The interior walls are painted with realistic and geometric figures (which illustrate the story of the two Wawilak sisters).' Although Warner does not say so, it is likely that these bark paintings, like those the aborigines told me about at Oenpelli, were used to instruct initiates in the tribal myths.

29. Distribution Map, Fig. 2.

30. Mountford (1939a), Pl. 14-17.

The characteristics of the north-eastern art differ from those of the other areas in that the arrangement of the figures is more complex, the craftsmanship of a higher order, and the empty spaces of the background usually filled in with cross-hatching. Pl. 88A is typical.

Between the west, with its X-ray art, and the north-east, with its complicated forms, is an intermediate area centred around the Liverpool River which embodies many of the characteristics of the art on either side of it (Pl. 73D).

Although, within any one area, there are differences due to individual artists, the traditional art style remains the same.

3. MEDIUMS OF EXPRESSION

The aborigines of Arnhem Land express their art in several different mediums: (i) paintings on bark; (ii) paintings in caves and shallow rock shelters; (iii) figures carved in wood or moulded in wax; (iv) figures moulded or drawn in wet sea-sand; and (v) figures in bark.

(i) PAINTINGS ON BARK

Scattered references in early literature indicate that the practice of painting on bark was widespread in the southern part of Australia. As early as 1807 Péron's artist,³¹ in his sketch of a burial-place on Maria Island, Tasmania, showed painted sheets of bark near by. Bunce³² also refers to them. Smyth³³ mentions their use on the Wonnangatta River, Gippsland, and Curr³⁴ on the Paroo River, central New South Wales. In Arnhem Land, the aborigines make their paintings on the inside of their bark huts during the enforced idleness of the rainy season. Spencer³⁵ was the first to notice them at Oenpelli. It is likely that, wherever the aborigines constructed their huts with sheets of bark, they would have painted designs on the inside of them. However, no painting taken from an Arnhem Land bark shelter would be more than a year old because, long before the onset of the next wet season, it would have been destroyed by the elements, insects or fire.

The bark paintings in the expedition collection, and, in fact, most of those housed in the various universities and museums, have never been part of a wet-weather shelter, but have been made at the request of the investigator.

(ii) PAINTINGS IN CAVES AND SHALLOW ROCK SHELTERS

The cave paintings in Arnhem Land were all found in shallow caves or rock shelters. In Australia, we have no knowledge of paintings in deep caves, such as those made by prehistoric man in Europe.

In some respects the cave paintings of Arnhem Land were more interesting than the bark paintings for, whereas the latter depict the art styles of the present

31. Péron (1807-16), Pl. 15.

33. Smyth (1878), p. 292.

35. Spencer (1928), p. 792.

32. Bunce (1857), pp. 49-50.

34. Curr (1886), p. 273.



PLATE 3A. Wet-season bark hut, Arnhem Land



PLATE 3B. Painting a design on bark, Oenpelli

day, in many cave paintings the motifs and styles are different from those now in use.

(iii) FIGURES CARVED IN WOOD OR MOULDED IN WAX

Although carving in the round extends far beyond Arnhem Land,³⁶ it appears to have reached its highest development in the north-eastern area. The aborigines in and around Yirrkalla also make excellent models in wax. The tribes of Cape York³⁷ are expert in the same technique.

(iv) FIGURES MOULDED OR DRAWN IN WET SEA-SAND

The aboriginal children of north-eastern Arnhem Land are skilled in both drawing and moulding various creatures in the wet sand of the seashore.³⁸ As the children of Central Australia also draw designs on the sides of drifting sand-hills, it is almost certain that this practice has a much wider distribution than present evidence indicates.

(v) FIGURES IN BARK

The aborigines of north-eastern Arnhem Land make small human figures by binding the soft paper-bark together with string. Worms³⁹ records similar figures from north-western Australia.

4. TECHNIQUES

The materials used in the production of the bark and cave paintings are: (i) Colours: red, yellow, black and white ochres; (ii) fixative; (iii) brushes; (iv) flat, dried sheets of bark.

(i) COLOURS

The pigments used to paint the designs on the bark sheets, or on the cave walls, were red, yellow, black and white. Although I did not specifically ask the name of the colours at Groote Eylandt, Tindale⁴⁰ gives the names of those employed there as white, *tonguru*; yellow, *otarak*; black, *udumach*; and red, *maruwura*. The red was traded from the mainland to Groote Eylandt, the other colours being obtained locally. Rose⁴¹ also refers to trade in red ochre with the mainland tribes. Since the war, the Groote Eylandters have learned that carbon from dry batteries discarded by the Air Force makes an excellent black. This was used extensively both on the bark paintings collected by the expedition and those described by Adam.⁴²

At Yirrkalla, the aborigines used four pigments, red, white, yellow and black. The first two belong to the *dua* and the latter to the *jiritja* moiety. Red, *murngun*, and white, *kapun*, are plentiful in the cliffs at Yirrkalla. It can, however,

36. Mountford (1954), p. 87, Pl. 1.

37. McConnel (1935), Pl. 27, Fig. F.

38. Barrett and Croll (1943), Pl. 41, facing p. 76.

39. Worms (1942), Fig. 6.

40. Tindale (1926), p. 116.

41. Rose (1942), p. 70.

42. Adam (1951), p. 169.

be gathered only by the *dua* men who give it to those of the opposite moiety. Yellow, *kadangul*, and black, *tjunapul*, come from localities near Gurunga.⁴³ The collection of the yellow pigments is associated with a ceremony in which men of the *jiritja* moiety only can take part. The *jiritja* distribute these pigments to the *dua* men.

At Oenpelli, most of the colours are obtained by trade. The best red ochre, *gunaitdai*, comes from a totemic place, Widitjan, about eight days journey south. If this ochre is in short supply, the aborigines use an inferior local ochre. For white, the aborigines use a stone, *outjain* (unidentified), which they first grind into a paste and, when it is partly dry, mould into small cakes. In this form, the pigment is traded over long distances. The yellow ochre, *maragararum*, which is soft and easily ground, comes from some unidentified place to the far south. I did not gather any details about the source of the black, called *maumai-jangarin*. Apparently it is in short supply because it is rare in both the bark and cave paintings in the Oenpelli area.

Throughout Arnhem Land the pigments are ground, with water, on rough flat stones. One stone is generally reserved for the white pigment. Cockle and small bailer shells are often used as paint pots. Both Tindale⁴⁴ and Spencer⁴⁵ state that the aborigines mix their pigments to get different shades. At the time of my visit to Groote Eylandt, Yirkalla and Oenpelli the aborigines were not mixing their colours, the different pebbles of red and yellow ochres accounting for the varying shades of red and yellow in the paintings.

(ii) FIXATIVE

The juice of one of the tree orchids (*Dendrobium* sp.) is used by the Arnhemlanders as a fixative on both the bark and the cave paintings. The orchid bulb is cut in halves, broken slightly by chewing, and, in the Oenpelli and Yirkalla areas, rubbed directly on the bark or rock surface, or in Groote Eylandt, mixed with the colour on the grinding stone. This method of holding the colour is effective as long as the pigments are applied thinly; if not, they tend to flake off.

(iii) BRUSHES

The aboriginal artists of Arnhem Land use three kinds of brushes:

(a) A narrow strip of bark, chewed at one end (Fig. 3F). This is held as in Fig. 3C and used for the broad lines.

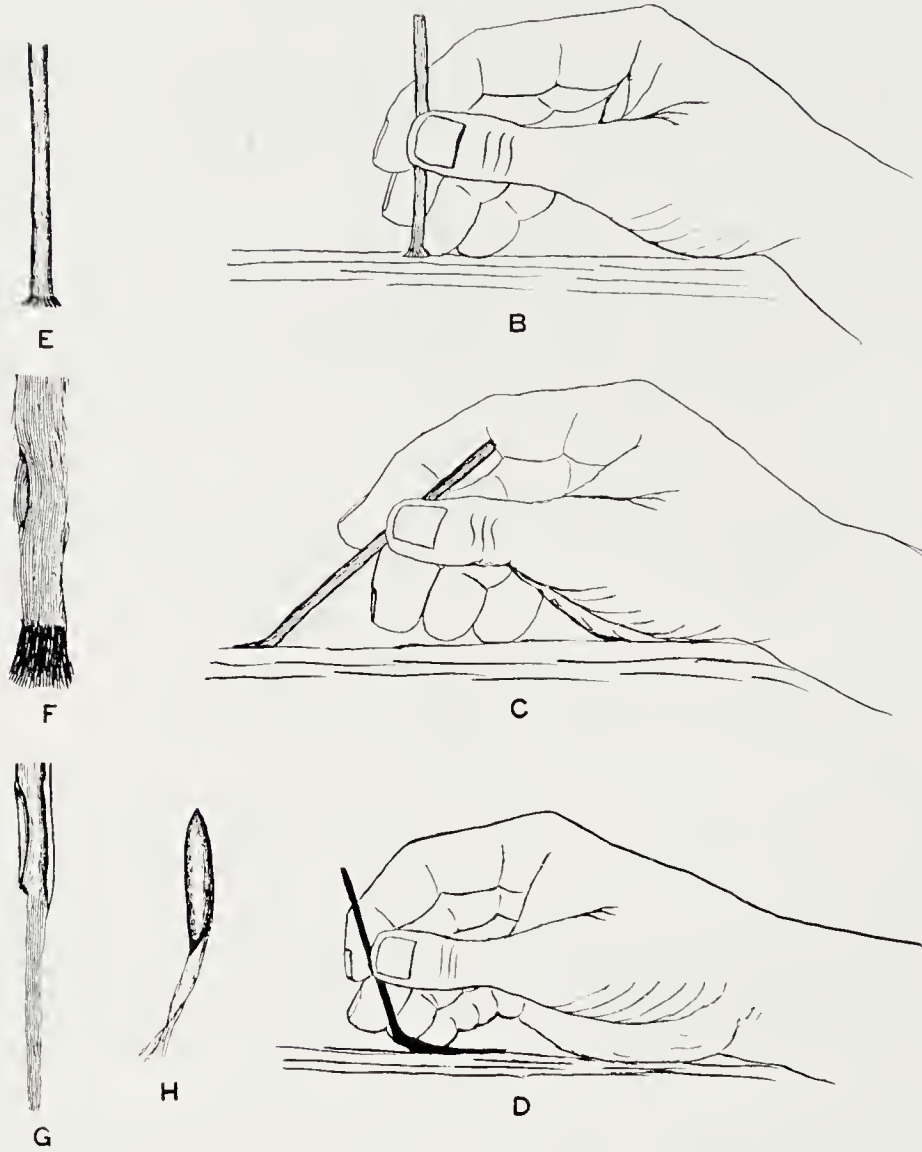
(b) A cylindrical stick (Fig. 3E), about three thirty-seconds of an inch in diameter, and three inches long, which has the end slightly burred. With this the artist makes the dots. The brush is tapped on the grinding stone to load it with colour, which is transferred to the painting with the brush held as shown in Fig. 3B.

43. See myth of Gurunga, p. 371.

44. Tindale (1926), p. 117.

45. Spencer (1928), p. 792.

(c) The third brush, made either from a few fibres of a palm leaf (Fig. 3G) or a small feather (Fig. 3A) demands considerable skill in its use. It is long and flexible, resembling the lining brush used by coach painters and sign-writers.



Jean Truran

FIG. 3. Techniques and tools of bark and cave painting

The brush is held delicately between the fingers, as in Fig. 3D, and drawn away from the body. The fine cross-hatching and lining in the north-eastern art, and the broken and parallel lines of Groote Eylandt, are all made with this brush. It is called *marait* by the OenPELLI people.⁴⁶ The skill which the aborigines have achieved in the use of this brush is remarkable. Pl. 155A of Orion and the Pleiades is a good example.

46. Pl. 3B shows an aboriginal painting with this brush.

(iv) SHEETS OF BARK

The bark sheets were stripped from one of the local stringy-barks (*Eucalyptus tetradonta*). After having selected a tree of a size suitable for his purpose, and one free from knots and cracks, the aboriginal first made two cuts round the circumference of the tree, usually about three feet apart, then, loosening a strip of bark at the lower cut, pulled it upward, leaving a narrow vertical opening. Into this opening the native inserted the point of a sharpened stick, and gently levered the bark from the tree. The whole operation usually occupied about three minutes. The aboriginal then threw the bark, rough outer surface downward, on a large fire for a short time, after which he stripped off the outer fibrous bark until the inner denser portion was about three-sixteenths of an inch thick. In this condition the bark, being particularly flexible, was easily flattened by levelling a patch of sand, placing the bark on top, covering it with more sand, and leaving it until dry. The drying took several days to a fortnight, depending on the humidity of the atmosphere. Normally, these bark sheets were used for building the wet-weather shelters (Pl. 3A) on the inside of which the aborigines spent much of their spare time painting pictures.⁴⁷

The method which I adopted was to ask the men to make bark paintings for me, seldom suggesting a subject. At the end of the day, the artists brought their work to my tent, related the associated myth, and explained the meanings of the designs. Under normal tribal conditions, most of the bark paintings are the result of idle hours, when the artist depicts subjects in which he is most interested. But this is not always so. In the Milingimbi and Oenpelli areas, the old men paint designs on sheets of bark which illustrate secret totemic myths. These are exhibited to the novitiates during their initiation and age-grading ceremonies.⁴⁸

5. THE ARTISTS

Some writers suggest that only a limited number of aboriginal men are employed as artists.⁴⁹ This is not so. All men were willing to and could paint, although, naturally, some are more skilled than others. The men shown on Pl. 4 produced bark paintings that belonged to Groote Eylandt, Yirkalla, Oenpelli and Liverpool River areas respectively.

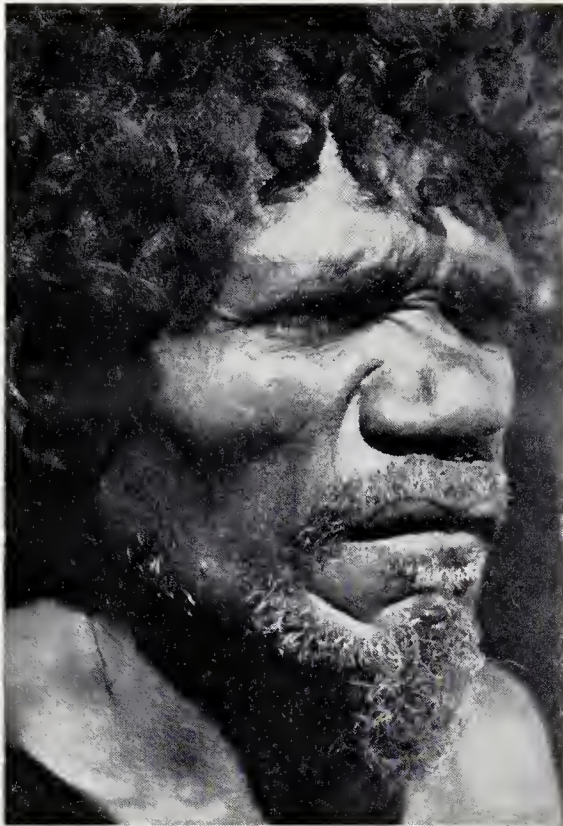
Pl. 4B is *Nangapiana* from Groote Eylandt, who with his relatives, *Tatalara* and *Jaliaura*, produced many fine bark paintings. Pl. 21E and Pl. 25B are the work of *Nangapiana*. *Mini-mini*, mentioned by Adam,⁵⁰ also made a number of paintings. He did not, however, employ the fine brushwork of *Nangapiana*, although the results were attractive and colourful. Pl. 30C is *Mini-mini's* work.

47. As the supply of prepared sheets of bark at Yirkalla and Oenpelli became exhausted, I provided the artists with sheets of rough-surfaced dark grey and green paper. The paintings on these sheets of paper can be distinguished in the illustrations by the smooth ground.

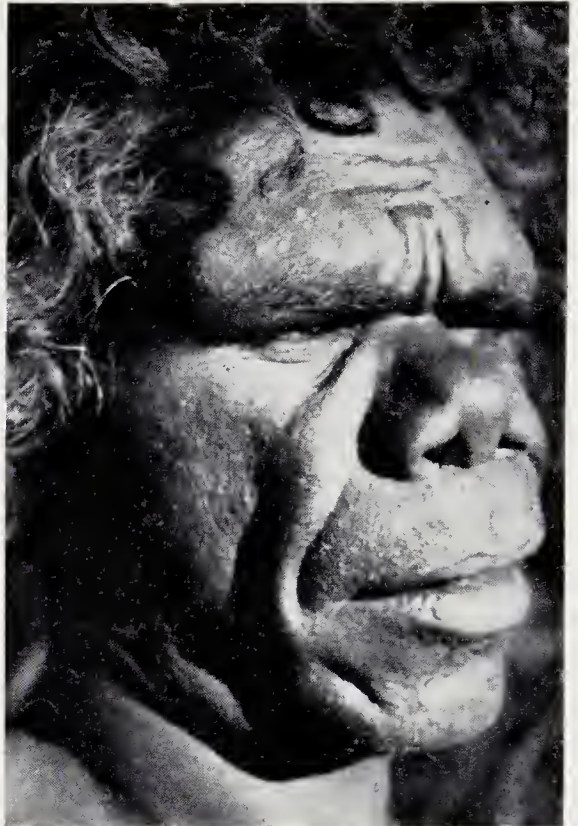
48. Warner (1937), p. 318; also p. 224.

49. Adam (1951), p. 163.

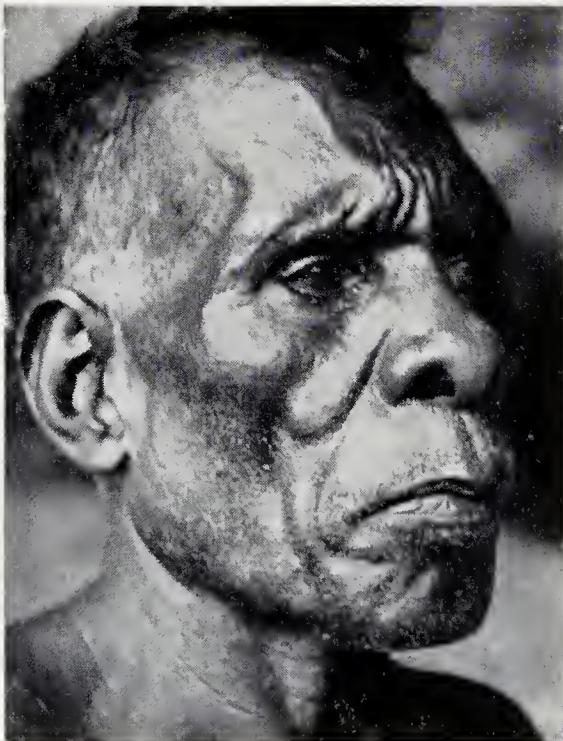
50. Adam (1951), p. 164.



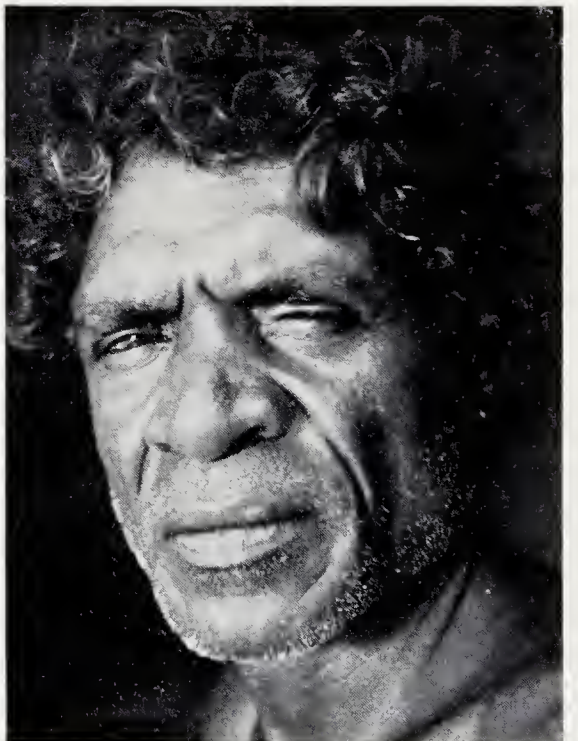
A Matuwulan, Yirkalla



B Nangapiana, Groote Eylandt



C Kumutuu, Oenpelli



D Wulkini, Liverpool River

PLATE 4. Artists of Arnhem Land

Pl. 4A is *Mauwulan*, one of a group of artists from Yirkalla, who produced many attractive bark paintings (Pl. 99A, 85E). He also carved the wooden figures of *Tjambuwal* (Pl. 130A, B), *Malwulwi* (Pl. 133A, B), and others.

Pl. 4C is *Kumutun*, an old Kakadu aboriginal,⁵¹ one of the last of the original inhabitants of Oenpelli. This man was a storehouse of aboriginal beliefs and mythological stories. Pl. 55D and Pl. 70B are his work.

Pl. 4D is an aboriginal, *Wulkini*, from the Liverpool River area. He was younger than many of the other artists in the group. He produced Pl. 72D, Pl. 73A, and many others.

Although these four men, each in his own locality, painted many attractive pictures, there were many others who were equally skilled. I did not meet an aboriginal who could not, or did not want to paint. There is certainly no special artist class.

In watching these men and others at work, I was impressed by their sureness. They seemed to have a fully conceived picture in their mind before they started to paint; it was seldom that an artist altered a design or corrected a brush stroke.

Although, for the sake of simplicity, I have referred to the designs on bark as paintings it is evident, in a narrower interpretation, that some are paintings, i.e. painting in spaces, and others are brush drawings, that is, the designs are built up by a series of lines. There are also numerous examples in which the figures are first painted and, when dry, details are added in fine lines.

51. This tribe, now almost extinct, was visited by Spencer in 1912.

PART TWO
THE ART OF GROOTE EYLANDT

2

THE ART OF GROOTE EYLANDT

SEVERAL WORKERS have made reference to the aboriginal art of Groote Eylandt, some being primarily interested in the native drawings, others recording them as a subsidiary feature of investigation.

The first discovery of cave paintings in northern Australia was made by Matthew Flinders in 1803.¹ Westall's sketches of these paintings are among the earliest records of aboriginal art in Australia.²

After visiting Groote Eylandt on an entomological survey during 1921-2 Tindale,³ among a series of notes which he made on the Groote Eylandters, published a description of cave paintings at East Bay, near Mangala.⁴ Rose⁵ described and figured a series of cave paintings found by him at Angoroko (Anguruku).⁶ He⁷ also published three bark paintings dealing with the totemic winds of Groote Eylandt. Recently, Adam⁸ figured fourteen bark paintings from Groote Eylandt and discussed their artistic relationship and the manner of their production. Many of these bark paintings had been collected by Rose.

During the time the expedition was at Groote Eylandt, the art of the aborigines received considerable attention. Fred McCarthy, whilst engaged on archaeological research with Frank Setzler at Winchelsea Island, found and sketched cave paintings at Amalipa.⁹ He also re-investigated those at Angoroko, previously described by Rose. McCarthy and I, together with a small party, visited Chasm Island, a hundred and thirty-five years after Flinders discovered the cave paintings, and found many extensive groups in the shallow caves. We did not, however, locate any of the paintings sketched by Westall. Other members of the expedition saw painted caves in the rugged interior of the island. These, and those found by Tindale during his stay on the island during 1921-2, were later investigated by Peter Worsley.¹⁰

The stranding of the barge *Phoenix*, and the consequent late arrival of the supplies and of two of the American scientific staff, was responsible for the expedition staying at Groote Eylandt for a longer period than was originally

1. Flinders (1814), vol. 2, p. 189.

2. Most of these sketches are in the Mitchell Library, Sydney.

3. Tindale (1926), pp. 116-19.

4. Map, Fig. 4.

5. Rose (1942), p. 129.

6. As there are so many ways of spelling this locality I have adopted that used by Tindale (1925), p. 65, i.e. Angoroko.

7. Rose (1947), p. 129.

8. Adam (1951), pp. 162-88.

9. All aboriginal words which are not proper nouns are shown in lower case italics. This practice, however, is not fully consistent, because, in the mythological stories, it is sometimes difficult to be sure whether an informant is referring to the ancestral semi-human being of creation times, or a present-day creature of the same name.

10. Peter Worsley investigated the Groote Eylandt culture during 1952-3. Little of his research has yet been published.

ARNHEM LAND: ART, MYTH AND SYMBOLISM



FIG. 4. Groote Eylandt

intended. This additional time allowed me to carry out a unit of research covering one phase of the ceremonial life of the Groote Eylandters with its associated topography, myths, art and songs. I was also able to collect a number of bark paintings. Although some of these paintings dealt with secular aspects of aboriginal life, such as fishing and watercraft, the majority of them illustrated totemic stories which described the exploits of mythical ancestors and the natural features they created. From the artists I obtained an abridged version of the myth belonging to each bark painting, and was able in some cases to see the relevant totemic places and to record, electrically, some of the associated songs. The men who had the right to chant the missing songs were not in camp when

the recordings were made. I was unable to persuade any other aboriginal to sing them.

Early in my stay, through the medium of these bark paintings and their myths, I became aware of a ceremony, called the *arawaltja*, based on the travels of two groups of totemic beings. Because the *arawaltja* ceremony reveals the beliefs of the Arnhem Land aborigines concerning their creation, and shows how those beliefs are perpetuated in art, song, myth and ceremony, I shall describe that ceremony first.

1. THE ARAWALTJA CEREMONY*

The *arawaltja* ceremony was not performed until a few weeks before our departure for Yirrkalla. The aborigines had planned to start much earlier, but could not do so until *Tanmanaraka*, the leader of the *oranikapara* group, was able to attend, the ceremony depending upon the presence of *Tanmanaraka* or someone with equal totemic affiliations. I was able to camp at the ceremonial ground during the performance of the whole ceremony. This gave me the opportunity of seeing and photographing the rituals, and of recording the associated songs and myths.

There was some opposition by the local residents of Groote Eylandt to the performance of this ceremony, the missionaries objecting because they considered that the ceremony was evil, and the superintendent of the Umbakumba settlement because it interfered with the planting of his garden. According to Peter Worsley, the *arawaltja* ceremony was no longer being performed in 1952.

(1) THE CREATION PERIOD

The aborigines of Arnhem Land believe that before the creation period, that is, before life came upon the world, the land was bare and featureless, and the sea devoid of everything but the larger islands. There were no hills, watercourses, or swamp-lands; no animals, birds, fish, or any other form of life. Then, during some ill-defined period, comparable with our own creation times, giant half-human, half-animal creatures appeared who, though they seem to have thought and acted like human beings, later transformed themselves into one or other of the land or sea creatures or the plants of today.

These mythical beings, whom the aborigines consider to be their forbears, wandered over the land and the sea, creating islands, rivers, mountain ranges and other parts of the landscape. All of the major and many of the minor topographical features are connected with mythical stories which explain how they were made by one or another of the ancestral people of 'creation' times. Thus the serpent, *Aitja*, created the Amakula River in Groote Eylandt, the watercourse in Bickerton Island, and several rivers on the mainland; the bailer-

* A 16 mm. silent film, 'The Arawaltja Ceremony', directed by the author, is available through the National Library, Canberra. Worsley (1955), p. 860, considers the correct name is *Amunduwuraria*, the name *arawaltja* referring to the three bush houses (Fig. 6B, C, D). This may be so.

shell, *Jukuna*, made the rocky outcrops on Bickerton Island, and the saw-fish, *Ingnrudungwa*, carved out the course of the Angoroko River with the saw on his nose.

It was difficult to get a clear picture of the aboriginal's conception of the appearance of these mythical people, except the oft-repeated phrase: 'They were men and women those days.' Yet, in spite of that statement, the aborigines, when illustrating their myths on the bark paintings, always depict creatures, never human beings. The bark painting of the goose-people, *Inigia*, is a typical example (Pl. 9D). Although the myth refers to the goose as a man whilst he was on the mainland, and as a bird after he had left Bickerton Island, he is pictured on the bark paintings as a bird.¹¹ Also, the myth of the goose-man, *Inigia* (still considered to be a human being) tells that, while searching for food at Wurindi,¹² he dug a shallow depression in the ground in the same manner as the geese still do. This suggests that, although the aborigines believe that the people of the creation period were human, they think of them as behaving in a similar manner to the creature which is their present-day counterpart. On the other hand, the natives appear to recognize a difference between the human and the creature ancestor, for when *Inigia* was a man, his camps were transformed into trees, but when he was a goose, into groups of boulders.¹³

As with all aboriginal people, the myths of the Groote Eylandters are not myths in our sense of the word. They are a series of stories which give a reasonable explanation for the origin of the natural forces, the topography, the fauna and the flora with which the aborigines are in daily contact. But the myths do more than that, for the actions of those mythical forbears set the pattern of life which all must follow. The belief that 'as it was done in the old times so it must be done today' is very powerful in aboriginal philosophy.

These stories of the mythical ancestors, and the laws which they formulated, are kept alive by the aborigines' expressions of them in art, in music, and particularly in ceremony.

(2) FUNCTION OF THE CEREMONY

The *arawaltja* ceremony of the Ingura tribe¹⁴ of Groote Eylandt, centred round the travels of two groups of mythical semi-human birds, fish, animals and reptiles, is a typical example of how myths and the beliefs associated with them are perpetuated. The ceremony is not associated with circumcision, initiation or

11. The same characteristic appears in Central Australian art. For instance, kangaroo ancestors, although thought of as human beings during the creation period, are always depicted by the footprints of kangaroos (Mountford, 1937a, p. 231, Fig. 9).

12. Map, Fig. 4.

13. Myth, p. 37.

14. I have used the tribal name, *Ingura*, because it is the one applied to the aborigines of Groote Eylandt by Tindale (1925), p. 62. According to W. E. Harney, this name is only partly correct, as the Groote Eylandters have three names. They call themselves *Andil-jaukwa*, the Rose River aborigines call them *Ingura*, and the aborigines of Trial Bay call them *Lama-dalpu*. Worsley (1955), p. 853, calls them the *Wani Ndiljaukwa*. This differential naming, which applies to many Australian tribes, has been the cause of much confusion to those who have endeavoured to map the tribal areas.

age-grading. All who take part are married and therefore fully initiated men. It is essentially a totemic ceremony, one which reminds man of his relationship to the natural forces and creatures around him.

The *arawaltja* ceremony is performed only by those aborigines who live on the western side of Groote Eylandt, at Wurindi on the mainland, and on the intervening islands. The eastern Groote Eylandters have no such ceremony, and are, in fact, looked upon with pity by their western neighbours, who call them the *Wandaluluk*, because of their lack of decorated poles and sacred houses.¹⁵ According to my informants, ceremonies similar to the *arawaltja*, called *anai-journ*, are performed on the mainland west of Wurindi and as far south as the Roper River. In fact, the ceremonies of the Roper River area are so closely linked with those of Groote Eylandt that they could not be held if *Tanmanaraka*, the leader of the jungle-fowl and bandicoot totems in the *arawaltja* ceremony, were unable to attend.

The rituals of the *arawaltja* ceremony of Groote Eylandt have many points of resemblance with the *dua* and *jiritja narra* rituals described and analysed by Warner.¹⁶ The myths which form the bases of the two ceremonies, however, are entirely different, the *arawaltja* dealing with the movement of groups of fish, birds, reptiles and animals, and the *dua* and *jiritja narra* with the exploits and travels of the *Djunkgao* sisters.

(3) THE MYTHS

The myths of the *arawaltja* ceremony deal with the journeys and exploits of two groups of ancestral beings. One, belonging to the *wirinikapara* moiety,¹⁷ travelled from Groote Eylandt to the mainland; the other, the *oranikapara*, left the mainland and finally reached the east coast of Groote Eylandt.

The *wirinikapara* group of mythical creatures consists of a jungle-fowl, *Inigubura*; a serpent, *Aitja*; a bandicoot, *Banguruk*; a fresh-water tortoise, *Jumununda*; and a crab, *Unwala*.

The *oranikapara* group is smaller. It is made up of a stingray, *Imadoija*; a saw-fish, *Ingurudungwa*; a goose, *Inigia*; and a water-goanna, *Tilbukuna*.

(a) THE WIRINIKAPARA GROUP

In the time of creation, this group of ancestors lived at Amakula, south-eastern Groote Eylandt.¹⁸ Becoming dissatisfied with their surroundings, they decided to leave Groote Eylandt and travel through Bickerton Island to the mainland.

15. This suggests that the *arawaltja* ceremony is a comparatively recent intrusion from the mainland, and that the original culture of Groote Eylandt still exists on the eastern coast. I did not gather much information about the east coast culture.

16. Warner (1937), ch. 10.

17. The tribe is divided into two halves or moieties, the *wirinikapara* moiety and the *oranikapara* moiety. The *wirinikapara* correspond to the *dua* moiety on the mainland.

18. Map, Fig. 4.

After leaving Amakula, the serpent, the crab, the turtle, the jungle-fowl and the bandicoot travelled by sea to southern Bickerton Island, landing on the northern shores of Boswini Bay.¹⁹ From there they moved across the south-westerly arm of Bickerton Island, creating the watercourse which runs into Boswini Bay and a number of small waterholes, caves and eroded boulders at Munultjira, each of which is associated with one or another of those mythical ancestors. The group then left Uralili Bay, western Bickerton Island, for Wurindi, on the mainland. However, they did not stay long at Wurindi, but continued their journey further inland, travelling along an unidentified river, Waltari (created by the serpent, *Ailja*), until they reached the waterhole, Jara-uaa, where, according to the Groote Eylandters, most of these ancestors still live. Not any of the Groote Eylandt aborigines have seen Jara-uaa; it is too far outside their tribal country. At each of the stopping places (Amakula, Munultjira, Wurindi and Jara-uaa) their camps and the paths by which they travelled became waterholes, streams, swamps, rocky outcrops, or other topographical features.²⁰

(b) THE ORANIKAPARA GROUP

The stingray, *Imadoija*, and the saw-fish, *Ingurudungwa*, when travelling along the shores of Blue Mud Bay, made their first camp at Wunda-wunda,²¹ on the eastern side of Bennett Bay. Some time later the two mythical creatures, wishing to continue their journey, swam southward along the coast of the mainland, camping first at Windana and later at Amataita. From the latter place they crossed the sea to Groote Eylandt, then journeyed across country, creating the Angoroko River on the way, and finally reached the east coast. Two rocky outcrops now mark their last resting place.

The goose, *Inigia*, starting from Bunmara-kaitja, on the shores of Blue Mud Bay, travelled with the stingray and the saw-fish through Wunda-wunda and Amataita; then, taking a different route via Bickerton Island, reached his final camp not far from that of its former companions.

The fresh-water goanna, *Tilbukuna*, although, in a minor way, associated in the ceremonies with the *oranikapara* group, did not leave the mainland. This goanna is looked upon as a friend of the stingray, *Imadoija*, and his design is painted on the bodies of the *oranikapara* performers in the *arawaltja* ceremonies (Pl. 14C).

(4) THE SOCIAL ORGANIZATION

As it is with the ancestors and their division into the *wirinikapara* and *oranikapara* moieties, so it is with the aborigines. Each member of the tribe, by birth and descent, belongs not only to one of the moieties, but to a totem within that moiety. Also, each aboriginal looks upon a certain animal ancestor as

19. Map, Fig. 4.

20. Fuller details of the routes of the ancestors associated with the *arawaltja* ceremony, and the totemic places created by them, are included in the description of the relevant bark paintings.

21. Map, Fig. 4.

his personal forbear,²² and because of this is limited to the use of the songs,²³ paintings and stories which belong to his own ancestor. No aboriginal would sing a chant, paint a design or tell a story which belonged to the men of any other totem without their specific permission. To do so would not only be an unforgivable breach of etiquette, but would expose the guilty one to the anger of, and possibly punishment by, the offended group.

Although both moieties took part in the *arawaltja* ceremonies, the *wirinikapara* was the dominant group.²⁴ The symbolism of the three houses in which the sacred poles were stored, and of the dancing ground, *inikina*, all related to the mythical stories of the *wirinikapara* moiety. Also, the first dances were performed by the *wirinikapara* men; in fact, of the ten secret dances only two, the stingray and the goose, belonged to the *oranikapara*.

(5) THE BARK PAINTINGS, MYTHS AND SONGS

It is from the interpretations of the bark paintings, and the associated songs and totemic places, that I have gathered the detailed information of the journeys and adventures of the *arawaltja* ancestors. Eight bark paintings have been chosen to illustrate the *arawaltja* ceremony; five belong to the *wirinikapara* and three to the *oranikapara* moiety.

The *wirinikapara* paintings are

- The serpent, *Aitja*
- The jungle-fowl, *Inigubura*
- The fresh-water tortoise, *Jumununda*
- The bandicoot, *Banguruk*
- The crab, *Unwala*.

The *oranikapara* paintings are

- The stingray, *Imadoija*, and the saw-fish, *Ingurudungwa*
- The goose, *Inigia*
- The water-goanna, *Tilbukuna*.

(a) THE WIRINIKAPARA ANCESTORS

The Serpent, Aitja

The serpent, *Aitja*, with the fresh-water tortoise, *Jumununda*, the bandicoot, *Banguruk*, the jungle-fowl, *Inigubura*, and the crab, *Unwala*, once lived on the upper reaches of the present Amakula River in south-eastern Groote Eylandt. After a while the party decided to leave Groote Eylandt and travel by sea to Munultjira on Bickerton Island, and from there to the mainland. As the *wirinikapara* ancestors moved toward the coast of Groote Eylandt, the track of *Aitja*, the serpent, became the course of the present Amakula River.

22. There are many of these totemic beings, only a few of which belong to the *arawaltja* ceremony. (See description of bark paintings.)

23. See p. 27.

24. The *dua* moiety on the mainland which corresponds to the *wirinikapara* on Groote Eylandt is also the dominant group in the ceremonial life.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 5. Totem places, Bickerton Island
A Where wirimikapara ancestors landed in Boswini Bay
B, D Waterholes created by the serpent, Aitja C Watercourse created by the serpent, Aitja

At the place where the ancestors landed, near the head of Boswini Bay on Bickerton Island, there is a pile of incinerated human bones and bailer-shells (Pl. 5A).²⁵ From there the serpent led his companions to the rocky hills, the site of Munultjira, his track again becoming a watercourse (Pl. 5C). But when at Munultjira the serpent tried to dig a hole he found that the ground was too hard. Today that spot is a shallow pool of water (Pl. 5D). A little distance away he tried again and was successful. A deep, steep-sided rock-hole (Pl. 6C) now marks the place. When the other ancestors of the *wirinikapara* group left for Wurindi, *Aitja* came out of the ground, making an opening which is yet another rock-hole (Pl. 5B).

From Munultjira the *wirinikapara* group crossed the sea to Wurindi, where, as at both Amakula and at Munultjira, the track of the serpent became the bed of a river. After *Aitja* had camped at Wurindi for some time he continued his journey westward to an unidentified place known as Jara-ua, where he made a large waterhole, which is now his permanent home. *Aitja's* track from Wurindi to Jara-ua is an unidentified river, called Waltari.

THE SONGS²⁶

- | | | | |
|-----|-----------------------------|-------------|---------------------------------|
| (1) | <i>Tjitjabul</i> | <i>akua</i> | <i>Amakula</i> |
| | sacred name of <i>Aitja</i> | water | on south-western Groote Eylandt |
| | <i>Munultjira</i> | | <i>Wurindi</i> |
| | on Bickerton Island | | on mainland |

The serpent, *Aitja*, travelled by water from Amakula River to the Munultjira rock-holes in southern Bickerton Island, thence to Wurindi.

- | | | | |
|-----|------------------|--------------------|---------------------|
| (2) | <i>Nili-kuna</i> | <i>ian-burunja</i> | <i>ian-magatina</i> |
| | walk | small hole in rock | rock too hard |

The song refers to the incident in the mythical story when *Aitja* tried to enter the ground at Munultjira, but found the ground too hard (Pl. 5D).

- | | | | |
|-----|-------------------|-------------------|------------------------|
| (3) | <i>Marul-lupa</i> | <i>marul-lupa</i> | <i>numiun-biana</i> |
| | rocks | rocks | sound of running water |

The sound of the water running through the rocky country at Munultjira, Bickerton Island.

Plate 7C pictures the serpent, *Aitja*. The designs on the body indicate the skin colours which, according to the aborigines, are red on the back and yellow underneath.

Amakula, in south-western Groote Eylandt, is indicated by the right-hand band, *a*, and Munultjira by the left-hand band, *b*. The chevron designs, on either side of *Aitja*, symbolize the ribs and skin colours of the snake.²⁷

25. There is no reasonable explanation for this. Human bones and bailer-shells would have a short life when exposed to the elements, especially on a sea-coast.

26. The songs belonging to the *wirinikapara* are all chanted to the refrain of this moiety.

27. The practice of showing the internal features of a creature, external to the main body, is unusual in Arnhem Land art, although I have observed this symbolism in the art of the Walbrai tribe of northern Central Australia (Fig. 5).

The Jungle-fowl, Inigubura

When the jungle-fowl, *Inigubura* (*Megapodius reinwardt*) lived on the Amakula River, in south-western Groote Eylandt, she scratched together a nest of leaves, in the manner of the present-day jungle-fowl, and laid her eggs. On leaving for the mainland with the rest of the *wirinikapara* group, her nest was transformed into a low, grassy hill, on the sides of which, in the form of more or less spherical boulders, are her eggs.



FIG. 5. An engraved ceremonial tjurunga from Central Australia

At Munultjira, *Inigubura* again made a nest and laid eggs, which have since been changed into eroded boulders (Pl. 8B). *Inigubura* also created one of a chain of rock-holes (Pl. 6B). Still travelling with her companions, the jungle-fowl reached Wurindi, but even though some of the party continued the journey to Jara-aua, the jungle-fowl stayed behind. Her nest and her body were transformed into a rocky hill and her eggs into large boulders.

THE SONGS

- | | | | |
|-----|-----------------------------|-------------------|-------------------------------|
| (1) | <i>Tja-taka</i> | <i>nanin-bila</i> | |
| | sacred name for jungle-fowl | scratch ground | |
| | <i>jauo-lulujur</i> | <i>la-nata</i> | <i>morl-ju</i> <i>did-dji</i> |
| | making mound or nest | large jungle | bush-land egg |

The jungle-fowl scratched up a mound of leaves in the thick bush and in that mound laid her eggs.

- | | | | | |
|-----|--------------|-----------------|------------------|-----------------------|
| (2) | <i>Gurga</i> | <i>nakantja</i> | <i>tugunubi</i> | <i>maidingo</i> |
| | shake | ashes | fire in distance | fire starting to burn |

When the jungle-fowl, *Inigubura*, saw a bush-fire start up in the long grass, she made a song about the incident. Known as the 'fire song', it refers to one of the last of the *arawaltja* secret rituals in which the aborigines first extinguish a number of small fires, then ceremonially destroy the nest of the jungle-fowl, a heap of sand piled round the central pole of one of the sacred houses (Fig. 6C).

- | | | | |
|-----|--------------------|---|--------------------|
| (3) | <i>Jinwulu</i> | <i>dari-waipu-daru</i> | <i>mulugu-dari</i> |
| | see the fish | stick spear in back | skin the fish |
| | <i>wuru-murumu</i> | <i>lapatali</i> | |
| | eat the fish | edge of mangrove swamp where fish is caught | |

Although my informants claimed that this song belonged to the jungle-fowl, it is associated with fishing magic. If this song is chanted when searching for



A



B



C



D

PLATE 6. Totem places, Bickerton Island

A Waterhole created by Banguruk, the bandicoot

B Waterhole created by Inigbutura, the jungle-fowl
 D Waterhole created by the fresh-water tortoise, Jumanunda

C Waterhole created by the serpent, Aitja

barramundi, the aborigines will both see the fish more quickly and spear it more easily.

Plate 7D shows two jungle-fowls, *Iwigubura*. The designs on their bodies refer to marks on the plumage. The long rectangle at the base is the Milky Way, *ataluma*, which is not, as far as I am aware, associated with the jungle-fowl myth.

The Fresh-water Tortoise, Jumunuuda

The fresh-water tortoise, *Jumunuuda*, was also a member of the *wiriwikapara* group of ancestors who lived on the upper reaches of the Amakula River, south-western Groote Eylandt.

When the serpent, the bandicoot, the jungle-fowl and the crab left Amakula River for their journey through Bickerton Island to Jara-uaa on the mainland, *Jumunuuda* accompanied them. Although he seems to have created only one natural feature, a waterhole on Bickerton Island (Pl. 6D), he was responsible for leaving many cycad trees at three of the places at which he camped, Amakula, Wurindi and Jara-uaa (Pl. 22D). As the cycad provides abundant food for the aborigines over many months, *Jumunuuda's* gift is of considerable economic value.

THE SONGS

- (1)
- | | | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <i>Tanjed</i> | <i>woku</i> | <i>mugia</i> |
| coming through the water | surprised to see water | water-lily |
| <i>para-tjaia</i> | <i>ulumu</i> | <i>naru-wait</i> |
| paper-bark tree | split tree | bamboo from which spears are made |
| <i>Pampili-wa</i> | <i>mali-puju</i> | |
| name of unidentified large river | another kind of paper-bark | |

This is known as the 'crab song' of *Jumunuuda*, although the crab is not specifically mentioned. The song apparently refers to the time when *Jumunuuda* made a journey across water and saw many things.

- (2)
- | | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>Marakula</i> | <i>Munultjira</i> |
| Sacred name of fresh-water tortoise | waterhole at Bickerton |
| <i>Waliana</i> | <i>uapuna</i> |
| large hill near Munultjira | finish |
| | <i>mali-kalinou</i> |
| | rock belonging to the kestrel |

This song belongs to the time when *Jumunuuda* created the rock-hole on Munultjira. On his journey to the mainland he saw the totemic place of the kestrel, *Inikaraka*, at Uralili Bay (Pl. 23A).

- (3)
- | | | |
|----------------------|-------------------|------------------|
| <i>Jumunuuda</i> | <i>akua-madja</i> | <i>umbaria</i> |
| fresh-water tortoise | fresh-water place | sit down |
| <i>uia-ambina</i> | <i>auura</i> | <i>nili-kuna</i> |
| stand in water | fire | go away |
| | | <i>umbaria</i> |
| | | sit down |

This song is linked with the sequence in the 'water dance' of the *arawaltja* ceremony, in which the performers stamp their feet to prevent the water draining from the swamp too quickly (p. 50). The aborigines did not explain the reference to the fire.

Plate 7A is a representation of two long-necked fresh-water tortoises, *Jumunda*. These reptiles are eagerly sought among the reeds and mud of the fresh-water swamps, for they are a favourite food.

The Bandicoot, Banguruk

The bandicoot man, *Banguruk*, with his wife and child, lived with the other *wirinikapara* ancestors at Amakula in south-western Groote Eylandt. While there he constructed a shelter of grass for himself and his family which, when he left for Bickerton Island, was transformed into a low, grassy hill.

At Munultjira the bandicoot-man made another grass shelter (the usual covering for bandicoots) which is now a large boulder with a shallow cave at one side (Pl 8A). At Munultjira the bandicoot-man also created a waterhole (Pl. 6A). Moving on to Wurindi, *Banguruk* made yet another nest. Today a small, rocky hill marks the place of that camp. The aborigines believe that he, his wife and his child still live at the totem place of Wurindi, though no one has ever seen them.

THE SONG

<i>Banguruk</i>	<i>burnl-burk-burk</i>
sacred name of bandicoot	playing on the ground
	<i>bian-jabadi</i>
	name of the hole in ceremonial ground

Some bandicoots play on the ground whilst one hides in a hole. This song refers to the spirited bandicoot rituals which were performed in the *arawaltja* ceremonies (Pl. 15C, D) and the hole in which one of the performers is buried.

The painting, Pl. 7B, shows the bandicoot, *Banguruk* (upper right), with his wife. The designs on the body represent the fur of the creatures.

The Mud-crab, Unwala

At the time of creation the mud-crab, *Unwala* (*Scylla serrata*), camped by himself on the Amakula River, south-western Groote Eylandt.

When the pantheon of ancestors left Amakula River for their journey across the sea to Munultjira the crab, *Unwala*, accompanied them. While at Munultjira *Unwala* married, transformed himself into the present-day crab and established a camp at Uralili Bay, western Bickerton Island.²⁸ Later, so the myth relates, *Unwala* left with the other ancestors for Jara-aua on the mainland, where he continues to live with his companions. Yet, in spite of that claim, the aborigines showed me a spring about two hundred yards from the head of Uralili Bay

28. Map, Fig. 4.

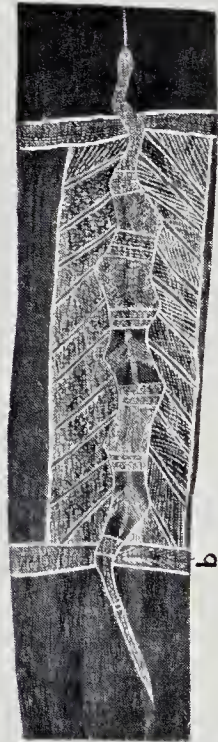
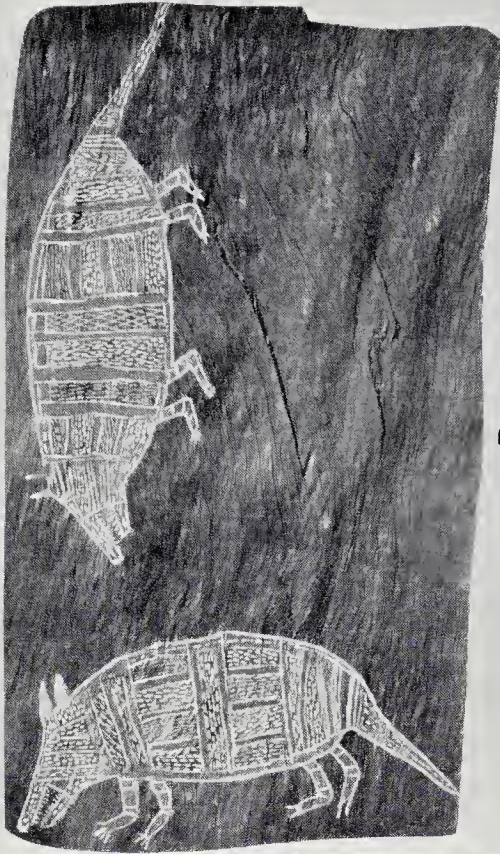
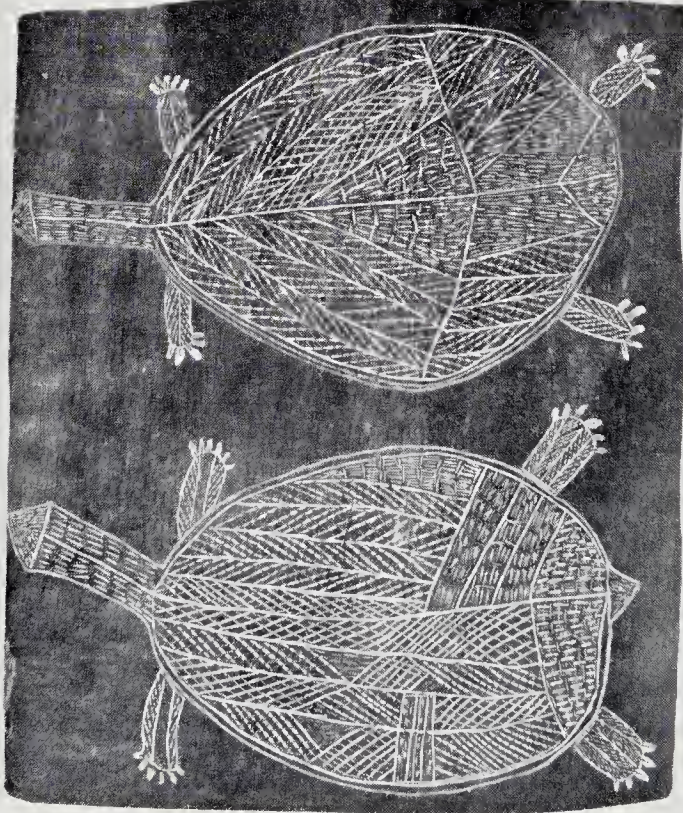


PLATE 7. Bark paintings, Grootte Eylandt
 A The fresh-water tortoise, Juminunda B The bandicoot, Banguruk
 C The serpent, Aitja D The jungle-fowls, Imigubura

(Pl. 8C) where, they said, the crab, his wife and two children still live in a deep cavern beneath the water.²⁹ No one has ever seen the crabs, but the old men told me that they were very large crabs, over two feet across. There are two depressions in the southern cliff which overhangs this waterhole. These are places where the mythical crab-people sat down in the sand, the left-hand one made by the male, and the right-hand by the female (Pl. 8D). In the early days no woman or uninitiated youth was allowed to drink from the Uralifi waterhole. Disobedience meant death by spearing. The taboo, however, has been lifted in more recent years and the locality is now a favourite camping place.

The song of the crab, which also belongs to the fresh-water tortoise, *Jumun-unda* (p. 30), is chanted by the *wirinikapara* moiety at the *arawaltja* ceremonies. In the same rituals, the aborigines perform a particularly spirited crab dance (Pl. 13C).

Plate 9B shows the male and female crabs. This painting is an example of the fine brush work of the Groote Eylandt artists.*

(b) THE ORANIKAPARA ANCESTORS

The Stingray, Imadoija, and the Saw-fish, Ingurudungwa

The stingray, *Imadoija*, and the saw-fish, *Ingurudungwa*, both members of the *oranikapara* moiety, travelled together during creation times.

These ancestors began their journey at Wunda-wunda, a place near a small fresh-water creek in Bennett Bay (map, Fig. 4). Leaving Wunda-wunda, the pair entered the water and, travelling round Cape Barrow, camped at Amataita, where the saw-fish ancestor made a small fresh-water creek. From Amataita the stingray and the saw-fish set out eastward for Groote Eylandt, transforming themselves from human beings to sea-creatures. On reaching the western shore of Groote Eylandt they continued their journey overland, the saw-fish cutting out the channel of the present Angoroko River. Finally, the saw-fish and stingray reached Uralgurupa on the eastern coast of Groote Eylandt, near Lake Hubert. This was their final camp. Today their bodies are groups of rocks on the sea-shore.

The first two songs are chanted to the *oranikapara* refrain of the *arawaltja* ceremonies and the other two, possibly because they are non-sacred, to a different refrain.

THE SONGS

(1)	<i>Ingurudungwa</i> saw-fish	<i>jina-makara</i> saw on nose	<i>itjun-biatjuna</i> rested	<i>nili-kuna</i> walked
	<i>nangara</i> ran	<i>Lilrapa</i> country belonging to saw-fish	<i>numun-guluna</i> sleeps	

29. This apparent contradiction of the ancestral creatures being present in two different places at one time is common in aboriginal myths.

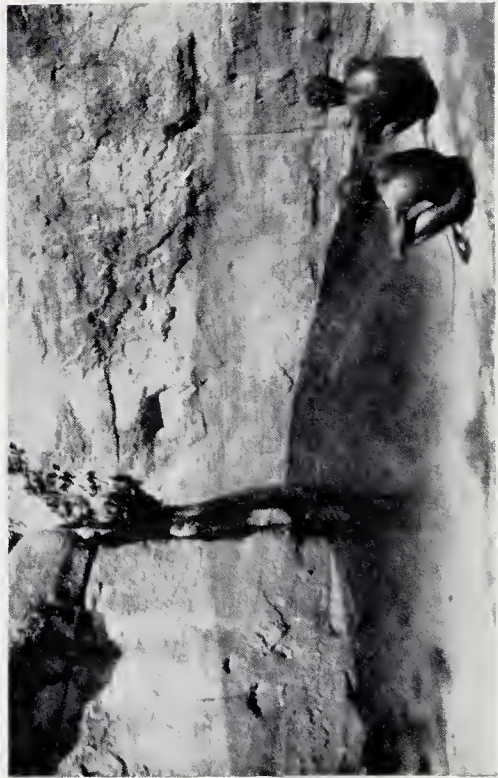
* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XXX.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 8. Totem places, Bickerton Island
 A The nest of the bandicoot, Banguruk
 C Waterhole of the mud-crab, Unwala
 B Eggs of the jungle-fowl, Imigubura
 D Places where Unwala sat

The saw-fish travelled to a locality, Lilrapa, in eastern Groote Eylandt. On that journey he rested and slept many times.

(2)	<i>Junguru-walma</i> Milky Way in sky	<i>junguru-gulri</i> Milky Way shining	<i>pupu-walma</i> star in sky
	<i>gunawul-pulja</i> another part of Milky Way	<i>gi-daio</i> stay there	<i>mandaku-manda</i> wants to move

According to my informants this song belongs to the stingray, although its name is not mentioned. Its meaning, also, is obscure. The song may be either one 'made' by the stingray when he saw the stars shining in the sky, or it may refer to an unidentified aboriginal constellation.

The two non-secret songs of the stingray do not appear to be associated with the *arawaltja* ceremony, although the words refer to eastern Groote Eylandt and the locality, Lilrapa, which is mentioned in the sacred stingray song.

(3)	<i>Amanin-danwa</i> stingray	<i>lili-kuna</i> walked	<i>nanbi-tjuna</i> jumped into water
	<i>Mandunupa</i> locality, eastern Groote Eylandt	<i>Lilrapa</i> an adjacent locality	<i>umbaria</i> stays or camps

The stingray travelled by water and land to several localities on eastern Groote Eylandt, where he camped.

(4)	<i>Imadoija</i> stingray	<i>nikum-batjuna</i> resting	<i>lili-kuna</i> walks	<i>nangara</i> runs
	<i>nia-wundja</i> two together	<i>numun-guluna</i> sleeps	<i>Niarapa</i> locality, eastern Groote Eylandt	

Two stingrays travelled to Niarapa, eastern Groote Eylandt. They rested and slept many times whilst on the journey.

Plate 10B deals with the travels of several ancestral beings. Reading from the top, the upper panel contains: *a*, a saw-fish, *Ingurudungwa*, and *b*, three stingrays, *Imadoija*. The next panel, *c*, represents the Angoroko River in the process of being created by two saw-fish and a stingray.

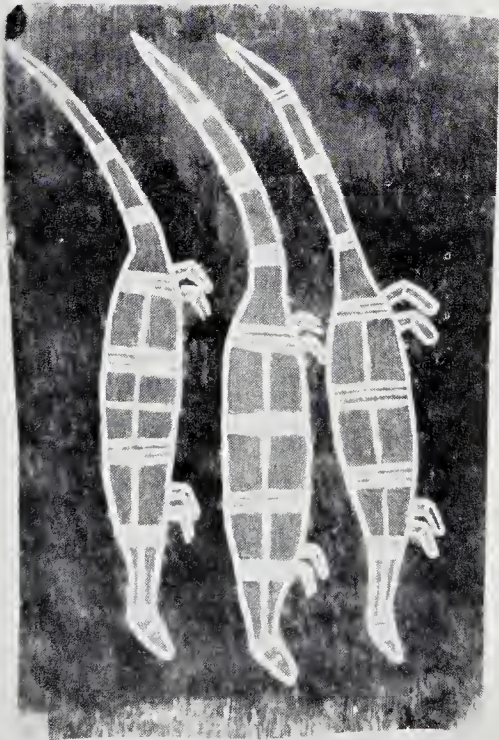
The lower panels, *d*, *e* and *f*, deal entirely with the travels of the man, *Junduruna*, and his family.

Plate 9C pictures the saw-fish, *Ingurudungwa*, and three stingrays creating the Angoroko River. There is no reference in the myth to the two spiny ant-eaters.

The Pied Goose, Inigia

The pied goose, *Inigia* (*Anseranas semipalmata*) and his wife once lived at Bunmara-kaitja, at the northern end of Blue Mud Bay.³⁰ Two large trees now mark the place. *Inigia*, with his wife, travelled from Bunmara-kaitja to Umbalja,

30. Map, Fig. 4.



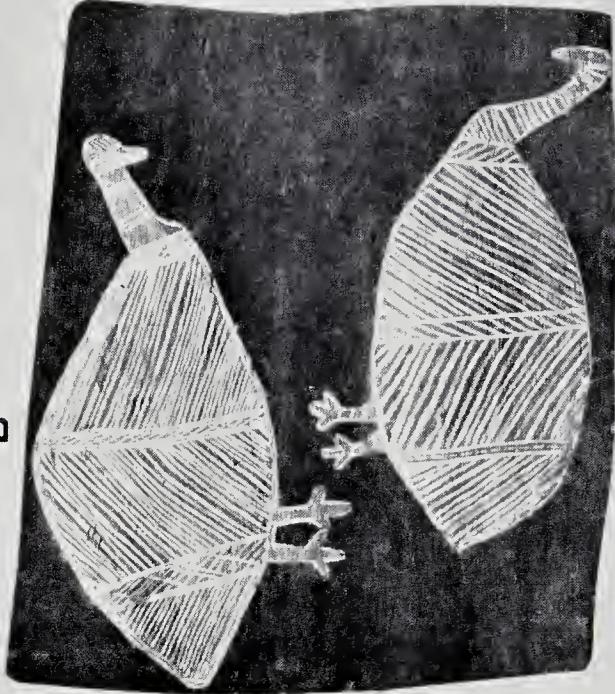
A



B



C



D

PLATE 9. Bark paintings, Grootte Eylandt

- A Water-goannas, Tilbukuna
- B Mud-crabs, Unwala
- C Stingrays, Imadoija, and saw-fish, Ingurudungwa
- D Pied geese, Inigia

THE ART OF GROOTE EYLANDT

a few miles south of Bennett Bay. In their search for *rakia* bulbs (*Heleocharis sphacelata*), the geese scratched a large but shallow depression in the ground which, on their departure, became the Orando swamp. Their camp, after departure, was transformed into two trees. The geese then travelled southwards to Amataita and thence to Wunda-wunda. At both places pairs of large trees now grow where the ancestors camped. At that time the goose and his wife were man and woman, but on reaching the eastern coast of Bickerton Island they transformed themselves into a pair of pied geese.

Later, when they left Bickerton Island for Amalipa on Groote Eylandt, two stones, instead of two trees, marked their camping place. From Amalipa the geese travelled to a place near Central Hill, where they stayed for a while. From here they moved to their final resting place, Oraitjadu-madja, near Lake Hubert. At each of these later localities two large rocks show where the geese ancestors once camped.

The pied goose, *Inigia*, was in creation times a friend of the stingray, *Imadoija*. The drawing of the goose appears on the sacred stingray poles of the *arawaltja* ceremonies of Groote Eylandt (Pl. 14A, B). His song also is chanted to the refrain of the *oranikapara* moiety, and his ceremony performed both on the beach and in the hut of the *oranikapara* men.

THE SONG

<i>Inigia</i>	<i>akua</i>	<i>mia-tura</i>	<i>koluna</i>
goose	water	goose food, <i>rakia</i>	waving in the wind
<i>jura-mura</i>	<i>wira-wira</i>	<i>matinja</i>	<i>kalpilo-munda</i>
is there	sky	feather	wing
			<i>wita-munda</i>
			neck

The goose sees the food, *rakia*, growing in the water and waving in the wind. Using his feathers and wings he flies to the place.

There is little to be said about the painting, Pl. 9D. This conventionalized design with little variation is used by the Groote Eylandters whichever bird they are endeavouring to represent.

The Water-goanna, Tilbukuna

The water-goanna, *Tilbukuna* (*Varanus varius*), was a friend of *Imadoija*, the stingray, when the latter was living near Blue Mud Bay. His design is painted on the bodies of the men of the *oranikapara* moiety of the *arawaltja* ceremonies (Pl. 14C). Although the refrain of this song of *Tilbukuna* was not recorded, it is likely to be the same as that belonging to other *oranikapara* songs.

THE SONG

<i>Tjamtana</i>	<i>mura-huna</i>	<i>kara-kai-tuna</i>
(<i>Tilbukuna</i>) swims	goes under water	comes out
	<i>gangau-waiwai</i>	
	stops on bank	

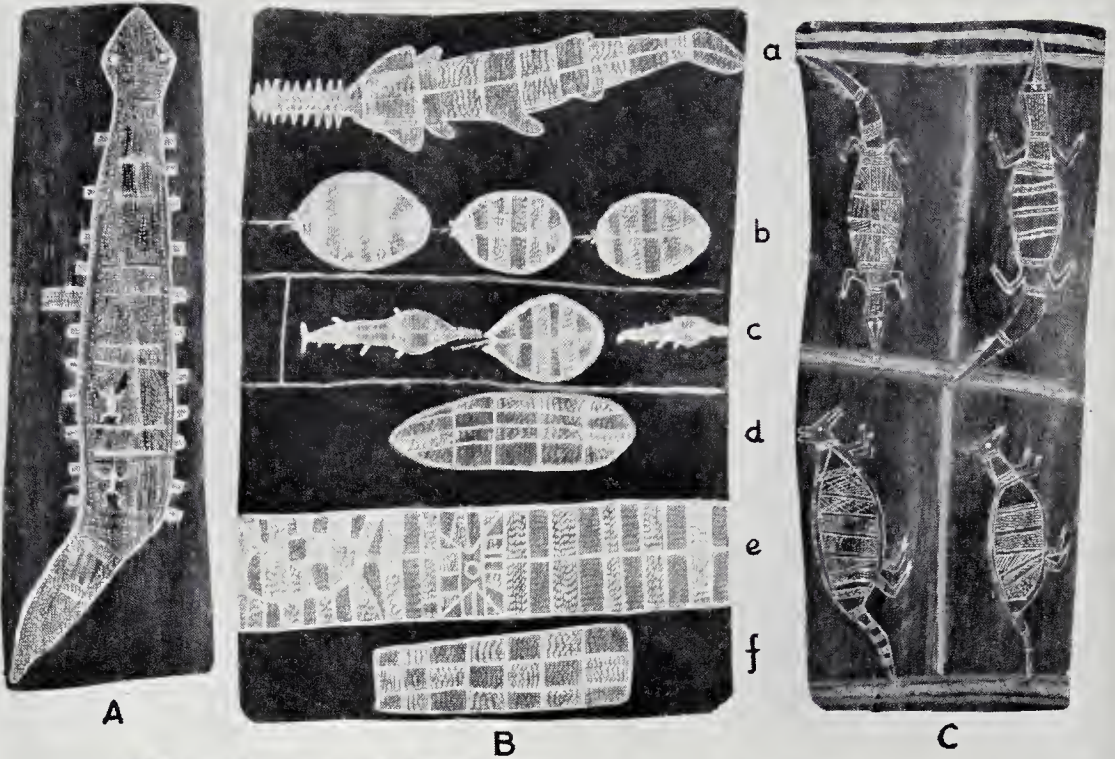


PLATE 10. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt

- | | |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| A The snake-woman, Jiningbirna | B Stingrays, Imadoija, and saw-fish |
| C The crocodile, Tungarapia, and the wallaby, Ubraitja | Ingurudungwa |
| | D The turtle, Imoraka |

The song describes the habits of the water-goanna, which spends part of its time in the water and part on the land.

Plate 9A shows three water-goannas. These creatures, which are two feet six inches to three feet long, gain their living in the fresh-water swamps by eating small fish and crustacea. Some water-goannas enter the sea. They are eagerly sought by the aborigines for food.

(6) TIME OF PERFORMANCE OF THE CEREMONIES

The *arawaltja* ceremonies are held usually toward the end of the dry season (September-October), when the cycads (*Cycas media*) are in full fruit,³¹ and generally at places where the cycads grow in sufficient numbers to provide food for the participants, such as Amakula and Amalipa on Groote Eylandt and Wurindi on the mainland. But this is not always so. In 1945 the ceremony was held at Uralili Bay, western Bickerton Island, the cycad nuts being transported by canoe from Wurindi;³² in 1947 at the mouth of the Angoroko River, adjacent to a mission station; and in 1948, when I was able to see it, at the mouth of Arua Creek,³³ about three miles west of Umbakumba, our base camp. Although, on that occasion, some of the food was provided from the expedition stores, the men often went fishing and the women collected crabs and other sea-foods from the nearby coral reefs.

(7) DESCRIPTION OF THE CEREMONIAL GROUND

The ceremonial ground, called the *inikina*, was situated in a dense monsoon forest near the Arua creek and about two hundred yards from the sea-shore.

An ellipse (Fig. 6A) about a chain in length and eight feet in width was cleared of bushes and grass, and all roots dug out so that they could not injure the feet of the performers. The sand and leaves taken from this area were heaped round the periphery to the height of about six inches. The major axis of the ground was east and west. The aborigines were most insistent about this because, they explained, the direction of travel of the ancestors of both moieties had been either easterly or westerly.

The three houses³⁴ (Fig. 6B, C, D) were built from the branches of trees; C and D, to the south of the *inikina*, belonged to the *wirinikapara* moiety, and

31. The nut of the cycad, which has to be soaked in running water for several days to remove the poison, provides an abundant food supply for the aborigines. After the nut is removed from the water, the women pound it into flour from which an unleavened bread is made. The ceremonial eating of this bread is part of the *arawaltja* rituals (p. 56), as it is of the *narra* rituals of the mainland. Warner (1937), p. 355.

32. Tindale (1925), p. 86, mentions Amalipa, on Bickerton Island, and Wurindi, at Cape Barrow, as places where this ceremony was held.

33. Map, Fig. 4.

34. Tindale (1925), pp. 84-90, describes discarded ceremonial houses at Amalipa and decorated wooden slabs, which he called Jiminda (probably those of *Jumununda*, the tortoise), which were buried in the floor of the houses, and a hearsay account of the ceremony. I saw three discarded houses in western Bickerton Island, and others at the Angoroko River, also the ceremonial poles at the latter place. Although the descriptions given by Tindale varied considerably in detail from the *arawaltja* ceremony which I witnessed, the general pattern was the same.

B, to the north, to the *oranikapara* moiety. B and D were circular, about six feet in diameter; C was eight feet square, with a central pole supporting the roof. A mound of sand, about two feet high, and heaped round the central pole, symbolized the nest of the jungle-fowl, *Inigubura*.³⁵

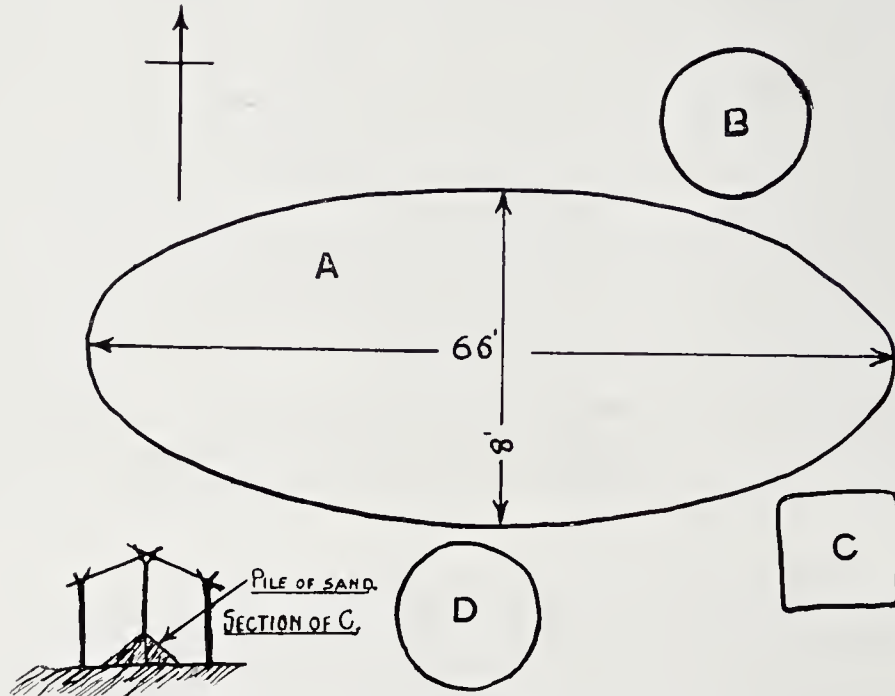


FIG. 6. The arawaltja ceremonial ground and houses

A wealth of meaning is associated with the ceremonial ground and the three bush houses. The oval ceremonial or dancing ground, *inikina* (Fig. 6A, Pl. 13A) represents the river Waltari (myth, p. 27), which was created by the serpent, *Aitja*, while travelling between Wurindi and the waterhole Jara-aua. The three bush houses (Fig. 6B, C, D) are symbolical of three waterholes at Jara-aua: B is Munoi-bia, C Numbili-bia, and D Nungar-kulu. These waterholes, which are supposed to be similar in appearance to those at Munultjira (Pl. 6), belong to one or another of the three resident *wirinikapara* ancestors.

(8) DESCRIPTION OF THE CEREMONIAL POLES

Within those three houses at the ceremonial ground were stored the sacred poles of the ancestors of the *arawaltja* ceremony. In one house, Fig. 6B, were three poles of the stingray, *Imadoiia*; in another, Fig. 6C, two of the serpent, *Aitja*; in the third, Fig. 6D, two of the fresh-water tortoise, *Jumununda*. The ceremonial poles were painted in the jungle some distance from the *arawaltja* ground and when finished, wrapped heavily in paper-bark so that they could

35. The jungle-fowl scratches up a large mound of leaves in which the female lays her eggs. The bird does not sit on her eggs, the rotting vegetable matter providing sufficient heat for incubation.

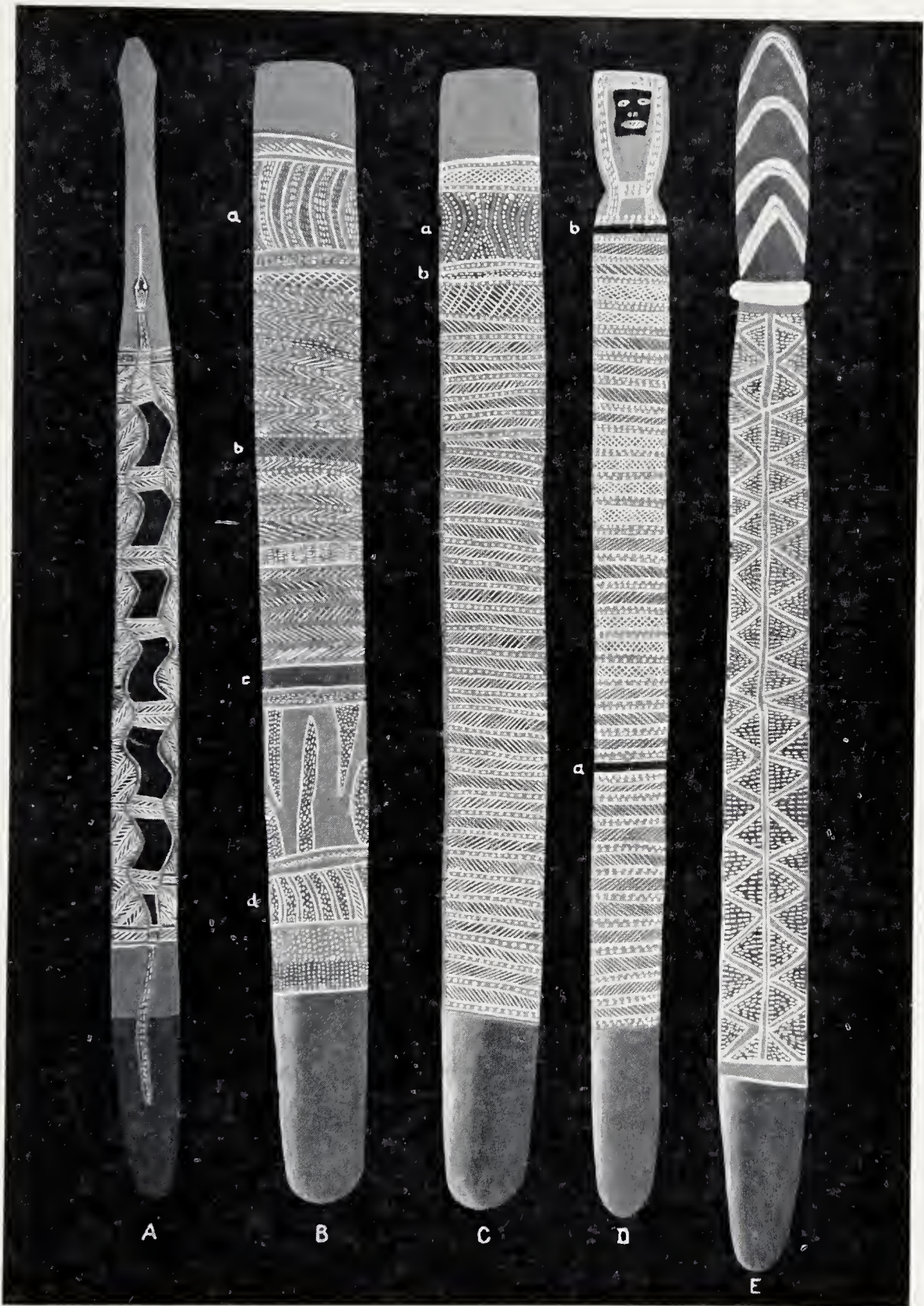


PLATE II. Ceremonial poles, Groote Eylandt

Jean Truan

A The serpent, Aitja

B, C, D The tortoise, Jumununda

E The jungle-fowl, Inigubura

not be seen by unauthorized people; then, under the cover of darkness, they were brought to their respective bush houses.

(a) THE FRESH-WATER TORTOISE, JUMUNUNDA³⁶

These two poles were oval in section, one (Pl. 11D) being about seven feet long and four inches wide, and the other (Pl. 11B, C) about four feet long and five inches wide. The designs on these sacred objects symbolized incidents in the mythological story dealing with the travels of the tortoise, *Jumununda*.

In Pl. 11D the face, partly carved, partly painted,³⁷ represented the fresh-water tortoise when he was a man. The dotted transverse bars are the cycads, *mununa*, which *Jumununda* planted on the banks of the Amakula River (myth, p. 30), and the cross-hatched panels between the dotted bands, the grass that grows between the cycads. The two transverse dark-coloured bands, *a* and *b*, indicate the Amakula River. Plate 12D shows a native painting the face on another tortoise pole.

On the other pole the symbolism is slightly different. On the obverse side, Pl. 11B, the boomerang-shaped designs, *a*, indicate small unidentified streams which run into the Amakula River, and the dotted lines immediately below, running water. The lines of dots and the intermediate cross-hatched bands have the same meaning as those in Pl. 11D, i.e. cycads with the grass growing between them. The lighter toned cross-hatched area, *b*, is the path of the fresh-water tortoise at Amakula; the darker band, *c*, the river itself. The meandering design below *c* is the river at Wurindi on the mainland, beside which the tortoise planted more cycads, and the boomerang-shaped lines, *d*, below, unidentified streams nearby with which the tortoise is associated.

On the reverse side of the pole, Pl. 11C, the upper curving lines, *a*, are clouds with the rain falling from them, and *b*, the cross-hatched area below, a stream at Amakula which belonged to the fresh-water tortoise. The dotted bars, as before, symbolize the cycads, and the cross-hatched panels the grass growing between them.

(b) THE SERPENT, AITJA

This pole, Pl. 11A, made from an oval slab of wood, somewhat in the shape of a snake, was about six feet in length and four inches in width. The design on either side represents the serpent, *Aitja*. As in the bark painting (Pl. 7C), the upper and lower horizontal bands refer to the river at Amakula and Wurindi respectively, and the chevron patterns on either side of the body of the serpent, the ribs of the creature. When I asked why the serpent did not have a face like that on the pole of the fresh-water tortoise, the natives explained that the serpent was never a human being, not even in creation times.

36. Although the bandicoot, *Banguruk*, had no ceremonial pole, he was supposed to share the house (Fig. 6D) with the fresh-water tortoise.

37. The face was carved on the ceremonial pole of the fresh-water tortoise used during the 1947 *arawaltja* ceremony at Angoroko (Pl. 12A).



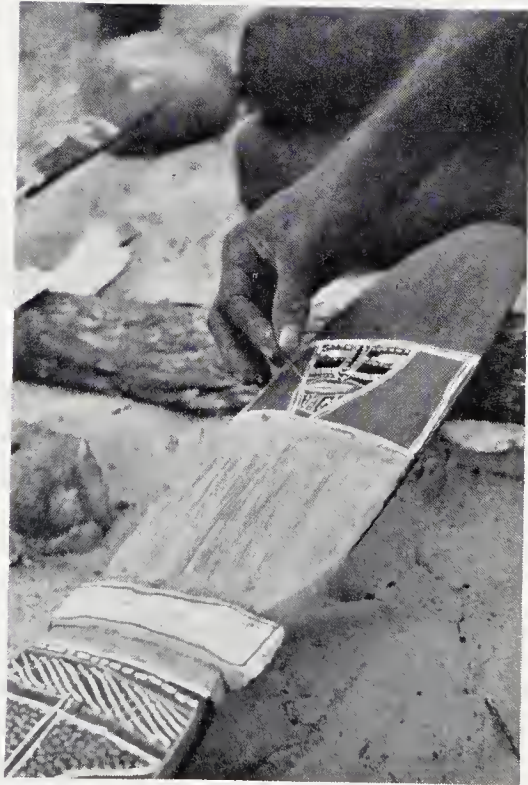
A



B



C



D

PLATE 12. The arawaltja ceremony

- A Old pole of the fresh-water tortoise, Jumununda
- C Wirinikapara men painting for the ceremony

- B Dance of the stingray, Imadoija
- D Painting the pole of the fresh-water tortoise, Jumununda

(c) THE JUNGLE-FOWL, INIGUBURA

Plate 11E was one of the ceremonial poles belonging to the jungle-fowl, *Inigubura*. It was somewhat oval in section, about four inches in width, and seven feet in length. Although the jungle-fowl poles used in the 1948 ceremony did not have a face engraved upon them like that of the fresh-water tortoise, those used in the 1947 *arawaltja* ceremony (which the aborigines dug out of the floor of the old ceremonial huts to show me) had the eyes, nose and mouth cut into the soft wood (Pl. 12A). Instead of the engraved face are boomerang patterns which symbolized clouds, whilst the lines in the main design, which cover both sides of the *Inigubura* pole, refer to unidentified streams associated with the jungle-fowl. The dotted areas within the triangles represent the water which runs in those streams.

(d) THE STINGRAY, IMADOIJA

Three of these cylindrical poles, Pl. 14A, B, about five feet long and about three inches in diameter, were stored in house Fig. 6B. Although these sacred objects belonged to the stingray, *Imadoija*, the design pictures the pied goose, *Inigia*, feeding on the swamp grass, *rakia*, a favourite food of both the geese and the aborigines. Pl. 14A shows the complete design, in the centre panel of which is the pied goose eating the bulbs of *rakia*. Several bulbs of this swamp plant are also shown in two of the upper panels. The chevron and cross-hatched patterns on the pole are symbolical of the leaves of the *rakia* growing in the shallow water. This swamp grass is also mentioned in the song of the goose, *Inigia*, p. 37.

(9) DECORATION OF THE PERFORMERS

The body painting of the performers of the *arawaltja* was not so elaborate an operation as it is in Central Australia, nor did it appear to have the same deep ritual significance.

To the tribes of Central Australia, the decorating of the ceremonial leaders with human blood and eagle-down and the chanting of the related totemic songs are probably the most important part of the rituals, for whereas the body painting and the chanting take an hour, perhaps even more, the actual dance usually lasts but a few minutes.

In Groote Eylandt, the men painted themselves with red, yellow and white pigments ground with water on a stone into a cream-like consistency, then applied with a chewed bark brush (Pl. 12C). Human blood was not used.³⁸ The *oranikapara* men, seated in or beside the sacred house (Fig. 6B) of the stingray, *Imadoija*, each painted the figure of the water-goanna, *Tilbukuna*, on his abdomen, and red designs outlined in white, extending from his fore-arms, over his shoulders and down to his chest (Pl. 14C). The *wirinikapara* men, who usually sat within the bush house of the serpent and jungle-fowl (Pl. 12C), each painted

38. This is unusual in aboriginal ceremonies. Although Warner (1937), p. 281, records extensive blood-letting in the *djungguan* and *gunabibi* rituals of the Murrigin, he makes no mention of the same practices in the *narra*, a ceremony which closely resembles the *arawaltja*.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 13. The arawaltja ceremony
A The ceremonial ground B The dance of the young stingrays
C The dance of the crab D The opening dance

his legs and abdomen with a yellow U-shaped pattern cross-hatched in red (Pl. 14D). Several of the men carried round their necks small 'spirit' bags filled with native cotton and soft bark. As the wearer of this bag passed through the *arawaltja* rituals the bag, absorbing some of the spirit, or life essence, of the ancestors, became increasingly powerful. *Jindia's*³⁹ spirit bag, which he had carried through four *arawaltja* ceremonies, had become especially efficacious in protecting him during a fight, or in assisting him in healing magic.

(10) DESCRIPTION OF THE CEREMONY

The *arawaltja* ceremony can be divided into four main phases:

- (a) The opening ritual in the jungle
- (b) The rituals in the sacred ground
- (c) The non-secret rituals on the beach
- (d) The final rituals in the ceremonial ground.

(a) THE OPENING RITUAL

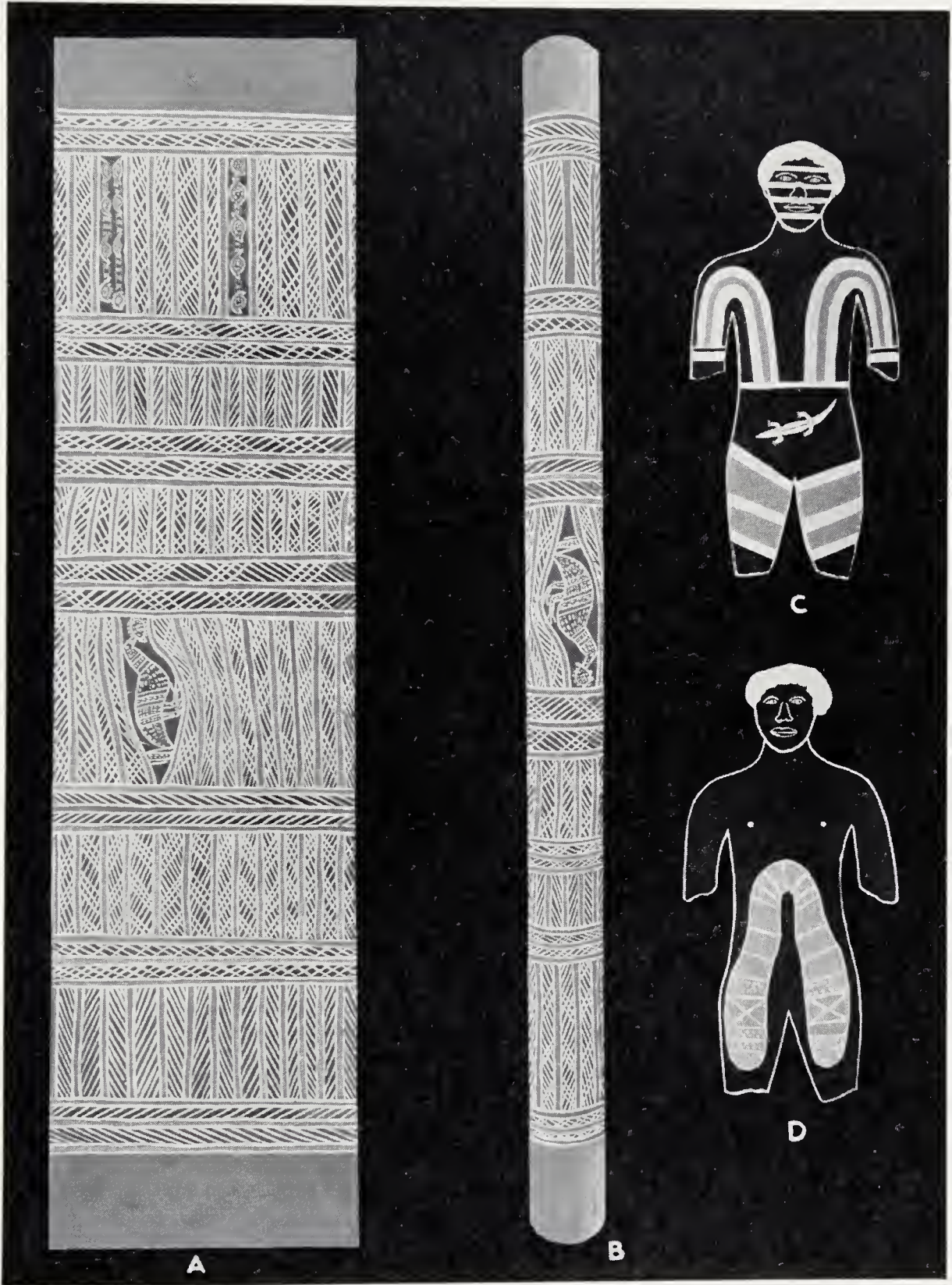
This simple but impressive ritual was performed on the evening following the completion of the ceremonial ground, *inikina*, and the building of the huts in which were stored the sacred *arawaltja* poles.

Two men, one representing the serpent, *Aitja*, and the other the fresh-water tortoise, *Jumununda*, seated themselves by a small fire in the deep gloom of the monsoon forest. It was dark, and their figures could be seen but dimly. For a while there was silence, no sound whatever but the wind in the tree-tops high overhead and the movements of the night creatures in the dense undergrowth. One of the men started to beat his music sticks together, then to chant a song of the travels of the serpent, *Aitja*, to the slow impressive refrain of the *wirinikapara* moiety.

For several minutes the strange haunting refrain continued. Then slowly from the darkness came two other men, each holding in his hand a cigar-shaped bundle. Standing directly behind the singer, the men moved the bark bundles backward and forward over them for several minutes, keeping in time with the music. Then, without warning, the two men left the singer and disappeared in the gloom. Almost immediately, dull thuds were heard in the jungle alongside, the two men rose to their feet, left the fire, and the opening ceremony was over.

The function of this simple ritual was to call the totemic ancestors from the ceremonial ground of the previous year (where they had been living in association with the buried ceremonial poles) to the new locality. The paper-

39. The *National Geographic Magazine*, December 1949, p. 779, shows *Jindia*, one of the leaders of the *wirinikapara* group, wearing a 'spirit' bag. Due to an editorial error, the article states that 'it [the bag], examined by the scientists, revealed a medicine man's needle to "cure sick persons".' This was a mistake, for the 'spirit' bag, when examined, contained only native cotton and bark.



A

B

C

D

PLATE 14. The arawaltja ceremony

Jean Truan

A, B Poles of the stingray, Imadoija C Body designs of the oranikapara moiety
 D Body designs of the wirimikapara moiety

bark bundles,⁴⁰ the *alukwira* (Pl. 16C) were once the beating sticks of the serpent and the fresh-water tortoise. They were swung over the heads of the singers to 'draw' the music from them; in other words, to make them sing better. The dull thudding sounds, made by beating the ground with the *alukwira*, told the totemic ancestors the position of the new ceremonial ground.

(b) THE RITUALS IN THE SACRED GROUND

The next day, in the middle of both the morning and the afternoon, the first series of six dances was performed on the dancing ground, the *inikina*. These dances were continued every day whilst the *arawaltja* ceremonies were in progress. All the men who attended the ceremony participated in the rituals, but only those of the relevant moiety took leading parts, the *wirinikapara* men acting the serpent or the fresh-water tortoise, and the *oranikapara*, the stingray.

The wooden trumpet, or didjeridoo,⁴¹ which plays so important a part in some of the ceremonies of the Murngin and those which I witnessed at Oeupelli and Yirrkalla, was not used in the *arawaltja*. In fact, the performers seldom chanted the totemic songs⁴² whilst the ceremony was in progress, but often mumbled, in a low tone, the 'big',⁴³ i.e. sacred, names of the serpent, the stingray, and the other ancestors. Paired beating sticks, about twelve inches in length, were used to mark the rhythm of the dance.

As I was able to see the rituals in their entirety, and those in the first part of the ceremony many times, I had an opportunity to note the movements of the various dances in considerable detail. This I did, knowing from past experience that insignificant details, easily passed over, often have a deep esoteric meaning.

There were nine dances altogether, the opening one belonging to both moieties. The second, third, fourth, seventh, eighth and ninth belonged to the *wirinikapara*, the fifth and six to the *oranikapara*, moiety. The seventh, the dance of the crab, *Unwala*,⁴⁴ and the eighth, that of the bandicoot, *Banguruk*, were performed twice. The ninth, a more elaborate dance of the bandicoot, was performed only once.

The Opening Dance

The men of both moieties first assembled in the centre of the *inikina* ground, then walked silently backwards and forwards the whole length of the ground three or four times (Pl. 13D), dragging their toes through the soft sand. For another six times they continued the same action, except that, as they turned at the end, the performers raised their hands above their heads and struck their

40. Similar bark bundles are used in the *narra* ceremonies of the Murngin (Warner, 1937). They are also used in the *Laitjun* and *Banaitja* ceremonies of Blue Mud Bay and Yirrkalla.

41. A European name for the aboriginal drone tube or wooden trumpet.

42. The songs that told of the adventures of the ancestors of the *arawaltja* ceremony were often chanted in the main camp.

43. The 'big' or sacred name is not mentioned within the hearing of either uninitiated youths or women.

44. Totem place of the crab, Bickerton Island, Pl. 8C.

music sticks together. After that the men again assembled in the centre of the *inikina* and called to the ancestors in a loud voice. Instantly, the dull thuds of the bark bundles, the *alukwira* (Pl. 16C), were heard in the sacred houses of both moieties.

The sandy dancing ground, the *inikina* (Pl. 13A), represented the river Waltari, which was created by *Aitja* as he travelled from Wurindi to Jara-aua,⁴⁵ the soft sand being symbolical of the water through which the serpent and the other ancestors walked. The striking together of the music sticks, the loud call, and the beating of the bark bundles on the floor of the sacred house, all told the ancestors that the rituals were about to begin.

The next three dances belonged to the serpent, *Aitja*, and the fresh-water tortoise, *Jumununda*. In the dances the performers faced west, because the serpent and the tortoise travelled in that direction.

*The Dance of the Serpent, Aitja, and the Fresh-water Tortoise,
Jumununda*

The performers stood in the centre of the ground, moving from foot to foot and murmuring, in a low tone, the sacred names of the serpent and the tortoise (possibly, also, the names of the waterholes they had created), whilst *Jindia*, the leader of the fresh-water tortoise group, ran to the western end of the *inikina* and postured for a few seconds (as in Pl. 15A). He then returned, postured similarly, and rejoined the group, who stamped their feet in unison to a loud *yah-yah*.

Following that, two other men, impersonating the serpent, *Aitja*, ran to the western end and, with arms outstretched, palms vibrating and feet wide apart, stared belligerently into the distance (Pl. 15B). They returned, stood in front of the main group, postured again, then, like the *Jumununda* actor, rejoined the group, who stamped the ground to the accompaniment of a loud cry.

Three times the actor impersonating *Jumununda*, the tortoise, and those representing the serpent, *Aitja*, ran to the western end and postured in the traditional manner before the *Jumununda* and *Aitja* dances were finished. The men then looked toward the sacred houses (Fig. 6C, D), in which the sacred emblems were stored, raised their arms and, striking their music sticks together, called out loudly and belligerently.

The posturing of the first actor, *Jumununda* (Pl. 15A), symbolized the time when his mythical forbear, the fresh-water tortoise, travelled inland from Wurindi. He was searching for the waterhole, Jara-aua, which had been created by his companion, the serpent. The belligerent attitude adopted by the serpent actors (Pl. 15B) was a re-enactment of *Aitja's* anger when he saw that a stranger (unidentified) had polluted his waterhole, Jara-aua. The sound of the music sticks and the loud, threatening calls of the men at the completion of that

45. Map, Fig. 4.

dance announced to the serpent ancestor that, for the time being, his rituals were over.

The Dance of the Fresh-water Tortoise, Jumununda

After the dismissal of the serpent, *Aitja*, the actors again assembled in the centre of the *inikina*, while *Jindia*, the leader of the fresh-water tortoise group, intoned a long announcement in a high-pitched voice. As far as I could gather, this was a recital of the waterholes created by the *wirinikapara* ancestors as they travelled from Amakula on Groote Eylandt to Jara-uaa on the mainland. At the end of each announcement everyone called out loudly. This was repeated three times.

Then, as *Jindia* ran forward and postured as he had done in the previous dance of the tortoise (Pl. 15A), the other performers moved from foot to foot, and murmured the sacred name for the fresh-water tortoise. After a few seconds *Jindia* returned, postured and joined the group, who stamped the ground, making loud calls and grunts. This sequence was repeated four times.

I gathered little information about the significance of this part of the ceremony, except that it belonged entirely to *Jumununda*, who was looking for the waterhole, Jara-uaa.

The Water-dance of the Fresh-water Tortoise, Jumununda

In this spirited dance the men assembled in a circle in the middle of the *inikina*, whilst again *Jindia* made a loud announcement, the meaning of which I did not gather. The actors then formed themselves into two lines facing each other and, holding their spear-throwers in both hands at waist level, vigorously stamped their way from the eastern to the western end of the ceremonial ground to the accompaniment of loud grunts (Pl. 16A). They paused for a while before they stamped their way back to the centre. When this dance had been repeated twice, the actors, looking towards the sacred house of *Jumununda*, called out loudly.

The dance represented a time when *Jumununda* was walking through the swamps on the mainland. The aborigines believe that this dance has the effect of preventing, or at least retarding, the flow of the water in the streams which drain the swamps. The call to the *Jumununda* house was an instruction to the tortoise to make the water run more slowly from the swamps.

The Dances of the Stingray, Imadoiija

The two remaining dances (v and vi), which belonged to the *oranikapara* moiety, dealt with episodes in the life of the stingray man, *Imadoiija*. These dances took place on the eastern end of the *inikina* because the *oranikapara* group, the stingray, the goose and the saw-fish, all travelled in that direction.

In the first part of this dance the actors walked awkwardly up and down the dancing ground, the *inikina*, in time with the beating of the music sticks, whispering, in low tones, the sacred names of the stingray. Twice they ran the

length of the ground, led by one of their number who dragged the point of his spear through the soft sand. Then all assembled in the centre whilst *Tatalara*, the leader of the stingray totem, made a loud announcement describing episodes in the journey of the stingray.

After that the men walked quietly to the eastern end of the *inikina* and assembled in two lines. *Gurubunja*, one of the leaders of the *Imadoija* totem, standing a few paces in front of the group, postured, swinging himself from side to side in time to the beating of the sticks, his body rigid, shoulders thrown back, arms raised and fingers outstretched (Pl. 12B). He then turned, faced the other men, postured in a similar manner, then joined them to the accompaniment of loud shouts. Two men went out in front and repeated the postures of the first actor, then returned to their companions. These actions were repeated several times. Following them *Gurubunja*, the first actor, facing the other performers, drew the point of a spear through the sand, in time to the beating sticks, whilst everyone took a step sideways in unison with the movement of the spear. The man repeated this action several times before he again walked with a curious swinging motion to the eastern end, stuck the spear in the sand beside him and postured as before. This movement was repeated another five times before the dance of the stingray was finished.

When the stingray lived as a man he had a slow and awkward walk. The rigid attitude of the single performer (Pl. 12B), with his arms held tightly backward and fingers outstretched, was symbolical of the *Imadoija's* awkward method of progression. The spear represented the sword of the stingray and the action of sticking it in the ground a reminder of the dangerous wound that the stingray can inflict.

The Dance of the Young Stingrays

At the completion of the previous dance, the aborigines walked to the centre of the *inikina* ground to perform the final one of that series, the dance of the young stingrays. After *Tatalara*, the leader, made a loud announcement which referred to some exploit of his ancestor, the stingray, most of the performers arranged themselves in two lines, while six men knelt, each on one knee, arms held rigidly backward and fingers outstretched, beating time with the other foot in unison with the tapping of the music sticks (Pl. 13B). For a while they knelt thus, until the leader called out in the native tongue, 'Come along little stingrays, that way is too slow, walk this way.' The aborigines impersonating the young stingrays crawled on their hands and knees for a short distance, then reverted to their kneeling position, with their foot tapping the ground to the rhythm of the stick-beats. When *Tatalara* exhorted them to try again, they crawled a few more steps, then resumed their old position, until, by many stops and starts, they reached the eastern end. Three times more the young stingrays, continuously exhorted by *Tatalara*, traversed the sandy *inikina* before the men, with a loud cry, threatened to throw their beating sticks toward the *Imadoija*

house (Fig. 6B). Straightway the heavy thuds of the bark bundles, the *alukwira*, announced that the rituals were complete.

The young stingrays, not knowing how to walk as men, were being taught how to do so by the totemic leader, *Tatalara*. This dance is, no doubt, the re-enactment of some phase of the mythical story of the stingray, *Imadoija*, the details of which I did not collect.

Every morning and afternoon for the next three days the aborigines left their camp by the Arua Creek, travelled to the *arawaltja* sacred grounds, and performed, without variation, the six dances already described. On the afternoon of the fourth day, however, the routine was broken by the inclusion of two particularly spirited dances, both belonging to the *wirinikapara* moiety, one of *Unwala*, the crab, and the other of the bandicoot, *Banguruk*.

The Dance of the Crab, Unwala

The aborigines stood in a ring, linked hands, and started to dance in a clockwise direction, whilst *Jindia* (the actor of the crab, *Unwala*) waited on the outside. When the dancers had completed one revolution, *Jindia* ran into the centre of the circle and started to beat his music sticks together. The dancers then closed in to a smaller circle and danced, first clockwise, then anti-clockwise, stamping the ground with such vigour that the dust rose in clouds (Pl. 13C). This dance was short and spirited and probably did not last more than a minute. It was repeated once.

This short dance symbolized the time when, at Uralili Bay, Bickerton Island, a number of unfriendly crabs surrounded the home of *Unwala* and would not allow him to enter. He finally succeeded in dodging them and reached the safety of his home, much to the delight of *Unwala* and the chagrin of his opponents.

The Dance of the Bandicoot, Banguruk

On the same day, the aborigines staged the first sequence of the bandicoot dance. The opening movements of this dance were similar in many respects to those of the water-dance of *Jumununda*, the tortoise. The actors started by walking up and down the ground, dragging their feet and calling out, 'Ah, ah' in time to the beating of their music sticks. After twice traversing the *inikina* the men assembled in the centre whilst four of their number, representing young bandicoot men, sank on their knees and elbows, and started to crawl in the sand, their outstretched arms and vibrating hands throwing the dust in all directions. Surrounded by the other actors, shouting excitedly as they beat their sticks together, the four bandicoot-men, lying low on the ground, crawled first to the eastern end of the *inikina* ground, then to the western end. The strenuous efforts of this dance so exhausted the four actors that, on its completion, they lay on the ground without moving for several minutes.

The dance referred to a time when four young bandicoots were playing in the sand at Wurindi.⁴⁶ The song of the bandicoot (p. 31) refers to this incident.

46. Map, Fig. 4.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 15. The arawaltja ceremony
 A The dance of the serpent, Aitja B The dance of the tortoise, Jumnununda
 C, D The dance of the bandicoot, Banguruk

The Second Dance of the Bandicoot, Banguruk

Three days later the aborigines acted the second dance of *Banguruk*, the bandicoot. On that occasion I was not allowed to go near the ceremonial ground until the preparations were complete. At the *inikina* nothing seemed to have been altered except that near the western end there was a small mound of grass, about eighteen inches long and twelve inches wide (Pl. 15C).

The ceremonies of the day started with the dances of the serpent, *Aitja*, and the fresh-water tortoise, *Jumununda*, the performers carefully walking either side of the grassy mound.

The start of the bandicoot dance had a similar order to that on the previous occasion. The four men impersonating the young bandicoots, their bodies low on the ground, their arms outspread and hands beating the ground, crawled first toward the eastern end, then toward the grassy mound on the western end, while the rest of the aborigines, clustering around them and dancing backward, called out excitedly as they beat their music sticks together. As the dancers and actors neared the mound (an aboriginal was seated on either side of it, Pl. 15C) the grass started to move and from it emerged yet another bandicoot man (Pl. 15D). He held a cigar-shaped object in his mouth and, using the same vigorous movements as the other actors, advanced toward the four bandicoot men who, led by the other dancers, turned about, crawled to the eastern end and started the dance afresh.

This time, as the actors and dancers approached the single bandicoot man, he first started to tremble, then, with the palms of his hands beating the ground, crawled toward the four young bandicoot-men. As soon as they met, all the actors sat upright, their hands outstretched, and the performance was over.

The basic meaning of the second dance of the bandicoot was the same as the first, except that the performer buried in the sand was an additional factor. As previously, the four men crawling in the sand were young bandicoots of creation times, playing together at Wurindi. The buried performer represented a young bandicoot from Bickerton Island who, seeing the other bandicoots, also wanted to play. The four bandicoots first ran away from the stranger, but finally returned. The ceremonial object held in the mouth of the single performer symbolized his tongue.

(c) THE NON-SECRET RITUALS ON THE BEACH

On the same afternoon as the second dance of the bandicoot was staged, the aborigines erected two small tree-trunks⁴⁷ on the beach, in full view of the main camp, against each of which they placed a forked stick. The western pole belonged to the *wirinikapara* and the eastern to the *oranikapara* moiety.

At the completion of the sacred ceremonies the performers travelled in single file toward the beach, those in front being members of the *wirinikapara* moiety

47. Warner (1937), pp. 349, 357, refers to non-sacred rituals of the *dua* and *jiritja narra* which were performed around a tree in the women's camp. The *arawaltja* rituals were similar, except that the women do not take an active part.

and those at the rear, the *oranikapara* moiety. As the men walked, the *wirinikapara* moiety called out in a high-pitched trilling note, which was answered by those at the rear. This intermittent calling continued until the party reached the beach.

The Dance of the Serpent and the Tortoise

As usual, the *wirinikapara* men performed their rituals first. *Jindia*, holding a tasselled spear-thrower in his hand (Pl. 16E), called the serpent and the fresh-water tortoise to the new place of ceremony, whilst the men, walking round the *wirinikapara* tree-trunk, mumbled the sacred names of the serpent and the tortoise in low tones. The performers then carried out a simplified form of the serpent dance, posturing with arms outspread as before.

The Dance of the Stingray

When the *wirinikapara* non-secret rituals were complete, *Tatalara*, of the *oranikapara* moiety, mounted on the tree-trunk on the eastern end, and to the accompaniment of the guttural sounds of the men as they murmured the sacred name of the stingray, called his ancestor, *Imadoija*, to the ceremony. The non-secret dance of the stingray performed on the beach was totally unlike that which had been performed in the sacred *inikina* area. In the first non-secret dance the two leaders, *Tatalara* and *Gurubunja*, walked in single file a few paces in front of the other performers (Pl. 16D), holding their spears parallel to the ground and bent in the form of an arc.⁴⁸ After going a few yards the main group stood still, whilst the two leaders walked round them in opposite directions, meeting again in the front. This dance was repeated three times before *Tatalara* and *Gurubunja* walked round the *oranikapara* tree-trunk, this time side by side, their spears still held in the same position as before, followed by the remainder of the performers. Three times the actors covered the circuit, the two leaders posturing and stamping heavily in the sand to the accompaniment of the calls of the men and the beating of the sticks. At the completion of the dance the actors drove their spears into the sand, everyone gave a loud shout, and the non-secret rituals were over for the day.

As far as I could ascertain, the dances of the serpent, *Aitja*, and the fresh-water tortoise, *Jumununda*, were not associated with any specific myth; they were merely symbolical of the two ancestors.

In the stingray dance, the bent spear represented the sword in the tail of the creature and when, at the conclusion of the dance, the spear was driven into the ground, the action symbolized the stingray attacking with his sword.

Eating the Ceremonial Bread

The next afternoon, at the *inikina* ground, the sacred dances of the serpent, the tortoise, the crab, the bandicoot and the stingray were performed for the

48. Warner (1937), p. 344, records that the actors in the *dua narra* ceremony of the Murngin carry their spears in a similar manner.

last time. At the conclusion of the sacred dances the men again walked in single file to the beach and there performed the non-secret dances of the serpent, tortoise and stingray. When the stingray dance was completed the men, instead of returning to camp as previously, split into their respective moieties, danced a peculiar hopping step, singing at the same time, until they reached the base of the sandhills about fifty yards distant, where they seated themselves. After a period of about a minute, a man from each moiety rushed back to the tree-trunks—the *wirinikapara* man to the *oranikapara* trunk, and vice versa—and, picking up a pile of cakes which had been placed there previously,⁴⁹ took them back to the sandhills to be eaten by the assembled men.

The Final Rituals on the Beach

About the middle of the morning all the men assembled at the foot of the sandhills, in full view of the main camp, and painted themselves for the final rituals. The *wirinikapara* group then came down to their ceremonial tree-trunk and danced *Aitja* and *Jumununda*. The *oranikapara* men climbed over the crest of the sandhills and returned to the beach in single file, walking with a graceful skipping step, with their hands held high in the air, swinging their spears. As they neared the stingray pole, five men formed themselves into a circle and, squatting down, picked up handfuls of sand and threw it into the air.

This simple dance referred to the time when, at Umbalja⁵⁰ on the mainland, the geese ancestors picked the bulbs of the *rakia* and ate them.

The Ceremonial Washing

At the completion of the dance of *Inigia*, the goose, the men of both moieties again assembled at the foot of the sandhills in readiness for the ceremonial washing off of the paint from the bodies of the performers. This is the only phase of the *arawaltja* ceremonies in which the women take a part, and then only to the extent of entering the water at the same time as the men and submerging themselves.

Both the *wirinikapara* and *oranikapara* moieties left the sandhills, accompanied by a small boy, and stood on the banks of the Arua Creek, each with the women of their own moiety standing nearby. On this occasion the *orani-kapara* (stingray) moiety took the western position (the stingray came from the west), and the *wirinikapara* (serpent and tortoise) moiety the eastern position, because their ancestors travelled from east to west. The stingray group, after calling to their ancestor, entered the water without hesitation (Pl. 16B) and, with great splashing, washed themselves, while the women submerged both themselves and their children.

49. Normally, these cakes would have been made from the fruit of the cycad by the women. On the occasion with which we are dealing, the aborigines used expedition flour. This ritual, which took place only once during the *arawaltja*, was called *jikara-tjita*. Warner (1937), pp. 355, 370, records the ceremonial eating of bread in the *narra* ceremonies of the Murngin.

50. Map, Fig. 4.



A



B



C



D



E

PLATE 16. The arawalja ceremony

- A The water dance of the tortoise
- B The ceremonial washing
- C The bark bundle, alukwira
- D The non-secret dance of the stingray
- E The non-secret dance of the serpent

The *wirinikapara* (serpent and tortoise) men acted somewhat differently. *Jindia*, as *Jumununda*, walked into the water up to his knees and, after making the usual call to his ancestors, beckoned the others to follow him, but they did not until *Jindia*, dipping his tasselled spear-thrower into the water, splashed it over them. After some hesitancy the men and women of the serpent and tortoise moiety walked into the stream and immersed themselves, the men washing the paint from their bodies and the women splashing each other and the children.⁵¹ When the bodies of the men of both moieties were clean, they left the water and, grouping themselves round their respective tree-trunks and posturing in the traditional manner, called out loudly to their ancestors.

This phase of the *arawaltja* ceremony refers to the time when the mythical ancestors of the two moieties crossed the sea, the serpents and the tortoises, bandicoots and others from Groote Eylandt to the mainland, and the stingrays and their companions moving in the opposite direction, from the mainland to Groote Eylandt. In the myth, as in the ceremony, the stingray, being at home in the water, entered it without hesitancy, but in the *wirinikapara* group the serpent, *Aitja*, being a land creature, was afraid of the sea until the fresh-water tortoise, *Jumununda*, in the person of *Jindia*, walked into the water and splashed the serpent until he became wet. After that, *Aitja* entered the sea and with his companions journeyed to Bickerton Island.

(d) THE FINAL RITUALS IN THE CEREMONIAL GROUND

As soon as the non-secret ceremonies on the beach were finished, the men went quickly to the sacred *inikina* ground for the final rituals of the *arawaltja* ceremony: the fire dance of *Inigubura*, the jungle-fowl, and the dance of the goose, *Inigia*.

The Fire Dance of Inigubura, the Jungle-fowl

As shown in Fig. 6C, the central pole of the house had a mound of sand heaped around it which symbolized the nest of the jungle-fowl, *Inigubura*. On this central mound, and round the inside of the walls of the house, the aborigines built a number of small bark fires. As soon as these fires were blazing freely, the men extinguished the flames round the walls by dropping on their hands and knees and crawling over them.

Once this was done, the men, squatting down, took sand from the floor and the mound and threw it into the air until the central fires were extinguished, the mound destroyed and the floor level reduced several inches.

During the performance the house was so full of human bodies and clouds of sand that it was almost impossible to see what was going on. This ceremony completed the rituals of *Inigubura*.

The two different episodes represented in these rituals were so interlocked that it is difficult to separate one from the other. In the first place, the fires on

51. Warner (1937), pp. 353, 368, noted a similar ritual in the *dua* and *jiritja narra* ceremonies of the Murngin.

the central mound symbolized the eggs of the jungle-fowl, which the performers, impersonating *Inigubura*, extinguished by scratching sand over them.

The significance of the fires round the inside walls of the hut is more obscure but, according to the aborigines, referred to the song (p. 28) which related how *Inigubura* saw a fire start in the long grass. The myth says that that fire started near her nest and she extinguished it by covering it with sand. This, then, appears to be the significance of the ritual, in which the men extinguish the fire by scratching sand over it.⁵²

The Dance of the Goose, Inigia

All of the men then moved to the *Imadoija* house (Fig. 6B), which was much smaller than that belonging to the jungle-fowl, and there assembled in a series of circles, with one man in the centre. In that position they hopped round the house, picking up handfuls of sand and throwing it over each other. This dance was most spirited, and created such a dense cloud of dust that, after the first few seconds, it was impossible to see inside the hut.

This dance had a similar meaning to the dance of the goose staged in the non-secret rituals on the beach. The men hopping round the hut were the geese ancestors at Umbalja, on the mainland, picking up and eating *rakia* bulbs.⁵³

The dance of the goose, *Inigia*, completed the rituals of the *arawaltja*. The sacred poles of both moieties were buried in their respective houses, the participants left and the area was forbidden to all but the fully initiated. Within a few years, the termites under the ground and the bush-fires above will have removed all evidence that a ceremony had been held at that place.

DISCUSSION

An examination of the rituals of the *arawaltja* indicates that it is not an isolated ceremony, but has its counterparts on the mainland. We know, from the research work of Warner,⁵⁴ that the Groote Eylandt ceremony and the *narra* of the Murngin people have many points of resemblance, even though they illustrate different myths, the *arawaltja* ceremony being based on two groups of mythical creatures who travelled either to or from Groote Eylandt (p. 23) and the *narra* on the exploits of the Djungkao sisters.⁵⁵

For instance, in both the *arawaltja* and the *narra* the participants eat a special meal together;⁵⁶ both bathe ceremonially at the completion of the rituals;⁵⁷ both have a fire dance associated with the jungle-fowl;⁵⁸ both use bark bundles in the ceremonies with which they beat the ground;⁵⁹ and both bury

52. Warner (1937), p. 352, records a similar ritual of the *dua narra* ceremonies of the Murngin which belongs to the brush turkey. It is likely that Warner's brush turkey and my jungle-fowl are the same bird. The brush turkey (*Alectura lathami*) is only found on the eastern coast of Queensland. Arnhem Land is the habitat of the jungle-fowl (*Megapodius reinwardt*).

53. The growth of the swamp grass, *rakia*, accounts for the heavy concentration of pied geese in certain areas of the Northern Territory.

54. Warner (1937), ch. 10.

55. Warner (1937), p. 335.

56. Warner (1937), p. 352.

57. Warner (1937), p. 368.

58. Warner (1937), p. 352.

59. Warner (1937), p. 353.

their sacred emblems at the conclusion of the rites, the Murngin in the mud of the totemic well,⁶⁰ and the Groote Eylandters in the floor of sacred houses. From this evidence, and the resemblance of the general form of the ceremony, we can assume that both originated from a common source. The ceremonies of the man *Mandelwilpa*, from the Oenpelli area (p. 461), resemble the *narra* and the *arawaltja* in some respects.

Further research will no doubt show that rituals, similar to the *narra* and the *arawaltja*, extend over the whole of Arnhem Land and southward, until they reach the Central Australian cultures.

2. BARK PAINTINGS, MYTHS AND SONGS

(1) HUMAN BEINGS

The Medicine Man, Mungada

The medicine men, *mungada*, belong to the mainland. There are none on Groote Eylandt. These people are not feared, for instead of practising black magic, as is often supposed, they spend their time curing the sick. This they are supposed to do by sucking foreign objects from the bodies of their patients, the aborigines believing that when these objects, pieces of wood, bone, etc., are removed, the sickness disappears.

Plate 17A shows a medicine man, *mungada*, with paint on his arms, body and legs. The transverse lines across his chest are body scars. Immediately below the scars, held by strings round the neck, is the bag in which the physician carries the charms and paraphernalia of his profession.⁶¹ His familiar spirits also reside in it. The line across the hips is a belt from which hangs a pubic tassel.

An Aboriginal Family

Plate 17B is a bark painting of an aboriginal family. The large figure on the upper right is the father, and to the right of him, the mother suckling an infant. The remaining figures are children of varying ages. The foetus-like form in the centre of the third row from the bottom is another infant.

An Aboriginal Ceremony

This sheet of bark, Pl. 17C, was painted after a circumcision ceremony had been performed near the Umbakumba Creek.⁶² The parallel lines on the left-hand side represent Umbakumba Creek. Musicians who provided the music for the ceremony are shown in the upper row of human figures. The man in the centre is blowing the wooden trumpet, or drone tube, and those on either side are chanting the initiation songs, beating their music sticks together to mark the rhythm. The men in the lower line are performing the ritual dances.

60. Warner (1937), p. 360.

61. Warner (1937), p. 210, describes the 'white' magician of the Milingimbi area, who also carries a 'spirit' bag.

62. Map, Fig. 4.



A



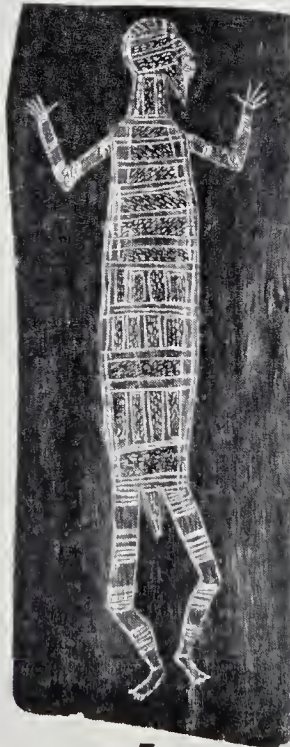
B



C



D



E

PLATE 17. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt

- A The medicine-man, Mungada B An aboriginal family C An aboriginal ceremony
 D The route of the man, Junduruna E The night-dwelling spirit, Gurunnuka

The Man, Junduruna

The man, *Junduruna*, and his family lived, during creation times, at the mouth of the Roper River. After some time they left and, travelling northward along the western shores of the Gulf of Carpentaria, reached Bunmara-kaija, on the northern shore of Blue Mud Bay,⁶³ where *Junduruna* created a large waterhole. From Bunmara-kaija the family travelled across the sea to Aru-ura (sacred name Banupamba), on the eastern shores of Bickerton Island. At the present time, two upright stones mark that camp. Later, *Junduruna* and his family shifted their camp to Amalipa,⁶⁴ an old ceremonial ground on the shores of Bartalumba Bay. Again two upright stones, this time called Wonidjua, mark the place. *Junduruna*, who later camped in a cave at Amalipa in which there are numerous paintings,⁶⁵ taught the aborigines the rites of circumcision, including the ceremonial songs. From Amalipa the family travelled by a devious route to Numbarilja, later creating Central Hill (called by the native name of *Junduruna*), where their bodies are now large boulders.

The stingray, *Imadoija*, and the saw-fish, *Ingurudungwa*, were linked in a minor way with the ancestral man, *Junduruna*, a fragment of the *Imadoija* myth suggesting that *Junduruna* reached the east coast.

THE SONG

<i>Kaia-nuru</i>	<i>nili-kuna</i>	<i>ilapina</i>
secret name of <i>Junduruna</i>	walks	rested

Numbarilja
totem place near Central Hill

Junduruna travelled to Numbarilja, near Central Hill. He rested by the way. As the refrain of this song is the same as that of *mabunda*, the hibiscus tree (p. 92), it is likely that they are associated in the mythical stories. This suggests, from another source, that *Junduruna's* final camp is on the east coast.

The three upper panels *a*, *b* and *c* of Pl. 10B deal with the myth of the stingray and saw-fish (p. 33), and the three lower with the man *Junduruna*.

The oval in panel *d* and the rectangle in *f* represent the two rocks, Wonidjua, which mark the camp of *Junduruna* at Amalipa. The long panel, *e*, illustrates the route of the mythical man from the mainland to Groote Eylandt. The central line, on the right of *e*, separating the series of rectangles, is the route of *Junduruna* from the mainland to Amalipa. The first two rectangles on the right are Bunmara-kaija, and the other rectangles, unidentified localities. The central design of *e* refers to the caves at Amalipa in which *Junduruna* and his family once lived. The oval in the left of panel *e* pictures Central Hill which *Junduruna* created.

63. Map, Fig. 4.

64. Tindale (1925), p. 84, describes deserted ceremonial houses he saw at Amalipa.

65. F. D. McCarthy found many paintings in these caves, one of which, he told me, showed *Junduruna* with his wife under his arm. He also provided me with details of the bark painting (Pl. 10B) and of the route of the *Junduruna* family on Groote Eylandt.

The simple painting, Pl. 17D, indicates (like panel *e* in Pl. 10B) the route of the man, *Junduruna*, and his family as they travelled from the mainland to Groote Eylandt. The upper disc is his camp at Bunmara-kaija, Blue Mud Bay, the central one, Aru-ura, on Bickerton Island, and the lower disc, Anmalipa on Groote Eylandt. The parallel lines between the discs show the route of the mythical people, the breaks at *a* and *b* being the sea between the mainland and Bickerton Island, and between Bickerton Island and Groote Eylandt.

The Night-dwelling Spirit, Gurumuka

The *Gurumuka* is a much-feared spirit being, associated with the spirits of the dead,⁶⁶ who travels only during the hours of darkness. Should the *Gurumuka* see a man by himself at night, he will sneak up and bite him with his long projecting teeth. Within a few days the victim will become sick and, unless saved by the ministrations of a medicine man, will die of violent pains in the head. The *Gurumuka* attacks solitary travellers, but only in the darkness. Therefore anyone is safe as long as he keeps his camp fire burning brightly and does not wander beyond its range. According to my informants, these evil spirits live only at certain localities on the mainland, a belief which makes the Groote Eylandters somewhat hesitant about visiting those places.

Plate 17E pictures the *Gurumuka* painted ready for his evening prow. There are bands of colour round his legs, arms and face, and a series of designs on his body. The large teeth with which he bites his victims project beyond his mouth. His windpipe and neck muscles also are indicated, an example of simple X-ray art.

The Two Men, Nabira-mira

In creation times, a man and his son, the *Nabira-mira*, lived on an island, Ai-aitjura, north-western Groote Eylandt.⁶⁷ One day, the two men were standing on a rocky point, called Namuka-madja, when they saw some fish approaching. The son threw his spear at them but missed, and the spear sank out of sight. The father then threw his spear, which also missed and disappeared. The *Nabira-mira*, annoyed over the loss of their spears, transformed both themselves and their weapons into natural features. The *Nabira-mira* became two low wave-washed boulders on a rocky point, Namuka-madja (Pl. 19D), on the northern side of the island, Ai-aitjura (Pl. 18D), and the spears, two submerged boulders, some distance from the shore, which bear the name of Dumuan-dipa.

THE SONG

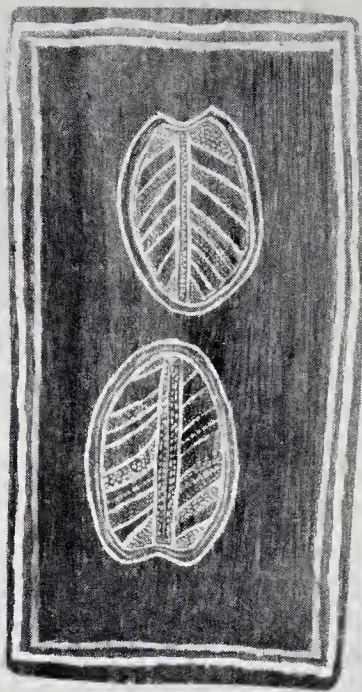
<i>Nabira-mira</i>	<i>Dumuan-dipa</i>
two men ancestors	totemic rocks, under water, of metamorphosed spears
<i>Namuka-madja</i>	<i>Ai-aitjura</i>
totemic rocks of men	name of island

66. Probably a similar spirit to the *Mokoi* of the Yirrkalla people (p. 313) and the *Mamu* of Central Australia (Mountford, 1948, p. 44). The *Gurumuka* also bears some resemblance to the dangerous *Mamandi* at Oenpelli (p. 197), although the latter do not appear to be associated with the dead.

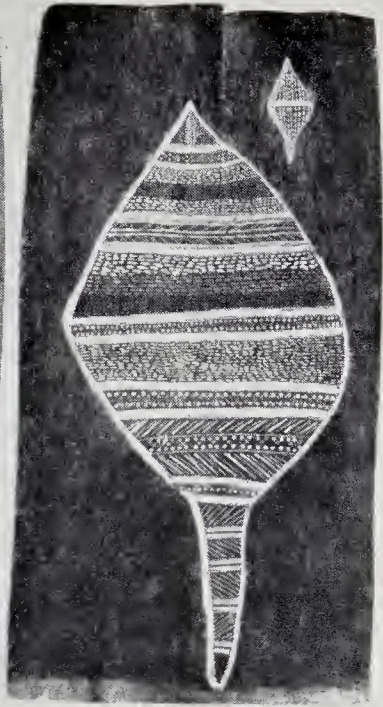
67. Map, Fig. 4.



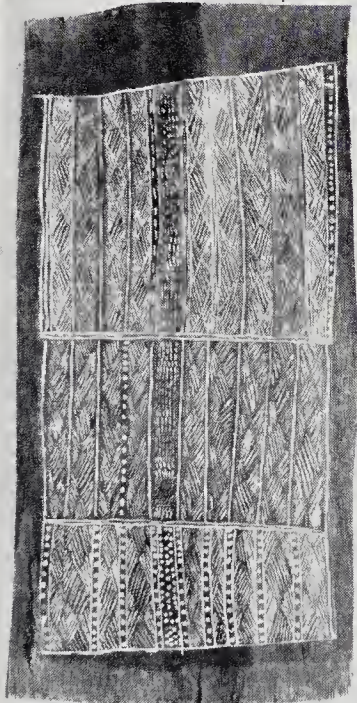
A



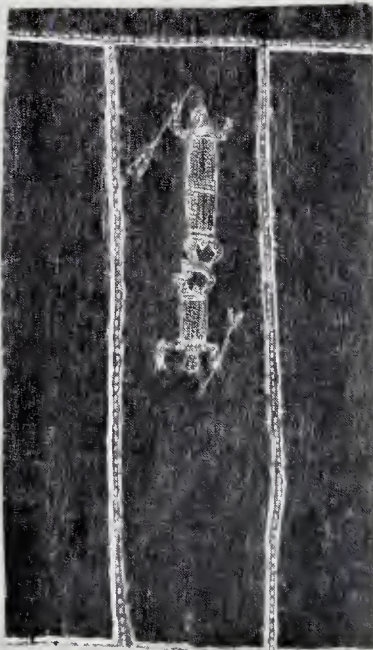
B



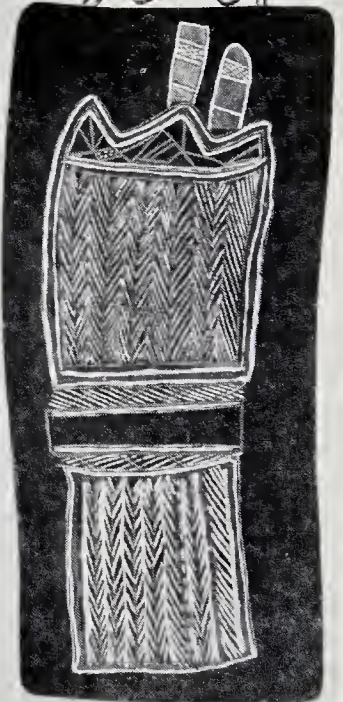
CHEST SCARS →
BELT → C



D



E



F

PLATE 18. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt
 A, B The bailer-shell, Jukuna C The conch-shell, Maini-unda
 D, E, F The two men, Nabira-mira

The song refers to the *Nabira-mira*, the associated totemic rocks of the spears and the island, Ai-aitjura, north-western Groote Eylandt.

Plate 18E shows the two men, *Nabira-mira*, standing together on a rock with fish-spears in their hands.

Plate 18F pictures the islands and the totemic places associated with the *Nabira-mira*. The lower rectangle depicts the submerged totemic rocks Dumuan-dipa, the metamorphosed spears of the *Nabira-mira*; the upper rectangle is the totemic place, Namuka-madja, of the two men.

The two projections on the top refer to the two rocks, the bodies of the *Nabira-mira*. The cross-hatched bands symbolize what were originally chest scars, belts and other personal adornments, but what are now natural markings on the rocks. The meandering line on the upper part of the top figure indicates the outline of cliffs near the totem place, and the chevron designs an attempt to show the erosion marks on the rocks.

Plate 18D represents an island, Ai-aitjura, on which the *Nabira-mira* lived. The patterns indicate the rough, wind-eroded surface of the rocks of the island, which take many strange forms in that locality.

(2) THE ANIMALS

The Dingo

This bark painting, Pl. 20A, pictures a male and a female dingo (*Canis dingo*). The designs on the body are especially attractive. Although I did not collect a mythical story associated with this painting, there is little doubt that one exists.

The Frog, Daduna-kanupa

In the early days of the world the frog, *daduna-kanupa*, with his wife and family, made their home in a series of small waterholes at Munultjira on Bickerton Island. Later, when the whole family changed themselves into small frogs, they went to live in the nearby swamps and lagoons.

Although there was a song belonging to the frog totem, the aboriginal who owned the right to sing it was absent when the recordings were made.

Plate 20B shows the frog, *daduna-kanupa*, his wife and family in their waterholes at Munultjira. The male frog is in the lower panel, the female and the young frogs of varying ages in the upper. The white circles in the central transverse panel are the waterholes at Munultjira, the early home of the frogs, and the surrounding designs the grass which grows at the water's edge.

The Dugong, Inunguluna

The dugong, *inunguluna* (*Dugong australis*), came from a remote locality, called Unabari, near the mouth of the Roper River. He travelled northward along the coast, and crossed over the sea to the western side of Winchelsea Island, where he camped at Arapuna-madja. Today, at that spot, there is a fresh-water spring. When *inunguluna* became tired of Arapuna-madja, he dug a hole



A



B



C



D

PLATE 19. Totem places, Groote Eylandt

A Coco-nut trees and Malay prau,
Bickerton Island
C The Malay prau, Bickerton
Island

B The long-tom, southern Bicker-
ton Island
D The two men, northern Groote
Eylandt

through the earth into the sea beneath⁶⁸ and travelled underground to Adjira-madja, on the eastern coast of Winchelsea Island. The place where he camped is a depression in the sandy soil.

Adjira-madja is an increase centre for dugongs. The aborigines go to the place, chant the dugong song and, picking up the sand, throw it in the direction of each of the horde territories, exhorting the dugong spirits to 'go to Talimbo, go to Bartalumba', and so on. The dugong increase ritual is similar to that carried out in other parts of Groote Eylandt for the increase of parrot-fish, wild honey, and other natural species.

THE SONG

	<i>Jumo-kwaija</i>	<i>amaijuna</i>
	muddy water stirred up by dugong	eating
<i>jinamin-guruna</i>	<i>Apalipa</i>	<i>amiarapa</i>
comes up to breathe	secret name for dugong	stays there
	<i>Aiga-lila</i>	
	sacred name of dugong increase centre on Winchelsea Island	

The dugong, a sea mammal, has to come to the surface to breathe. When the aborigines see the creature submerge, they paddle to that place and sing the above magical chant which exhorts it to return to the surface at the same spot. If the dugong obeys the chant, it is killed.

Plate 20D is the painting of the dugong, the flesh of which is a favourite food of the aborigines. The conventionalized designs on the body represent the skin markings of the animal.

The Kangaroo, Karatjimba

Although the artist knew that the kangaroo belonged to the creation period, and that his totem places were situated somewhere west of Blue Mud Bay, he was not aware of either their exact location or of any associated songs.

Plate 20E illustrates the kangaroo, *karatjimba* (*Macropus* sp.), eating some herbage which it is holding in its hands. The cross-hatching of designs on the body is an attempt to represent the fur.

(3) THE BIRDS

The Sea-eagle, Iniwakada

The sea-eagle, *iniwakada* (*Haliastur indus*), starting from Wunda-wunda, near Bennett Bay, was flying towards Groote Eylandt when, at Anabura-madja⁶⁹ (Pl. 19B), just off the south-eastern corner of Bickerton Island, he saw and caught a gar-fish, *maracuru* (Pl. 20C). The sea-eagle carried the gar-fish first to Bartalumba

68. The Groote Eylandters, essentially sea people, look upon the land as a thin crust resting on the top of the water. Thus, when the dugong became tired of his camp, he had only to dig a hole through that crust to reach the sea beneath.

69. Map, Fig. 4.



PLATE 20. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt

A Dingos B Frogs C Long-toms D The dugong E The kangaroo

Point, then southward along the western coast of Groote Eylandt to Neira-madja, on the lower south-western corner. After the sea-eagle had eaten the fish he collected many sticks, and built himself a nest on a cliff. Today, that nest is a pillar of rock many feet in height.

THE SONG

Inuakada

sacred name of totem place on south-eastern Bickerton Island

<i>mum-batana</i>	<i>tilja-pita</i>	<i>nuapama</i>
(eagle) go to sleep	went hunting	soaring in sky
<i>nambarinja</i>	<i>nuru-kwalja</i>	
caught fish	ate it	

The eagle went to sleep at Inuakada, then woke up and, when soaring in the sky, saw the gar-fish, *maracuru*, caught and ate it.

Although the white feathers on the neck and rump of the sea-eagle are indicated in Pl. 21B, the wings of this large eagle are given little emphasis. The markings on the body indicate the feathers.

The Peaceful Dove, Teracucu

The dove, *teracucu* (*Geophelia placida*), and his family once lived at Junbia (the place of the Malay prau, Pl. 19C) in south-western Bickerton Island.⁷⁰ After a while he decided to shift his camp, so, travelling round the western coast of Groote Eylandt, he established himself at Ambraga, in North-East Island, a few miles from the most northerly part of Groote Eylandt. While journeying round North-East Island, the doves created the natural features of the place, the sand-hills, the rocks and the springs. When *teracucu* moved southward to Amaigama, south-eastern Groote Eylandt, their late camping place on North-East Island became a series of rocks which project above the ground. As far as my informants were aware, the dove and his family still live at Amaigama.

THE SONG

<i>Tunulpa</i>	<i>amaita</i>	<i>oro-ninga</i>	<i>iam-burunga</i>
(dove) sees	grass	string	sits down

The dove sees grass from which string is made. He sits down and makes some.

Plate 21D is a diagrammatic painting of North-East Island and the adjacent islets, all of which were created by the dove-man, *teracucu*.

The main design is North-East Island, Ambraga. On the left-hand side, at *a*, is a small island, Milja-kalu-oupa. The transverse lines, *b*, represent a submerged reef nearby, and the two triangular projections, rocks standing above the surface of the water. The series of vertical lines in the centre of the main design indicate the camp of the dove. It is now a rough, stony plain. Similar groups of parallel

70. Map, Fig. 4.

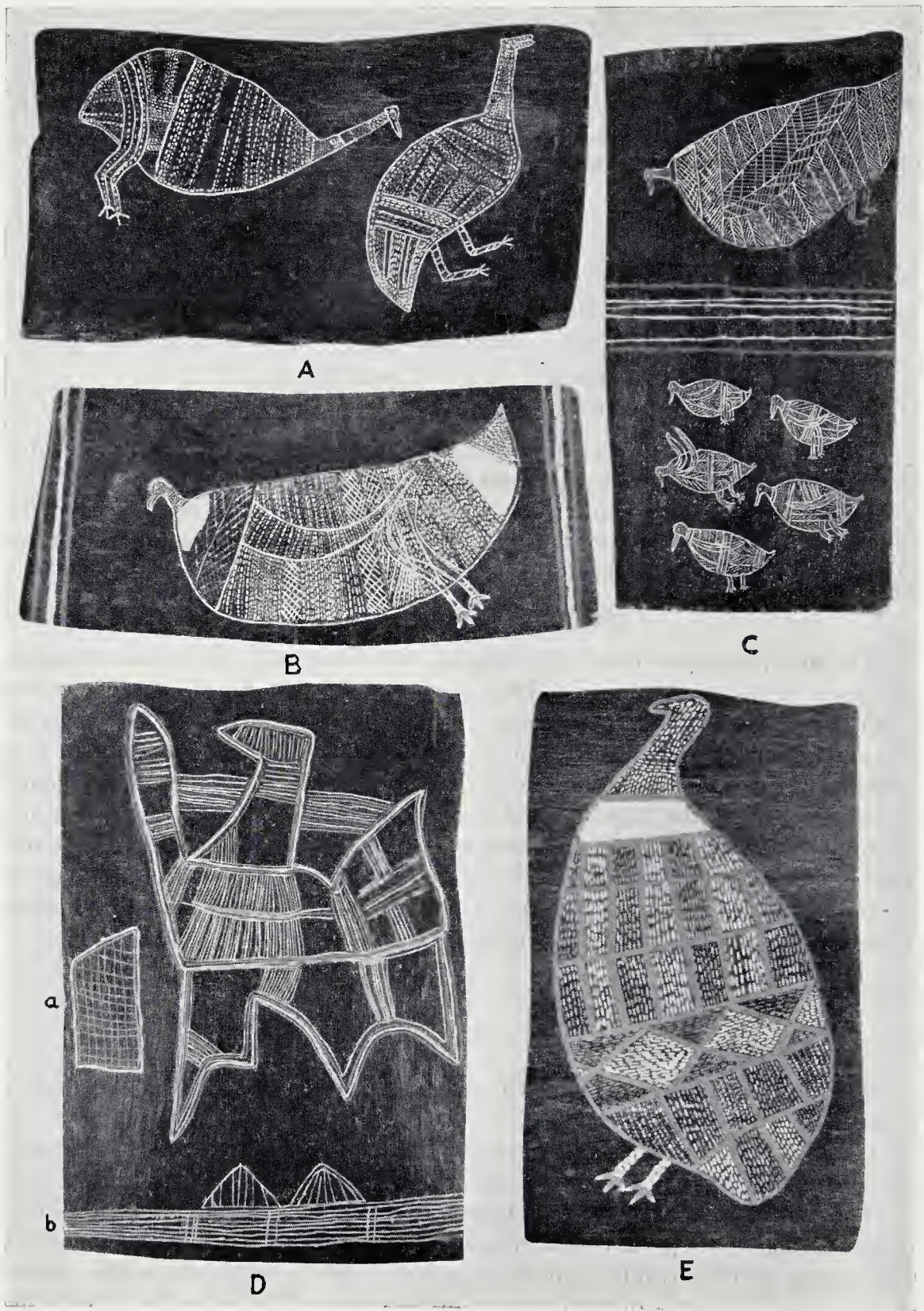


PLATE 21. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt

A The brolgas B The sea-eagle C The kestrels D The north-east island
 E The kestrel

lines represent rocks and trees which were once either the bodies or the camps of the dove ancestor and his family.

Plate 22E is a drawing of *teracucu* and his family. The four chicks are shown in the top panel, and *teracucu*, with his wife on the right, in the lower panel.

The Kestrel, Inikaraka

When the kestrel, *inikaraka* (*Falco ceuchroides*), first appears in the myth he was camped with his wife and children at a totemic place, called Arunagura, on the southern shores of Uralili Bay, western Bickerton Island.⁷¹ At that time he was a man. Every day *inikaraka* went out hunting, bringing back all kinds of food, wallabies, bandicoots, birds and fish, which he cooked at his camp-fire (Pl. 23A, B).

One day the kestrel met the serpent, *aitja*, just as the latter was getting ready to leave Munultjira, in Bickerton Island, for the mainland (myth, p. 27). Another evening the crab, *uwala* (myth, p. 31), seeing the light in *inikaraka's* camp-fire, came across to visit him. The kestrel, *inikaraka*, asked the crab to bring his family and live close by, but *uwala*, not wanting to leave his waterhole, politely refused and returned to his own camp (Pl. 8C).

When *inikaraka* and his family left their camp at Uralili Bay, they were transformed into birds; their camp became a hole at the top of a cliff (Pl. 23E), and their camp fire a series of markings and water-stains on a high eroded cliff nearby (Pl. 23A). Plate 23B shows the significance of the water-stains. From Uralili Bay the kestrel and his wife went to Ilja-pilja-madja, on the western coast of Bickerton Island, where they dug a hole, made a nest and hatched out a family of chicks. The nest is now a waterhole in the middle of a large depression.

Leaving Ilja-pilja-madja, the *inikaraka* travelled to Moanda-madja,⁷² on the west coast of Port Langdon in Groote Eylandt, where they rested before resuming their journey southwards. Today, their one-time camp is a group of three low caves, made by the erosion of a sea-cliff. The cave to the north was the camp of the man, the one to the south that of the wife, and the central, smallest cave, that of one of the chicks, the others having flown away. The kestrel, his wife and single chick left Moanda-madja and, travelling down the east coast of Groote Eylandt, established a camp at Mangala. At Mangala there are three caves where, it is believed, *inikaraka*, his wife and their single chick still live. The aborigines stated that the Mangala caves are similar to those at Moanda-madja.

THE SONG

<i>Inikaraka</i>	<i>marul-lupa</i>	<i>nun-aitja</i>	<i>bauinja</i>
kestrel	rock	serpent	goes into rock
	<i>nina-jatalina</i>	<i>nuna-maltja-puta</i>	
	goes into hole	comes out and goes away	

71. Map, Fig. 4.

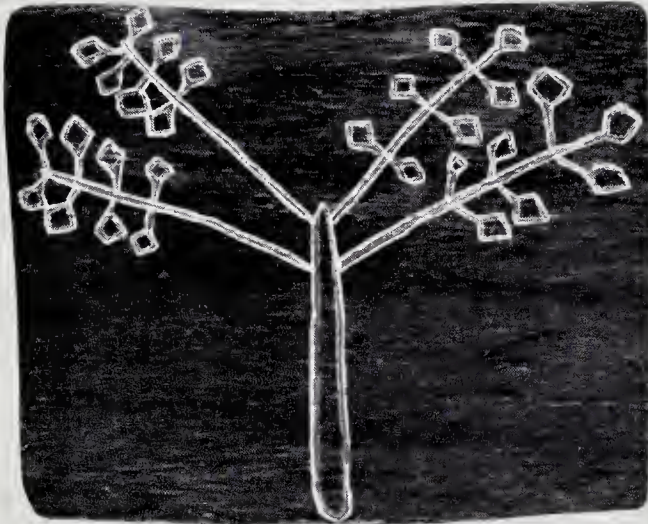
72. Map, Fig. 4.



A



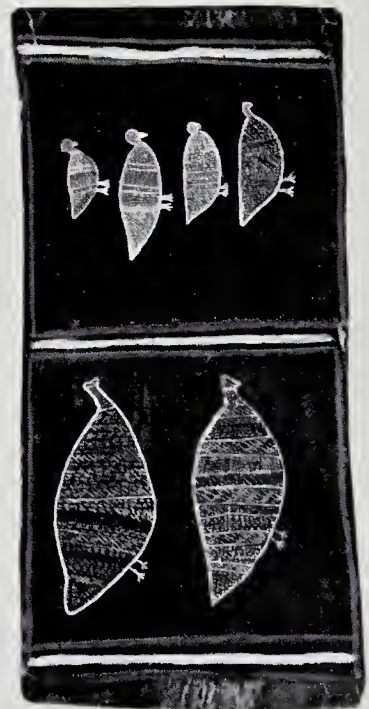
B



C



D



E

PLATE 22. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt

A Kestrels and chick B Crows C Hibiscus tree D Cycads
E Doves

The song refers to the time when *inikaraka*, the man, met the serpent, *aitja*, at Uralili Bay, Bickerton Island. After the meeting the kestrel returned to his camp, then, as now, a hole in a rock (Pl. 23E). *Inikaraka* afterwards came out again and left for another place.

Plate 21E is the kestrel, *inikaraka*, the conventionalized designs indicating the body markings.

Plate 24C shows the kestrel and his wife when at Ilja-pilja-madja. The lower design pictures the bird walking; the upper, the bird flying.

Plate 21C pictures the kestrel at the same locality, but this time with the family of chicks, which were hatched out at Ilja-pilja-madja. One chick is flying. The dots on the head of the bird are shown, as are also the marks round the neck. The wing is shown in light brown; the chevron-like marks indicate the feathers.

Plate 22A depicts the male and female birds with their single chick. They all still live at Mangala, in southern Groote Eylandt.

The Crow, Ji-inwa

Four mythical crows, *ji-inwa* (*Corvus ceciloë*), two men and two women, left their home near the Rose River and journeyed along the western coast of the Gulf of Carpentaria, round the eastern shores of Bickerton Island, until they reached a place in its north-east corner called Amagalai-tjira. At that place, while searching for food, the crows scratched a hole in the ground which, on their departure, was transformed into a swamp. From Amagalai-tjira the birds travelled to Unwara-dina-madja, in the largest of the Bustard Islands,⁷³ where each pair of crows made a nest, and reared a family of a single chick. The crows, the chicks and their nests are now large outcrops of stone.

The aboriginal who had the right to sing the song of the crows was not in camp when recordings were made.

Plate 22B refers to the crows when at Unwara-dina-madja. The top bird, with the young on his back, and the one on the right-hand side, are the males. The chick inside the circle is the progeny of the male on the right-hand side. The circular design in which the birds are grouped represents the nest, now the totemic rock at Unwara-dina-madja.

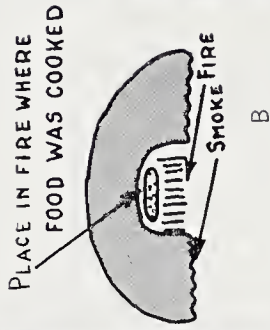
The Brolga, Tuka-rukara

Having noticed that in all the Groote Eylandt paintings the birds were shown with short legs, I asked one of the men to make a picture of a brolga (*Megalorhis rubicundus*), a particularly long-legged, wading bird. Pl. 21A was the outcome of that request. It indicates that all birds are drawn to a more or less traditional design, there being little attempt to make the paintings true to life. There is, for instance, but slight difference between the length of the legs of the brolga and those of the kestrel (Pl. 21E). On the other hand, the paintings of the various kinds of sea-creatures are usually accurate.

73. Map, Fig. 4.



A



B



C



D



E

PLATE 23. Totem places, Groote and Bickerton Islands

- A, E The kestrel, Bickerton Island
- B The significance of stains on rock at A
- C The bailer-shell, Groote Eylandt
- D The bailer-shell, Bickerton Island

(1) THE REPTILES

*The Goanna, Jaraitja, the Shovel-nosed Ray, Maka-paramala
and the Curlew, Duwaltja*

A group of ancestral beings, the goanna, *jaraitja*, who was a woman, the shovel-nosed ray, *maka-paramala*, and the curlew, *duwaltja*, lived together at Wunda-wunda, south of Blue Mud Bay. The shovel-nosed ray was also a friend of the saw-fish, *ingurudungwa*, and travelled with him when he created the Angoroko River. A rock on the river bank near the present Mission Station is the totemic body of the shovel-nosed ray. From that rock the ray, *maka-paramala*, travelled to the head of the river where, at a place now called Maka-paralama, he was transformed into another large rock which projects above the water. No myth was collected about the curlew, *duwaltja*.

Reading the painting, Pl. 25D, from left to right, the first figure is the curlew, *duwaltja*, the designs on the body representing the feathers of the bird. The vertical lines, *a*, indicate a reef in the sea at the entrance to the creek at Wunda-wunda. The second figure is the goanna, *jaraitja*, the body designs being the skin and the backbone; the third, or right-hand figure, is the shovel-nosed ray, *maka-paramala*, the marks on the body, in this instance, indicating the colours of the skin.

The Crocodile, Tungarapia, and the Wallaby, Ubraitja

The crocodile, *tungarapia* (*Crocodylus porosus*), who was a friend of the stingray, *imadoija*, lived permanently at Wunda-wunda, on the shores of Blue Mud Bay.⁷⁴ The wallaby, *ubraitja*, came from Jumalana, south of Blue Mud Bay, and travelled first to Junbia (Pl. 19C), the totem site of one of the two Malay praus, *mitjuna*, in southern Bickerton Island. The wallaby then went to Banda-bandua (Pl. 19A), the totemic site of the other prau, where, as far as I could find out, he has remained.

No song was collected.

The two upper designs, Pl. 10C, represent the crocodiles, and the two lower designs the wallabies.

The Gecko, Ipilja-ipilja, and the Rain Cloud

The gecko, *ipilja-ipilja* (prob. *Oedura marmorata*), lives in a swamp called Numa-rika, at the mouth of the Angoroko River, western Groote Eylandt. *Ipilja-ipilja* was described by the aborigines as a huge, highly-coloured lizard, about one hundred feet long, with hair on his head and whiskers.

The waterhole at Numa-rika in which the gecko lives is sacred. If anyone drinks from it, he will surely die. However, everybody can take water or drink from the small stream, *a*, Pl. 25B, which runs into one end of the swamp. The gecko, which the aborigines contend lives in, not under, the water, is closely

74. Map, Fig. 4.

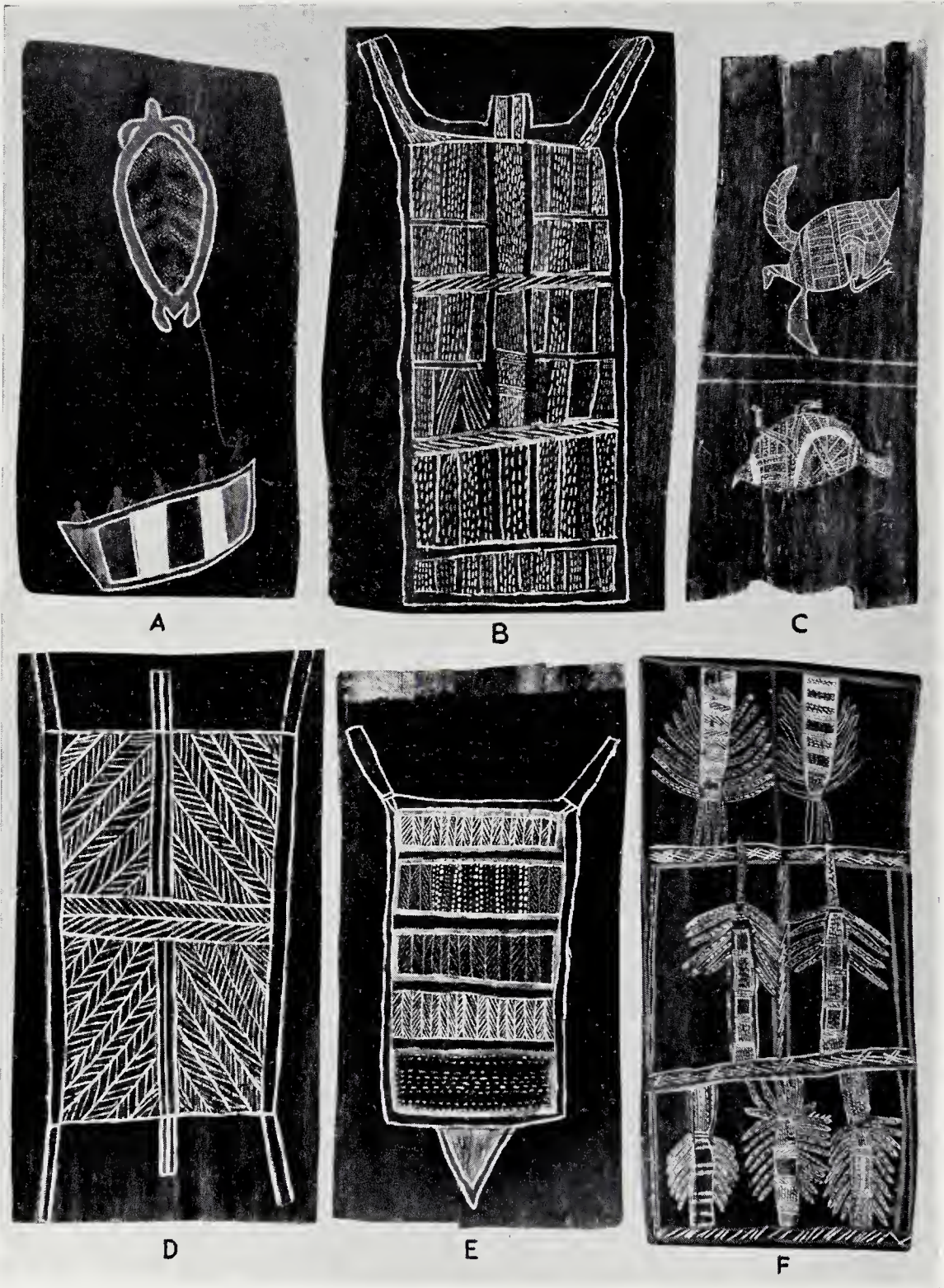


PLATE 24. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt

A A canoe and turtle	B The north-west wind	C The kestrels
D The south-east wind	E The north-east wind	F The coco-nut trees

associated with thunder and rain; in fact, he is their creator.⁷⁵ At the beginning of the 'rain time', the gecko makes the thunderstorms by eating grass from the edge of the sacred swamp and drinking large quantities of water, and then squirting both of them into the sky. The water makes the clouds and the grass binds them together.⁷⁶ In a short time the thunder-clouds form, lightning strikes the earth and rain falls. As the clouds pass across the sky, the gecko makes the roaring sound (thunder) to show how pleased he is.

The gecko has many characteristics in common with the rainbow serpent of the Pitjendadjara tribe of Central Australia.⁷⁷ They both live in a sacred pool; they are feared; they punish with sickness and death all who intrude on the sacred pool; they are coloured; they have hair and whiskers; and they make a roaring or thundering noise. On the other hand, unlike the Central Australian serpent, the gecko does not appear to be associated with the rainbow.

I was unable to record the two songs belonging to the gecko as there was no aboriginal in the camp with the right to sing them.

The upper part of the bark painting, Pl. 25A, represents the rain-cloud, *anapina*,⁷⁸ with the rain, *jalukwa*, pouring from it. Below is the gecko family. The male gecko, *ipilja-ipilja*, is on the left; his wife, *guruina*, is on the right, and their single young, *guru-kutjai*, in the centre.

Plate 25B is a painting of the waterhole, Numarika, drawn in the shape of the gecko, except that the fleshy tail is not shown. The gecko and his family live in the oval-shaped design in the centre of the waterhole. The waterhole is surrounded with paper-bark and pandanus trees; those with the more spreading habit are the paper-barks (*Melaleuca leucadendron*), while those with the vertical trunks and radiating lines are the pandanus trees (*Pandanus spiralis*).

In this painting, the aboriginal artist, in order to show the full details of the locality, has portrayed the waterhole in plan, and the trees in side elevation.⁷⁹

The Green Turtle, Imoraka

During the time of creation the green turtle, *imoraka* (*Chelonia mydas*), camped with his wife near the present Amakula River, which flows into the sea at south-eastern Groote Eylandt.⁸⁰ Their camping place is now a large depression in the sandhills. After staying for a while at Amakula the turtle family entered the water and, travelling round the southern coast of Groote Eylandt, reached

75. The small gecko of Groote Eylandt, which often entered our tents in search of flies, was looked upon by the aborigines as the rain-maker.

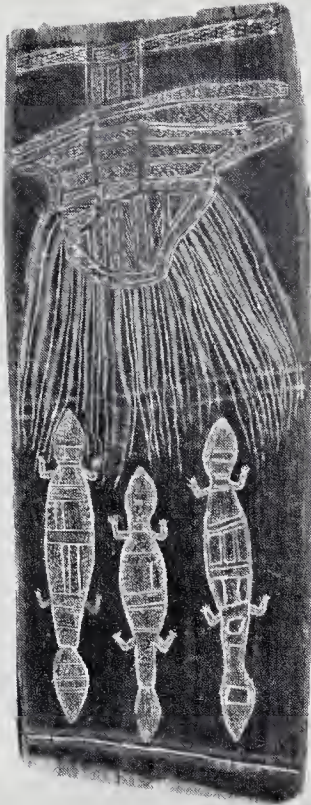
76. Mountford (1948), p. 128, records that the aborigines of the Pitjendadjara tribe, when carrying out a rain-making ceremony, use grass for the same purpose.

77. Mountford (1948), p. 138.

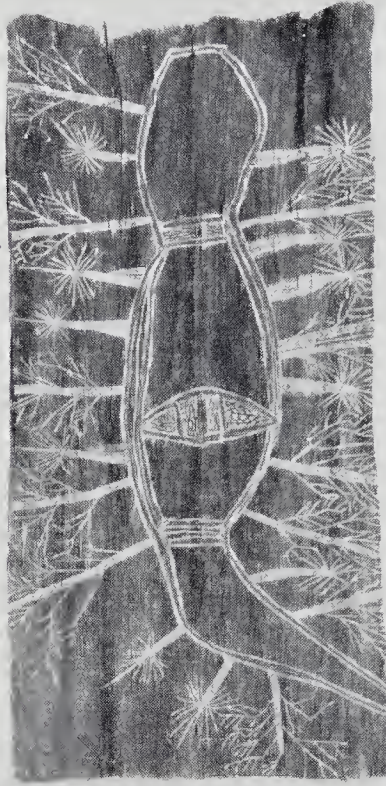
78. The resemblance between the rain-cloud symbol of Groote Eylandt and that of other primitive races is of some interest.

79. Gombrich (1950), p. 35, illustrates an Egyptian tomb painting from Thebes, about 1400 B.C., in which the Egyptian artist, like the aboriginal at Groote Eylandt, drew the water in plan, and the trees in side elevation. The fishes and birds, which would not have been recognizable as seen from above, were also drawn in profile (Pl. 26C).

80. Map, Fig. 4.



A

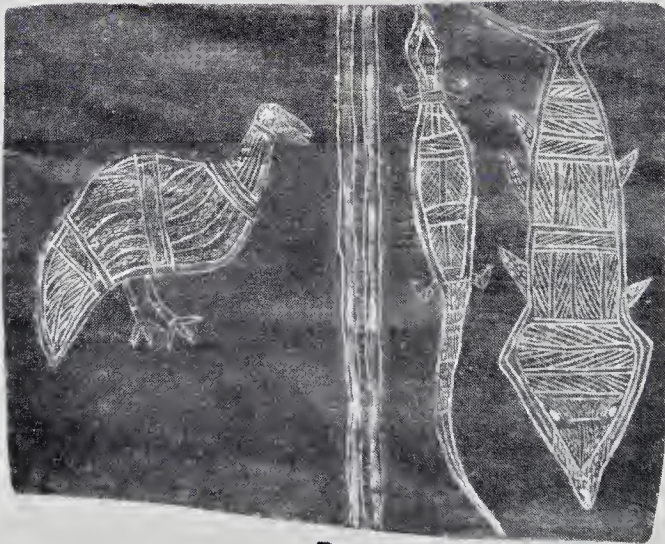


B



a

C



D

a



E

PLATE 25. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt

A, B Geckos

C Turtles

D Curlew, goanna and shovel-ray

E Snake

Mamoura-madja (the place of the sun). There they remained, their bodies now being two low rocks on the shore. Mamoura-madja is an increase centre for green turtles. At the season when the female turtles are due to come on shore to lay their eggs, the aborigines travel to Mamoura-madja and perform an increase ritual by chanting the turtle song and drawing a line of turtle designs in the sand, leading from the female turtle totemic stone to the sea.

THE SONG

<i>Jamam-buna</i>	<i>nambi-gawa</i>	<i>nilikuna</i>
sacred name for turtle	stay in water	walk
<i>numan-gata</i>	<i>napu-janda</i>	
come to surface	scratch hole and lay eggs	

This song, when chanted at the turtle increase centre at Mamoura-madja, to the accompaniment of the correct rituals, causes the female turtles to leave the sea and lay their eggs in the sand. The female turtle, *imoraka*, and the sun-woman, *Mamoura*, are closely associated, if not the same being. The aborigines refer to the sun as the turtle in the sky (Pl. 150F, myth, p. 481).

In Plate 25C the upper figure is the male turtle, and the lower the female, travelling from Amakula River to Mamoura-madja. The designs on the back indicate the shell patterns on the carapace.

Plate 10D depicts the female turtles, under the influence of the increase rituals, coming on shore and laying their eggs. The groups of dots are nests of eggs buried in the sand, and the white bars, the tracks made by the turtles as they travelled to and fro from the nest.

*The Snake, Kundura*⁸¹

The *kundura* is a harmless python-like snake, which is much sought after for food. I did not collect the legendary story associated with this painting.

Plate 25E. The designs on the body represent the ribs and the spinal vertebrae—an example of simple X-ray art.

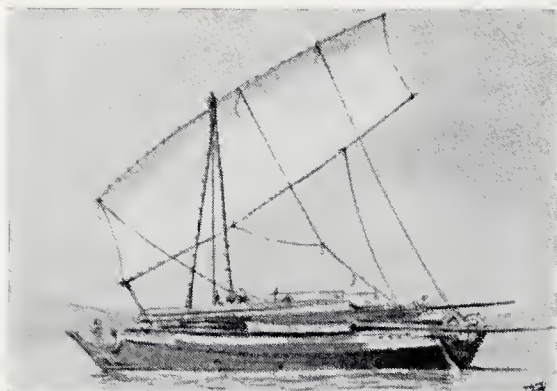
The Snake-woman, Jiningbirna

The mythical snake-woman, *Jiningbirna*, with her four children, once lived at Jininga-madja, situated on a point which separates Hemple and Thompson Bays in Port Langdon.⁸² Whilst there, some men tried to capture the woman but she fled, taking her children with her. But when she reached Aitira, at Hemple Bay, she found that two of her children had been lost in the flight. At Jiningbirna headland are two stones which were once the missing children of *Jiningbirna*.⁸³

81. The myth of the snake, *kundura*, appears to be widespread in Arnhem Land. I collected mythical stories about this creature from both Arnhem Bay and Milingimbi (p. 321, map, Fig. 1).

82. Map, Fig. 4.

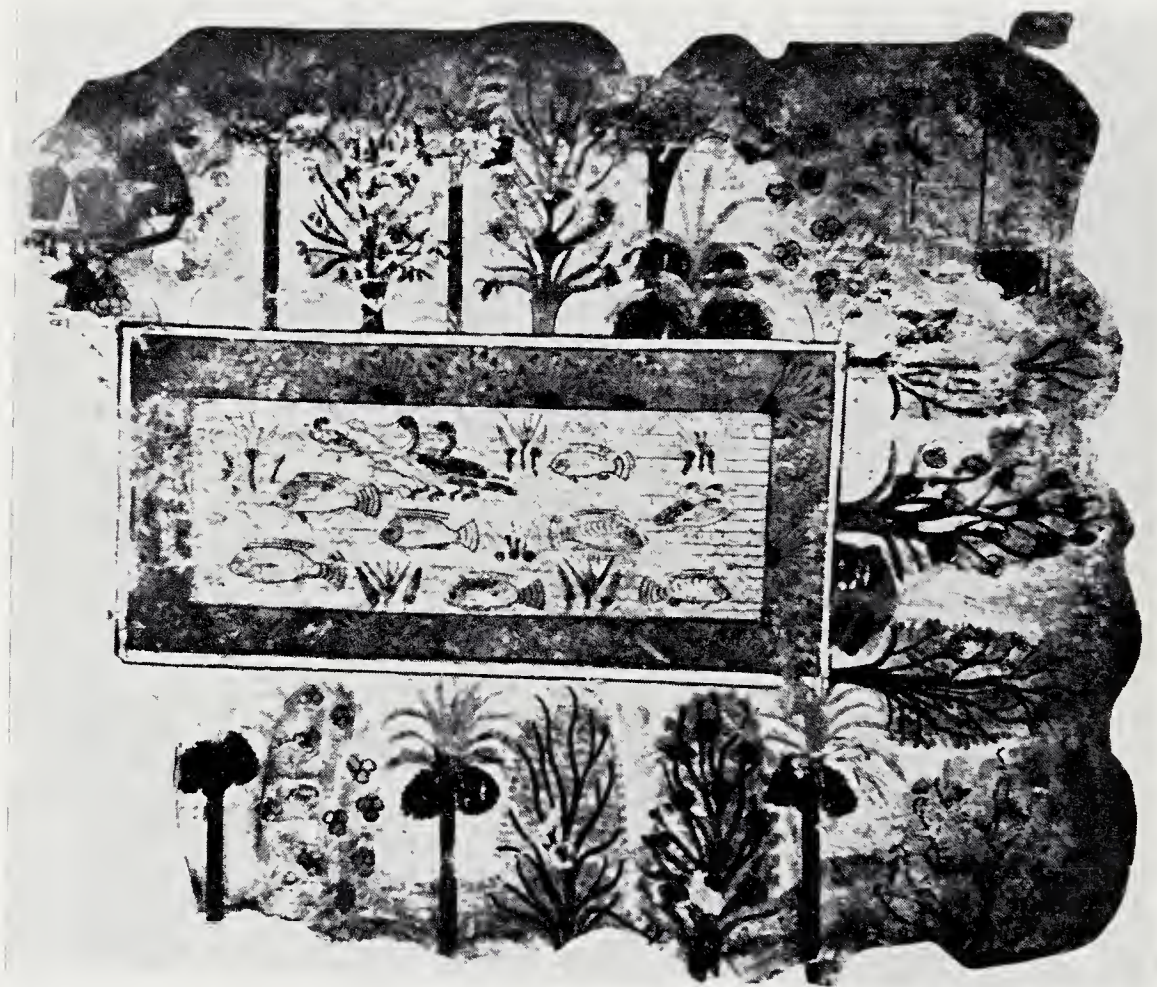
83. There is an extensive stone arrangement near the camp of the woman. This has been described by F. D. McCarthy (1953), p. 106.



A



B



C

PLATE 26. Water-craft, Groote Eylandt

A Westall's sketch of Malay prau, 1803 B An aboriginal dug-out canoe
C An Egyptian tomb painting

After living for some time on the beach at Aitira, the woman, with her two remaining children, travelled inland and died. Their bodies are now large boulders, in which their spirits still live.

THE SONG

<i>Aitira</i>		<i>jiningba-nakwa</i>	
name of depression in ground		sacred name of Jiningbirna	
<i>nakulanda</i>	<i>nijan-muna</i>	<i>nairi-tita</i>	<i>nijun-undura</i>
come along	women walked	lost	two children not lost
<i>nuljaka</i>		<i>umbarinja</i>	
name of totem rock		rocks that represent lost children	

The song refers to the time when *Jiningbirna* and her children travelled to Aitira. Two children were lost, and their bodies are low stones.

Plate 10A has, as the main design, the snake-woman, *Jiningbirna*, who, in her present form, is described as a dangerous snake about five feet in length. The snake was not identified. The rectangles projecting from the left and right-hand edges of the design indicate the piles of stones thrown out by *Jiningbirna*. The largest stone, on the left-hand edge of the painting, is the metamorphosed body of *Jiningbirna*, which is now set up in the sand at Aitira. The two white figures within the main design are the two children which *Jiningbirna* lost when she fled from Jininga-madja.

(5) THE FISH

The Long Tom, Maracuru

The long tom, *maracuru*, was caught by the sea-eagle, *iniwakada*, at Anabura-madja, in the south-western corner of Bickerton Island.⁸⁴ The totemic body of the fish is a small, low, rocky island which is almost covered at high tide (Pl. 19B). The long tom was carried by the sea-eagle to south-western Groote Eylandt and eaten (myth, p. 67).

THE SONG

<i>Kuratji</i>		<i>mali-ika</i>
totem place, Bickerton Island		Long Tom (sacred name)
<i>nimin-bitjuna</i>	<i>numina-kuna</i>	<i>umu-wantja</i>
jump in water	jump up, walk away	sit down another place

The long tom, *maracuru*,⁸⁵ played in the water near the totem place of Kuratji (unidentified) on Bickerton Island, then travelled to another locality.

Plate 20C shows two long toms. The central line of the design represents the backbone of the fish, and the transverse lines the joints of the spinal vertebrae. The other markings refer to the scale patterns of the fish. This is an example of

84. Map, Fig. 4.

85. The long tom, *maracuru* (*Tylosurus* sp.), when chased by other fish, is able to leave the water and, by rapidly vibrating its tail whilst in an upright position, can travel on the surface of the water for a considerable distance.

simple X-ray art. A comparison of this painting with those of the gar-fish at Oenpelli is of some interest (Pl. 82D).

The Tiger-shark, Bangudja

The shark, *bangudja* (*Galeocерdo cuvier*), then an unmarried man, left Woodah Island and travelled to Bada-bada (Chasm Island), where he made his camp. One day he saw two dolphins swimming in the sea and, after a long chase, succeeded in capturing and killing the male. The female, who escaped by entering the ground, later met and joined a group of her own kind living in those waters.

On a high cliff on the south-western corner of Chasm Island is a large red stain which bears a remarkable resemblance to the outlines of a shark. This is the totemic body of *bangudja* (Pl. 28B, D). There is a hole in the upper face of a nearby cliff, with natural curving lines leading to it (Pl. 28A) where, according to the myth, the female dolphin entered the ground to escape from her enemy, the shark. Her totemic body is now a low rock awash at low tide, just off the eastern end of Chasm Island (Pl. 28C). The shark, *bangudja*, and his wife (my informant did not know where he was married) left Chasm Island and made a camp about two miles south of Umbakumba,⁸⁶ which camp, when they left, became a small lake. From there they travelled to the sea, their track becoming the Arua Creek. Not far from the mouth of the Arua Creek are two casuarina trees, marking the camp of the shark and his wife. The pair then travelled across Little Lagoon and, on the northern side, created a small sandy island, Moraraka (Pl. 27B), where again casuarina trees indicate their camping place. The shark ancestors continued on their way northward, but the Groote Eylandt aborigines had no further knowledge of their journeyings.

THE SONG

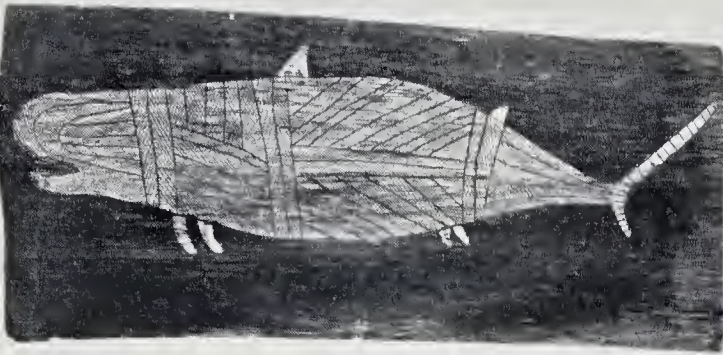
<i>Mapalala</i>	<i>madja</i>	<i>lili-kuna</i>	<i>ungapa-puta</i>
shallow water	place	go away	another name for shark
		<i>ni-juanja</i>	
		follow after	

The song refers to *bangudja* leaving some unlocalized shallow water-place and continuing on his journey with another shark following.

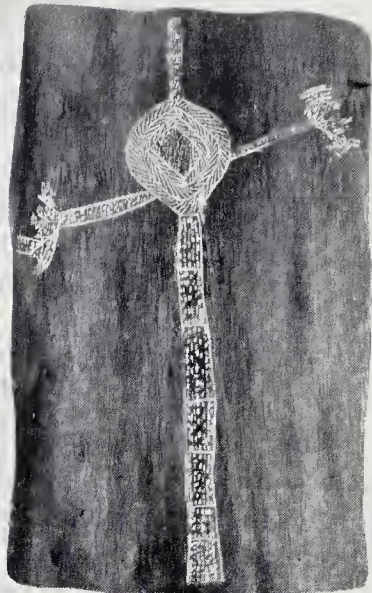
Plate 27B represents the low sandy island, Moraraka, in Little Lagoon, near *Umbakumba*, which was created by *bangudja*. The central disc is the island; the horizontal arms are the two casuarina trees, the metamorphosed bodies of the shark-man and his wife; and the vertical limbs of the cross, the long sand-bars which reach out into the sea.

Plate 27C, D, are paintings of *bangudja*, the shark. The body patterns, which show the bands round the tiger shark, are good examples of the fine brush work of Groote Eylandters.

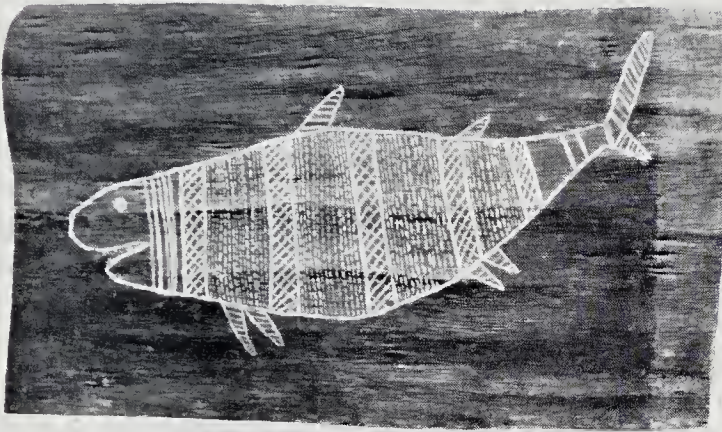
86. Map, Fig. 4.



A



B



C



E



D

PLATE 27. Bark paintings, Grootte Eylandt

A Shark, unidentified B Totem place of the shark, Grootte Eylandt
C, D, E The tiger shark

Plate 27E shows the shark attacking the male dolphin at Chasm Island. The female dolphin is above.

The Shark, Nunguana

As this bark painting, Pl. 27A, like that of the mackerel, *amaturuna* (Pl. 30C), was collected at the time when the expedition camp was being established, I was not able to collect either the myth or the song. This shark is probably a related species of the tiger shark.

The Parrot-fish, Jambirikwa

The parrot-fish, *jambirikwa*, and his wife lived at Numbarana, in the south-west corner of Bickerton Island.⁸⁷ Becoming dissatisfied with their camp, the parrot-fish dug a hole through the land and escaped into the sea. That camp, an ill-defined circle of stones just above high-tide mark, is an increase centre for parrot-fish. At the correct season, the men of the parrot-fish totemic group travel to Numbarana and, singing the increase ritual song, take handfuls of sand from within the circle of stones (which they believe is impregnated with the life essence of parrot-fish) and throw it in the direction of each of the horde territories in turn, saying, 'Let there be many parrot-fish at Talimba, many at Angoroko, many at Bartalumba', and so on. After the rituals, the fish, created from the grains of sand, will travel to each named locality.

Later, the mythical parrot-fish and his family swam to Ilja-umbuka, a small island south of Winchelsea Island, where they were transformed into a rock called Aitjoui-tjoua. This rock, which projects but a few feet above the surface of the water, is also a parrot-fish increase centre. The aborigines, instead of taking handfuls of sand as at Numbarana, break small pieces from this stone and throw them into the sea in the direction of the various horde territories, singing the same song and repeating the same formula as used at Bickerton Island.

THE SONG

<i>Jambirikwa</i>	<i>Aitjoui-tjoua</i>	<i>intjin-buga</i>
parrot-fish	totemic rock at Winchelsea Island	standing up
<i>aiukwa</i>	<i>bigjuna</i>	<i>jimun-iunbuna</i>
sand crab used as bait	hook	fish, unidentified
	<i>jukin-inbuta</i>	
	fish, similar to parrot-fish	

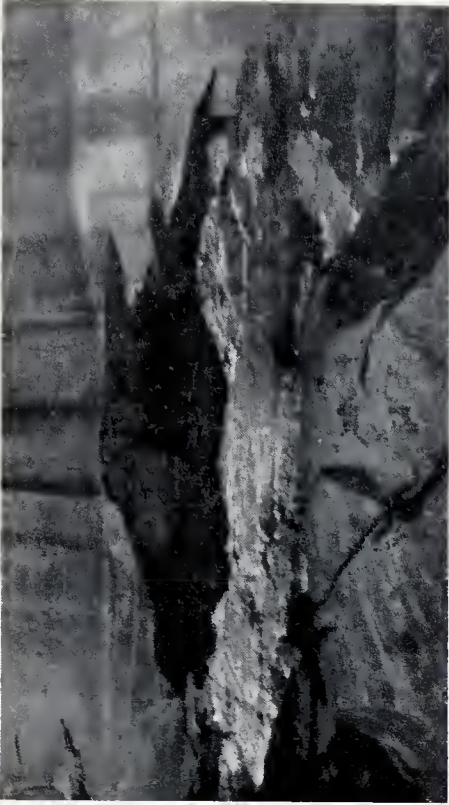
This song, when chanted at the increase centre of Winchelsea Island, is supposed to make the parrot-fish, *jambirikwa*, and several related species easy to catch. There are references to the totemic rock, the bait, the hook, and three kinds of fish. It is essentially a song of fishing magic.

The upper design of Plate 29B is a young parrot-fish, which the artist has drawn with a short tail. In the lower panel, the fish on the right is the male, and

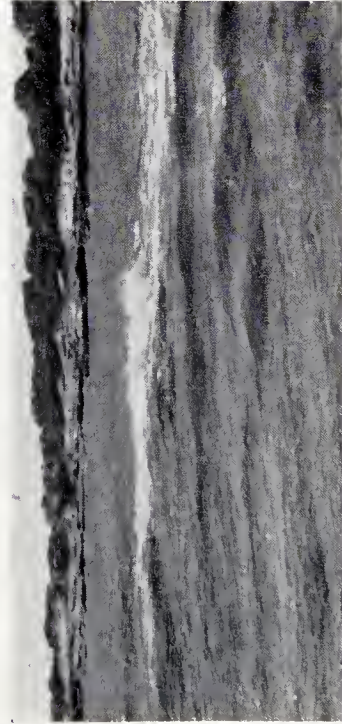
87. Map, Fig. 4.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 28. Totem places, Chasm Island

A, C The dolphin B, D The shark

that on the left the female. The transverse lines across the sheet of bark symbolize reefs in the sea near the parrot-fish increase centre at Numbarana, southern Bickerton Island.

In Plate 29A, the larger design is the male parrot-fish, and the smaller his wife. The cone-like figure is the totemic rock at Ilja-umbuka, southern Winchelsea Island, where rituals are performed to increase the supply of parrot-fish.

The Barramundi, Ukulpaindi

The barramundi, *ukulpaindi* (*Scleropages* sp.), once lived at Maitjunga, a few miles inland from the shores of Blue Mud Bay.⁸⁸ The track he made as he travelled toward the coast is now a large stream. From Maitjunga *ukulpaindi* continued his journey southwards along the coast, keeping in the sea until he reached Yurakuri. From there he went inland to some unidentified place, creating a large stream as he moved along.

None of my informants had the right to sing the song of the barramundi. That right belongs to the mainland people.

Plate 29C is a particularly colourful and well-executed painting of the barramundi, *ukulpaindi*, the body being covered with a multitude of fine lines arranged in interesting patterns. These, the aborigines explained, were pure decoration; they had no meaning.

The Hammer-headed Shark, Munuana

The mythical ancestor of the hammer-headed shark, *munuana* (*Sphyrna* sp.), started from Windana,⁸⁹ on the mainland, and travelled by sea to Atamanunura, in north-eastern Bickerton Island, where he saw and chased a stingray. After the stingray escaped, *munuana* swam to land and camped at Oi-owra, in eastern Bickerton Island. He then travelled to Amalipa, in Groote Eylandt, where he transformed himself into a small island in the middle of a shallow arm of the sea.

THE SONG

<i>Munuana</i>	<i>makaida</i>	<i>arinda</i>	<i>larupa</i>
shark	salt water	see	stingray
<i>nuwai-ina</i>	<i>numi-apa</i>	<i>mouma-wanja</i>	
bite (stingray)	(stingray) ran quickly	shark stop	

The hammer-headed shark saw a stingray and bit it. The stingray escapes and the shark stops (at Oi-owra).

In this painting (Pl. 29D) the greatly extended eye sockets and the fin arrangements are accurately portrayed.

The Mackerel, Amaturuna

As this was among the first few bark paintings collected, I was unable to obtain either the myth or the song.

88. Map, Fig. 4.

89. Map, Fig. 4.

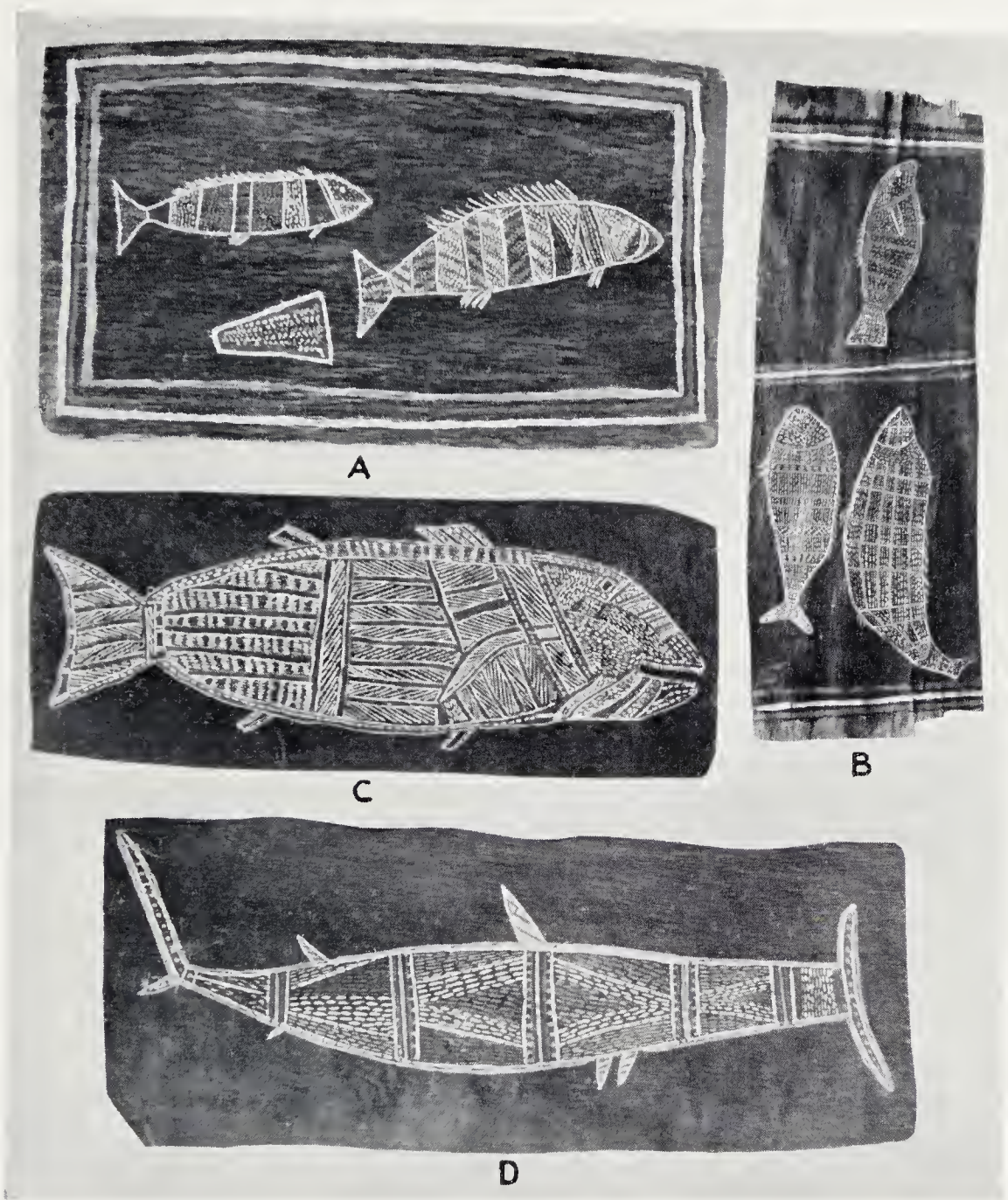


PLATE 29. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt

A, B The parrot fish C The barramundi D The hammer-headed shark

The technique of Pl. 30C is interesting. Instead of the artist, *Mini-mini*,⁹⁰ employing the usual fine lines to build up the pattern, he used a large bark brush. The oval patches produced by the larger brush gave a result which is both colourful and decorative.

The Bailer-shell, Jukuna

The bailer-shell, *jukuna* (*Melo amphorus*),⁹¹ met his wife and made his first camp at a place called Numbarila, about half-way down the eastern shore of Boswini Bay, southern Bickerton Island.⁹² The totem place (Pl. 23D) is a single, picturesque boulder about one hundred feet long and twenty feet high. The upper part of the boulder is the body of the bailer-shell, *Jukuna*, and the lower is his wife. There are two shallow, sea-worn caves at the base; the one to the left was the camp of the woman, and the one on the right that of the man.

From their camp at Numbarila *jukuna* and his wife travelled to another island, called Maun-tjautin-madja, situated a few miles off the coast of north-western Groote Eylandt. At that place their bodies were transformed into a spectacular pillar of rock (Pl. 23C). The head ring of *jukuna* is now the upper cap of stone; the section immediately below, *jukuna's* wife; and large boulders scattered round the base, his children. The bailer-shell, *jukuna*, was a friend of the female porpoise which escaped the attack of the tiger-shark, *bangudja*, at Chasm Island (myth, p. 82).

There are two songs associated with *jukuna*, (1) belonging to the totemic place at Numbarila, Bickerton Island, and (2) to the totem place, Maun-tjautin-madja, north-western Groote Eylandt.

THE SONGS

- | | | | | |
|-----|---------------|------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------|
| (1) | <i>Jukuna</i> | <i>mambarinja</i> | <i>mungutuna</i> | <i>noamadjuna</i> |
| | bailer-shell | stay at one place | make hole | leave that place |
| | | <i>napju-andina</i> | <i>janguru-mai</i> | |
| | | sit down another place | stay there altogether | |

This song refers first to the camp of *jukuna* at Numbarila on Bickerton Island, then to a second camp (Maun-tjautin-madja), where he finally stayed.

- | | | | |
|-----|---------------|---------------|----------------|
| (2) | <i>Ambiau</i> | <i>jukuna</i> | <i>umbaria</i> |
| | head ring | bailer-shell | sit down |

This song refers to the head ring of *jukuna*, now the cap of stone on the rocky pillar at Maun-tjautin-madja (Pl. 23C).

Plate 18A represents the bailer-shell, *jukuna*, the upper oval figure being the shell, the lower the large fleshy foot of the shell-fish.

Plate 18B represents *jukuna* and his wife at Bickerton Island. The upper figure is the woman and the lower the man.

90. Adam (1951), p. 169, refers to *Mini-mini*.

91. Called the bailer-shell because the natives use it for bailing the water from canoes and deep springs.

92. Map, Fig. 4.

THE ART OF GROOTE EYLANDT

The Conch-shell, Maini-unda

The conch-shell, *maini-unda* (*Megalatractus aruanus*), when a man, lived with his wife and child at north-western Groote Eylandt. But the husband, becoming dissatisfied with a human existence, hunted his family away and turned himself into a conch-shell. The place where this happened, now a small fresh-water spring, Maini-madja, is a *wirinikapara* totem increase centre for conch-shells, the flesh of which is a much-prized food.

THE SONG

<i>Main-unda</i>	<i>numumbuna</i>	<i>numula-kunja</i>	<i>nama-puenda</i>
conch-shell	camped	left that place	stayed here

The song relates to the travels of the conch-shell.

The large design, Plate 18C, represents the conch-shell, *Maini-unda*, and the smaller, the child which, with the mother, he hunted away.

(6) THE INSECTS

The Black Ant, Uaiipa

The totem ancestors of the black ant, *uaiipa*, did not travel round the country, but spent all their time at Waini-tjura, eastern Bickerton Island. Later, the ant-people were transformed into many small, black stones, now the totemic bodies of the ants.

THE SONG

<i>Uaiipa</i>	<i>numann</i>	<i>waita-jura-kalua</i>
black ant	walks	backward and forward

The black ants walk backward and forward over the 'roads' (tracks) between their nests.

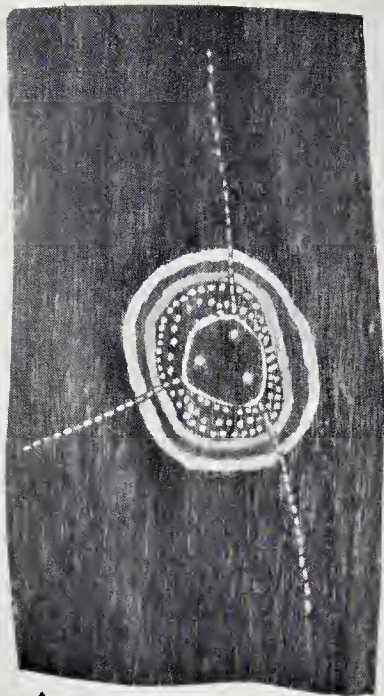
In Plate 30A the inner circle represents the earthen mound of the nest and the three white dots within the circle the entrances. The white dots round the outside of the inner circle are the ants walking about the mound, and the three radiating lines the 'roads' along which the ants travel to and fro in their food-gathering.

The Centipede

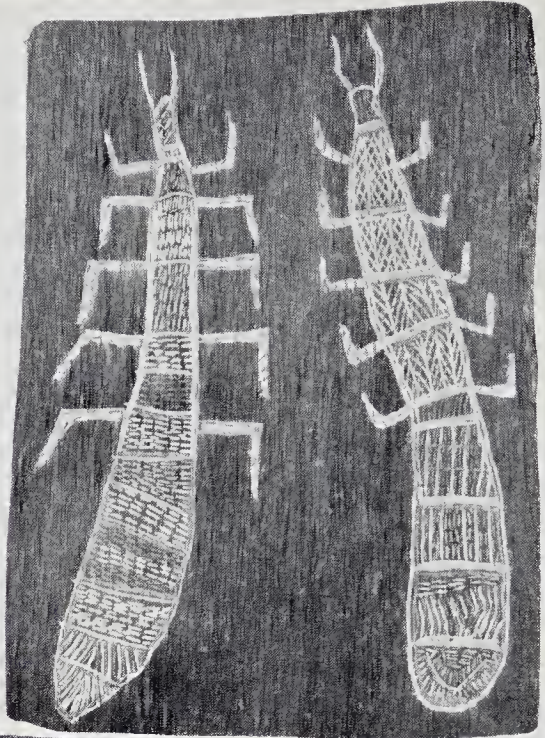
This bark painting, Pl. 30B, was collected by F. M. Setzler but without any details of totemic routes or mythological happenings.

The Wild Honey, Ilaukwa

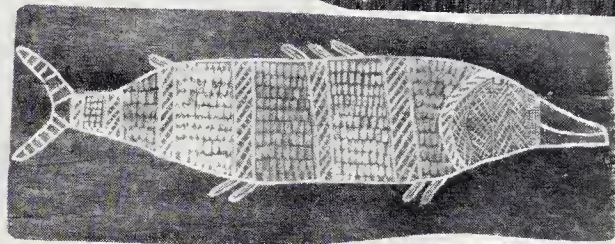
The hive of the Australian stingless honey-bee (*Trigona* sp.) is much sought after as food by the aborigines. The bees nest in many places—hollow trees, clefts in the rocks, anthills, or holes in the ground. The aborigines distinguish between the many kinds of honey, some being mild in flavour, some hot; at Yirkalla and



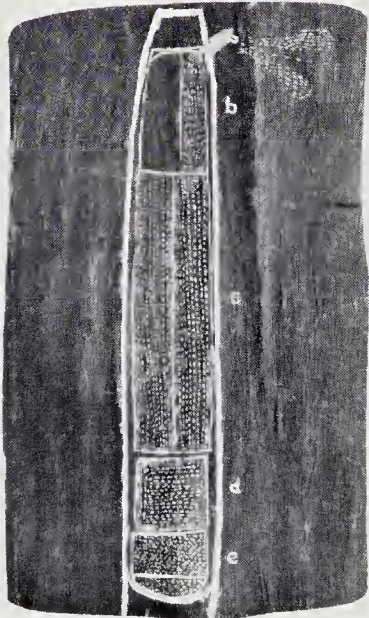
A



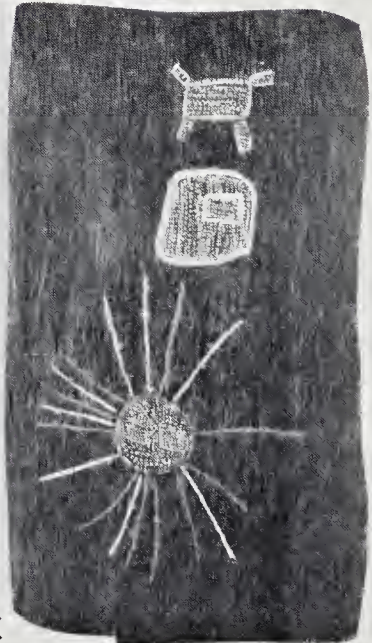
B



C



D



E

PLATE 30. Bark paintings, Groote Eylandt

- A Black ants
- B Centipedes
- C Fish, unidentified
- D Wild honey
- E The totem place, wild honey

Oenpelli, the different kinds of honey were associated with one or the other moiety. The Groote Eylandters did not appear to have made this division.

In creation times, a family of wild-honey people, the *Ilaukwa*, lived permanently at Ilaukwa-madja, at north-western Groote Eylandt.⁹³ The family, which consisted of a father, a mother, four sons and one daughter, are now boulders at the totemic place of Ilaukwa-madja, which is an increase centre for wild honey. At the appropriate season, the aborigines visit this place and uncover the mother and daughter stones (Pl. 31A). Then, while one man draws lines with his foot in the direction of a particular horde territory (Pl. 31C), another throws sand in the same direction, saying, 'Plenty of "sugar-bag" (wild honey) in Talimbo; plenty "sugar-bag" in Tjarapa', and so on, until all the horde territories have been named. The life essence of the ancestral wild-honey people, the *Ilaukwa*, contained in the sand, goes to each named locality and creates new hives.

THE SONG

<i>Amatjira</i>	<i>nawi-aipa</i>	<i>nangara</i>
secret name for wild honey	opening in hive	bees flying
<i>inu-mukura</i>	<i>alu-palju</i>	
to cut nest from tree	eat the honey	

The song, which belongs to the totem place of the wild-honey people of Ilaukwa-madja, is a simple description of the finding of a hive of wild honey. This song is chanted at the increase rituals.

Plate 30D is a diagrammatic representation of a hive, *inmoru-maikitja*, of wild honey. At the top, to use an aboriginal term, is the 'nose' of the hive, where the bees, as dots, can be seen coming and going. The upper right rectangles *b*, and *c*, immediately below, are combs filled with honey. The square, *d*, below, heavily outlined in white, represents the cells of the young bees (the bee bread) while at the bottom, at *e*, is the refuse of the hive. The honey, comb and the young bees in the pupating stage are all edible.

Plate 30E is a painting of the totemic place of Ilaukwa-madja. The design on the upper part of the bark represents an area about five by three feet, outlined with stones set on edge (Pl. 31B). Nearby are four small boulders projecting above the soil. The boulders are the metamorphosed sons of *Ilaukwa*, and the rectangle of stone is their camp. One of these boulders can be seen behind the aboriginal in the lower left of the photograph.

The central design is a single stone, the totemic body of the male *Ilaukwa* (Pl. 31D). The two rectangles within the circle with radiating lines, on the lower edge of the painting, represent two long narrow stones (Pl. 31A), the upper one the mother, lying exposed, and the lower, the daughter, which is buried in the sand and uncovered only during the increase rituals. The radiating lines represent those drawn in the sand by the aborigines (Pl. 31C).

93. Map, Fig. 4.

(7) THE TREES

The Hibiscus Tree, Mabunda

The hibiscus tree ancestor, *mabunda* (*Hibiscus tiliaceus*), lived by himself at Arapuna, a place adjacent to Lake Hubert, in eastern Groote Eylandt. Later he met a woman, who bore him a child. The whole family, man, woman and child, are large hibiscus trees at Arapuna.

THE SONG

<i>Alu-munma</i>	<i>lilau-urula</i>	<i>numala-tira</i>
sacred name of hibiscus	cut off branch	strip bark
	<i>nara-maituna</i>	
	shape the spear	

The song refers to the activities of making a spear from the hibiscus tree. The refrain of this song, the same as that of the man, *Junduruna* (p. 62), indicates that these ancestors are linked in the legendary stories.

Plate 22C is a diagrammatic picture of the hibiscus tree, in which the large leaves are given special emphasis. The hibiscus tree is valuable to the aborigines, for in addition to providing shafts for their spears (as mentioned in the song), the fibres of its bark, when twisted together, make strong fishing lines and ropes.

The Cycad, Mununa

During the creation period the cycad tree, *mununa*, grew only along the Amakula River, in south-western Groote Eylandt. But when the pantheon of ancestors of the *arawaltja* ceremony left Amakula for Munultjira, in Bickerton Island, the fresh-water tortoise, *Jumununda*, took with him a number of the cycad nuts to plant at his new camps. At Munultjira the ground was too hard for them to grow, but at Wurindi, on the mainland, the nuts planted by *Jumununda* have multiplied exceedingly. At Jara-ana, *Jumununda* planted yet more cycad nuts, then built a bark hut for himself, in which he has lived ever since.

From the time the ancestors made those journeys there have always been many cycad trees at Amakula, Wurindi and Jara-ana, but none at Bickerton Island, because, as the myth says, the ground was too hard.

THE SONG

<i>Atua-madja</i>	<i>oumia</i>	<i>nara-matuka</i>	<i>nara-malarinja</i>
water-place	take out	put nut in fire	take nut from fire
	<i>nara-matia-putja</i>	<i>aiu-putja</i>	
	hit nut with stone	hit it	

The song tells of the method of preparation. The nut is roasted in the fire, cracked to release the kernel, pounded, then soaked in water for several days to



A



B



C



D

PLATE 31. Totem place, wild honey
A The mother and daughter B The sons C Performing increase rituals
D Uncovering the daughter stone

remove the poison. The fruit of the cycad provides a reliable food supply for the aborigines from June until October.

The central transverse band of the painting, Pl. 22D, represents the river at Jara-uaa, on the banks of which are many cycads. The cone-shaped figure in the top row of cycads is the hut of the fresh-water tortoise, *Jumuuunda*, in which, according to the myth, he still lives. This hut is, no doubt, some natural feature near the river bank.

The Coco-nut Tree, Kaluka

The coco-nut tree people, the *Kaluka*, once lived with the Malay boat-builders, the *Ora-mangatira*, on the banks of the mythical river, Mamripwa, south-western Bickerton Island. At the close of the creation period the coco-nut tree men and women were changed into casuarina trees (*Casuarina equisetifolia*), Pl. 19A. In southern Bickerton Island these trees grow near the island Banda-bandua, which island was once a Malay prau (Pl. 19A). Banda-bandua can be seen beyond the casuarina trees.

THE SONG

<i>Kaluka</i>	<i>nili-itbina</i>	<i>lala-karinja</i>	<i>nairi-tuna</i>
coco-nut tree	float	tree stand up	cut down

The coco-nuts float to the shore, germinate and grow into trees. The aborigines, who claim that the young trees are good food, cut them down and eat them. Although not specifically stated, it is likely that this song is used magically to increase the number of coco-nuts which float to the shore during the period of *timbura*, the north-east wind.⁹⁴

Plate 24F represents the mythical coco-nut trees at Banda-bandua, southern Bickerton Island. Although, as mentioned earlier, these are casuarinas, the artists still show them as coco-nut trees (*Cocos nucifera*).

(8) THE WINDS

At Groote Eylandt, the aborigines recognize three main winds, the south-east, *mamariga*, the north-east, *timbura*, and the north-west, *bava*.

The dry season wind, *mamariga*, which blows almost continuously from the east or south-east, lasts approximately from April to September. When the south-easterlies begin to lose their force, and the heat of the dry season increases, the north-east wind, *timbura*, develops. This wind blows with varying velocities from mid-September to about mid-November. Following the hot period comes the wet season with its north-west winds, *bava*, thunderstorms and torrential rains. This weather continues until late March.⁹⁵

94. The north-eastern wind, *timbura*, brings many coco-nuts to Groote and the surrounding islands. The aborigines not only eat the nuts which are thrown up on the shore but, should one escape detection, germinate, and grow into a young tree, they will cut it down and eat the young leaves. This accounts for the fact that, although many thousands of coco-nuts from the islands of Melanesia must be washed up annually along the north of Australia, no coco-nut trees grow along the coasts away from white settlements.

These winds, with their related seasons, determine the life and customs of the aborigines. In the season of the south-east wind, especially towards its close, food becomes increasingly abundant. The burning of the tall grass, and the drying out of the waters in the lagoons, eases the labour of collecting plant foods, catching game and spearing fish. The period of the north-east wind, *timbura*, is the time for ceremonial activities. Food is plentiful, particularly the cycads, which bear most abundantly during the period of the north-east wind. Such abundance of food makes it possible for a number of people to stay in one place long enough to perform the yearly rituals. The wet season, the period of the north-west wind, is a time of scarcity. The heavy rains flood the country, making travel difficult, often impossible. Few, if any, of the plants bear fruit; the swamps, which often extend for hundreds of square miles, disperse the water-birds and fresh-water fish, and even salt-water fishing is restricted because of heavy seas and frequent storms.⁹⁶

For possibly some centuries before, and for some years after, 1900 (when a Commonwealth law prevented their visits to Australia) fleets of Macassar praus sailed to Arnhem Land and the Gulf of Carpentaria before the north-westerly wind, *bara*. During the wet season, the Malays worked with the aborigines collecting trepang and pearl shell, returning to their homeland on the south-easterly, *mamariga*. It may be that the arrival of the Macassar fleets on the north-westerly wind, with tobacco, cloth and other trade goods, and their departure on the south-easterly wind, have given these winds more than ordinary importance to the Groote Eylandters.

Frederick Rose⁹⁷ published bark paintings which illustrated the three main winds. He considered that 'the trimming of the sails of the [Macassar] prau would lend support to the thesis that the symbols [in the bark paintings] were derived from the shape of the sail to meet the various winds'. Although the hypothesis set out by Rose was an interesting one, there was no mention of Malay praus in the mythical stories associated with the wind totems. The symbols on the bark paintings which I collected differ considerably in detail, but not in general form, from those collected by Rose.

The South-east Wind, Mamariga

According to the myth, the south-easterly wind originates at a totemic centre called Aitja-wala-madja, in south-eastern Groote Eylandt, where tall, spire-like rocks project from the ground.⁹⁸ At the end of the wet season the aborigines of

95. See Yirrkalla winds, p. 433.

96. R. M. and C. H. Berndt (1951), p. 132, when referring to the rainbow serpent rituals in the Ubar ceremony at Oenpelli state: 'He [the Rainbow Serpent] is the prelude to, and the instigator of, the wet season, the time when the rains come, when food is plentiful, the plains green with grass, the vegetables growing, the billabongs full of fish and teeming waterfowl.' This is a most surprising statement, perhaps influenced by the 'earth-mother' cult of the agriculturists for it is well known that the wet season of the north coast of Australia is a time of scarcity for the aborigines. Warner (1937), p. 381, and Thomson (1949), pp. 6-7, both refer to this fact.

97. Rose (1947), p. 129.

98. Map, Fig. 4.

the *mamariga* totem visit Aitja-wala-madja and release the south-east wind by pounding the totemic rock with boulders, a ritual which, my informants contended, was always effective. When questioned as to what would happen if an aboriginal struck the totemic rocks in the middle of the wet season (the period of the north-west wind), the aborigines all agreed that this would certainly cause the south-east wind to blow. But, they said, they were sure that no aboriginal would be guilty of so foolish an act.

The spirit children of the *wirinikapara* moiety, who originate at the *mamariga* totem place, are brought to their mothers by the south-east wind. The little spirit children hide in the grass until the father 'dreams'⁹⁹ about a spirit child. A short while afterwards he will notice that one of his wives is pregnant.

THE SONG

<i>Mamariga</i>	<i>aruda</i>	<i>unga-poua</i>
south-east wind	wind	south-east
<i>tidia-akurapa</i>		<i>merit-bia</i>
totem place in south-east Groote Eylandt		too much wind

When the *mamariga* is blowing too hard for the comfort of the aborigines, the chanting of this song reduces its velocity.

The projections on the top and the bottom of the design, Pl. 24D, symbolize the long pillars of rock which rise out of the ground at Aitja-wala-madja. The central vertical line refers to a waterhole at the totemic site. That the name of the mythical serpent, *Aitja*, is associated with the totemic locality and waterhole is significant.

The North-west Wind, Bara

The aborigines of Groote Eylandt believe that the north-west wind comes from a wind-increase centre, near Maitjunga,¹ in the middle of Blue Mud Bay.

After the north-east wind, *timbura*, has eased somewhat and it is time for the wet season winds to blow, the aborigines visit a large bloodwood tree called Maitjunaua at Maitjunga. In the late afternoon the aborigines, singing the *bara* song, cut the bark of the tree with an axe so that the wind, imprisoned during the long dry season, can escape. By the next morning, the north-west wind will be blowing strongly. Gulpitja, the aboriginal who made the painting associated with this myth, told me that he had cut the tree several times, and that the wind always blew the next day.

The spirit children of the *oranikapara* moiety, who originate in the totem wind tree of Maitjunga, are carried to Groote Eylandt on the north-west wind. The conception belief is the same as that of the *wirinikapara* moiety.

99. A similar belief about dreaming is held by the Yirkalla aborigines (p. 309).

1. Map, Fig. 4.

THE ART OF GROOTE EYLANDT

THE SONG

<i>Nangarina</i> wind blowing	<i>noua-madjua</i> wind goes into the sky	<i>ina-mabuna</i> cumulus cloud
<i>Maitjunga</i> totem locality	<i>naparruma</i> sound of wind in trees	<i>Maitjunaua</i> name of totem tree
<i>Balara</i> name of large hill near totem centre		

This is an increase ritual song. It tells the wind to leave the totemic tree, blow in the branches, go into the sky, and cause the cumulus (wet-season) clouds to form.

Plate 24B is a stylized representation of the totemic tree, the upper projections being the limbs, and the rectangle the trunk. The transverse bars and intricate pattern within the rectangle are symbolic of cuts and markings made by the aborigines on the bark of the tree.

The North-east Wind, Timbura

The aborigines had little knowledge about the source of the wind, *timbura*, beyond the fact that it originates at an island far away to the north, where there were many tall rocks and much red ochre.

The upper projections in Plate 24E are the tall rocks, the home of the north-east wind, *timbura*. The transverse lines across the design are exposed reefs from which the aborigines collect much red ochre, the dots and chevron designs, the grass growing between those reefs, and the lower triangle, another tall rock at the totemic place.

(9) MISCELLANEOUS SUBJECTS

Fishing

As the aborigines of Groote Eylandt are essentially a people of the sea, they produced many bark paintings which related to their fishing experiences. From the many paintings I have chosen two as being typical.

Plate 24A shows a canoe load of men who have speared a turtle. As in Pl. 32C, where there is an exaggeration of capturing a dugong and a turtle at the same time, so in Pl. 24A the artists have magnified the size of the turtle.

In Plate 32C the fishermen have speared both a dugong and a green turtle. The two oarsmen at the stern keep the canoe straight as the creatures, in their efforts to escape, pull it through the water. The man in the bow handles the lines to prevent them from becoming tangled. It is unlikely, however, that the aborigines would spear both a dugong and a turtle at one time; the capturing of one or the other, separately, would exercise the skill of the aborigines to the utmost. This design resembles a cave painting which I found at Chasm Island (Fig. 8G).

The Malay Praus, Mitjuna

During mythical times the ancestral Malays, the Ora-mangatira, built two praus, *mitjuna*, on the shores of a mythical river, Mamaripwa, that flowed into the sea near the south-western corner of Bickerton Island.² When the praus were complete the Malay shipwrights pushed them down the river into the sea, anchoring one at Junbia (Pl. 19C) and one at Banda-bandua (Pl. 19A). Later, the praus were transformed into low, inconspicuous islands, and the river into a hollow in the sandhills.

Two songs belong to the Malay praus, *mitjuna*.

- | | | | | |
|-----|----------------|-----------------|-------------------|------------------|
| (a) | <i>Mitjuna</i> | <i>nigarana</i> | <i>noua-ridja</i> | <i>niji-anda</i> |
| | prau | drop anchor | engine | stop |

A Malay prau has dropped its anchor and stopped its engine.

- | | | | | | |
|-----|---------------|------------------|----------------|-------------------|---------------|
| (b) | <i>Nara</i> | <i>maijugana</i> | <i>mitjuna</i> | <i>noua-ridja</i> | <i>jindia</i> |
| | man, or Malay | painting | prau | engine | starts |

After the Malays have finished painting their boat they start the engine.

It is unlikely that any Malay prau was ever fitted with an engine, and certainly none that came to this coast during last century. But, as the memory of the original prau becomes dim, the newer generation, having grown familiar with European boats driven by engines, have endowed the Malay praus with them. These songs are an evidence of how even mythical stories and songs keep abreast of the times.

Although it cannot be less than forty years since the Malay praus visited the northern coasts of Australia, the aborigines have retained an accurate memory of their appearance. A comparison between the sketch made by Westall³ (Pl. 26A) at the time when Flinders met a fleet of Malay praus near Cape Wilberforce in 1803 and the aboriginal paintings of the same craft (Pl. 32A, D) shows many points of resemblance—the curiously shaped bow and stern, the tripod mast, the double steering paddles, and even the number and disposition of the ropes in the rigging. The two paintings of the Malay prau, *mitjuna*, are associated with the totemic places at southern Bickerton Island.

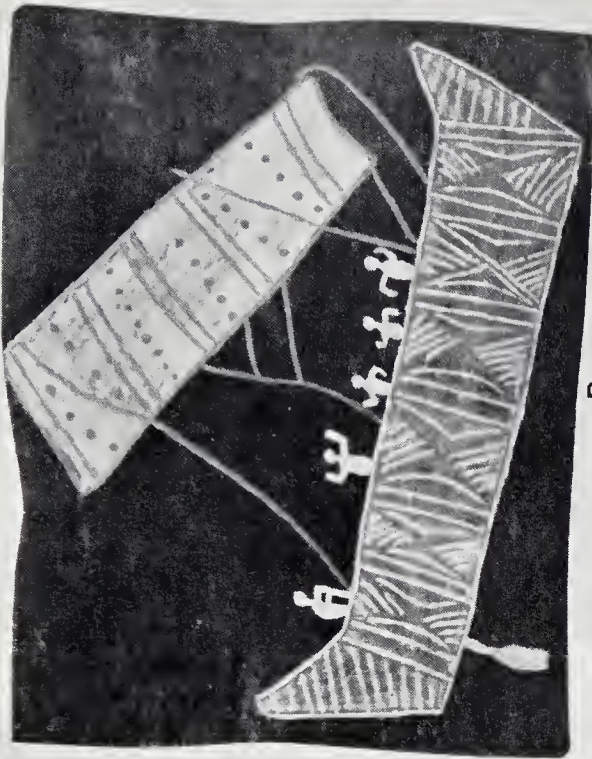
In Plate 32D the painting is closely linked with the myth of the totemic island, Junbia, off Bickerton Island,⁴ the circles on the hull referring to holes in the rocks. The four rectangles indicate divisions of the hold of the prau in which the cargo is stored; and the white triangles at the bow and stern, the bow wave and the wake.

Plate 32A is another painting of the Malay prau, which shows the rigging, the tripod mast, the curious projections fore and aft, upper cabins and divisions of the storage space in the hold, as well as the crew lining the deck, clad only in

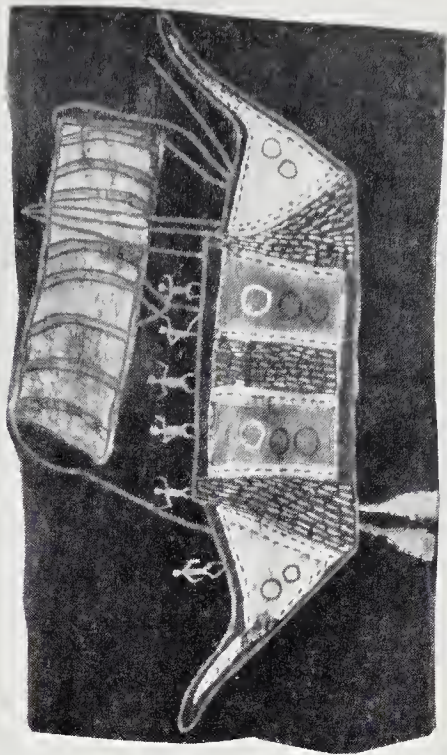
2. Map, Fig. 4.

3. I am indebted to the Mitchell Library, Sydney, for permission to publish a photograph of Westall's sketch of a Malay prau.

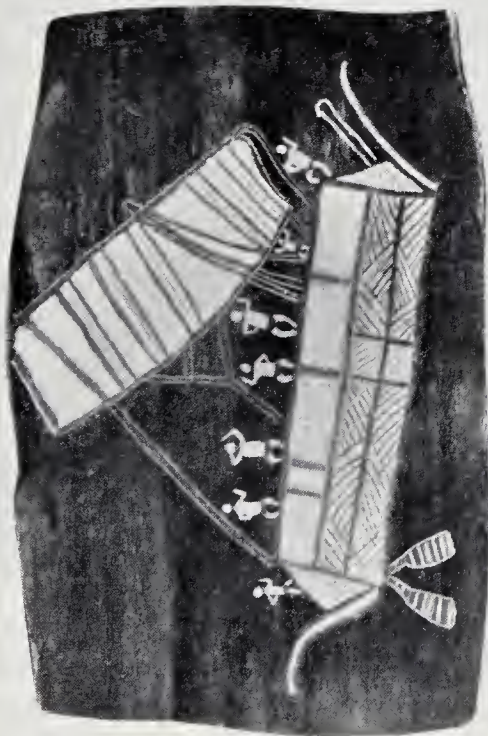
4. Map, Fig. 4.



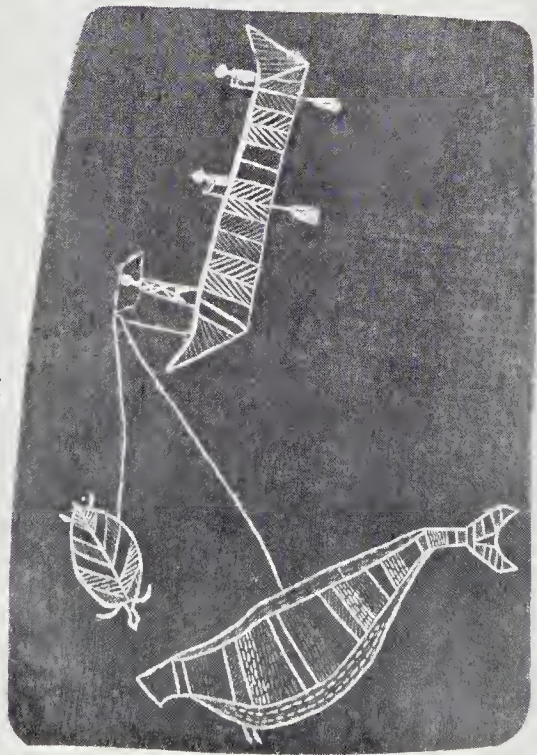
B



D



A



C

PLATE 32. Bark paintings, Grootte Eylandt
A, D A Malay prau B An aboriginal canoe C A fishing scene

their loin cloths. Both this and the previous painting are simple examples of X-ray art.

Figure 7, a tracing from Plate 32A, gives the names of the various parts of the hull and rigging of the Malay prau. Except for the tripod mast, the same type of sail, rigging and the names are used in the aboriginal dug-out *liva-liva* canoe of today (Pl. 26B and Pl. 32B).

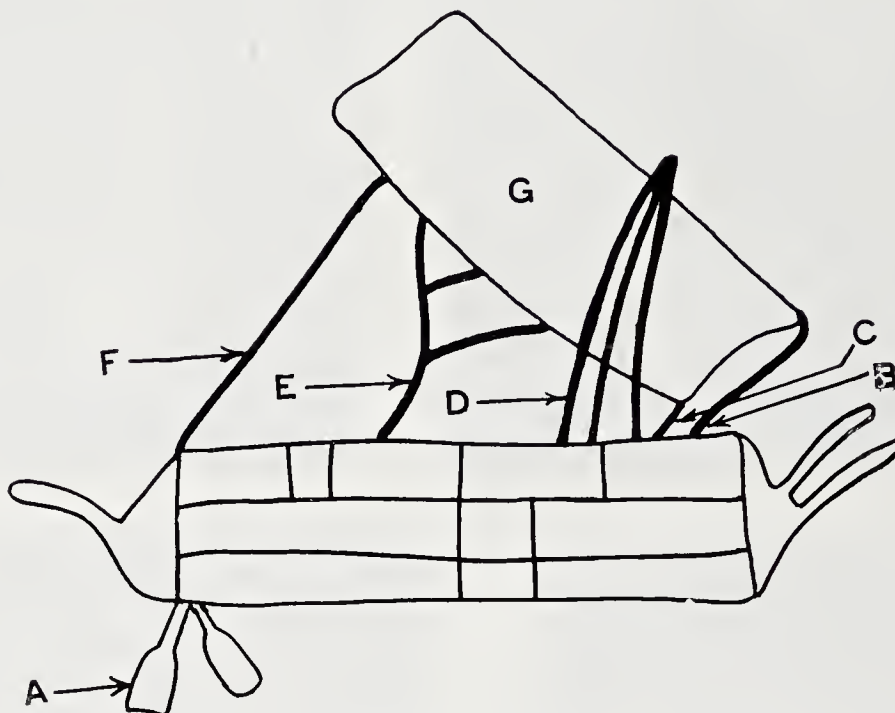


FIG. 7. Tracing of a Malay prau (Pl. 32A) showing names and disposition of rigging

A Paddles, *miaitja* B Rope, *bukuna* C Rope, *panalunta*
D Mast, *palia* E Rope, *pia pia* F Rope, *lula* G Sail, *gumbala*

The Dug-out Canoe, Liva-liva

Although the Malay prau, *mitjuna*, is part of the aboriginal mythology of Groote Eylandt, I did not find a myth relating to the Malay wooden dug-out canoe. This omission is surprising, for this craft must have revolutionized the water transport of the aborigines. Previous to the adoption of that sturdy and seaworthy canoe the aborigines were forced to make their water journeys in the frail and unstable bark canoe, *anantilupa*. Such journeys must have been hazardous, for a heavy sea falling aboard one of these frail craft would break it apart. In the mythical stories of Arnhem Land there are frequent references to fatalities from this cause (p. 498).

Plate 26B shows a dug-out canoe under sail.

Plate 32B shows a wooden dug-out canoe, *liva-liva*. The designs on the hull of the canoe are decorations and have no meaning.



A



B

PLATE 33. Cave paintings, Chasm Island

A Rock shelter, Chasm Island

B Westall's sketch of Chasm Island cave paintings, 1803

3. THE CAVE PAINTINGS OF CHASM ISLAND

In 1803 Matthew Flinders, while charting the coastline of the Gulf of Carpentaria, 'found [at Chasm Island] rude drawings, made with charcoal and something which looked like red paint . . . [of] porpoises, turtles, kangaroos and a human hand'.⁵ Westall's sketches of those paintings (Pl. 33B) are among the earliest records of aboriginal art in Australia.⁶

F. D. McCarthy, when returning to our base camp on one occasion, had seen and sketched some of the Chasm Island⁷ cave paintings. As we had three days to spare before moving from Groote Eylandt to our next camp at Yirrkalla, I took a small party to Chasm Island to complete the survey of the paintings.⁸ Whilst there McCarthy made complete records of some of the painted caves on the western side, noting the relationship of the designs to each other, their superimpositions and their colours. My interest, on the other hand, was in the study of the art forms themselves. Because of our different approach to the same subject, McCarthy and I have agreed to publish our results separately. His contribution will be a series of excellent detailed sketches from the caves on the western end and the interior,⁹ mine a number of the predominant figures from the eastern and north-western sides of the island.

In the shallow caves on the eastern end of Chasm Island (Pl. 33A) a number of the cave paintings pictured fishing activities. A selected number of these are illustrated in Fig. 8.

At A, two men in a bark canoe have speared a large fish. Two spears are already in its body. As is usual in Arnhem Land art, the prey, being the centre of interest, is given greater prominence than the hunters.¹⁰

B depicts fishermen in a bark canoe who have speared two dolphins.

In C a turtle, after it has been speared, is towing a canoe through the water. A single figure is in the stern.

D pictures two bark canoes and their crews.

E is a crude painting, in white, of a canoe. In the stern, one aboriginal has a steering paddle in his hand, and in the bow is another with a spear-thrower. The two lines from the bow lead to an almost indecipherable and heavily eroded painting of a sea creature.

F is another painting of two men who have speared a turtle.

5. Flinders (1814), vol. 2, p. 189.

6. I am indebted to the Mitchell Library, Sydney, for permission to use Westall's sketch (Pl. 33B) of the Chasm Island cave paintings.

7. Map, Fig. 4.

8. Figs. 8 and 9 illustrate cave paintings from eastern Chasm Island.

9. McCarthy's research of the Chasm Island cave paintings will be published in a later volume.

10. The method employed by the aborigines in capturing the larger fish, turtles and dugongs is to transfix them with a spear fitted with a detachable head to which is attached a long line. When the creature dives the barbed head becomes detached from the shaft, thus allowing the fishermen free movement to play the creature until it is exhausted. The aborigines endeavour to transfix their prey with two, and if they have them, three spears, with lines attached, so that the creature will have less chance of escaping.



FIG. 8. Cave paintings, Chasm Island

G, on the back wall of a rock shelter, is an attractive painting of a dugong hunt.

H, painted in a hollow in a cliff, shows two men in a canoe, surrounded by fish, water-goannas and dugongs. Two of the larger fish have been speared.

In the shallow caves on the north-western part of the island are a number of simple human and animal figures. These are illustrated so that a comparison can be made between the simple art of Chasm Island and the decorative, skilfully executed cave art of Oenpelli. It is likely that the simplicity of the cave and bark painting art of Groote Eylandt is due to a minimum of external influence. Fig. 9 illustrates some of those figures.

A is some lizard-like creature.

B is a long-billed unidentified bird. As mentioned previously, the Groote Eylandt aboriginal does not paint birds accurately.

C and D are single-line figures of human beings. These have been drawn, in red, with the point of a finger on the ceiling of a small cave.

E depicts simple human figures of a bird and a man.

G shows two human figures, one of whom is wearing a head-dress, and the other, with hands upraised, some form of pubic ornament.

H shows two figures, one of a man (in single line) and the other of a reptile, almost certainly a death-adder (*Acanthophis* sp.), a much-feared reptile which is common on Groote Eylandt.

J is some bird-like creature.

K represents either a wallaby or a kangaroo.

L illustrates some curious monster-like creature which had been painted in a small cave on the east side of the island. The feet are shown in plan, i.e., as footprints, a characteristic which is common in the art of Oenpelli.¹¹

M depicts two badly drawn and partly eroded human figures.

N is a group of three men, two kangaroos and one unidentified animal.

Plate 33A is a shallow cave or rock shelter on the eastern side of the island. This is the usual type in which the cave paintings were found.

Plate 33B is a photograph of Westall's sketch of some of the cave paintings of Chasm Island.

CONCLUSIONS

Groote Eylandt art is the simplest in the Arnhem Land area, a simplicity, no doubt, resulting from the isolation of an island environment.

The effect of this isolation is shown clearly in two aspects of the culture, the little that has been borrowed from the complex art of the mainland, even though it is only fifty miles distant, and the wide difference between certain myths in the two localities, particularly those dealing with astronomy. The myths of the Southern Cross (Groote Eylandt, p. 485, and Yirrkalla, p. 496), the Moon (Groote Eylandt, p. 484, and Yirrkalla, p. 493), and the Magellan Clouds (Groote

11. Pl. 47B, Pl. 55D.

THE ART OF GROOTE EYLANDT



FIG. 9. Cave paintings, Chasm Island

Eylandt, p. 484, and Yirrkalla, p. 500) will indicate this difference. Also, the Groote Eylandters use broken lines and chevron patterns extensively in their art, but seldom employ the cross-hatching which plays so important a part in the paintings of north-eastern Arnhem Land.

The bark paintings of Groote Eylandt are almost exclusively single or grouped figures on a plain, usually a black, ground. The artists, not suffering from a *horror vacui*, do not fill in the open spaces, as is done in the art of north-eastern Arnhem Land. Only about ten per cent of the Groote Eylandt bark paintings depict men and women, the remainder picture animals, plants, insects, fish and reptiles. The proportion of humans in the cave paintings is somewhat higher. Also, there is a difference, although not very great, between the designs and subjects of the cave paintings and those of the bark paintings. This, probably, is due to the fact that the bark paintings reflect only the art of the present day, while the cave paintings, many of which may be of considerable age, reflect the art styles of earlier periods. It is possible that the simple X-ray art, present in the bark paintings, but not, as far as I know, in the cave paintings, is a recent innovation.

PART THREE
THE ART OF OENPELLI

3

THE ART OF OENPELLI

THERE ARE TWO mediums through which the aboriginal artist of Oenpelli may express himself: on the cave walls and on sheets of bark.

The cave paintings of Oenpelli are more skilfully executed and more varied in design than in any other part of Arnhem Land; in fact, they are the most numerous and beautiful series of cave paintings that we know of in Australia. The bark paintings of Oenpelli, on the other hand, do not differ greatly from the basic art of Arnhem Land, i.e. single or multiple figures on a plain ground,¹ except that they have been modified on one hand by the X-ray art, and on the other by the art of the caves.

During the seven weeks the expedition was at Oenpelli I not only found extensive series of cave paintings at Unbalanja Hill and Inagurdurwil,² but collected many bark paintings. The following year, 1949, I returned with a small party to photograph in colour some of the outstanding cave paintings, my finds of the previous year, for inclusion in the UNESCO book, *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*. During that visit we located additional galleries of paintings at Cannon Hill and Obiri,³ and added many bark paintings to the collection of the previous year.

In addition to the four above-mentioned localities of cave paintings in the Oenpelli area, I know of, but have not examined, galleries at Nimbawah, Tor Rock, Cooper Creek, and in caves south of Obiri. There is little doubt that many more galleries could be found in both the western face of the Arnhem Land plateau and in its residuals on the Alligator flood plains.* A rich field probably awaits the investigator who is prepared to spend time and energy searching for further galleries of cave paintings in those places.

Although Spencer saw cave paintings during his first visit to Oenpelli in 1912, he only refers to them casually in his book dealing with that journey.⁴ However, in his next book,⁵ he made special reference to, and illustrated, several groups of cave paintings, although he did not state their specific localities. I was able to recognize Fig. 538 (which is reproduced upside down) and Fig. 540. Both these groups of paintings are at Unbalanja Hill (Fig. 11), the former at site 7 and the latter at site 3 (see p. 141). Spencer's other illustrations probably refer to cave paintings in the same locality.

1. The bark paintings of Groote Eylandt are typical of the basic art.

2. Map, Fig. 10.

3. Map, Fig. 11B.

* Since the writing of this I have investigated similar cave paintings at the headwaters of the Katherine River, Fig. 1.

4. Spencer (1914), p. 432.

5. Spencer (1928), pp. 823-4, Figs. 538-40.

ARNHEM LAND: ART, MYTH AND SYMBOLISM

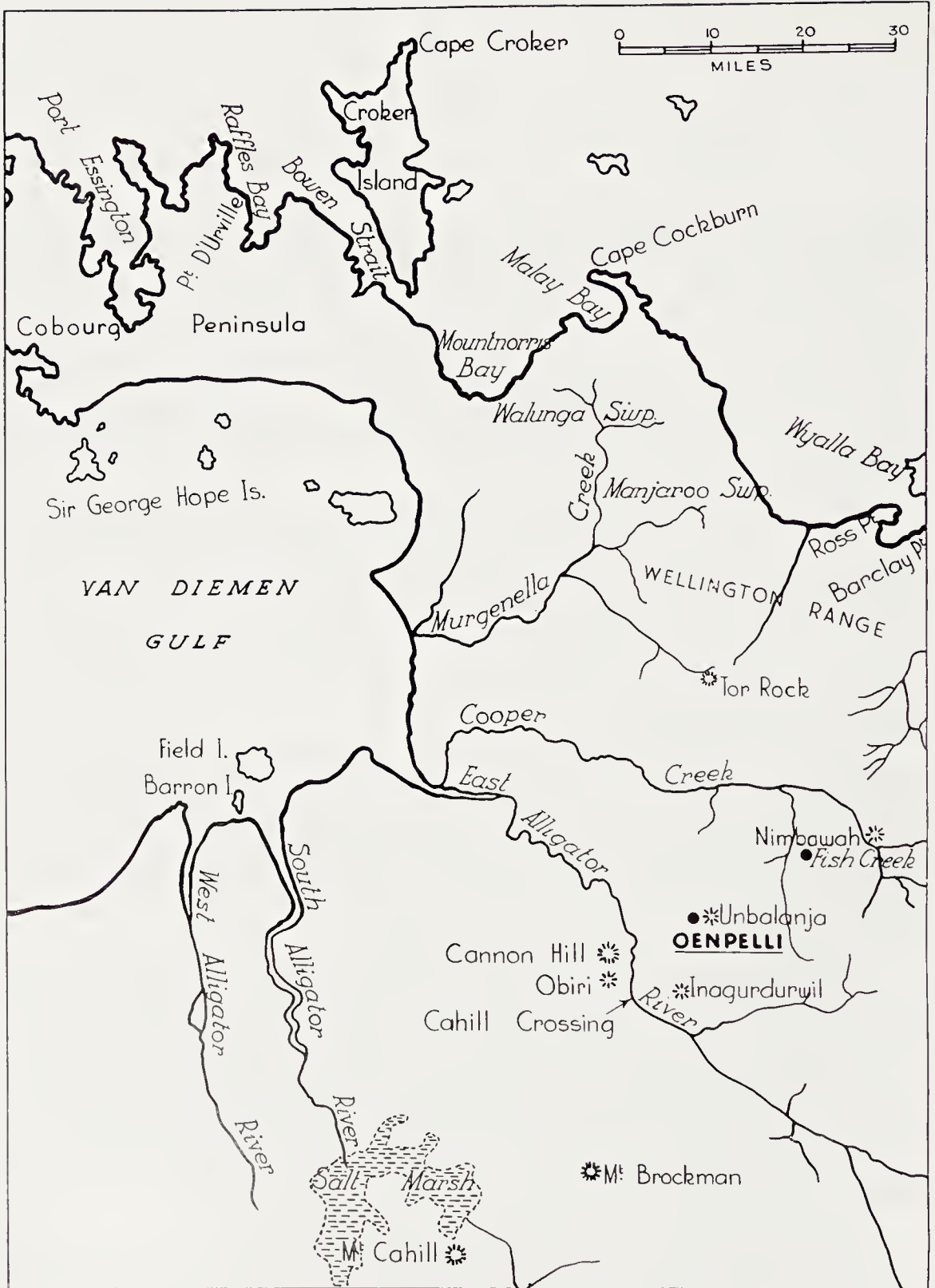


FIG. 10. Oenpelli area

Tindale⁶ published two photographs of the Injaluk cave, site 3, Fig. 11, taken by W. R. Penniford, together with a short description of the caves from Mr Penniford's notes. Elkin and the Berndts⁷ casually mention cave paintings at Oenpelli, and specifically refer to, but do not figure, 'drawings of women with human, bird and reptile heads, with several arms, accentuated breasts, and elongated vulva streaming with semen; women with babes suckling at their breasts, bodies of women showing foetal growth, women dancing, and men and women carrying out the sexual act.' These writers, whose main interest appears to have been the eroticism of the cave paintings, saw little to interest them in the hundreds of colourful X-ray paintings, or the delightful groups of little *Mimi* running figures. The only cave painting these writers specifically mention (already described by Spencer⁸) is illustrated by a bark painting made by a young aboriginal. Although the writers claim that this bark painting is a replica of the original cave painting, near site 3, Fig. 11, this claim is far from being correct (see Pl. 41B, C).

The bark paintings of the Oenpelli area attracted attention long before the cave paintings. Worsnop⁹ figured designs copied from sheets of bark which Captain Carrington collected at Field Island in 1887. Basedow¹⁰ also figured bark paintings from both Oenpelli and the Katherine River. It is to Spencer, however, that we owe our first detailed knowledge of the bark painting art at Oenpelli, and the rich mythology that lies behind them. In 1914¹¹ he illustrated fourteen bark paintings and described their meanings. Later,¹² he described these paintings again and added three new ones. Elkin and the Berndts¹³ figure two bark paintings from a select series on sex and magic which they collected at Oenpelli. These are of erotic significance and, so the authors claim, were used in sorcery to cause the death of a victim. The Berndts¹⁴ also figure eleven bark paintings showing figures in the act of coitus and related subjects.

On my first visit to Oenpelli in 1918 many of the artists who produced bark paintings for me came from the Liverpool River country, the local mission station using most of the available aboriginal labour for the killing and skinning of water buffaloes. During the 1949 visit the artists belonged either to the Oenpelli area or the adjacent regions of Nimbawah and Tor Rock. This fortunate set of circumstances has given me bark paintings from two somewhat dissimilar art areas, Oenpelli and the Liverpool River.

In contrast with the Groote Eylandters, the Oenpelli artists depicted mostly men and women, although the Liverpool artists, whose home is on the sea coast, produced many paintings of marine creatures. Both the Oenpelli and Liverpool artists, like those of Groote Eylandt, having no *horror vacui*, used open spaces extensively in the bark paintings.

6. Tindale (1928), pp. 35-6, Pl. 1.

8. Spencer (1928), Fig. 540.

10. Basedow (1925), p. 58.

12. Spencer (1928), pp. 802-13, Figs. 519-35.

13. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 81, Pls. 15-16.

14. Berndt (1951), Pls. 1, 8, 9, 16, 17, 21, 22, 23, 24.

7. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 80.

9. Worsnop (1897), p. 37, Pl. 18.

11. Spencer (1914), pp. 432-9, Pl. 79-92.

The Oenpelli cave paintings can be divided into two widely differing types. They are: (a) polychrome X-ray paintings of animals, birds, reptiles and fish, but seldom of human beings, in which both the external and internal details are indicated, many having been painted within the memory of living man; and (b) single-line drawings¹⁵ which, the aborigines claim, are not the work of their kind, but of a fairy people called the *Mimi*.

The polychrome X-ray art. Although aboriginal art, or for that matter any art, is visual, the X-ray art is, in addition, intellectual. The aboriginal artist of Oenpelli not only paints what he sees but also what he knows is there but cannot see: the skeleton, heart, lungs, stomach, intestines and other organs of the body.

Although this remarkable art is used in simple forms by native people in several parts of the world, it has reached its highest development in western Arnhem Land. The range of subjects in X-ray art and the manner of depicting them, however, is limited; birds, fish and animals, but seldom man, being drawn in side elevation and reptiles in plan. Nor do the subjects of the X-ray artists show any movement. It is essentially a static art.

The monochrome Mimi art. On the other hand, the *Mimi* artists had a feeling for composition and movement which the X-ray artists lacked. Their main subject was man in action, running, fighting and throwing spears. All *Mimi* paintings were executed in red which, according to the myth, was made up of blood and red ochre. It is possible that the monochromatic *Mimi* art of Oenpelli developed from the simple stick figures so common in Australian cave art. Those at Chasm Island, Fig. 9C, D, G, although crudely drawn, bear some small resemblance to the Oenpelli examples. But what is puzzling is the remarkable likeness between the *Mimi* running figures at Oenpelli and similar figures in Europe and Africa (p. 260). Although there has been extensive over-painting in some of the galleries of the X-ray paintings, this characteristic was not often seen in the *Mimi* drawings. Groups of *Mimi* drawings, some containing as many as thirty figures, appear to have been complete compositions, conceived and carried out by one artist. Fig. 12 at Unbalanja, Fig. 47 at Inagurdurwil and Fig. 53 at Cannon Hill are typical.

The cave paintings will be described in three groups:

- (1) Unbalanja Hill
- (2) Inagurdurwil
- (3) Cannon Hill and Obiri.

1. CAVE PAINTINGS

(1) UNBALANJA HILL

The first group of cave paintings was found at Unbalanja Hill,¹⁶ situated about a mile south-west of the expedition camp. This hill, a residual of the

15. For the sake of brevity, I shall call (b) *Mimi* art.

16. The cave paintings at Unbalanja Hill have been visited by Spencer (1914, p. 432), Penniford (see Tindale, 1928, p. 35), Elkin and the Berndts (1950, p. 80), and many others. I have known about them since 1920. It is likely, however, that expedition members were the first to see many of the cave paintings at Inagurdurwil, Cannon Hill and Obiri.

THE ART OF OENPELLI



FIG. 11A. Cave painting sites, Unbalanja

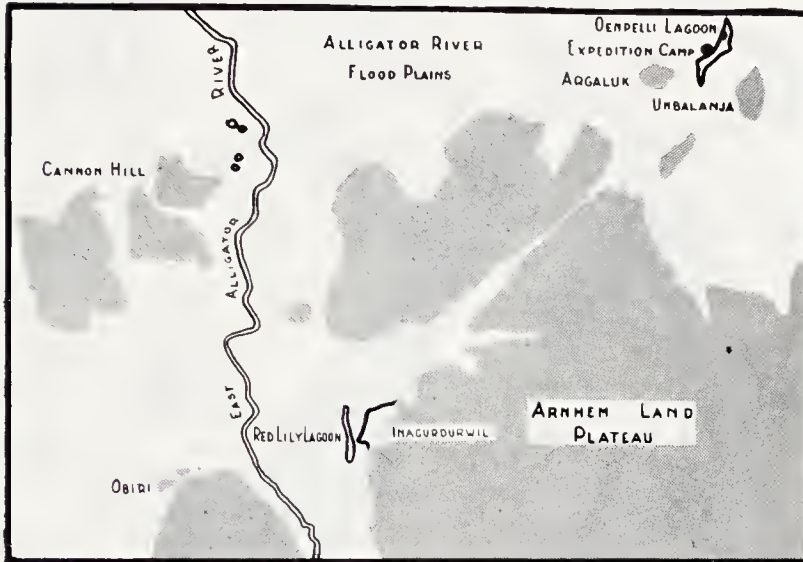


FIG. 11B. Cave painting localities, Oenpelli

Arnhem Land plateau, is about a mile long, half a mile wide and approximately five hundred feet in height. The summit is heavily eroded into a maze of steep-sided vertical chasms, huge tumbled boulders and extensive rock shelters in which the aborigines have camped. In some of the rock shelters the ceiling and walls are covered with a mosaic of cave paintings; in other places there are only a few scattered designs. Nevertheless, the paintings tend to group in sites. These are indicated on the map of Unbalanja.¹⁷

Figure 12

This is an extensively decorated ceiling, in which the figures are in deep red. The large legs and thighs and the position of the bodies of the running figures bear a strong resemblance to South African Bushman paintings figured by Battiss.¹⁸

It would seem that the paintings on the ceiling are the conception of a single artist because, save for the central faded design, no figure has been painted over the other. Many of the paintings on this ceiling and those of the four running

17. Map, Fig. 11A, B.

18. Battiss (1948), pp. 195-6, 204, 218.



FIG. 12. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

women (Fig. 13) are among the most spirited and beautiful examples I have seen in aboriginal art. Locality—between sites 7 and 8.*

Figure 13

This is a line of four running women with a leg of the fifth. They are about nine inches high and painted in red. This beautiful little group, which is adjacent



FIG. 13. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

to the painted ceiling (Fig. 12), is possibly the work of the same artist. The action of the figures and the large calves to the legs, as in Fig. 12, are reminiscent of Bushman art. Locality—vertical face between sites 7 and 8.†

Figure 14

A illustrates all the figures on a vertical rock at the east side of Unbalanja. The paintings are in red, the largest of them being about twelve inches in height. As in many other paintings of this type, the heads have disappeared.¹⁹ These I have replaced by a series of dots. The more interesting figures, *a*, *b*, *c*, *d* and *e*, are shown in Figs. 18, 19, 21, 22. Locality—site 10.

B is a group of faint, long-bodied human beings painted in red, which is adjacent to the more extensive group shown in Fig. 12. Locality—roof of cave between sites 7 and 8.

C shows a group of six running figures in the act of throwing multi-barbed spears. The paintings are about nine inches high and painted in red. Locality—site 1.

D pictures one long-bodied man and, on the lower left, two much more conventionalized running figures. Within the circular lines are two other simple long-bodied figures.

E is an indistinct group of seven running figures. Although these were faintly visible to the eye, four of them could not be clearly distinguished in the photo-

* Portion of this ceiling is reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XV.

† Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. VIII.

19. It is possible that the heads were painted in white, a pigment which appears to have a shorter life than that of the red.



FIG. 14. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

graph. On that account I have only included them diagrammatically in the drawing. Some idea of the beauty of this group can be seen in the movement of the first three figures. Locality—site 6.

F is a much-faded painting of a running spearman. It is nine inches high and painted in red. Locality—site 5.



FIG. 15. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

Figure 15

A is a group of five dancing women, arranged in an attractive rhythmic design. They are about twelve inches high and painted in deep red. The significance of the crescent-shaped figures above their heads is not known. Locality—vertical face, near site 5.

B is a heterogeneous group of figures in polychrome. In the lower left is a cat-fish, distinguished by the tentacles protruding from the mouth and the lack of fins. In the upper left is a *Munimunigan*.²⁰ The two animals are possibly bandicoots. The group of three human beings (upside down), a man and two women, is an example of the inexplicable coupled figures.²¹ Locality—ceiling at site 8.

Figure 16

A is a faded group of paintings of men and women. The central figure, wearing the large head-dress of a *Munimunigan*, is carrying an object, perhaps a fish, in the right hand. A male child is shown under the right arm of the same figure. On the upper right is a woman with an oval carrying-bag on her right arm. To the left are two figures, one of which is a woman. Locality—a chasm, site 2.

20. See myth of *Munimunigan*. The paintings of this spirit being are often associated with cat-fish. Figs. 15B, 16B, 55A.

21. There are a number of coupled human figures at Oenpelli (Pls. 18B, 21B, C, D). It is probable that these are the paintings mentioned by Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 80, as those of men and women carrying out the sexual act. An examination of the figures will show that this is not so. Mountford (1937), Fig. 36, describes similar coupled figures from Napier Broome Bay, Western Australia. This design, like 'hocker' figures, 'joint marks' and hook-shaped faces, might also exist outside of Australia.

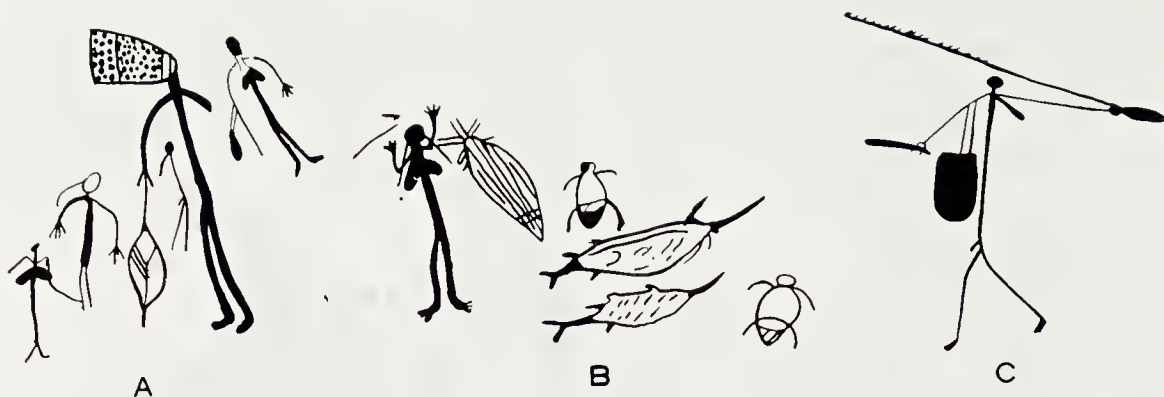


FIG. 16. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

B is a series of paintings in red. They can be seen in a photograph of the camp of Howell Walker published by Mountford²² in his account of the Arnhem Land expedition. On the left is a woman,* about twelve inches high, wearing some curious form of head-dress. To the right of her is a cat-fish, two gar-fish and two turtles. Locality—near site 5.

C is an attractive figure, about ten inches high, in red, of a thin-bodied man with spear and spear-thrower in one hand and a club in the other. He is carrying a large bag on his arm and a small one round his neck. Locality—in cleft near site 3.



FIG. 17. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

Figure 17

A, eighteen inches high and painted in red, shows a man spearing a fish, possibly one of the rays. To the left is another fish of the same kind. The man, who is wearing a large head-dress similar to that of Fig. 16A, carries an unidentified object, possibly a goose-wing fan, in his left hand. Locality—near site I.

B is in red and eighteen inches high. It illustrates a running figure with a spear-thrower in one hand and a line extending backward from one foot. The fact that this line is used on two other running figures, Fig. 19A, D, suggests that

²² Mountford (1949), p. 177.

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XI.



FIG. 18. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

it is not a fortuitous design. The aboriginal informants could not explain its meaning. Locality—near site 1.

C pictures a number of cave paintings in red. The main figure, eighteen inches high, is a *Munimunigan* wearing the characteristic head-dress of this harmless spirit being. In the lower right is a cat-fish, and to the left two unidentified fish. Locality—site 1.

Figure 18

A is a curious painting, in red, of a human figure, which has been almost obliterated by large X-ray paintings of fish.

Although it is possibly fortuitous, this painting with the horse-shoe design round the face resembles the *Wandjina* figures of north-western Australia.²³ As, however, this was the only example of its kind seen among the many thousands of cave paintings at Oenpelli, one cannot attach a great deal of importance to its superficial likeness to the north-western *Wandjina* figures. Locality—near site 3.

B is a complex group of human figures in red. The main design is an example of the coupled figures discussed elsewhere.²⁴ Under the arms of this tall, thin-bodied human being are five more people, one of whom is holding up a long paddle-like object. On the lower left is a partly obliterated running figure. Locality—vertical face, near site 2.

C is a female figure in red, carrying an implement in her right hand. This woman is wearing a head-dress with pigtails similar to that shown in B.

D is a detail from the extensive group figured in Fig. 14A. It shows an aboriginal sitting down. The missing head has been indicated by dots. Locality—site 10.

E shows a running figure, with a spear-thrower in one hand. This figure, reminiscent of Bushman art, has the same thick calves and thighs as those shown in Fig. 12 and Fig. 13. Locality—vertical face, site 5.

F is a painting of a hermaphrodite figure in red, in which both the breasts and the male sex organs are shown. The missing head is indicated by dots. Locality—in chasm, near site 2.

G is a much-weathered cave painting in red of a big-hipped recumbent figure, about six feet long. Locality—site 6.

H, forty inches long and painted in red, is a long-bodied human figure, without arms or head. Locality—cave near site 1.

J, an indistinct painting of a big-hipped woman, is in red and about three feet high. Locality—site 6.

Figure 19

A, a small running figure in red, with a hook-shaped face,²⁵ is about six

23. Love (1930), Pl. 11.

24. See note 21.

25. Battiss (1948), p. 205, Pl. 6, Obermaier and Kühn (1930), Pls. 26, 35, and Bleek (1940), Pl. 46, illustrate South African Bushman paintings with hook-shaped faces, a curious parallel between these two widely-separated art forms.

THE ART OF OENPELLI



FIG. 19. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

inches high. This figure, like that in Fig. 17B, has a long line extending from one foot. Locality—vertical face, near site 2.

B is a big-hipped male figure holding a spear-thrower in one hand. It is in yellow, much larger than the usual painted figure, being about forty inches in height. The legs bear a strong resemblance to some of the South African Bushman paintings figured by Battiss. Locality—site 4.

C is a big-hipped figure, this time of a woman. She is carrying a bag from her head and a digging stick in her right hand. Locality—site 3.

D is another running figure with a line extending from one of the feet. It is twelve inches high, and painted in deep red. The head is missing. Locality—site 8.

E, a curious female figure in red, is about eighteen inches high. My informants explained that this painting was the work of the *Mimi* artists and pictured one of their women-folk. Locality—ceiling near site 2.

F pictures a woman painted in red. Locality—site 2.

G illustrates two human figures, one of whom has a carrying-bag in her right hand. Locality—site 1.

H is a large, conspicuous female figure, six feet high, painted in deep red. This is an attractive example of aboriginal art, because of its size, its spirited action and its position. Locality—in cleft, site 2.

J, a detail of the extensive group at Fig. 14A, depicts a man in red with, possibly, a spear and a spear-thrower in one hand and some unidentified implements in the other. Locality—site 10.

K is a running man, in red, sixteen inches high. He is carrying a spear and spear-thrower in one hand, and a fan made from a goose wing in the other. Locality—site 1.

L is a squatting figure in red, among many other faded and indecipherable paintings. The design, which is thirty inches high, is without a head. This I have indicated by dots. Locality—site 1.

Figure 20

A shows a man holding a spear and spear-thrower. Locality—vertical face, site 5.

B is a complicated figure in faint red, from the same extensively painted rock-face as Fig. 14A. Although it is obvious that the painting represents a human being, it is not possible to identify the various appendages. Locality—site 5.

C represents two figures, one of which is a *Munimunigan*. The aborigines could not explain the central design. Locality—narrow cleft, near site 5.

D is a *Mimi* painting in red of one of their own kind. He is sitting down with a multi-barbed spear resting against his shoulder. This decorative figure is forty inches high. Locality—vertical face, site 1.

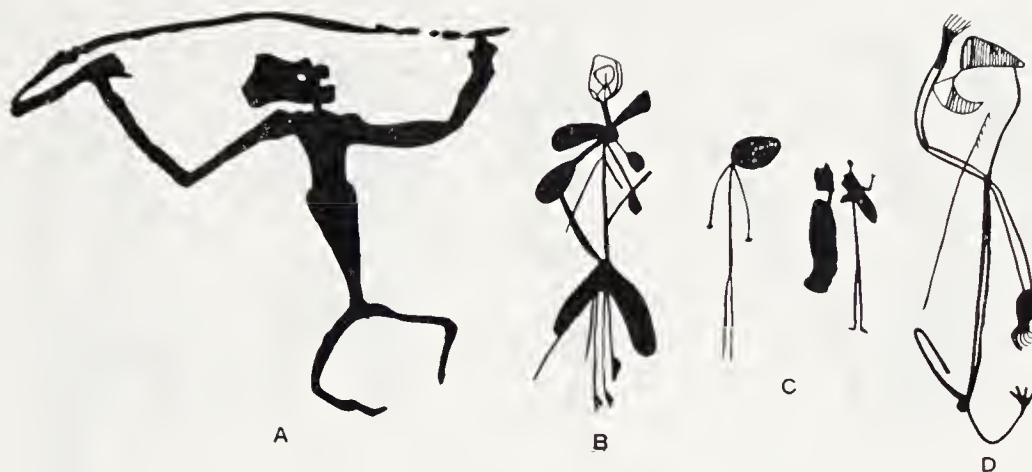


FIG. 20. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

Figure 21

A shows a group of curious figures in faint red, about four feet high, which were adjacent to the coupled figures of C. The aborigines considered that the paintings were the work of the *Mimi* but could not suggest the meaning of the design.

B is a detail, in pale yellow, and about eighteen inches high, from the extensively painted surface figured in 14A. This is another example of the coupled human figures. The missing heads are indicated by dots.

C shows a man and two coupled female figures. They are in red and two feet high. The three figures have the same curious hook-shaped faces as some of the Bushman paintings. Locality—site 1.

D is another detail from the extensive group shown in Fig. 14A. Again, it shows coupled figures from which the heads are missing.²⁶ The position of the arms is almost identical with that of the arms on the coupled figures recorded by Mountford,²⁷ from Napier Broome Bay, Western Australia. They were also about the same size. The Unbalanja figures are in red and about fourteen inches long. Locality—site 10.

E is a running figure, in which the head, probably in white, has disappeared. It is sixteen inches high and painted in deep red. Locality—site 1.

F is a long hollow-bodied woman, eighteen inches high, in red. There are a number of paintings of these hollow-bodied figures in the Oenpelli area, usually with a lattice design filling the opening. Mountford²⁸ records similar figures from Napier Broome Bay, Western Australia, without the lattice design. Locality—site 8.

G is a male and female figure in red. Locality—site 8.

H is a tall thin-bodied running figure in white, about eighteen inches high. The man, who has a hook-shaped face, is throwing a spear and wearing orna-

26. I was unable, after many days of searching among the thousands of examples of cave art in the Oenpelli area, to find any of the cave paintings mentioned by Elkin and the Berndts which showed men and women in the act of coitus; see note 21.

27. Mountford (1937), Fig. 36.

28. Mountford (1937), Figs. 12, 33 and 34.



FIG. 21. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

ments on his arms. On the lower right is a fish. My informants explained that this painting, although it resembled those made by the *Mimi*, was actually the work of some aboriginal who was trying to imitate *Mimi* paintings. The *Mimi*, the aborigines said, always painted in red, so H, being in white, must have been painted by an aboriginal. Locality—site 8.

J is adjacent to the big-hipped man (Fig. 19B). The tallest figure is a *Munimunigan* (see head-dress); to the left is a turtle, a woman with a head-dress similar to Fig. 16B, and a cat-fish. The designs on the upper right may be those of a spear-thrower and boomerangs, although representations of the latter are rare. Locality—site 4.

K is a tall thin-bodied figure, in red, nine inches high. Locality—between sites 2 and 9.

L shows part of an extensive, somewhat weathered frieze of human beings, reptiles, fish and birds. They are in a cleft adjacent to the tall running woman, Fig. 18H. The central figure is a *Munimunigan*, and the remainder are the tall thin-bodied *Mimi*. In the upper left are three indistinct paintings of water birds. Locality—site 2.

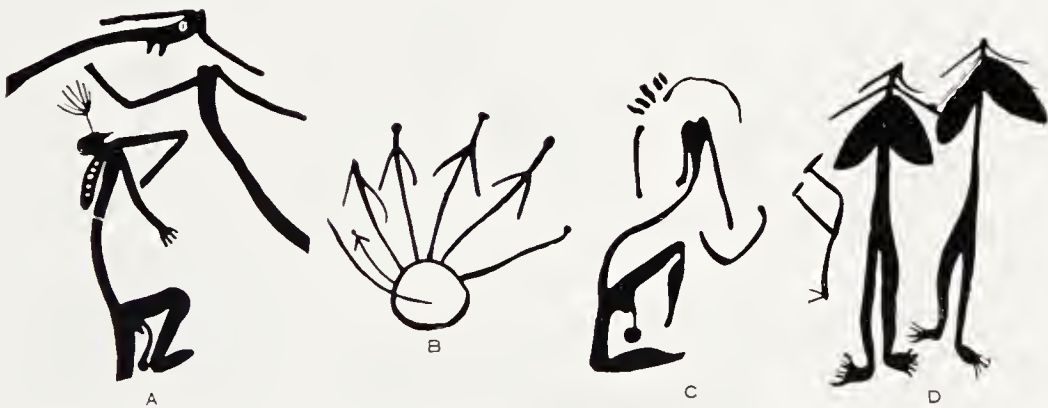


FIG. 22. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

Figure 22

A is a detail from the painted cliff face pictured in Fig. 14A. The grouping of the male and female figures is particularly decorative. The male, in mid-red, is ten inches high. Locality—site 10.

B is a simple group of thin-bodied figures in red, about twelve inches high, arranged on the circumference of a circle. Locality—on ceiling, site 2.

C is another detail, twelve inches high, in faded red, from the painted face in Fig. 14A. The figure represents a man sitting down. Though the head was weathered away, the designs above probably represent some form of head-dress. Again, the legs of this figure show Bushman-like characteristics.

D, painted in dark red, about eighteen inches high, shows two thin-bodied women with large breasts. There is an incomplete figure (upside down) to the left. Locality—on ceiling, site 2.



FIG. 23. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

Figure 23

A pictures a portion of a group of unusual cave paintings executed on the face of a vertical cliff. The evil spirit, *Adungun*, Pl. 57D, which occupied the upper part of this group, is not included.

The figure in the upper left is most likely an incomplete painting of a fish. To the right is a female figure (upside down) with appendages hanging from one hand, both feet and the vulva. This figure, eighteen inches long, was skilfully painted in fine red lines. My informants could give me no information about it other than that she was a *Mimi* woman.

To the right of the woman is a small running figure, and to the right of that figure a *Mimi* with a spear and spear-thrower in one hand and a goose-wing fan in the other. He is carrying two bags round his neck. A cat-fish occupies the upper right, and a human figure is immediately below. There was no explanation for the bottom design. Locality—site 5.

B represents three tubers or yams, with their roots projecting from the sides and tendrils sprouting from the top.²⁹ Locality—site 3.

C is an interesting cave painting in red, three feet high, of a human being in which only the legs, the trunk and the two eyes are indicated. Locality—site 5.

D, in faded red, is ten inches in height. This painting represents one of the *Mimi* with a multi-pronged fish spear in his left hand. He is wearing a head-dress of two pig-tails similar to those of Fig. 16B, Fig. 18C. Locality—site 5.

E shows a weathered group of fighting figures,³⁰ painted in red, about nine inches high. Many of the details have disappeared. Locality—site 8.

F is one of the few abstract indecipherable designs which I found among the many thousands of cave paintings examined in the Oenpelli area. The art of Oenpelli is almost entirely representational.³¹ Locality—site 8.

G is a curious badly eroded form in black, about twelve inches high, which may represent two human figures. Paintings in black are rare at Oenpelli. Locality—in shallow rock shelter, site 6.

H, in red, is a particularly attractive outline painting of a kangaroo, four feet high. Locality—site 5.

Figure 24

This complete frieze in red, about six feet long, had been painted on a smooth ledge. The figures are so crowded that it is difficult to separate one from another. Most of the designs, however, represent running men with spears in their hands. There are also three squatting figures. The aborigines claimed that the paintings were all self-portraits of the *Mimi* people. Locality—site 2.

29. Mountford (1939a), Pl. XIV, Fig. D, illustrates a bark painting of growing yams from Goulburn Island. This is reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XII.

30. Figs. 39 and 47 at Inagurdurwil also picture men fighting.

31. This is in direct contrast to the abstract art of the Central Australian aborigines where few of the designs, except those of tracks, can be deciphered without the aid of the artist who produced them. Mountford (1937a), p. 94.



FIG. 24. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

Figure 25

A remarkable group of cave paintings, about ten feet in length, illustrates a hunting party of *Nalbidji* people (myth, p. 183, and cave painting, Pl. 50).

On the upper right is a man, sitting down, with a hollow-bodied woman to his left. To the right is a fish. Between the kangaroos are two men with spears and two women. One man is spearing the right-hand kangaroo. The group is painted in red and yellow. Locality—ceiling, site 8.*



FIG. 25. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

Plate 34

A is a group from an extensively painted vertical cliff face. Two of the human figures are in white, outlined with red; the others are in red. Behind the human figure on the lower right is a cat-fish, and behind the upper figure is a bird feeding its two young. The remaining figure is an unidentified wading bird. Locality—site 5.

In B the figures, in white, are thirty inches high. They illustrate two *Mimi* or perhaps *Nalbidji* men. The man on the right has a large carrying-basket, and the other a sacred bag, which can only be carried by adult men. This bag is

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. IV.



PLATE 34. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

similar to those carried by the *Nalbidji* men (Pl. 50 and myth, p. 183). Locality—site 1.

C is a painting twelve inches high, in red and white. It represents one of the *Mamandi* women,³² who are ever on the lookout to injure aborigines traveling by themselves. The *Mamandi* are always shown with the legs thrown backwards as in this painting. Locality—between sites 2 and 9.

D is a group of strange human figures. The painting in white is that of a *Mamandi*, and those in red and yellow, human beings. There was no explanation for the lower design. The three human figures have hook-shaped faces. Locality—site 3.

E is one of the female *Mamandi*, similar to the *Nadubi*³³ (site 7, Unbalanja). She has a long barbed tongue and spines protruding from her feet and waist.

F is a running figure from an elaborately painted surface at site 5. I did not obtain the meaning of the various appendages to the body.

G is a tall delicately-drawn *Mimi*, in red, carrying a multi-pronged spear in one hand and a spear-thrower in the other. He has a hook-shaped face and hair ornaments. Near by is a squatting male figure, in white, also with a spear.

H is a badly-weathered cave painting of a pregnant woman, with a bag hanging from her shoulder. Painted in yellow and red. Locality—between sites 2 and 8.

J is a well-executed cave painting, in white, of a running man with a hook-shaped face and a bag hanging from his shoulder. An X-ray fish design partly obliterates the running figure.

Figure 26

A is the painting, in red, of a royal spoonbill. Locality—site 8.

B pictures two goannas in red, the largest of which is four feet long. Locality—in cave, site 8.

C figures a goanna, with the masses of fat within the body. Nearby are two cockatoos (probably *Kakatoë galerita*). Locality—site 2.

D shows a much-faded painting of one of the wading birds, probably a brolga. I did not find out the meaning of the circle. The brolga, in red, is two feet high. Locality—site 5.

E, in red, is an attractive outline drawing of a long-necked fresh-water tortoise. Locality—in cleft, site 3.

F is a painting, in red, about four feet long, of a crocodile, probably the fish-eating species (*Crocodylus johnstoni*). Although, in the Oenpelli bark paintings, the artist always turns the tail sideways to show the serrated crest (Pls. 70A, 72A), this convention was not used in the cave paintings. Locality—site 3.

G is a goanna in red, about thirty inches long. Locality—site 1.

J pictures large faded designs, forty-two inches long, in mid-red, of two fresh-water tortoises. Locality—site 2.

32. Myth, p. 197.

33. Myth of *Nadubi*, p. 203, Pl. 58B.



FIG. 26. Cave paintings, Unbalanja



FIG. 27. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

Figure 27

This figure, about four feet long, shows a frieze of birds, probably pied geese, in red, and five running human figures. The originals were all painted on a narrow ledge adjacent to Fig. 12. Locality—site 8.

Plate 35

This plate illustrates two figures from the same extensively painted ceiling as Fig. 12. One is a goanna, in polychrome X-ray art, in which the lungs and intestines are shown. The rest of the body is covered with fine red lines, arranged in interesting patterns. Underneath the goanna, in white, is a long hollow-bodied *Mimi* woman. At her feet is an unidentified object, possibly a goose-wing fan. Locality—site 8.

Plate 36

This plate illustrates a striking group of three kangaroos, one female and two males, painted on a vertical cliff face. The internal details are drawn in fine red lines on a white ground.

Although the two left-hand kangaroos have suffered from the effects of the weather, the female kangaroo on the right is much better preserved. In this example the artist has shown the two eyes on one side of the head, the wind-pipe with lungs and heart attached, the three-lobed liver immediately below, the stomach and the intestines. The spinal vertebrae extend the whole length of the body to the end of the tail. Although most of the details on the upper part of the central kangaroo have been obliterated, those at the bottom are almost complete. The general form of the badly weathered left-hand male kangaroo can be distinguished, although the internal details are difficult to trace. The large tail of this creature suggests that it may be one of the wallaroos, *barak* (Pl. 73B), which the aborigines believe are the 'dogs' of the *Mimi*. Locality—site 4.

Plate 37

A depicts a faint, badly-weathered painting of a thin-bodied woman and a portion of a man. The woman is in white, outlined with red, and the man is painted with red lines on a yellow ground. Locality—site 2.

B is a hollow-bodied man in white, with a hook-shaped face. To the right is a fish.

(woman)

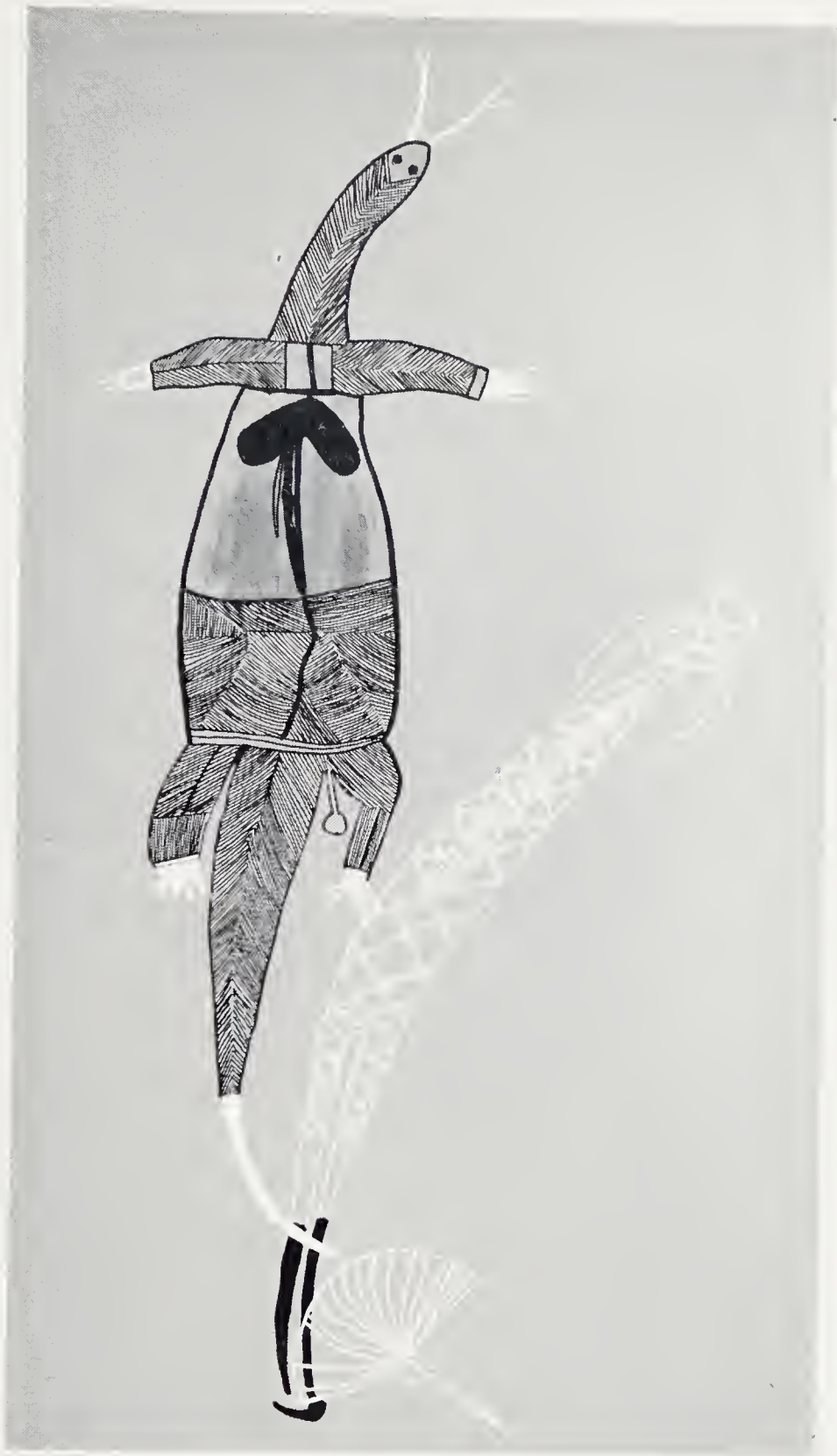


PLATE 35. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

C depicts male and female running figures, in white. The man has a hook-shaped face, and the woman a circular face with radiating lines. Locality—ceiling at site 8.

D is a good example of an X-ray painting, in red and white, of a male cat-fish. The artist has shown the internal details, backbone, stomach, and the oval external pouch, which becomes greatly extended when the fish is hatching the eggs of the female in its mouth (see p. 254). Locality—on ceiling, site 8.

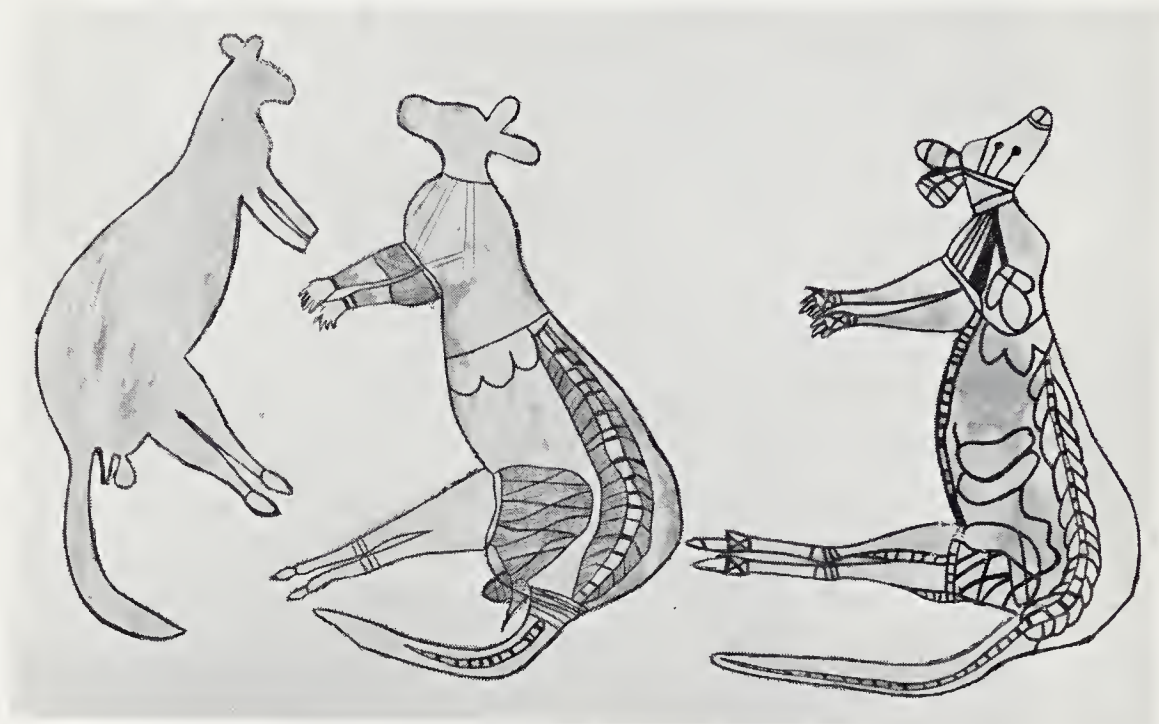


PLATE 36. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

E pictures an X-ray fish, probably one of the gurnards. The colours used are red, yellow and white. The stomach is indicated in white, and a mass of edible fat (the oval behind the stomach) in chevron designs. The other shaded areas indicate the flesh.

F shows a tall thin-bodied man, in white, with a much exaggerated spear-thrower and a multi-barbed spear in his hand. To the right is a weathered painting of a fish which has the head almost detached from the body. This is the aborigines' method of killing the fish. Locality—site 7.

G is another running man, in which one foot is greatly extended. The figure is eighteen inches high and painted in white with yellow lines and dots. Locality—site 8.

H illustrates a group of three figures. On the left is a long-necked fresh-water tortoise; in the centre a man, eighteen inches high, holding a multi-pronged spear and spear-thrower in his right hand, and a fan, made from a goose wing, in the other. On the right is a decorative painting in X-ray art of a barramundi.

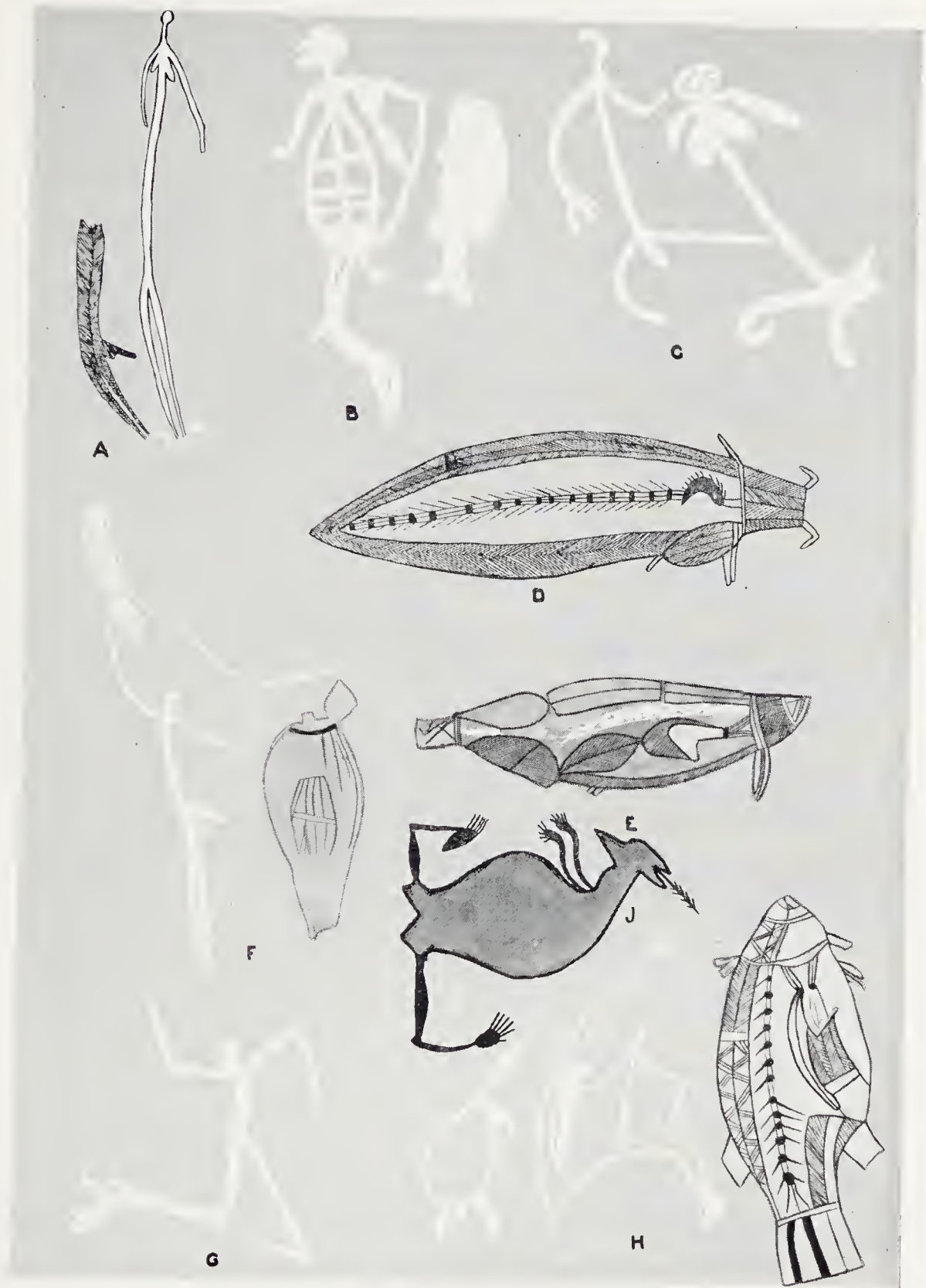


PLATE 37. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

There is a small fish inside the stomach. The two groups of three parallel lines leading toward the head from the stomach are the gills, and the shaded area behind the stomach is a mass of edible fat which the aborigines value as a delicacy. Locality—site 8.

J shows a female figure with a protruding mouth and barbed tongue. She might be a *Mamandi*.

Plate 38

A is an X-ray painting, red on white, of a long-necked tortoise. My informant, *Kanaula*, now an old infirm man, remembers as a youth watching one of his relatives paint this tortoise on the ceiling. This would indicate that the painting was produced about 1900. It is still in a good state of preservation. Locality—on ceiling, site 3.

B is an X-ray painting, in red lines on a yellow ground, of a frill-necked lizard, called *gundaman*. It is twenty-four inches long. The only internal details indicated are the lungs and the alimentary canal. Locality—site 7.

C is a fresh-water tortoise, in X-ray, twenty-seven inches long, painted in fine white lines on a yellow ground. The oesophagus, stomach and intestines are shown. Locality—site 7.

D is an X-ray painting of a barramundi, red on white, and eighteen inches long, in which the head has been broken backward to kill the fish. Locality—on ceiling, site 7.

E shows three fish in X-ray art form. The upper is a cat-fish, red on white, thirty inches long, and the lower two gar-fish; these are painted in red lines on yellow. Locality—site 7.

F is another X-ray painting of a fish in which the head (lower left) has been removed preparatory to dismembering the fish for cooking. The painting, red on white, is thirty inches long. Locality—site 7.

G is an X-ray painting, red lines on yellow, eighteen inches long, of a male cat-fish, with the greatly extended pouch. Locality—on ceiling, site 7.

H has three paintings, the larger, in X-ray, red on white, of a fresh-water tortoise in which the oesophagus, stomach and intestines are indicated. The other figures, red on white, are two decorative and well-executed X-ray paintings of water-birds.

Plate 39

A is an X-ray painting of a long-necked tortoise which has been painted over a frieze of small running *Mimi* figures, one of which can be seen on the right-hand side. The fact that the *Mimi* figures were underneath indicated that this art is the older. Locality—site 3.

B is, according to my informants, a *Mimi* woman with many carrying-bags suspended from her shoulders. The figure, eighteen inches high, is in red with white outlines. Locality—site 8.

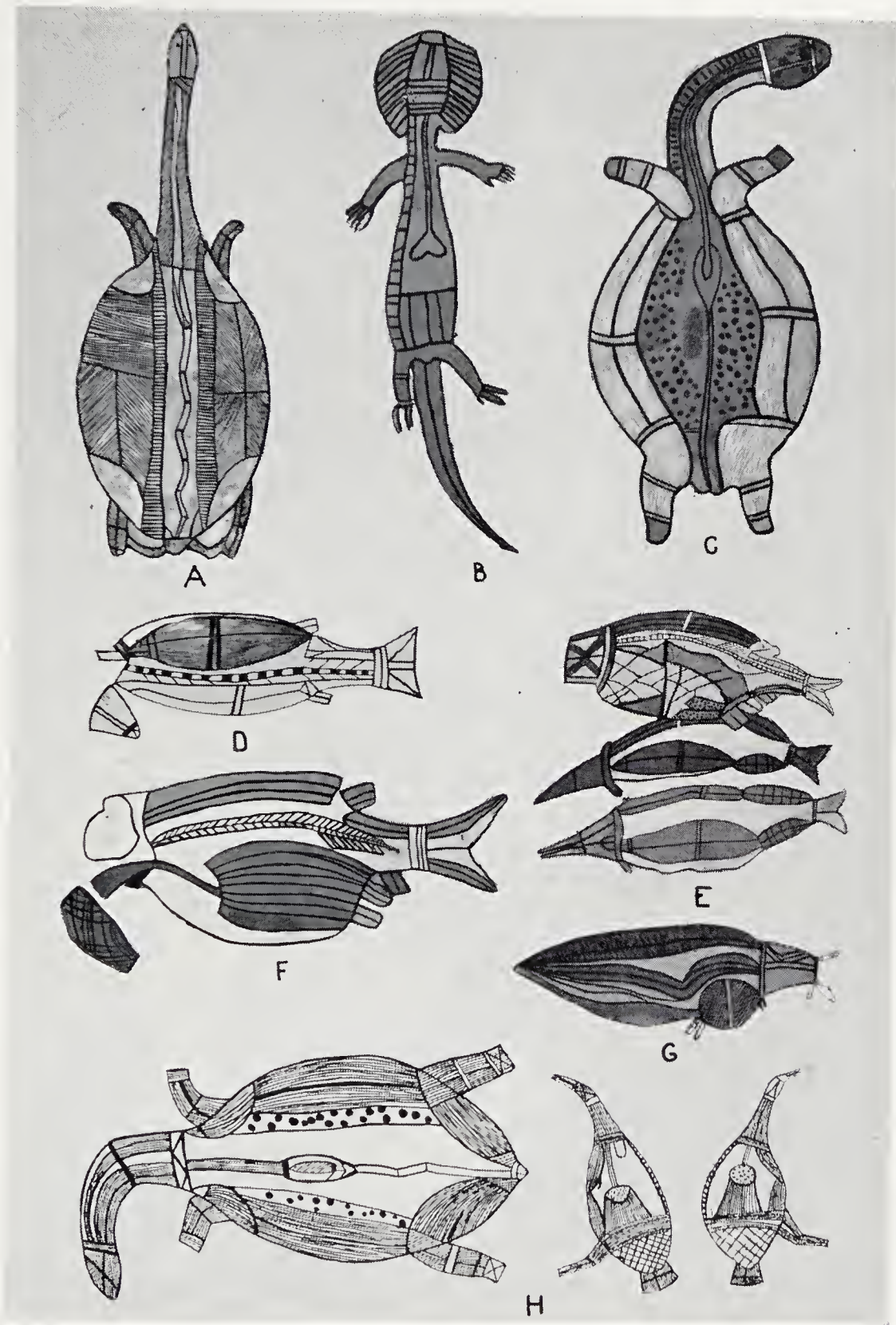


PLATE 38. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

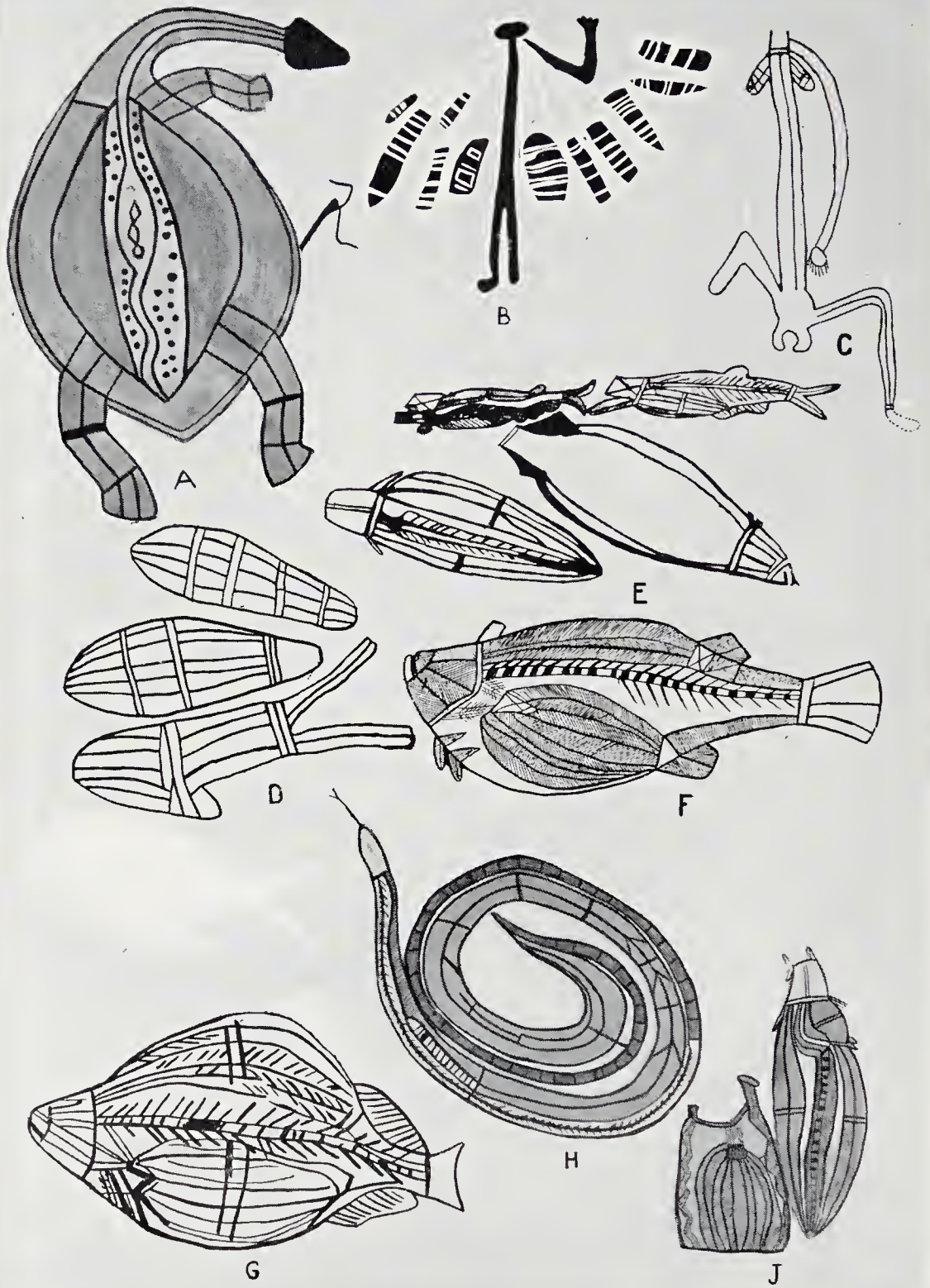


PLATE 39. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

C is a much-weathered and incomplete painting of a *Mamandi* woman. The spines, with which the *Mamandi* kills her victims, are growing from her breast, elbows and ankles. The design is forty-two inches high and the colours, red on white. Locality—in cave, between sites 2 and 9.

D is a group of four figures, the three upper in red on yellow and the lower in white. The first three figures represent the masses of fat from the abdomen of certain fish, and the fourth, a fish called *mabida*. Locality—on ceiling, site 3.

E is polychrome paintings of three cat-fish with square heads and an unfinished painting of a barramundi. The barramundi is twenty-seven inches long. Locality—site 7.

F is a skilfully painted and attractive X-ray picture of a fish, called *gabijidi*. It is about thirty-six inches long. The painting was made up of many fine red lines on a white ground. My informant, *Kumutun* (Pl. 4C), saw this fish being painted by his father over forty-five years ago. Locality—on ceiling, site 3.

G is a painting in red on white of an unidentified fresh-water fish.

H is an X-ray painting, red on yellow and eighteen inches in diameter, of a mythical serpent, *tjai-tjaibi*. The vertebrae are shown throughout the whole length of the serpent. Locality—site 7.

J pictures, on the right, a cat-fish, twenty inches long (red lines on a yellow ground), and a portion of a barramundi, *gnumirik*,³⁴ which is ready for cooking. Locality—site 7.

Plate 40

This plate has been prepared to show, by photograph, the appearance of a number of the best examples of X-ray paintings of fish, many of which were among the last to be produced in the Oenpelli area. The cave art, for some unknown reason, died out about fifty years ago after white traders and missionaries had started to interlere with the aborigines' mode of life.

A is a fish, red on white, on the ceiling at Injaluk cave, site 3. This was painted about 1905 .

B is a section of the ceiling at Injaluk cave, site 3, Fig. 11. On the lower left is a painting of the evil spirit, *Matjiba* (Pl. 57C); in the lower right, the tortoise (Pl. 38B); and in the centre, the cat-fish, C. The whole surface, which is many times larger than the area shown in the photograph, is covered with a maze of figures each painted haphazardly over the other. Most, if not all of them, are painted in the X-ray art form.

C is a cat-fish, thirty-six inches long, painted in red and yellow lines on a white ground. Locality—site 3.

D is a particularly attractive painting of a barramundi. It is made up of a large number of fine red lines on a white ground. The oval within the body is a mass of fat. There is also a fish within the stomach of the barramundi. Locality—on back wall of cave, site 7.

34. See division of fish, Pl. 81B.

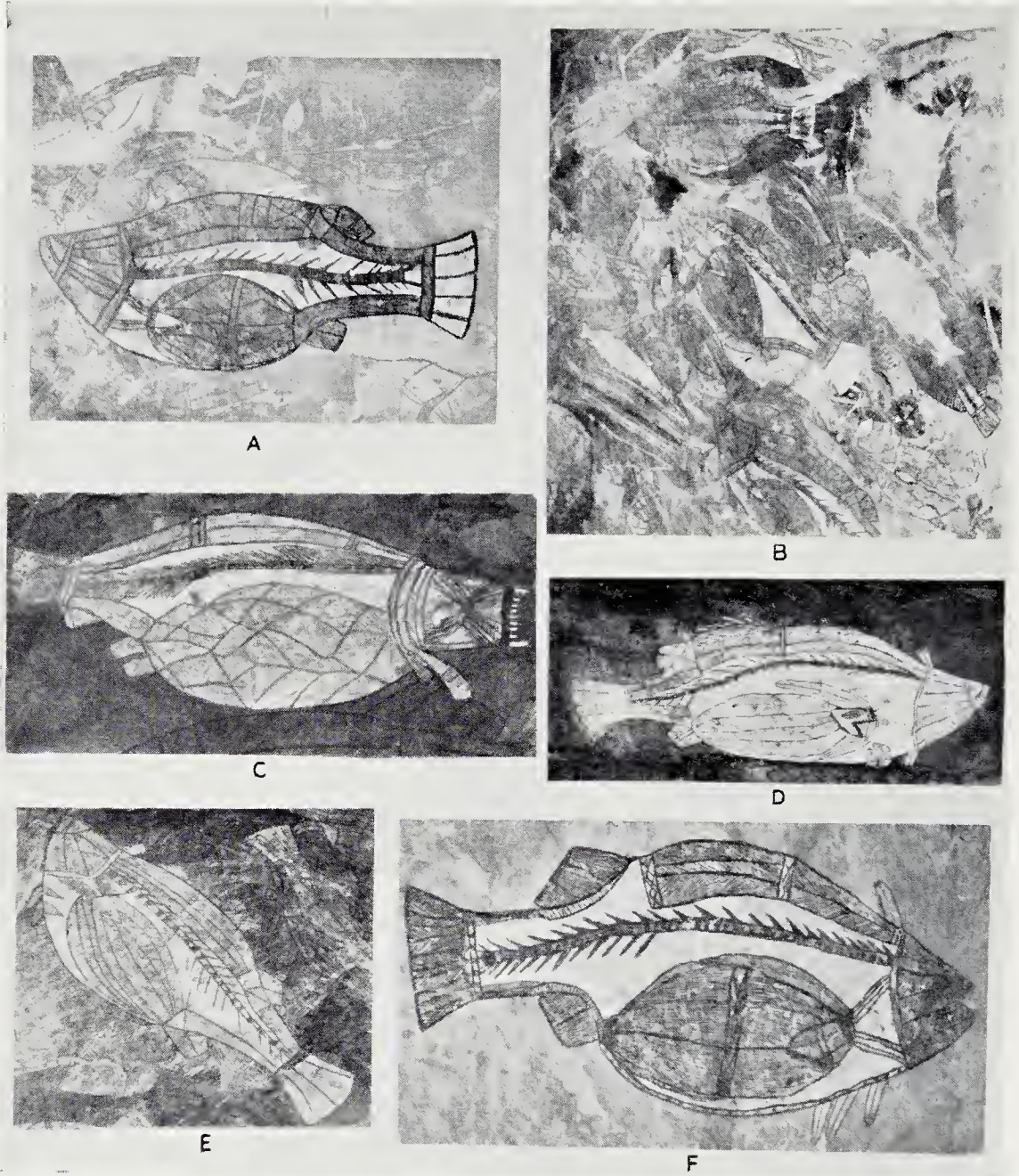


PLATE 40. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

E, another barramundi, was among the last of the X-ray cave paintings to have been made at Oenpelli, about forty years ago. Locality—site 3.

F, also on the ceiling at Injaluk cave, site 3, was painted about the same time as D. It is particularly colourful and skilfully executed. This painting is five feet long and painted with fine red lines on a white ground.

Plate 41

A is a tracing from a photograph of a strange gnome-like figure painted in polychrome on a vertical wall at Unbalanja Hill, near the Injaluk cave, site 3.³⁵ My informant, an aged man called *Kanaula*, said that the paintings had been there all his life and that he did not know any story belonging to it. The figure was painted over a group of running figures, which *Kanaula* referred to as *Mimi*.

B is Spencer's illustration of the same painting.³⁶ I agree with him about the background figures, but feel certain that he is mistaken about the meandering line and the appendage.

Elkin and the Berndts³⁷ figure a bark painting, C, made by a young aboriginal which they claim is a replica of a cave painting. According to their description, it is the same cave painting as that figured by Spencer and myself. A comparison of this bark painting with Spencer's original photograph, B, and my drawing, A, shows how widely the bark painting copy varies from the original cave painting. There is no trace of X-ray art in the original painting, the whole body being in flat colour; the copy of the head bears but a limited resemblance to that of the cave painting; the appendage has been turned into what the authors call a feathered penis, and the testes have been added. Perhaps the strangest mistake was the young aboriginal's use of the little running figures. The authors, not recognizing them as human beings in the cave paintings, failed to notice that the young aboriginal had hung them from the elbows of the main figure as arm ornaments.

Figure 28

A is a hollow-bodied woman with lattice patterns. This figure, painted in white, also has a protuberance on the knee which resembles the 'joint marks' recorded by Schuster,³⁸ from Guiana. Locality—site 8.

B was crudely painted in white on the ceiling of a cave near site 8. It represents one of the *Mamandi* men.

C is another male *Mamandi* in white, about two feet high. As with other examples of these evil spirits, the legs are thrown backwards and spines are protruding from the joints. Locality—in ceiling, site 7.

Figure 29

This is the most remarkable cave painting I found in the Oenpelli area, and the smaller figures within it are more finely drawn and vital than any recorded

35. Map, Fig. 11.

37. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), Pl. 2, p. 81.

36. Spencer (1928), Fig. 540.

38. Schuster (1951), Fig. 23.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 41. Cave and bark paintings, Oenpelli

in Australian anthropological literature. The aborigines had no explanation except that they thought it was a *Mimi* painting of a pregnant *Mamandi* woman.³⁹

Yet, in spite of the assertion by the aborigines that the figure was the work of the *Mimi* and that it has many *Mimi* characteristics, that is, attenuated limbs and painted in red, it is in reality a simple form of X-ray art in which the intestines and backbone are shown diagrammatically. The figure has the legs turned backwards as in many other *Mamandi* paintings. The joints of the elbows,



FIG. 28. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

knees and ankles, indicated by ovals, are excellent examples of the 'joint marks' of the Oceanic area discussed by Schuster.⁴⁰ The finely drawn dancing figures, only a few inches in length, within the distended body, reveal a remarkable skill in the use of simple brushes. Two of these figures, in particular those with the fringed head-dress and pubic covering, could hardly be excelled in any primitive art. Within the body of the *Mamandi* are thirteen finely drawn figures, almost all of them either running or dancing. The head of the *Mamandi*, with the beak-like lips and protruding tongue, is similar to that seen at Cannon Hill (Pl. 46E). The *Mamandi* woman is holding a curious lizard-like creature against her vulva. Another unidentified creature is attached to the right knee. Locality—site 3.

(2) INAGURDURWIL

Inagurdurwil, situated about eight miles south-west of the expedition camp, is a spur of the Arnhem Land plateau which extends into the flood plains of

39. This is similar to a cave painting of a pregnant woman at Cannon Hill, Pl. 46C.

40. Schuster (1951), p. 5.

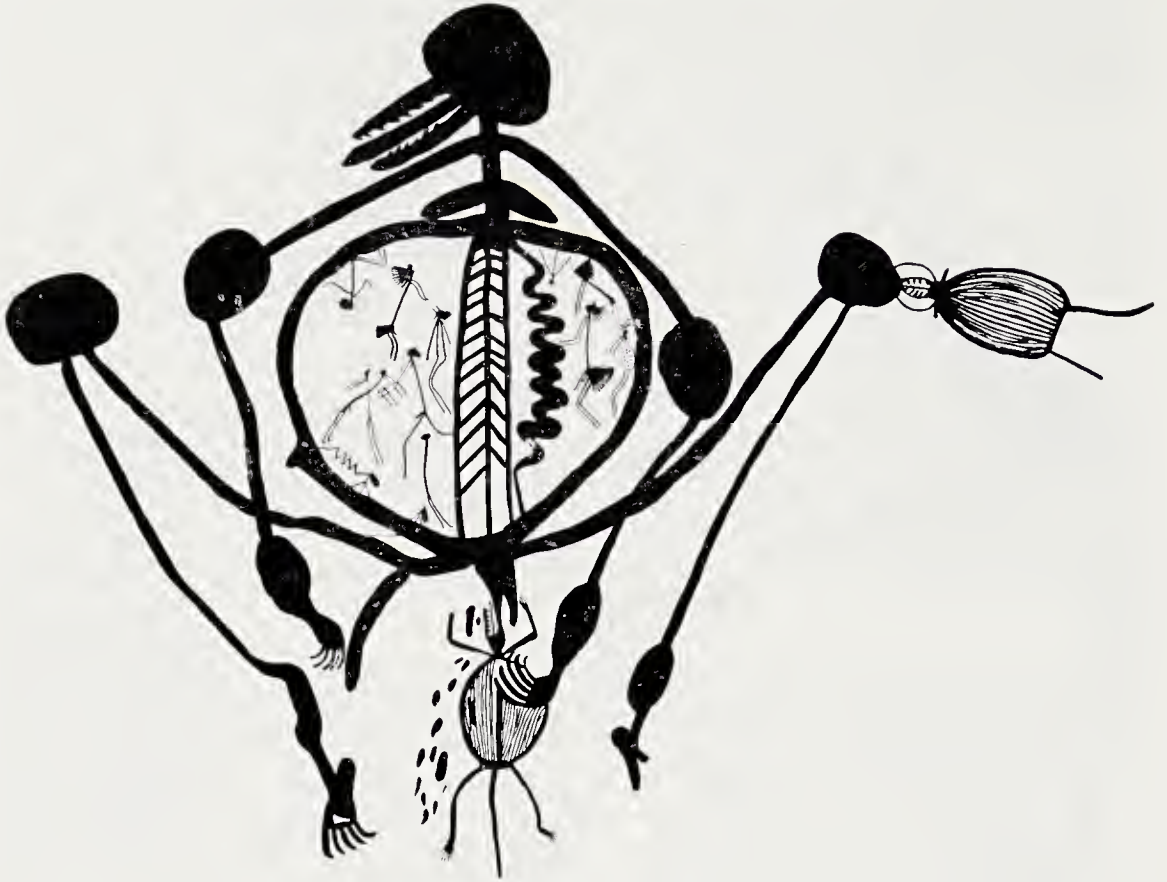


FIG. 29. Cave painting, Unbalanja



FIG. 30. Cave painting sites, Inagurdurwil

the Alligator Rivers.⁴¹ Most of the cave paintings at Inagurdurwil were found either on vertical rock faces or in shallow cave shelters. Although the terrain was particularly rugged, it had not eroded into such a maze of crevices as Unbalanja. The paintings tended to be grouped in favourable localities. These are indicated on the map of Inagurdurwil.⁴²

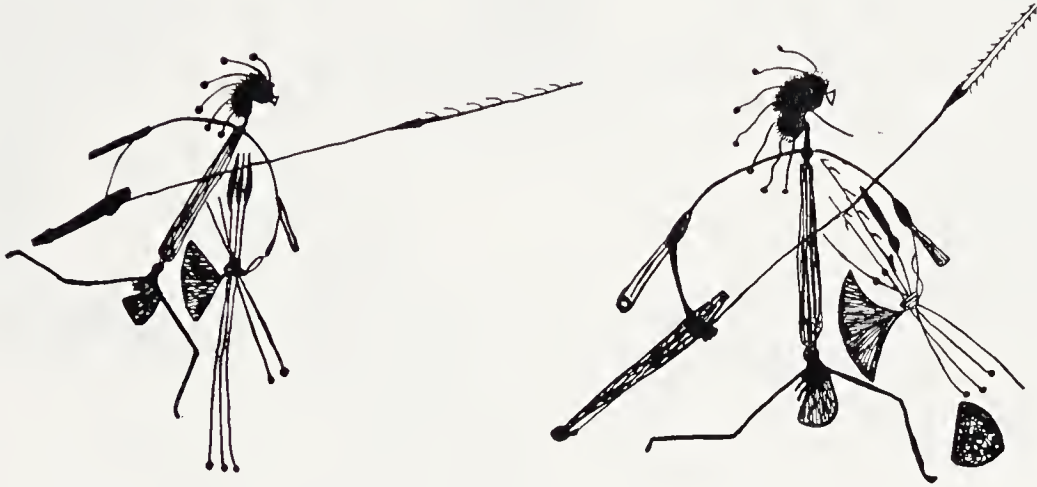


FIG. 31. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

Figure 31

This remarkable painting shows two male figures, in red. The man on the left is carrying, in one hand, a barbed spear and a spear-thrower, and in the other, five shorter spears and a triangular fan, called *norkun*, made from a goose wing. On the left another man has a multi-pronged spear and spear-thrower in his right hand, and four different kinds of short spears in his left. He also is wearing head and elbow ornaments.

The drawing of these figures on a rough surface, with only a simple brush, such as Fig. 3, would have demanded considerable skill. Locality—ceiling of cave, site 7.*

Figure 32

A depicts two curious cave paintings in polychrome. On the right is one of the so-called *Mimi* running figures. The badly weathered example on the left is incomplete. Locality—wall of rock shelter, a mile north of site 1.

B is two squatting female figures, in red. Locality—site 4.

C is a cave painting of a woman and two unidentified animals. On the left is an incomplete human figure.

D, G, H and J are groups of spirited running *Mimi* figures. The missing heads are indicated by dots. D and G are reminiscent of Bushman art figured by Battiss.⁴³ Locality—site 8.

41. Map, Fig. 10.

42. Map, Fig. 30.

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. VI.

43. Battiss (1948), Pl. XI.

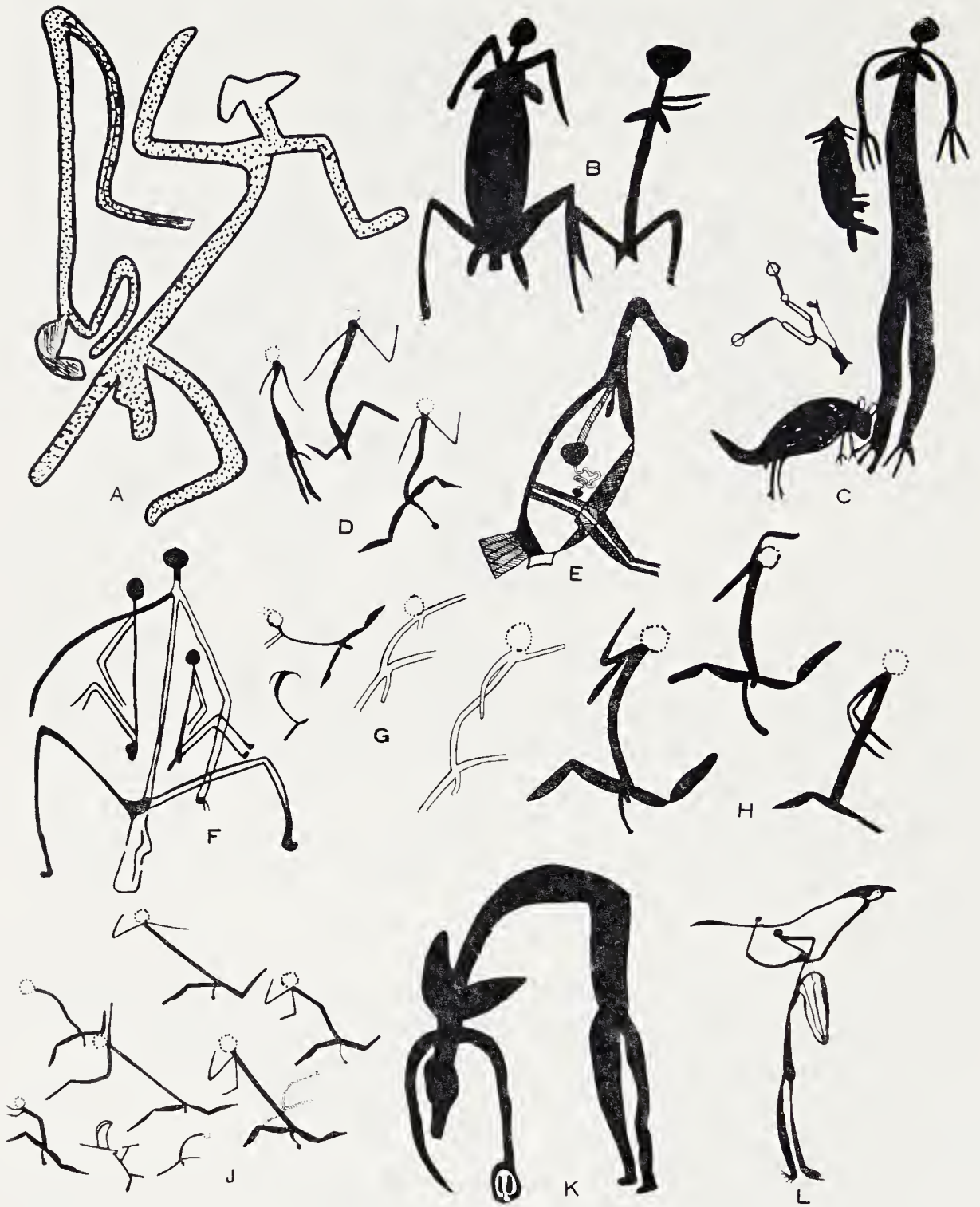


FIG. 32. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

E is a skilfully executed polychrome X-ray painting of a royal spoonbill, in which the oesophagus, stomach and intestines are indicated. Locality—on vertical face, site 4.

F, in red, is another painting of coupled human figures. In this example the smaller figures, unlike those at Unbalauja, have their backs to the main figure. Locality—site 7.

K is a curious female figure with hands touching the ground. Except that the painting represented a *Mimi* woman, the aborigines had no other explanation.

L is a figure with a bag on his shoulder and a spear-thrower in his hand. Locality—site 7.



FIG. 33. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

Figure 33

This is a frieze of tall thin-bodied human figures, in red. Locality—on narrow ledge, site 6.



FIG. 34. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

Figure 34

A spirited group of dancing men in red, probably taking part in a ceremony. The man on the right is blowing the wooden trumpet or drone tube. Locality—back wall of a rock shelter half a mile north of site 1.



FIG. 35. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

Figure 35

A colourful group of eleven women in red and white. Although the grouping of the figures indicated that the painting may illustrate a myth, my aboriginal companions had no explanation for it. Locality—rock shelter half a mile north of site 1.

Plate 42

A is an interesting group of aboriginal men drawn in white. The man on the left is carrying a broad-headed spear, point downward, and spear-thrower in one hand, and two short spears in the other. He has a bag hanging from his shoulder. On the right is a man with a carrying-bag on his shoulder, a multi-barbed spear in one hand, a spear-thrower in the other, and a stone axe in his belt. Another man, in the upper right, is in the act of throwing a spear. He has a carrying-bag on his shoulder, and a stone axe in his hand. These three men, all of whom have hook-shaped faces, are wearing head ornaments. In the lower right is a tall thin-bodied *Mimi* figure and an unfinished painting of a fish. Locality—on vertical face, site 1.*

B is another group of coupled figures, with hook-shaped faces. It consists of a man, in white, wearing a head-dress. Within his arms are two women. Locality—ceiling of low cave, site 4.

C, in black and white, is a curious painting which bears some resemblance to the wooden hair-comb of the Fijians. As Fijians have been brought to Arnhem Land by the missionary societies, it is possible that the aborigines, on seeing one of their hair-combs, may have painted it on the rocks. Locality—near site 4.

D is a colourful and well executed polychrome painting of a fish. Locality—back wall of a rock shelter, site 6.

E is two figures taken from an extensively painted ceiling. The painting on the right is probably the best executed running figure among the many hundreds in the various caves and rock shelters. With one hand this man, with a hook-shaped face, is throwing a multi-pronged spear, and in the other he is holding seven spears, two broad-bladed, one barbed multi-pronged, three short, and a

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XIV.



PLATE 42. Cave paintings, Unbalanja

multi-pronged but unbarbed fishing spear. The figure to the left, in white, outlined with red, is one of the female *Mamandi*, who has her legs turned backward and long hairs or spines growing from one hand and from the vulva. There was no explanation for the three broom-like designs at her back. Locality—site 6.

F shows two human figures, the larger in white and the smaller in yellow and white. Locality—vertical wall, site 1.

G is some kangaroo-like creature, in white. Part of the head has been weathered away. Locality—vertical face, site 4.

H is an X-ray painting, in red and white, of a gar-fish.

J is a colourful but somewhat eroded painting of an echidna. Although the large digging claw on the hind leg is clearly shown, the long spines of the creature are given little emphasis. Mountford⁴⁴ figures a bark painting from Goulburn Island in which both the long spines and the digging claw are given special prominence. Locality—site 4.

K is a curious female figure, in polychrome. The aborigines had no explanation for it, except that it represented a *Mimi* woman.

L is two paintings, in white, of human beings, probably women, with curious triangular-shaped faces and carrying-bags hanging from their shoulders. The figures, on a vertical rock face, had been somewhat defaced by the weather.

M, which is about twenty-four inches high, was painted in yellow, outlined with red. It depicts a long-bodied man carrying a broad-bladed spear and wearing a head-dress, arm and pubic ornaments. Locality—a narrow cleft, site 7.

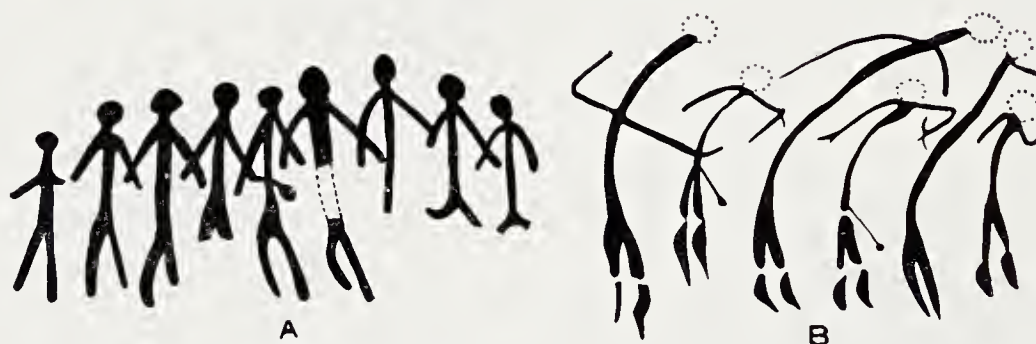


FIG. 36. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

Figure 36

A is a somewhat weathered frieze of nine human figures with their hands linked. Locality—rock shelter, site 6.

B is another frieze of six figures in rhythmic movement. These figures, like those elsewhere with large calves to their legs, resemble South African Bushman paintings.⁴⁵ The missing heads have been replaced by dots.

44. Mountford (1939a), Pl. XIV, Fig. B. Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XXII.

45. Battiss (1948), Pl. XI.



FIG. 37. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

Figure 37

This is a somewhat eroded but interesting frieze, in red and white, of ten small dancing human figures. Two of the figures have their hands linked, some are holding their hands above their heads, while others are standing with outstretched arms. Locality—vertical wall, site 6.

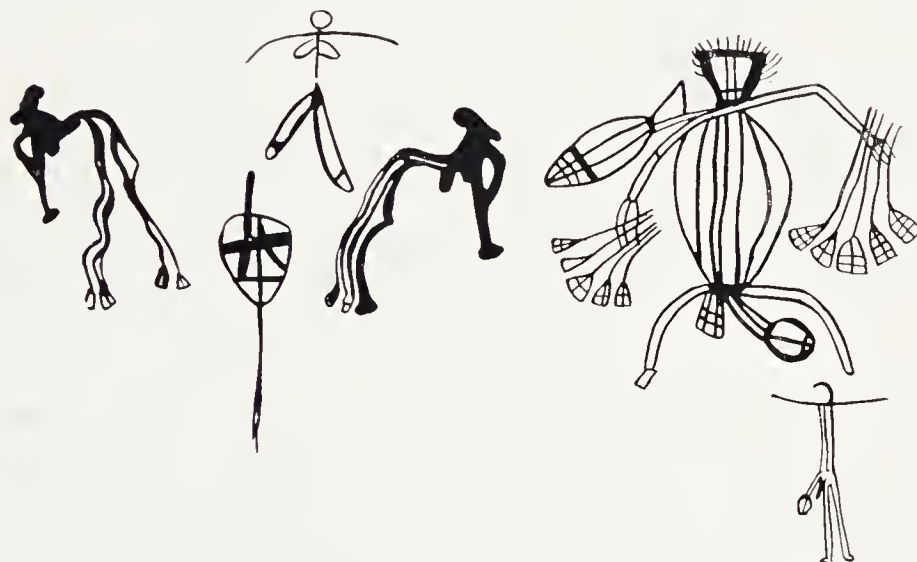


FIG. 38. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

Figure 38

This is a decorative panel of human figures in polychrome. On the left are three women grouped in an interesting manner round a central unidentified object. In the lower right is a figure with a hook-shaped face. The painting on the upper right is of some interest because it shows a male figure holding the seed-pods of the sacred lotus. As the increase centre for the sacred lotus is at site 3, Inagurdurwil, a little over a mile south, it is possible, although there is no evidence for this supposition, that the painting is linked with the lotus-lily ancestor and perhaps the associated increase ceremony. Locality—shallow rock shelter a mile north of site 1.

Figure 39

This pictures a remarkable panel of tall thin-bodied *Mimi* figures, six to eight inches high, in strong action, either running or fighting. On the upper portion of the panel, standing on a fringed line, are seven figures, apparently

fighting each other. Scattered over the remaining surface are many running *Mimi*, pictured in decorative positions and full of action. The aboriginal artists have used the penes of the figures most effectively, both here and elsewhere



FIG. 39. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

(Fig. 32J), to enhance the decorative pattern. The heads of most of these running figures have disappeared. I have replaced them by dots. Locality—exposed vertical face, about six feet high, site 6.

Figure 40

Within a few yards of the previous group are three remarkable human figures, about thirty-six inches long, painted in red.

My informants told me that these paintings, the work of the *Mimi* artists, pictured three evil spirits, called *Mamandi*. The man on the left is sub-incised, the one in the centre circumcised, and the figure on the left bi-sexual, the body



FIG. 40. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

dividing at the circular head, the left-hand side having a penis and the right a vulva. The whole group is so intertwined that the individual figures are not evident on the first examination. In each figure, too, the aboriginal artist has used a different pattern for the hands, the feet, the head and the positions of the body. He has produced a painting showing a fertility of design not often seen in primitive art. Toward the upper edge is a particularly simple painting of a man with a spear. Locality—on ceiling, site 6.*

Figure 41

On a vertical face exposed to the weather is this attractive and unusual panel of paintings which are supposed to be self-portraits of the *Mimi* people. On the upper left is a tall figure with a much exaggerated penis. He is holding a stick in his hand. To the right is a complex series of the coupled human figures, found elsewhere at Inagurdurwil and Unbalanja. The central figure—a male—several feet in height, is carrying two short throwing spears in his left hand. This tall, thin figure has been painted over a small, well-drawn running man carrying a goose-wing fan and multi-barbed spear in his right hand. On the extreme right is a thin-bodied woman with a stick in her left hand. Locality—about a mile north of site 1.†

Figure 42

A shows two crudely painted human beings, one with hollow legs and arms. The man on the left is carrying a stick in his hand, and the one on the right is about to cast a multi-barbed spear from his spear-thrower. In the background is a faint image of another human figure. Locality—site 6.

B, in yellow, shows one man (centre) about to spear another short hollow-bodied man (lower left).⁴⁶ The central figure is carrying two barbed spears and

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. X.

† Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. V.

46. This figure, like those elsewhere, Figs. 21F, 28A, has the hollow space in his body filled in with lattice patterns.



FIG. 41. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil



FIG. 42. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

a goose-wing fan in his left hand. On the right is another running figure. Locality—rock shelter, site 6.

C is a crude painting in red, picturing a running man throwing a multi-barbed spear with one hand and holding two short throwing spears in the other. He is carrying a bag on his right arm.



FIG. 43. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

Figure 43

This illustrates nine 'hocker' figures,⁴⁷ in red. Locality—site 5.

Figure 44

A is a human figure, which appears to be climbing a pole or a young tree. The aborigines had no explanation for the painting except that, as it was in red and the body tall and thin, they considered it to be the work of the *Mimi* folk.

B represents a man who has caught a fish in a net. When fishing in the lagoons the aborigines use a hinged hand net.⁴⁸

C is a running figure in red. Locality—site 4.

D is a thin-bodied dancing figure in red.

E shows two figures in red, with linked hands. There was no explanation for this unusual painting.

In F is a complex group of three human figures drawn in single lines. The main upright figure is a running man. On the left is another human being lying on his side, with a head-dress of three lines extending toward the right. On the lower right is another man, head downwards. Locality—site 4.

G, in white, shows a hollow-bodied man, wearing a curious form of head-dress. He is carrying a spear and spear-thrower in one hand and some unidentified object in the other. There is no explanation for the projections from the hips. These appear in several other cave paintings, e.g. Figs. 54, 20B. Locality—site 4.

H is a painting of the human hand, drawn in single lines of red.

J shows two figures in red. The male has the typical hook-shaped face. Locality—site 7.

K, a detail, in red, of the extensive frieze shown in Fig. 47, shows a thin-bodied running figure blowing a wooden trumpet. Locality—site 4.

L, painted in red, represents a running man with a hook-shaped face. There was no explanation for the disc above the hips. It is present in a number of the paintings of human beings. Locality—wall of narrow cleft, site 7.

47. This 'hocker' design, widely distributed throughout Pacific art, appears to be confined in Australia to Arnhem Land and Cape York. Personal communication from Carl Schuster.

48. Mountford (1949), p. 769, illustrates a hinged hand net.

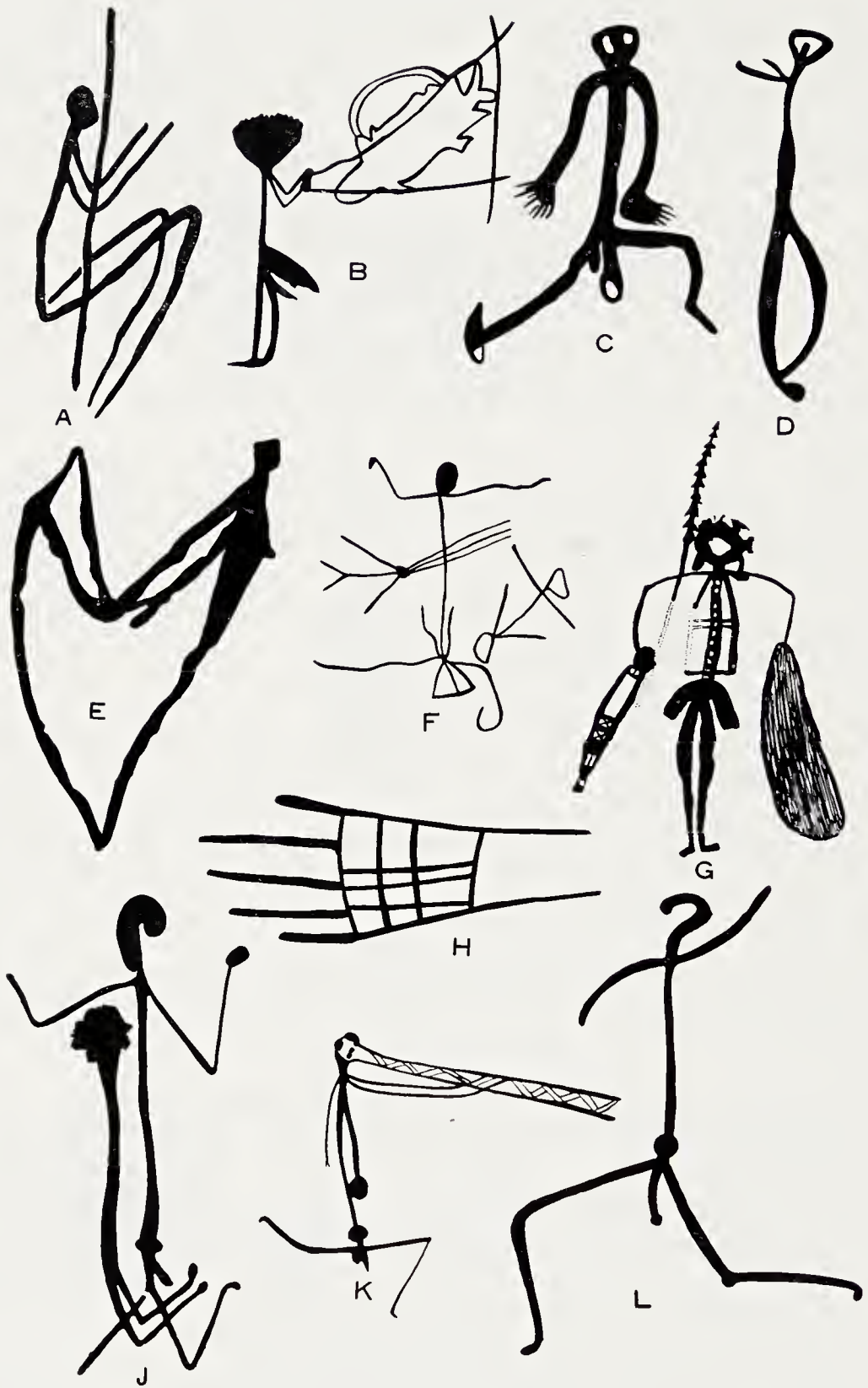


FIG. 44. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

Figure 45

A, in red, is a curious human being with a hook-shaped face.

In B the man on the right, with a triangular face and over-developed hands, appears to be standing on the fork of a tree. On the left is a 'hocker' figure, holding in its right hand an object which bears some resemblance to the knotted whip used for flogging prisoners at the local gaol. Locality—vertical face at site 1.

C is a particularly complex human figure, which the aborigines contended was a *Mamandi*. One arm starts from the right of the body, just below the mushroom-shaped head. On the left another arm, a single line, starts from the black disc lower down. One pair of legs, turned upward, joins the trunk just above the penis, and another pair is attached to a further extension of the body. Spines, with which the *Mamandi* kill their victims, are growing from the knees of the upper pair of legs. Locality—site 8.

D contains two complex female figures and an incomplete cat-fish. In the upper right is a woman with a hook-shaped face. Below is a *Mamandi* woman, with the over-developed vulva and legs thrown backward. Spines are protruding from the vulva and one knee. Locality—ceiling of high cave, site 3.

E is a male *Mamandi* figure. The head is on the upper left, and his penis on the lower right. The two legs are turned backward and across each other. It is interesting, in a painting of this type, to see that the testes are indicated within the scrotum, a simple form of X-ray art. Locality—site 6.

F is a group of three *Mamandi* figures. The central female figure, which is in a squatting position, has the 'joint mark' discussed by Schuster⁴⁹ on the right elbow. The figure on the top is incomplete. At the bottom of the group is a male figure, the legs, as lattice designs, turned sharply backward and the penis and scrotum greatly exaggerated. The arms, of two different designs, start from the shoulders. Locality—ceiling of cave, site 3.

G, painted in red, is another male *Mamandi* figure with a hook-shaped face. Locality—site 4.

In H the main figure is a *Namarakain* woman, with a loop of string stretched between her fingers.⁵⁰ On the lower left is an unfinished painting of a fish.

J is another curious male *Mamandi*, with a protruding tongue and large penis and scrotum. Spines are growing from the end of the penis and the lower part of the body. There are no arms.

Figure 46

A shows a tall thin-bodied *Mimi*. On his left is a spear-thrower and a curious multi-pronged spear with a head resembling a garden fork. On the right is a similar weapon and other symbols which may represent either throwing sticks or short spears. Locality—wall of cave, site 7.

49. Schuster (1951), p. 5.

50. See Cannon Hill and Obiri figures, Pls. 48, 57A, and myth, p. 199.



FIG. 45. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

B is another thin-bodied man bearing the same type of multi-pronged spear. The head of the man is replaced by a series of concentric circles.⁵¹

C has two figures, in red, whose heads are replaced by a series of concentric circles. The design near the head of the right-hand man appears to be extraneous.

D is a running figure with what is probably a conventionalized head-dress in the place of a face. The bundle of arrow-head designs he carries in his hand may represent the leaves of a plant.⁵²

E is a skilfully drawn running man with a spear and spear-thrower in one hand. He wears feather bands on his upper arms and an ornament from one elbow. It is difficult to identify the implement in the other hand. It may be a second spear-thrower. Locality—ceiling at site 7.

F is a running man, in red, carrying two short spears in one hand a spear and spear-thrower in the other. This figure, like many others in the Oenpelli area, e.g. Fig 44L, has a circular disc painted above his hips. Locality—site 5.

G is a group of small, delicately drawn human figures, in red. One is throwing a spear and two are carrying the same weapon in an upright position. The fourth figure (in the centre) is a big-hipped individual. Locality—ceiling at site 7.

H is on the same ceiling. It pictures a man, in red, standing with a spear and spear-thrower in one hand, a short, broad-bladed spear in the other, and a carrying-bag slung from his shoulder.

J is a simple representation of a spearman, who has the disc-like design above his hips. Locality—site 6.

K is a cave painting from Ayers Rock, Central Australia, in which the head is replaced by a series of concentric circles. This is figured as a comparison to Fig. 46B, C, Inagurdurwil, and Pl. 47C, Cannon Hill.

L is a crudely drawn human figure, in red. Locality—rock shelter, half a mile north of site 1.

M, the aborigines explained, was a *Mimi* woman carrying her child.

N is a group of four human figures and the head of a gar-fish. Three of the human figures are standing with arms outspread, while the fourth (centre) is holding a spear and spear-thrower in one hand and what is probably a throwing stick in the other.

Plate 43

A is a cave painting, in white, of a steamer which the aboriginal artist had probably seen on a visit to Darwin. The artist has portrayed many details of the vessel, such as the funnels, ventilators, masts, derricks and the fore and aft hatch covers. He has also indicated the name of the boat by meandering lines on the bow and the stern, the internal details, such as the cargo holds fore and

51. In many of the cave paintings of Central Australia the human face is indicated by a series of concentric circles. Fig. 46K is a typical example from Ayers Rock. Fig. 46B, C, from Inagurdurwil, and Pl. 47C, from Cannon Hill, are the only cave paintings I found in the Oenpelli area which showed any trace of the art of Central Australia.

52. This design is also present in the cave paintings of the growing yams, Fig. 23B, and the bark paintings of Goulburn Island recorded by Mountford (1939a), Pl. XIV, Fig. D.

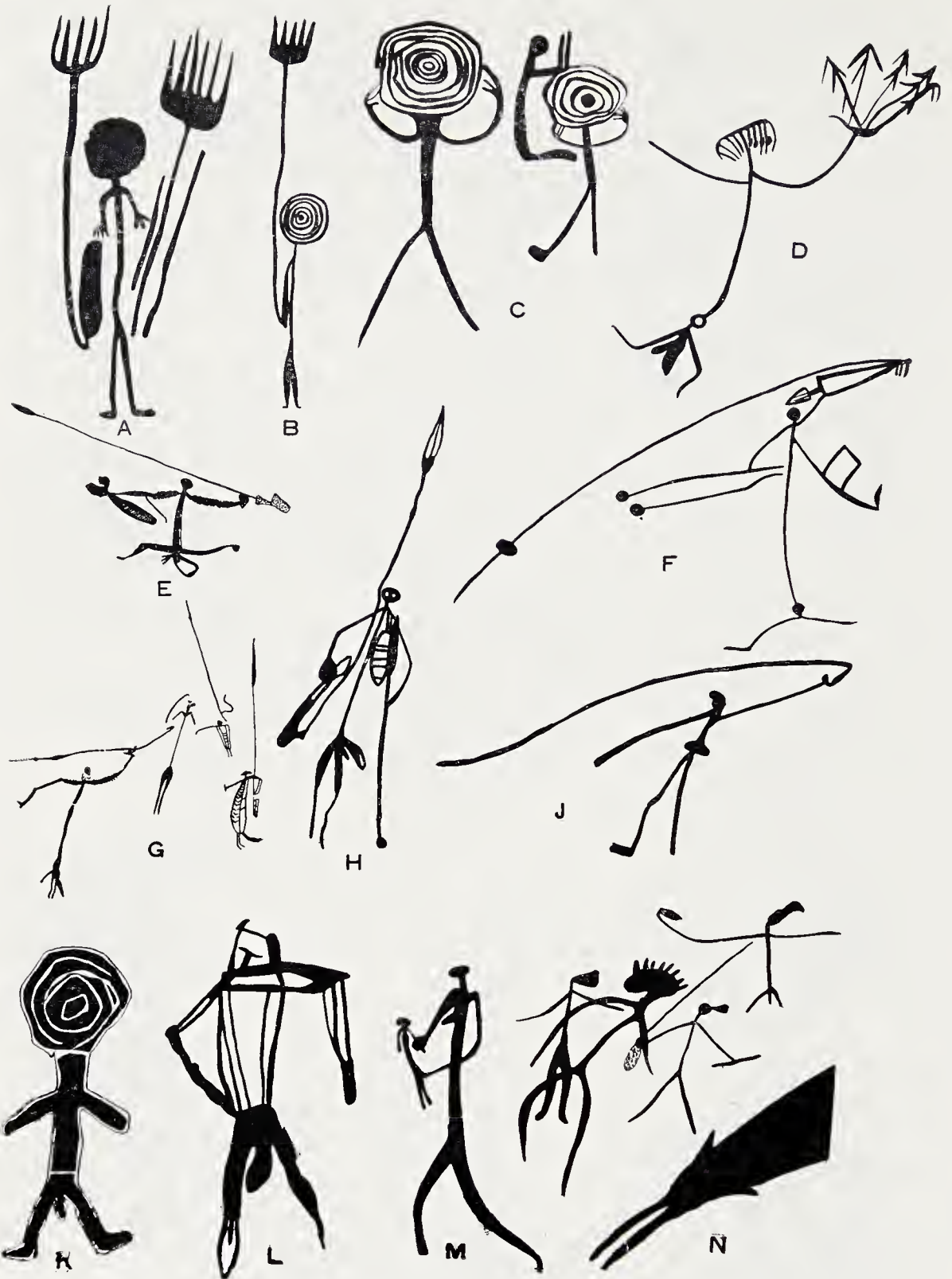


FIG. 46. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

aft and the cabins in the centre of the ship. In one of these cabins there is a squatting man. This painting was somewhat weathered, even though at the back of a deep rock shelter, which seems to indicate that white has a much more limited life than red and yellow pigments. Locality—cave at site 6.

B is a painting, in red, of two fish, the upper a barramundi and the lower a cat-fish. These, although somewhat crudely executed, are attractive in appearance. Locality—site 4.

C is a painting, in polychrome, of a fish.* This is one of four fish, each of which is an example of X-ray art at its best. Unfortunately, due to the low ceiling, it was possible to photograph only this one example. Locality—site 7.

D, according to my informants, is a painting (red lines on a white ground) of the Catholic Church in Darwin. The rectangles at the bottom are the many doors through which the congregation enters the church, while the circles are the windows. This painting is adjacent to the steamer, A, and is probably the work of the same artist. Locality—site 6.

Figure 47

This pictures an extensive frieze of cave paintings on a vertical cliff face. There are two complete compositions in this frieze—one on the left and upper right, and the other on the lower right, enclosed within the dotted lines.

Figure 47A, B, on the page opposite to the illustration showing the whole frieze, gives the right- and left-hand parts on a larger scale. The detailed indications are shown only on these two sections.

The first group consists of thirty-five *Mimi* figures engaged in a fight, the majority of them throwing spears at the two opponents at *k*. At *a*, the bottom of the left-hand group, two men are engaged in single combat. To the right, *b*, a man is blowing a wooden trumpet,⁵³ to which two other men, at *c*, are apparently dancing. Some of the running figures have hook-shaped faces, some have disc-like designs above their hips, while others are wearing either a mask or some curious form of head-dress. At *d* (extreme right) one fighter (over-painted by the tall figure *g*, belonging to the lower group) has succeeded in transfixing his enemy with a spear. Many of these little running figures, like those on Fig. 39, at site 6, have more than a passing resemblance to those in the Bushman art of South Africa and the prehistoric Levantine art of eastern Spain.

The lower right group, more static, pictures forty-four men engaged in a ceremony. At *e*, a seated musician is blowing a wooden trumpet, and at *g* a tall hook-faced man is beating the wooden music sticks together to mark the rhythm. The remainder, most of whom have their hands linked, are probably dancing in time with the music. The trumpet player and most of the dancers have a disc-like design above their hips. There was no explanation for the designs at *m*.

The painting of the tall figure, *g*, over the running figure at *d* indicates that the group at the lower right is the most recent. However, the presence in both

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XXV.

53. See detail, Fig. 44K.



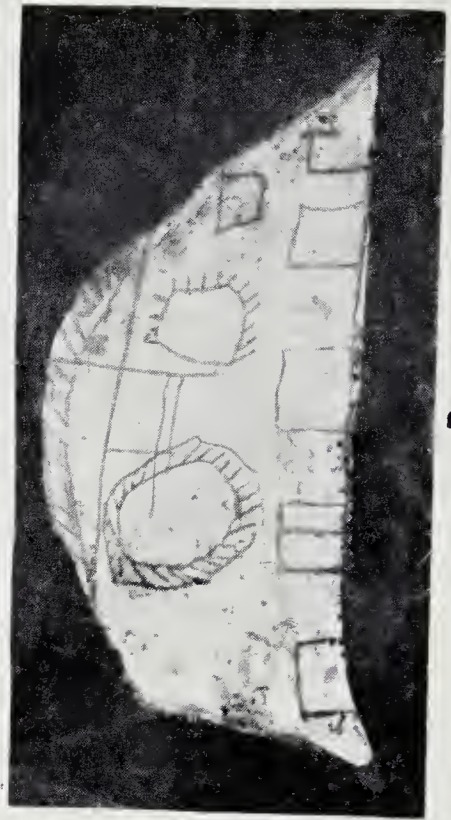
A



B



C



D

PLATE 43. Cave paintings, Inagurduwii

groups of the hook-shaped face and disc design above the hips suggests that the paintings may be more or less contemporaneous. The aborigines considered that all the figures had been painted by the *Mimi* people. Locality—site 4.

Figure 48

A is a badly weathered painting of an unidentified bird.

B is a crudely painted but decorative representation of a fish, in simple X-ray art. Locality—between sites 4 and 5.

C is a decorative painting, in red, of two wading birds. Instead of the X-ray technique the artist has filled in the bodies with chevron-like patterns. Locality—site 1.

(3) OBIRI AND CANNON HILL

Cannon Hill is one of a group of three monoliths, from four hundred to five hundred feet in height, situated about eight miles in a westerly direction from Oenpelli and a mile west of the East Alligator River. The cave paintings are not as numerous as at Unbalanja or Inagurdurwil, being found mostly on vertical faces exposed to the weather. The lesser number of paintings is probably due to the fact that there are fewer caves and rock shelters.

At Obiri, three miles south of Cannon Hill, there is a remarkable gallery of paintings under a deep overhang on the western side of a small isolated monolith. In this gallery,* Pl. 45D, is a smooth, curving, vertical face of rock about fifty feet long and six feet high which is covered with a frieze of X-ray paintings. Scattered around the shallow caves of adjoining monoliths are many more interesting groups. Fig. 10 is a map of the area.

Figure 49

A shows a curious human figure, with a head-dress of radiating lines terminating in discs. Locality—Obiri.

B is a big-hipped figure wearing arm ornaments. The peculiar meandering line on the side of this figure was present in several adjacent cave paintings. Locality—Obiri.

C is a heterogeneous and somewhat faint group of human figures in action. They were painted in red. Locality—main gallery, Obiri.

D is an incomplete big-hipped figure, in red. Locality—Obiri.

E is a woman with a weapon, or implement, in each hand, and two meandering lines, one on each side of her body, similar to those in B and K. Locality—Obiri.

F is a large-headed man with a fish in one hand and a barbed spear and spear-thrower in the other. Locality—Obiri.

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, p. 10.

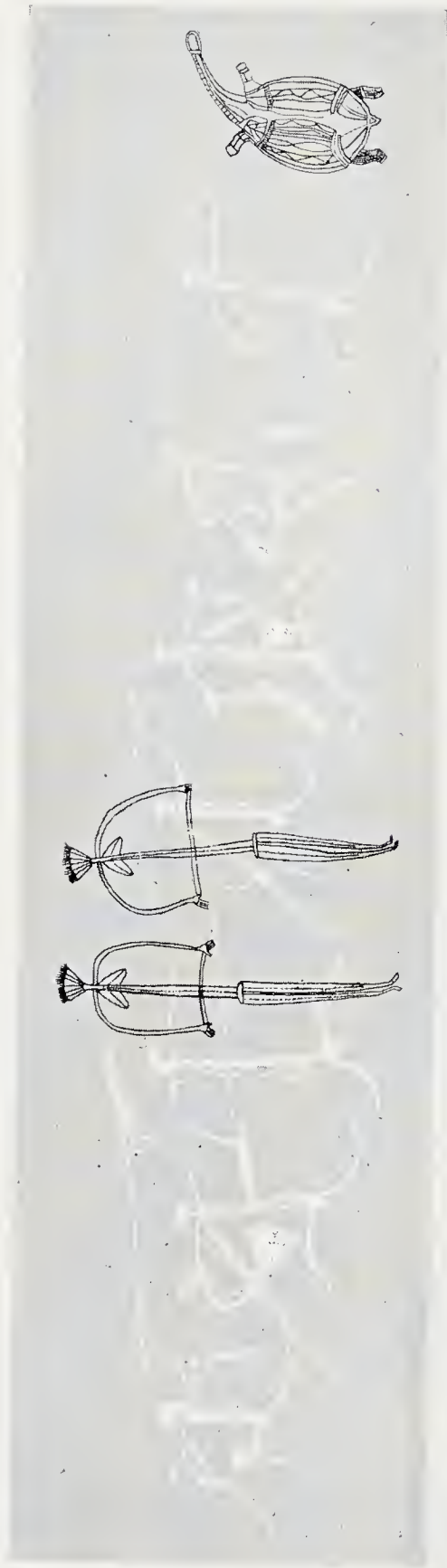


PLATE 44. Cave paintings, Obiri



FIG. 47. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

THE ART OF OENPELLI



FIG. 47A

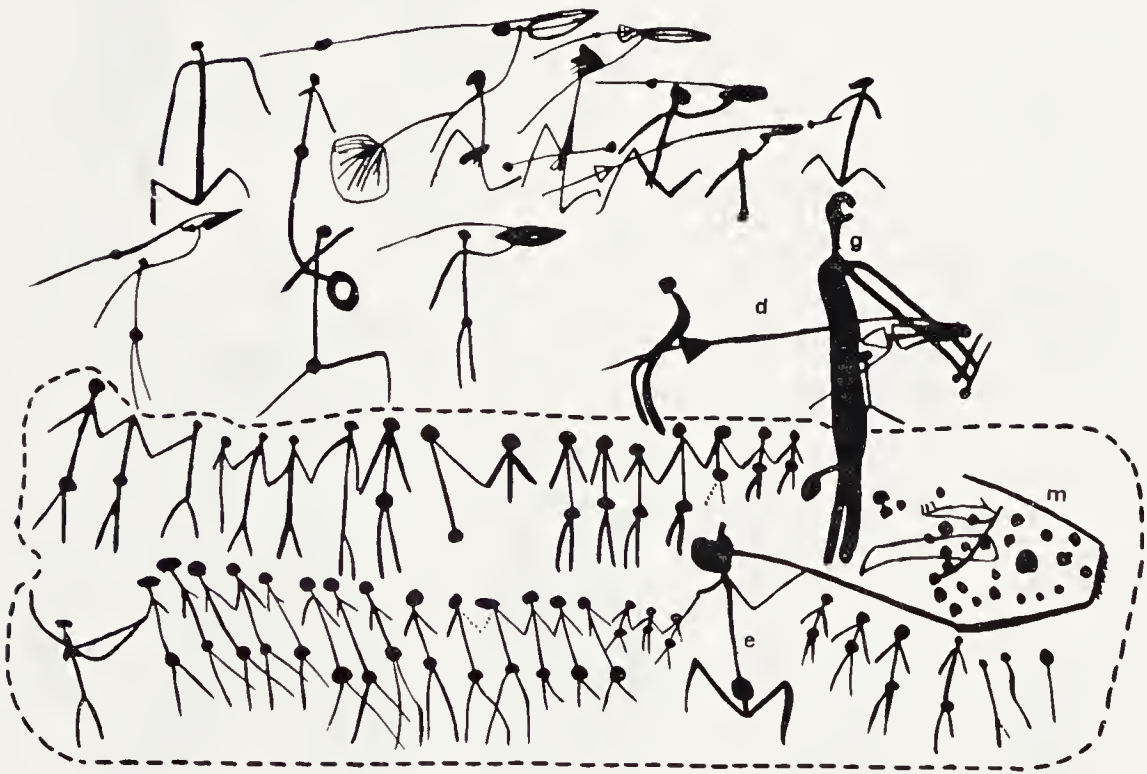


FIG. 47B



FIG. 48. Cave paintings, Inagurdurwil

Plate 44

This is another remarkable frieze, about fifteen feet long, of seven running men, in white, and two *Namarakain* women and a turtle, in red and white.

Reading from the left, the first man is running. He has ornaments on his elbows, a hook-shaped face, a bag hanging from his shoulder, a goose-wing fan and a spear in one hand, and a small spear-thrower in the other. The second hollow-bodied man is about to deliver a barbed spear. He is carrying a goose-wing fan and two long-bladed spears. The third figure, with a hook-shaped face, has arm ornaments, and a long string bag hanging from his shoulder. He is carrying his short-barbed spear at the level of his body. The fourth figure is in the running position, with a single-barbed spear and spear-thrower in one hand and three multi-barbed spears in the other. He has a hook-shaped face, head-dress and a carrying-bag hanging from his shoulder.

The fifth figure is also running. In one hand he is carrying a small spear and a spear-thrower, and in the other a goose-wing fan and three multi-barbed spears. He also has a hook-shaped face, arm ornaments and a long carrying-bag. The sixth man is standing with the sole of one foot resting against his knee.⁵⁴ He is hollow-bodied, has a hook-shaped face, and carries a spear and spear-thrower in one hand. An arm ornament hangs from his elbow and a goose-wing fan from the forearm. The seventh and last man is in the running position. He also has a hook-shaped face, spear and spear-thrower in one hand, barbed spears in the other, and a long carrying-bag hanging from his shoulder.

In the extreme right is a fresh-water tortoise, in X-ray art. In the centre of the frieze are two long-bodied triangular-faced *Namarakain* women who have been painted over the running men. Between their fingers the *Namarakain* women are holding the loop of string by means of which they travel from place to place during the hours of darkness.⁵⁵

The fertility of design in the frieze of the running men is surprising. Each figure differs from the others in outline, in decorations and in the arrangement of the weapons. Locality—Obiri.*

54. This is a favourite resting position. Usually the aborigines, to maintain their balance, rest their buttocks on a spear-thrower.

55. Myth, p. 199.

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. III.



FIG. 49. Cave paintings, Obiri and Cannon Hill

G shows one man spearing another. Painted in white with red outlines. Locality—Obiri.

H is a curious human figure with a triangular face and a large protuberance at the buttocks. Locality—Obiri.

I is a heterogeneous group of weathered human figures, some painted over the others. The prominent figure is a square-hipped woman, with what appears to be a spear-thrower in one hand. Most of the other figures are incomplete. Locality—main gallery, Obiri.

J is two big-hipped women, in faded red. Locality—Obiri.

K depicts a white man with a gun. The death-dealing gun, and the white man's desire to kill with it, has made primitive man in many parts of the world link them together in his art.⁵⁶ On the right is an incomplete female figure with twin meandering lines down one side of the body, similar to B. Locality—Obiri.



FIG. 50. Cave paintings, Obiri

Figure 50

This is a frieze of crouching men, without heads (replaced by dots). This is one of several examples of human figures arranged in rhythmic patterns. Locality—shallow cave, Obiri.

Figure 51

A and B are two kangaroo-like creatures. Locality—Obiri.

C is an X-ray example of a kangaroo or wallaby, in which the internal organs are replaced by geometric designs. Locality—main gallery, Obiri.

D is a faded group of paintings in which the only figures that could be identified were a squatting man, a woman and a kangaroo. Locality—main gallery, Obiri.

E illustrates two indecipherable and somewhat eroded paintings. There is a possibility that they may represent pubic aprons. Locality—Obiri.

F is a kangaroo. Locality—Obiri.

G is a painting of three crudely-painted birds. Locality—Obiri.

H illustrates some small mouse-like creature. Locality—Obiri.

56. Lips (1937), p. 40, has illustrated many examples. Mountford and Berndt (1939d), p. 199, also described a Fijian bamboo flute in which soldiers and guns form the main decoration.

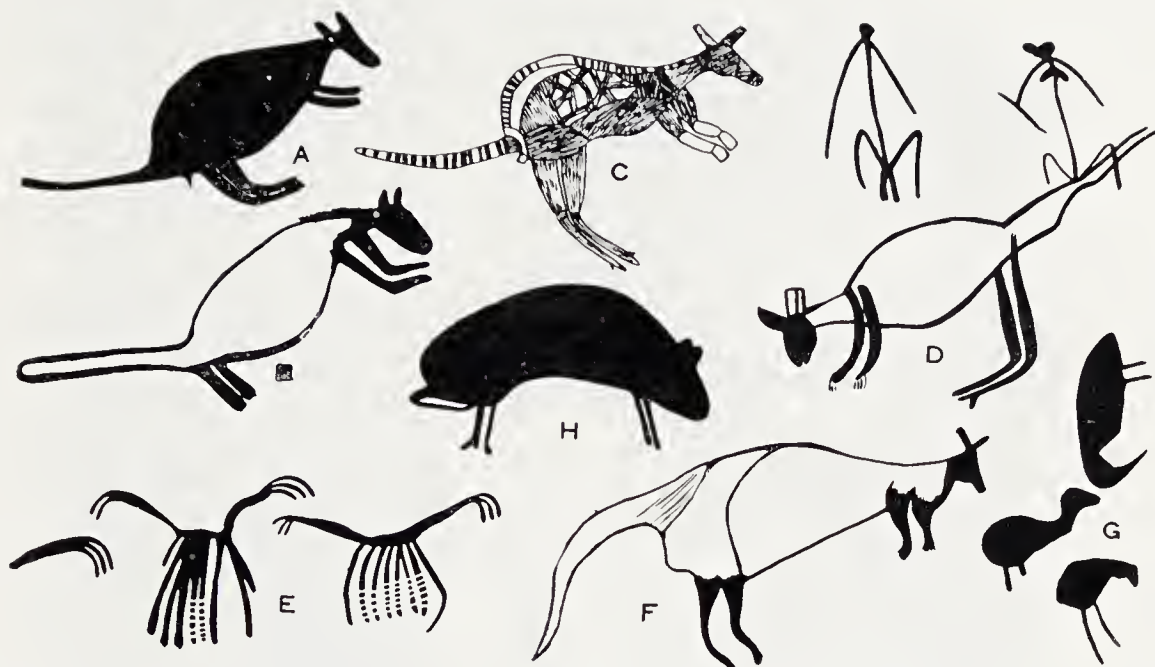


FIG. 51. Cave paintings, Obiri and Cannon Hill

Figure 52

A depicts a running man with a large head-dress and wide-open mouth. Locality—Obiri.

B illustrates an attractive drawing, in red, of a male *Mimi*. He has a somewhat hook-shaped face which, the aborigines said, indicated that he was laughing.⁵⁷ The *Mimi* has arm ornaments projecting from his elbows, a spear-thrower in one hand and three multi-barbed spears and a goose-wing fan in the other. There is a disc where the arms and the legs join the body. A carrying-bag hangs from the shoulder of the *Mimi*. Locality—on vertical exposed face, Obiri.*

C is a schematic figure of a man. He has a spear and spear-thrower in one hand and a goose-wing fan in the other. There is a disc at the junction of the arms and the body. Locality—Obiri.

D is a crudely drawn figure of a man, painted in red. Locality—Obiri.

E is another group of human figures, with arms held behind their bodies, arranged in an attractive rhythmic pattern. They are painted in red. Locality—Obiri.

Plate 45

A is a fish, painted in X-ray style, red on a yellow ground. In this delicately coloured painting a small fish is shown within the stomach of the larger fish. Locality—Obiri.

B is another colourful example of a fish, painted in heavy red lines on a white ground. Locality—Obiri.

57. This may be the origin of the hook-shaped face or, conversely, a rationalization on the part of the aborigines to explain a symbol which they do not understand.

*Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. VII.

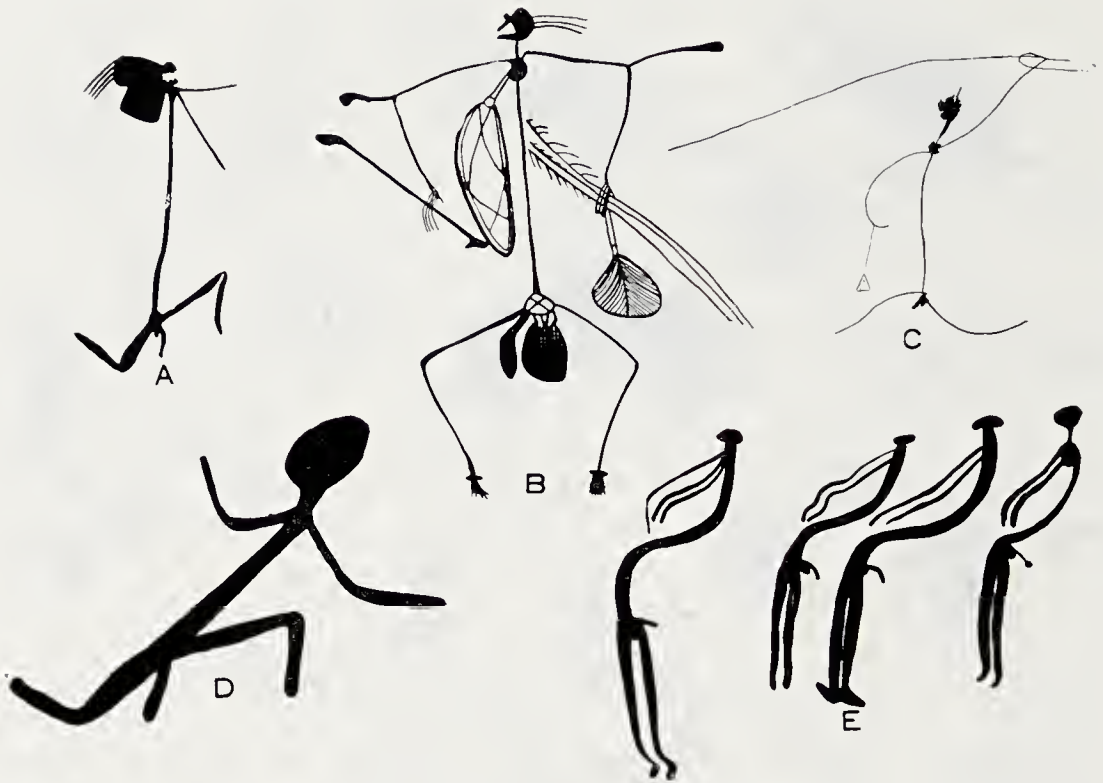


FIG. 52. Cave paintings, Obiri and Cannon Hill

C, a fresh-water tortoise, is a painting in yellow, red and white, in which the oesophagus, stomach and intestines are indicated. Locality—vertical wall, main gallery, Obiri.

D is the main gallery at Obiri. Under the overhang is a natural gallery, a curving, smooth, vertical face, about thirty feet long, which is covered with a maze of paintings mostly in X-ray form. Scattered round the lower rocks and at the base are many examples of the older *Mimi* art.

Plate 46

A is a female *Mamandi*, in red on white, with an over-developed vulva and a barbed spine growing from one hand. The lower part of her legs are missing. Locality—Obiri.

B is a painting, in white, of a man and his dog. The man, with a hook-shaped face, is carrying a stick over his shoulder. Locality—Obiri.

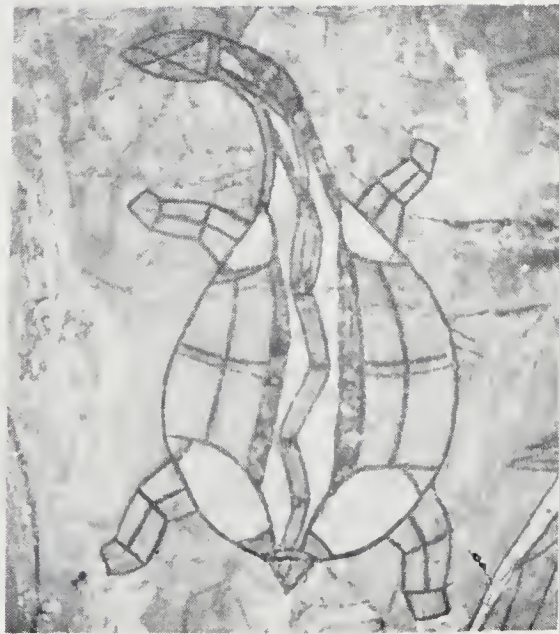
C is a remarkable painting of a pregnant female with outstretched arms and legs and a large vulva. Within her body, painted in modified X-ray, is a male and female foetus. Although neither as complex nor as skilfully executed as Fig. 29 at Unbalanja, this painting bears some resemblance to it both in subject matter and general form. Locality—in shallow shelter, Cannon Hill.

D, in white with red lines, is a long-bodied female figure and non-European form of axe. Locality—Obiri.



B

A



C



D

PLATE 15. Cave paintings, Obiri
A, B, C Cave paintings D Cave painting site

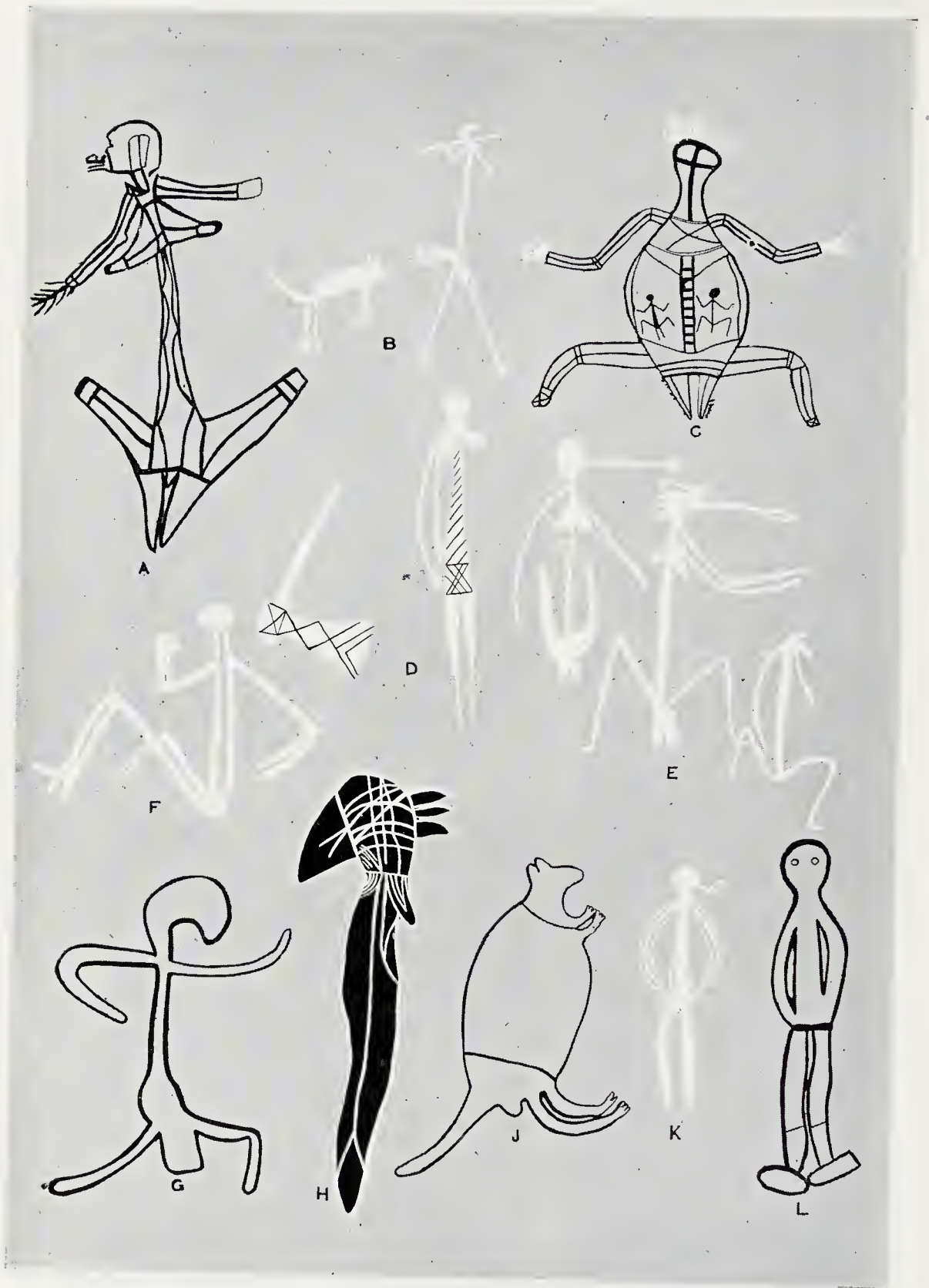


PLATE 46. Cave paintings, Obiri and Cannon Hill

E shows two *Mamandi*-like figures with protruding tongues and upturned legs. On the lower left is a squatting figure without a head. Locality—Obiri.

F is a faded design, in white, of a squatting hollow-bodied figure. Locality—Obiri.

G is a male figure with a hook-shaped face. Painted in white, outlined with red. Locality—Obiri.

H represents some serpent-like creature. The aborigines had no explanation for this painting. In black, outlined with white. Locality—Obiri.

J, in white, outlined in red, is some form of kangaroo. Locality—in main gallery, Obiri.

K and L are two cave paintings of white men. Both of them have their hands in their pockets; one is smoking. The aborigines explained that they painted the white man in this manner because he seldom did anything but give orders. Locality—Obiri.



Figure 53 FIG. 53. Cave paintings, Cannon Hill

This group is on a high ceiling. The fact that there has been no overpainting suggests that it is a complete composition carried out by a single artist. Even some of the figures have been distorted to avoid interference with an adjacent figure.

The group of paintings almost certainly represents a ceremony. On the extreme left are two men, one blowing the wooden trumpet or drone tube, to provide the music for the dance, and the other beating his music sticks together to mark the rhythm. The large central figure, wearing feathered arm-bands and

head-dress, has a curious type of spear-thrower in one hand and two short-barbed spears, and probably a goose-wing fan, in the other. On the knee of this figure, as well as on those of several of the other figures, is some form of decoration.⁵⁸ Most of the smaller figures are carrying spears and the same curiously shaped spear-throwers as the large figure. Part of the design in the lower left-hand corner has been obliterated by the weather. Locality—Cannon Hill.*

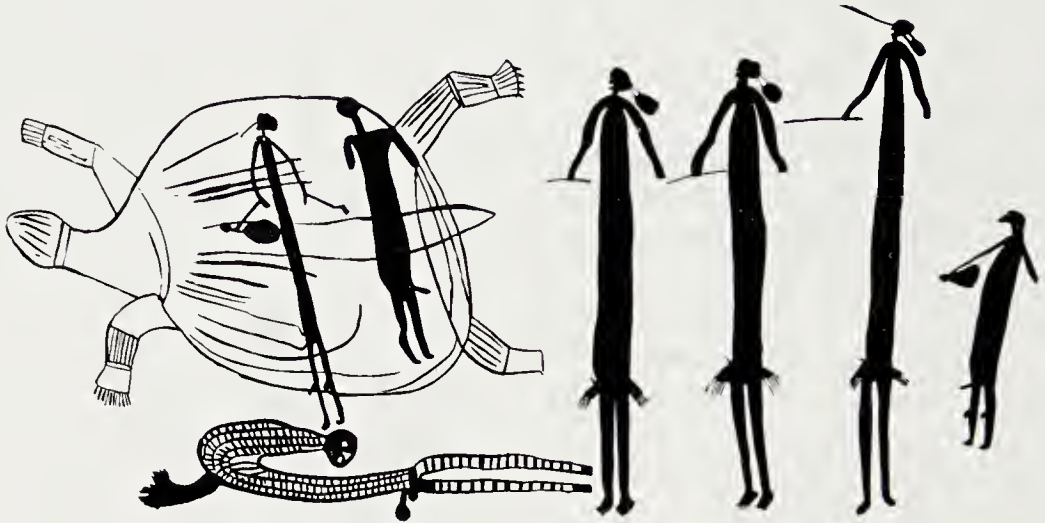


FIG. 54. Cave paintings, Cannon Hill

Figure 54

This is an attractive group of tall thin-bodied people, two of whom have been painted over the faded image of a sea-going turtle. The men on the extreme right and left are carrying a fan-shaped object in their right hands, and decorations on their knees, similar to those worn by the men in Fig. 53. The three main figures each have a stick in the right hand and what appears to be a carrying-bag hanging from the head. Each also has a pubic tassel hanging in front and behind. There is no explanation for the curious recumbent male figure on the lower left. Locality—on top of high cliff, Cannon Hill.†

Plate 47

A shows a male figure and female *Mamandi*, both painted in white. The male on the left has an attenuated body. Between his legs are two meandering lines similar to those seen on several of the other figures. The female *Mamandi* has a protruding tongue and dog-like mouth. There is a meandering line on either side of her body. Locality—Cannon Hill.

B, in white, is a kangaroo-like creature with human feet. It may represent one of the semi-human ancestors who created the countryside. Locality—Cannon Hill.

58. The aborigines of South Australia, when performing certain ceremonies, tied bundles of leaves round their knees. Angas (1847), Pl. 5, No. 4.

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XII.

† Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. II.



PLATE 47. Cave paintings, Obiri and Cannon Hill

C is a curious human figure, in white and red, in which the whole body is replaced by a series of concentric circles. This is one of the few traces of Central Australian art found in the Oenpelli area.⁵⁹ Locality—in shallow cave, Cannon Hill.

D is a curious female figure, in yellow and red, with protruding lips, distorted hands and 'joint marks' on the knees. Locality—Cannon Hill.

E is the painting of a saw-fish, red on yellow, the body of which is covered with a series of interesting patterns. Locality—Cannon Hill.

F, in white, is probably a simplified painting of a Malay prau. The vessel has a tripod mast and a non-European type of anchor. It is most unlikely that the Malays ever visited Oenpelli, a fact which would account for the lack of accurate detail, the artists only knowing the appearance of the prau from hearsay.

G shows three somewhat incomplete figures, in white, with hook-shaped faces. Locality—Cannon Hill.

H is a round-bodied human being, in white, outlined with red, with the feet shown as footprints.⁶⁰ Locality—Cannon Hill.

J shows a round-bodied figure, similar to H, also with the feet turned sideways. To the left is a grotesque male, next to an unfinished painting of a fish. All the figures are in white. Locality—Cannon Hill.

K is an incomplete *Mamandi*, in white, outlined with red, with protruding forked tongue, large ears, and up-turned legs. Locality—Obiri.

Figure 55

A is a hollow-bodied figure with a triangular head. The crossed lines on the body and the black legs may represent the braces and trousers of a white man. Locality—Cannon Hill.

B is a simple but attractive painting, in red, of an unknown type of water-craft.⁶¹ At one end is a man holding what appears to be a long pole. In the centre of the craft is another man. Locality—Cannon Hill.

C is a man, in red, with a curved spear-thrower in one hand and two finely drawn barbed spears in the other. Locality—Cannon Hill.

D pictures the large fruit bat with the hooks on its wings by which it hangs, and the typical-shaped head and ears. No attempt has been made to show the large wings of the creature.⁶² Locality—Cannon Hill.

E is an unidentified snake. Locality—Cannon Hill.

F is an unidentified fish, perhaps a gar-fish.

59. See also Fig. 46B, C, D.

60. This design, although not often seen in the caves, is common on the bark paintings. Pl. 59A, C, are typical examples. The same design, however, is present in one of the Chasm Island caves, Fig. 9L.

61. This painting does not resemble either the aborigines' bark canoe, or the sea-going or lagoon type of the wooden dug-out canoe. It may be either a poor representation of one of these canoes or an attempt to picture one of the Malay water-craft.

62. Mountford (1939a), Pl. 17, Fig. G, illustrates a bark painting from Goulburn Island in which there are a number of fruit bats. In that painting, as in 55D, the wings are given little prominence.

THE ART OF OENPELLI



FIG. 55. Cave paintings, Obiri and Cannon Hill

G is an attractive group of two men, painted in bright red. The man on the left has a head-dress, a carrying-bag hanging from his shoulder and a stone axe in his belt. His companion has only a spear and a spear-thrower. Both men have hook-shaped faces. Locality—in small cave, Cannon Hill.

H contains three figures. On the right is a man with a spear-thrower in one hand and some unidentified object in the other. His companion, probably a woman, has a stick in her hand. Each is wearing a curiously shaped head-dress. There is no explanation for the third figure (upper right). Locality—Cannon Hill.

J is a fish, two birds, and an unidentified figure. These were adjacent to Pl. 47C. Locality—Cannon Hill.

Stencilled Hands. Stencilled hands and hand prints, usually associated with other examples of primitive cave art, have been found in many parts of the world, as well as throughout Australia.

The two forms exist at all known cave painting sites in Arnhem Land. At Oenpelli, however, many of the stencils are decorated with abstract designs, a characteristic which, as far as can be ascertained, does not occur elsewhere.

To produce the hand stencils, an aboriginal chews some pigment with a mouthful of water, then, placing a hand, foot or some other object against the wall, sprays the mixture over it. This produces a stencil. Hand prints are made by rubbing the palm on a flat surface loaded with colour and pressing the hand against the wall.

Plate 41D is one of several sheets of bark in the collection of the National Museum, Melbourne, on which there are decorated stencils of both hands and feet. These bark paintings were collected at Oenpelli during the early years of this century by P. Cahill.

Plate 48A and B, from Inagurdurwil, is examples of hand and arm stencils decorated with diamond-shaped patterns in white, red and yellow.

Plate 48C, at Inagurdurwil, shows a complete hand and fore-arm stencil and two others in which the hand is held in edge and the forefinger bent.

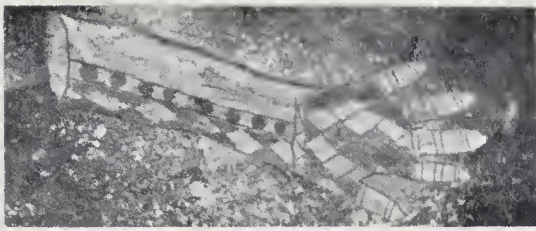
Plate 48D and H is hand prints from Inagurdurwil, which have, no doubt, been touched up after the print was made.

Plate 48E, in a cave at Unbalanja, pictures three simple stencils of the hand and fore-arm.

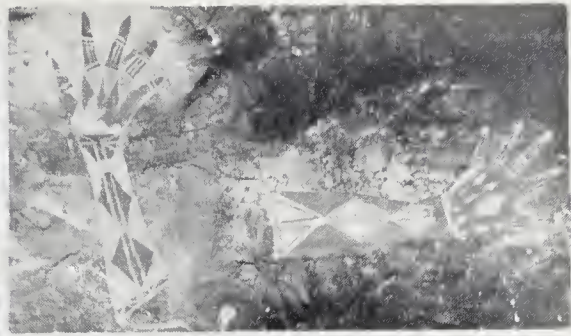
Plate 48F, at Cannon Hill, is the stencil of a European axe.

Plate 48G, at Cannon Hill, is the stencil of the hand of a small girl who has since died. It has been decorated with attractive herring-bone designs.

Techniques of recording cave paintings. There have been so many errors made in the recording of cave paintings that I have, during my twenty-eight years of field research into Australian aboriginal art, consistently refrained from making free-hand drawings of aboriginal art. Instead, I have either directly



A



B



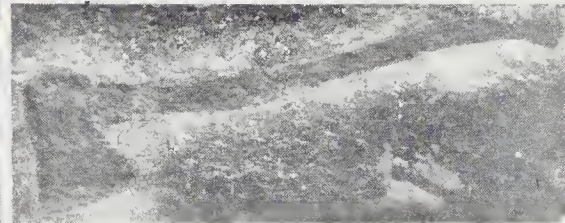
C



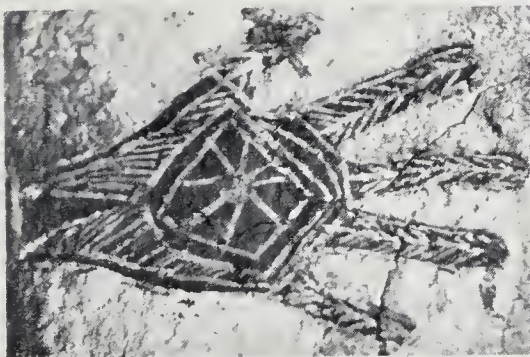
D



E



F



G



H

PLATE 48. Cave paintings and stencils, Oenpelli

traced the designs on transparent paper or photographed the paintings, using special negative material and light filters to accentuate the faint lines.

One has only to consider the famous but badly drawn *Wandjina* cave painting found by Sir George Grey in 1838,⁶³ and the years of controversy and the strange theories that grew up around it (until, in 1930, Love⁶⁴ discovered the real meaning of similar designs), to realize the dangers of free-hand sketching by untrained draughtsmen, either aboriginal or European.

When tracing from a photograph it is not difficult to preserve the minor details as well as the inequalities of line and mass—an almost impossible task in free-hand to any but the most highly skilled and patient artist. With the best of intentions one tends to draw a smooth line.

For recording the cave paintings at Oenpelli and Chasm Island I used the camera exclusively. I did so both for accuracy and, because my research time was limited, to record as many figures as possible. During the day I searched for the cave paintings and photographed the significant examples, then during the evening developed, dried and titled the negatives. The next day I revisited the paintings I had photographed, made a record of the dimensions and colours, and associated them with relevant negatives. As most of the paintings were on flat surfaces, photographic distortion was reduced to a minimum. Even on rough or curving surfaces this distortion could be almost eliminated by the choice of proper lenses.

Although the details of the cave paintings at Unbalanja are almost complete, those of Inagurdurwil, Obiri and Cannon Hill are not so full because the notes relating to those negatives were lost in an accident. Nevertheless, the photographs and the general observations made at the time of the discovery of the cave paintings have provided most of the required information.

On my return to the southern states after the completion of the expedition I enlarged the photographs and from those enlargements made tracings which form the illustrations. The fact that I have spent many hundreds of hours making those tracings indicates that by any other technique I would only have been able to illustrate but a small proportion of the present collection.

Time did not allow me to make an intensive study of the super-impositions of the various art styles, but the observations and records that I did make showed that the X-ray art appeared to be the more recent. Although I did not have time to make a complete record of all the elaborately painted surfaces, it was possible to record a few. An accurate copy of the painted ceiling at Injaluk cave, site 3, Unbalanja Hill, would have occupied the time of a skilled artist for many days.* Again, I did not try to record all of the many thousands of cave paintings I saw. Instead, I contented myself by photographing the significant single and grouped figures which revealed not only the art motifs but, through associated

63. Grey (1841), pp. 202-4, 214.

64. Love (1930), pp. 1-24.

*Since this was written Mrs. Agnes Schultz, from the Frobenius Institute, Frankfurt, has made a water-colour copy of this remarkable painted ceiling.

myths, the beliefs of the artists themselves. My approach to the cave art was that of the ethnologist, not the archaeologist.

The present work on the cave paintings at the Oenpelli area cannot be considered as any more than a preliminary survey of this most interesting art area. I hope that before civilization has destroyed the culture of the aboriginal artists, and the elements have eliminated their pictures, some scientist with ample time will visit Oenpelli and make a complete record of the many cave paintings, their super-impositions, and their related data.

2. BARK PAINTINGS AND MYTHS

(1) SPIRIT PEOPLE

The aborigines of Oenpelli believe that a host of spirit people live in the country round about them. Their homes are in many places—in the clefts of the rocks of the Arnhem Land plateau, in the waterholes of the flood plains, in the termite mounds, in the hollow trees, or in holes in the ground.⁶⁵

Although the native folk know the characteristics and the dwelling places of each of the spirit people, they have never seen them. My informants, however, believe that the medicine-men of the past, being much cleverer than those of the present generation, often caught a glimpse of these mysterious people.

In general, the aborigines divide the spirit people into two kinds: (a) the *Mimi*, harmless, shy folk, who do not interfere with the aborigines, and (b) the *Mamandi*, malignant, ill-disposed demons, who are always trying to punish or kill the natives.⁶⁶ These people are feared, although the danger of an attack from some of them is much lessened if two or more aborigines travel together.

(a) THE MIMI

The general term of *Mimi* covers a large group of spirit people. Some, like the cave-painting *Mimi* (Pl. 49B), the *Nalbidji* (Pl. 50), the *Wili-wilia* (Pl. 53E) and *Buma-buma* (Pl. 51B), live under similar conditions to the aborigines; that is, they have the same hunting implements, eat the same foods, and know the way to make fire. Others, such as the *Muimnuigan* (Pl. 51E), *Timara*, the fisherman (Pl. 54C), or *Bamunit* and his family (Pl. 51C) are without tools, weapons, or a knowledge of fire, deficiencies which severely limit the range of food they can gather and eat.

The Cave-painting Mimi

The cave-painting *Mimi*, whose specific name I did not find out, are supposed, by the aborigines, to have been responsible for the single-line rock paintings in

65. The conception of a number of spirit people is unusual among the Australian aborigines, although most tribes believe in a few night-dwelling spirits, such as the *Mamu* of Central Australia (Mountford, 1948, p. 44). The *Mokoi* of north-eastern Arnhem Land, of which there are many, are associated with the dead. These spirits appear to be different from the *Mimi* and *Mamandi* of Oenpelli.

66. Spencer (1914), pp. 433-6, Figs. 79-83, describes a number of spirit beings, which he calls *Mormo* (probably the same as my *Marm*), some of which are harmless, and some dangerous to human beings.

the caves of the Arnhem Land plateau, adjacent to Oenpelli, particularly those of human beings.

The *Mimi*, whose homes are under the great rocks of the plateau, are particularly tall and thin, so thin in fact that they can hunt only in still weather, otherwise the wind would break their frail bodies. They are also remarkably keen in both sight and hearing. If, while hunting, the *Mimi* detect the approach of aborigines, they run quickly to a cleft in the rocks of the plateau and blow upon it. The rocks then open to admit the *Mimi*, closing behind them to keep out intruders.

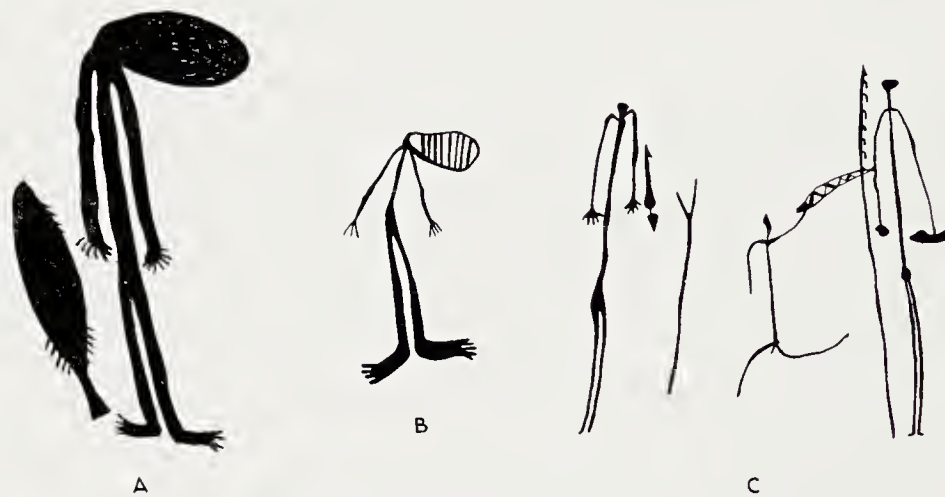


FIG. 56. Spirit people, Unbalanja
A, B Munimunigan C Mimi

Figure 56C, a cave painting, is a self-portrait of the tall, thin-bodied *Mimi*. The man on the right has a spear in one side of him and a spear-thrower in his hand. The central running figure has just thrown a spear, and the one on the left has a spear-thrower adjacent to his right hand.

Plate 49C is an X-ray painting of a *Mimi* family. The father occupies the central position; the mother is on the right, and the four children are in the lower left-hand corner.

Plate 49B is another X-ray painting of a male and a female *Mimi*.

Plate 49A is a painting of a group of *Mimi* men and women. The *Mimi* on the upper right is smoking a European pipe.⁶⁷

Spirit Woman (unidentified)

In the early days of the world a young girl, the promised wife of an older relative, developed a strong antipathy towards her future husband. Although she would accept food from him and sometimes sit in his camp during the day-time, she always returned to her parents' camp at sunset. Her father chided her for this conduct, saying:

67. This is another example of a myth keeping up to date. See myth of Malay prau, p. 98.

'That man is to be your husband; he feeds you, yet when "dark time" comes you will not stay with him. Why is this?'

The young girl did not reply but sat on the ground and wept bitterly because, though she did not speak of it, she dreaded living with a man whom she disliked so much.

The husband, becoming annoyed over the girl's behaviour, decided to punish her. So he painted a figure of his young wife on the wall of a remote cave, and chanted over it a song of such evil magic that the girl became ill with a wasting disease and died.⁶⁸ She is now one of the harmless *Mimi* who live among the rocks of the plateau.

Plate 49D, which depicts the *Mimi* woman, is a good example of an X-ray painting of a human being. Two eyes attached to 'strings' (optic nerves) are shown on one side of the head. The artist has painted the backbone, on either side of which, in the form of a zig-zag line, are the intestines. The band *a* is the pelvis. The zig-zag lines below the pelvis represent the muscles in the upper leg. The bones of the arms and legs are also indicated. The foot is shown as a footprint.⁶⁹

The Nalbidji

These spirit people live an existence similar to that of the cave-painting *Mimi*. Their homes are under the rocks of Unbalanja, near Oenpelli, the entrances to which open when the *Nalbidji* blow upon them. The *Nalbidji* use fire both to keep themselves warm in the cold weather and to cook their food, although no aborigines have ever seen the smoke from their fires. The men hunt kangaroos and other creatures, and the women collect a yam called *mambiri*. Like the cave-painting *Mimi*, the *Nalbidji* run quickly to their homes when they hear anyone coming. Because of this no one has ever seen a *Nalbidji*.

Plate 50 is a cave painting of a family of the *Nalbidji*. Reading from the left, the first figure is a hollow-bodied woman.⁷⁰ The next man, holding a spear and spear-thrower in his right hand, is wearing a feathered head-dress and feathered bands round his upper arms. A sacred bag⁷¹ hangs from his neck. To the right is a similar male figure with a decorated spear-thrower and head-dress, a spear in either hand and a sacred carrying-bag round his neck. He is wearing feathered armbands.

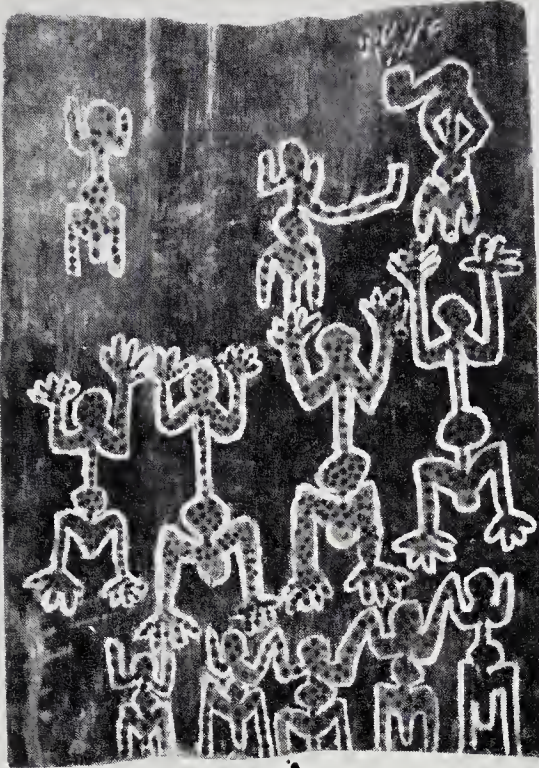
Above this figure is a female *Nalbidji* with a woman's carrying-basket hanging from her shoulder. In the lower centre is another of the spirit men who, like his companions, has feathered armbands, a tasselled spear-thrower, a spear and a sacred bag. He is wearing a head-dress of string and feathers. On the extreme

68. An example of malignant magic associated with a cave painting. Spencer and Gillen (1899), p. 549, record a ground drawing with a similar function.

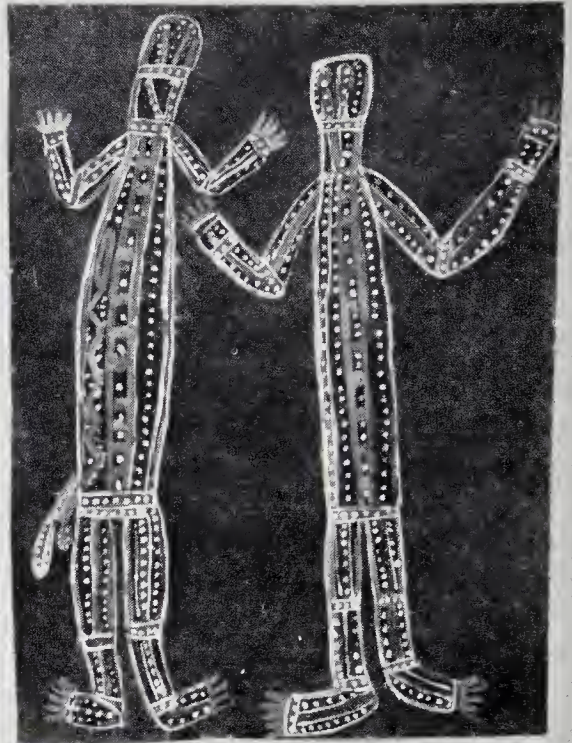
69. This characteristic is also present on the *Wandjina* paintings of north-western Australia recorded by Love (1930), Fig. 13, and a cave painting at Chasm Island, Fig. 9L.

70. This form is not uncommon in Arnhem Land cave art (Fig. 28A). Mountford (1937), p. 34, Fig. 12, records several examples from Napier Broome Bay, Western Australia.

71. Only initiated men are allowed to carry these bags. They are similar in function to those worn by the Groote Eylandters at the *arawaltja* ceremony (p. 46).



A



B



C



D

PLATE 49. Bark paintings, Oenpelli
A, B, C Mimi D Mimi woman, unidentified

right is a sacred object, with long string tassels, which belongs to the *Nalbidji*. This object is wrapped in paper-bark, so that the women cannot see it. This remarkable painting of the *Nalbidji*, in red, is on the roof of an extensive cave at Unbalanja, site 4. The figures are about three feet in height.*

The Man, Mamgunmal

Mamgunmal and his family are *Mimi* people who live in the rocks of the plateau. Their diet is limited to the honey from the flowers and the gum that exudes from the tree-trunks. *Mamgunmal's* wife was told that she must not eat the gum of the blood-wood tree because it was associated with men's ceremonies.⁷² One day she disobeyed that taboo and so serious was the offence that *Mamgunmal*, waiting until his wife was asleep, speared her to death.

Mamgunmal is depicted in X-ray art on the right-hand side of Pl. 51A. Beside him is a sacred ceremonial object, similar to that in Pl. 148D.

The Man, Buma-buma

Buma-buma, one of the harmless spirit people, lives by himself in termite mounds. Although he has spears, spear-thrower and a knowledge of fire, his diet consists only of wild honey and the flesh of bandicoots, goannas and echidnas.

Plate 51B is a picture of *Buma-buma*. The artist has indicated the ribs and the backbone. The feet are shown as footprints.

The Man, Bamunit and his Wife

Bamunit and his wife live in a jungle near Kumada, between Nimbawah and Oenpelli. The family are not considered dangerous unless someone trespasses on their hunting grounds. These spirit people, who are the same size as the aborigines, live entirely on yams which, as they have not learned the secret of fire, they have to eat uncooked.

Both *Bamunit* and his wife (to the left) are painted in a simple X-ray form in Pl. 51C. The other two figures are the yams which these spirit people gather for food. *Bamunit* has projections from his knees and elbows similar to the 'joint marks' recorded by Schuster.

The Man, Mik-mik

Mik-mik is a harmless woodland spirit who lives in a jungle near the mouth of the Liverpool River.⁷³ He eats only the fish he catches in the shallow coastal waters. Although *Mik-mik* is a large man, the aborigines are not afraid of him; in fact, only the medicine-men have seen him.

Plate 51D is a painting of the man, *Mik-mik*. Although his body is shown front view, his feet are shown as footprints.

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. I.

72. The gum of the blood-wood tree (*Eucalyptus polycarpa*) resembles blood in colour and is therefore sacred. Being sacred, no woman is allowed to eat it.

73. Map, Fig. 1.



PLATE 50. Cave paintings, Unbalanja
Nalbidji

The Munimunigan

The *Munimunigan* live among the great rocks of Unbalanja.⁷⁴ As they have no axes with which to cut down the trees to collect honey, no spears to kill the birds or the animals, and no fire to cook their food, their diet is particularly limited. During the wet season the *Munimunigan* eke out an existence by eating the soft gum that exudes from the tree-trunks. If they are lucky they have a meal of wild honey. But this only happens when they find a hive in a place like a termite mound, from which it can be dug out with a stick. During the dry season the *Munimunigan* have little other food than the hardened acacia gum, and that has to be soaked in water before it can be eaten.

These people have several characteristics in common with the cave-painting *Mimi*. They are so tall and thin that they can only search for their food during the calm days and, being gifted with keen hearing and sense of smell, they are able to detect the approach of aborigines from afar. When they do, the *Munimunigan* run to the rocks and enter their homes through the crevices, which open when they blow upon them.

There are many *Mimi* cave paintings of the *Munimunigan* at Unbalanja, and all depict tall, thin-bodied people with a large mass of hair on their heads. Figs. 56A, B, are typical examples.

Plate 51E is an aboriginal bark painting, in simplified X-ray form, of a female *Munimunigan* wearing the distinguishing head-dress.

The Man, Noulabil

Noulabil, with his wife and family, lives in a large hollow tree at the base of the Arnhem Land plateau. Although normally a quiet and peaceful fellow, he has been known to attack and even kill aborigines who tried to cut down his tree.

Noulabil is particularly afraid of the lightning-man, *Mamaragan* (p. 208), who travels in the thunderstorms. When a thunderstorm approaches, *Noulabil* comes out of his hollow tree and, wiping the perspiration from beneath his arms, orders the lightning-man to pass on one side. Sometimes *Mamaragan* obeys, but if he does not, *Noulabil* and his family flee to the caves of the plateau, because *Mamaragan* once shattered *Noulabil's* tree with the stone axes which have grown on his knees and hands (Pl. 59B).

Plate 51F depicts the man, *Noulabil*. He has curious projections on his knees,⁷⁵ and a curved fibia which may be boomerang shins caused by yaws.⁷⁶ The backbone and ribs of *Noulabil* are also indicated, but no internal organs.

74. Map, Fig. 10.

75. Curious 'joint marks' which have a wide distribution throughout the Pacific area. Schuster (1951).

76. This disease occurs among the aborigines of Arnhem Land.

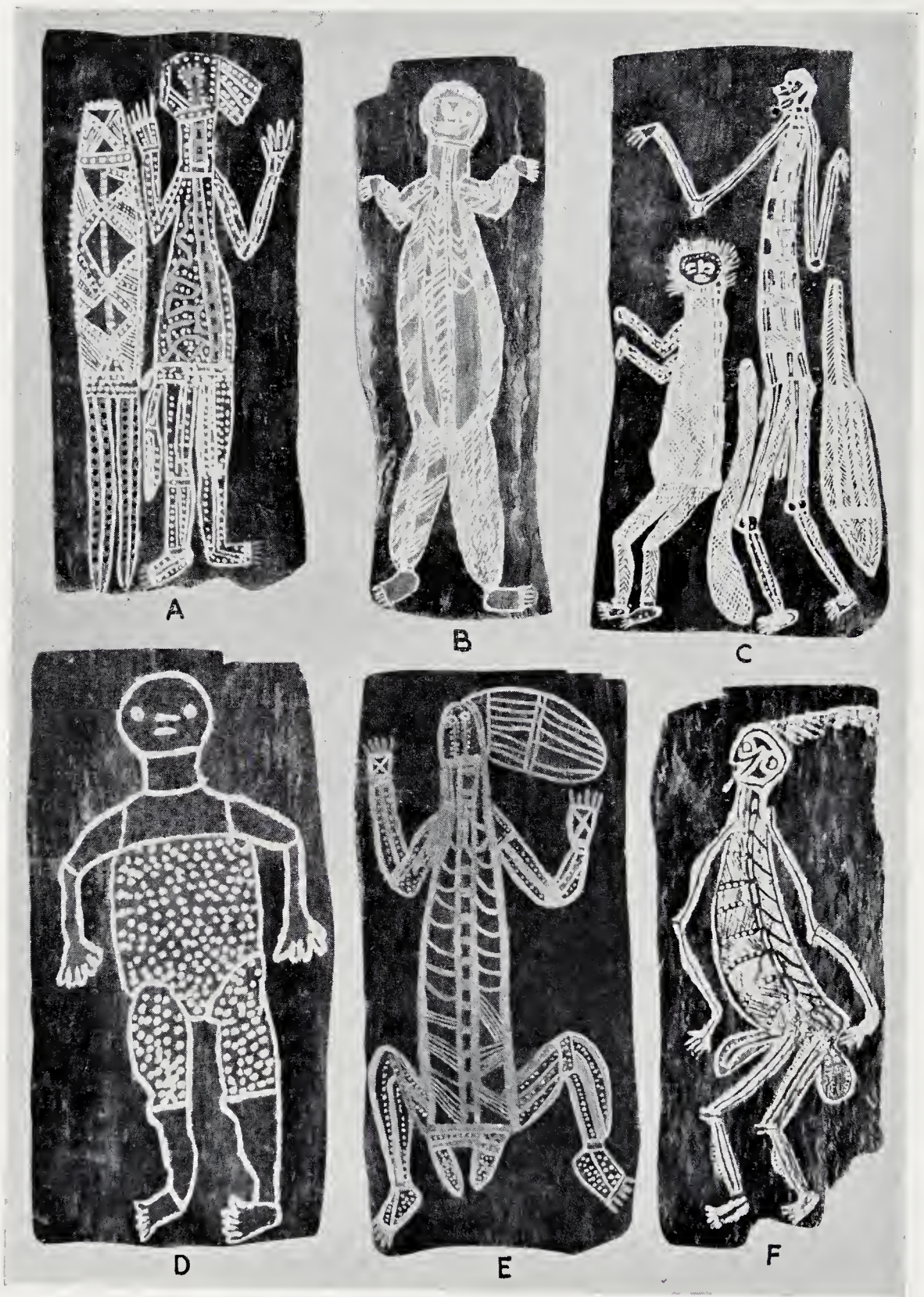


PLATE 51. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The man, Mangunmal

B The man, Buma-buma

C The man, Bamunit, and
his wife

D The man, Mik-mik

E The Munimunigan

F The man, Noulabil

The Man, Dauandja

There is a sacred waterhole in the vicinity of the Liverpool River⁷⁷ called Neniaraaka, from which only the old men of the tribe may drink. It was created in mythical times by a man called *Dauandja*, who has lived there ever since. *Dauandja*, a harmless little old man without wife or children, spends most of his time at the bottom of the Neniaraaka waterhole. Sometimes, however, he leaves his home to catch the fish and crabs of the mangrove swamps. No one has seen *Dauandja* because, being afraid of human beings, he quickly returns to his watery home whenever he hears them.

The central circle in Pl. 52A is the main waterhole, Neniaraaka. The horizontal bands on either side are small creeks which flow from the waterhole and the central vertical band is an aboriginal track leading to it. The designs on the lower left, lower right and upper right-hand corners represent running water. No water runs from the upper left. The cross-hatching indicates the adjacent swampy country.⁷⁸

The Man, Gadji-mungaini

Gadji-mungaini is a particularly hairy spirit man,⁷⁹ whose home is in the rocky country to the east of Oenpelli. He is a harmless fellow, never interfering with the aborigines. Because *Gadji-mungaini* lacks tools with which to dig up yams, weapons to spear creatures and fire to cook them, his diet is limited to the hives of wild honey he finds either in the anthills or the clefts of the rocks.

During creation times the aboriginal people of Oenpelli were without the power of speech. It was *Gadji-mungaini* who taught them the words which they now use, as well as their long series of hunting calls.

Plate 52B is an X-ray bark painting of the spirit being, *Gadji-mungaini*. Many interesting external details are shown, such as the long body, hair, the beard, and the protruding tongue which indicates that *Gadji-mungaini* is speaking.⁸⁰

The Man, Pitari

The *Pitari* are similar to human beings, except that their bodies are covered with long thick hair, 'same as the dogs belonging to the white man', so the aborigines explained.⁸¹ The *Pitari* live by hunting the larger game, such as kangaroos and wallabies. They are quiet, harmless spirit folk who never cause the aborigines any trouble. No aboriginal, however, not even a medicine-man, has seen a *Pitari*, because they escape to their homes in the rocks at the first signs of human beings.

Plate 52C shows a *Pitari* in the act of spearing a kangaroo. The internal organs of the kangaroo are indicated, but not those of the human being.

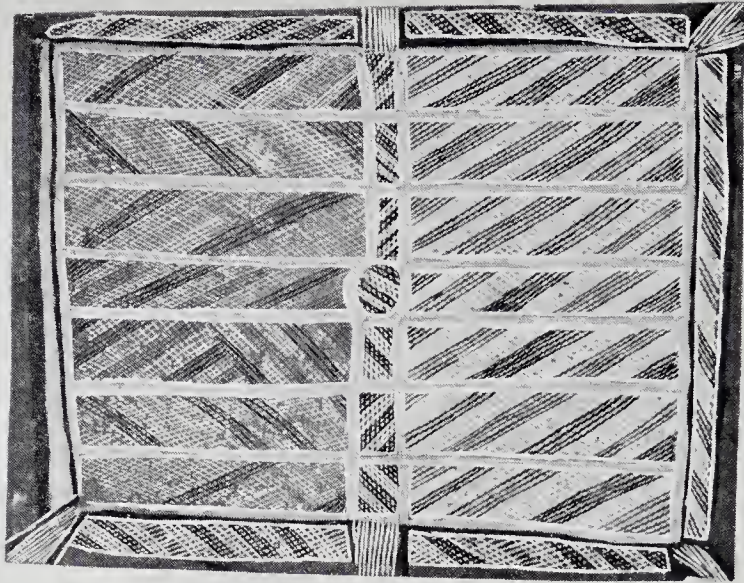
77. Map, Fig. 1.

78. Although the details vary, this spirit man is possibly the same person as the *Dauandja* mentioned in the myth on p. 191.

79. Similar to *Pitari*, Pl. 52C.

80. This symbol of speech is common in ancient Mexican and Aztec art. See Pl. 53F from *Codex Mendoza*; Pl. 60, Clark (1938).

81. The long hair is not shown in the painting.



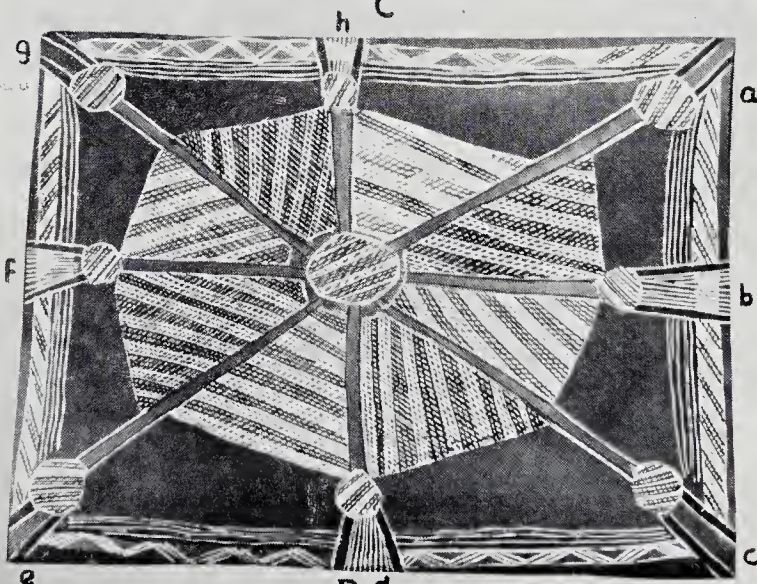
A



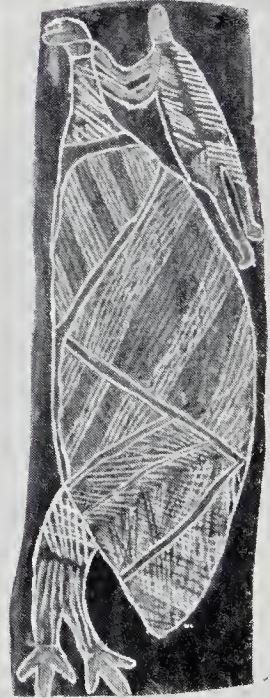
B



C



D



E

PLATE 52. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The man, Dauandja B The man, Gadji-mungaini C The man, Pitari
 D The man, Dauandja E The man, Guruwuldan

The Man, Dauandja, and his Family

In creation times a man, *Dauandja*, and his family of four wives, one son and three daughters, lived on the sea-coast near the mouth of the present Liverpool River.

One day *Dauandja* made a bark canoe and, putting his family aboard, set out to visit a distant island. But when they were far out to sea a heavy storm of rain and wind swamped the canoe and drowned the whole family.

When *Dauandja* reached the bottom of the sea he said to his family:

'This is really a good place. We'll each make separate camps and stay here all the time, but before we do, I'll send up a stream of fresh water so that my friends can get a drink should they become thirsty on a long canoe journey.'

Ever since that time a spring of fresh water bubbles up in the middle of the sea, right over the centre of *Dauandja's* camp. Should the aborigines run short of water when they are on a canoe journey, they paddle to the spring of fresh water created by *Dauandja*, fill their water vessels and quench their thirst. This fresh-water spring in the sea, which covers a considerable area, is some distance from the mouth of the Liverpool River.

The bark painting, Pl. 52D, is a plan view of the floor of the ocean, showing the camps of *Dauandja*, his wives and family. The central design is the camp of *Dauandja*, from which flows the stream of fresh water; *b*, *d*, *f* and *h* are the camps of the wives, *Nadja-ama*, *Nauwa-larara*, *Birim-mauibi*, and *Gunauria* respectively; *a* belongs to the son, *Inawara*, and *c*, *e* and *g* to the daughters, *Baijili*, *Jambia-jabilja* and *Jana-wara*. The cross-hatched area indicates the fresh water that bubbles up from the bottom of the sea.

The Man, Guruwuldan

The harmless *Mimi*, *Guruwuldan*, lives by himself in a jungle near the Aruwatara swamp, about seven miles south of Oenpelli. He has spears and a spear-thrower, with which he kills jungle fowls, *wailun* (*Megapodius reinwardt*), and Torres Strait pigeons (*Myristicivora spilorrhoa*). These he cooks at his camp-fire, for *Guruwuldan* knows the secret of fire-making.

On Pl. 52E, *Guruwuldan* is capturing a jungle fowl by holding on to its head. The disproportionate size of the game and the hunter is a characteristic of Arnhem Land art (Pl. 32C, 71D).

Nalbidji and Burial

During creation times the *Nalbidji* lived as ordinary people, camping in the forests or by the rivers, catching game and spearing fish.

At one time, when a member of the *Nalbidji* died, his relatives used to place his body on the burial platform and leave it there for an indefinite time. Later on the leader of the *Nalbidji*, noticing the disintegrating skeletons, decided to show the people how best to dispose of the bones. First, however, he went to a nearby lagoon and speared a bream, *ijakou*, so that the participants in the burial

ceremony would have food to eat. He then taught the people the long series of totemic chants to sing at the burial; the daughters of the dead man how to lift the dried body from the platform; and their mother how to dismember the body, clean the bones, wrap them in paper-bark, and place them in a cave where the rain would not fall upon them. After the rituals had been performed, the leader decreed that, for ever afterwards, the bones of the dead men should be treated in the same manner as he had laid down in these burial rituals.

The *Nalbidji*, who eat the same food as the aborigines, are quiet, inoffensive people. They now live at the bottom of a lagoon near Inagurdurwil, a few miles south of Oenpelli.⁸² These are the same people as depicted in a cave painting at Unbalanja (Pl. 50).

Plate 53A is the story of the burial ceremony of a *Nalbidji* man. On the extreme right, *a* is the leader of the *Nalbidji* spearing the bream, *ijakou*; *b* is a man carrying a roll of paper-bark in which to wrap the bones of the dead. He is dancing to the rhythm of the drone-tube player, *f*, while *c*, *d* and *e* are the performers of one of the dances belonging to the totem of the dead man whose body, at the extreme left of the painting, is supported on forked sticks. *f* is blowing the drone tube or wooden trumpet to provide the rhythm for the dances, and *g* is beating his music sticks together to mark the time. *h* and *k* are the daughters of the dead man, ready to hand his dried body to their mother, *j*, below, who will clean the bones, wrap them in the roll of paper-bark held by *b*, and place them in a dry cave.

The Nadidjit People

The *Nadidjit*, like many of the *Mimi* people, live in the caves and the clefts of the plateau. The *Nadidjit*, being more rotund than the cave-painting *Mimi*, cannot go through such small openings in the rocks. Although normally the *Nadidjit* do not attack the aborigines, they are short-tempered and likely to spear anyone who disturbs the game which they are stalking. The *Nadidjit* are particularly afraid of the lightning-man, *Mamaragan* (p. 208), and should they be out food gathering when a thunderstorm develops they run quickly to the shelter of the plateau caves. The small black wallaroo, *barak* (*Osphranter bernardus*), is the 'dog' of both the *Nadidjit* and the cave-painting *Mimi* (Pl. 73B).

Plate 53B is the painting of a mythical *Nadidjit* man. No internal organs are shown.

Mimi Unidentified

Plate 53C shows a *Mimi* who lives in the rocky hills at Oenpelli. I did not ascertain his specific name. He has a family, knows the secret of fire and, because he owns a spear and spear-thrower, can capture both fish and the larger animals. His wives, like those of the aborigines, gather the water-lily bulbs and grass seeds for food.

82. Map, Fig. 10.

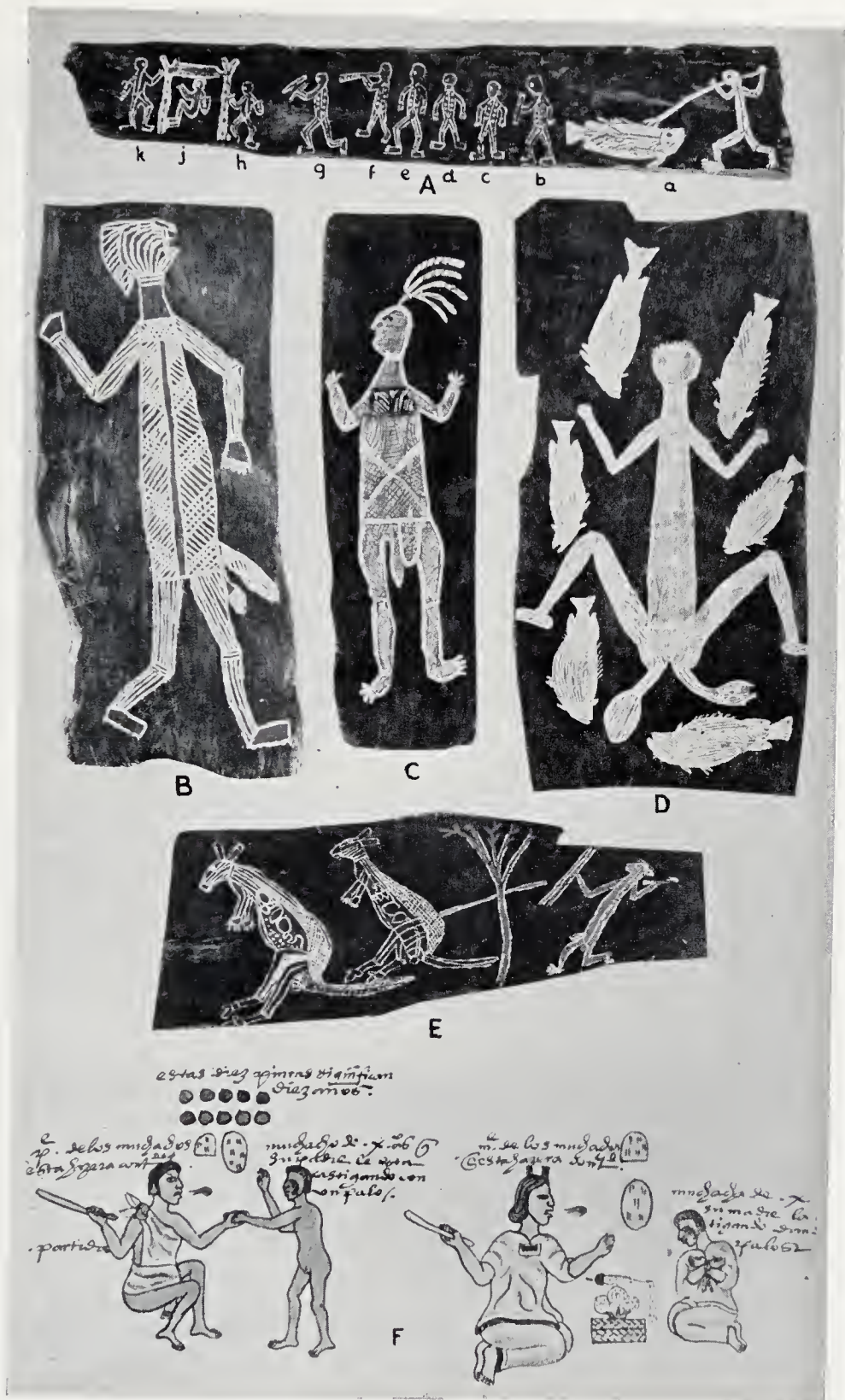


PLATE 53. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

- | | | |
|---------------------------|-----------------------|----------------------|
| A The Nalbidji and burial | B The man, Nadidjit | C Mimi, unidentified |
| D The man, Dignuk | E The man, Wili-wilia | F From Codex Mendoza |

The Man, Dignuk

*Dignuk*⁸³ is a little man who wades through the swamps during the hours of darkness, catching fish with a bamboo spear called *banaurun*.

The aborigines say that they often hear *Dignuk* making a sound like *pu-pu* as he chases the fish in the shallow waters of the swamps. Although he never attacks the aborigines, he becomes very annoyed should they capture so many fish that his own supplies are depleted. *Dignuk*, with his wife and family, live in deep caves under the roots of the large fig trees growing at the edge of the lagoons. To enter these caves, *Dignuk* has to enlarge the entrance, which is about the size of a goanna's hole, by blowing upon it.⁸⁴

Plate 53D shows *Dignuk* and round him the fish he has captured. He has a sub-incised penis,⁸⁵ and his body is drawn in the form of a 'hocker' figure.*

The Man, Wili-wilia

This spirit man, who lives by himself in a dense fresh-water jungle near the Liverpool River, is not a danger to human beings, because he runs away whenever he hears them coming. *Wili-wilia*, who knows the secret of fire, lives on the same land foods as the aborigines, such as kangaroos, bandicoots, yams and wild honey. He does not eat fish.

Plate 53E shows *Wili-wilia* who, using a tree as shelter, has crept within range and speared one of two kangaroos. Both of the kangaroos are good examples of X-ray art.†

Plate 53F is a copy of an ancient Mexican painting from the *Codex Mendoza*, which shows the tongue external to the mouth as a symbol of speech. This symbol is also used in the bark painting of *Gadji-mungaini*, Pl. 52B.

Erabbitli and Kumail-kumail

Plate 54A illustrates two spirit men, *Erabbitli* and *Kumail-kumail*, ready to take part in a ceremony. *Erabbitli*, on the right, is wearing a head-dress made of twigs and decorated with feathers. The cross-hatching on the chest indicates his stomach. The artist has also painted the upper intestine, the liver, the lower intestine, the spine, and the bones of the upper and lower limbs. There are few such details of his companion, *Kumail-kumail*, the cross-hatching on his body indicating ceremonial body paint.‡

83. Spencer (1928), p. 803, Fig. 520, describes a little spirit fisherman called *Bubba Peibi*, who resembles *Dignuk* in many respects.

84. Many of the spirit people of Oenpelli are able to enlarge the entrance to their homes by blowing upon it. See the cave-painting *Mimi*, p. 182; *Nabarakbia*, p. 203; *Nalbidji*, p. 183; and *Bubba Peibi*, Spencer (1928), p. 803.

85. The symbol of the sub-incised penis is always the same as that shown on *Dignuk*. The aborigines of Oenpelli, although they do not practise either sub-incision or circumcision, are definite that many of their spirit people passed through both of these ordeals, and that they were practised by the aborigines 'a long time ago'. This information and the paintings suggest that both circumcision and sub-incision were once practised at Oenpelli. The sub-incised penis is called *balai*, the circumcised penis *mandai*, and the uncircumcised penis *mandik*.

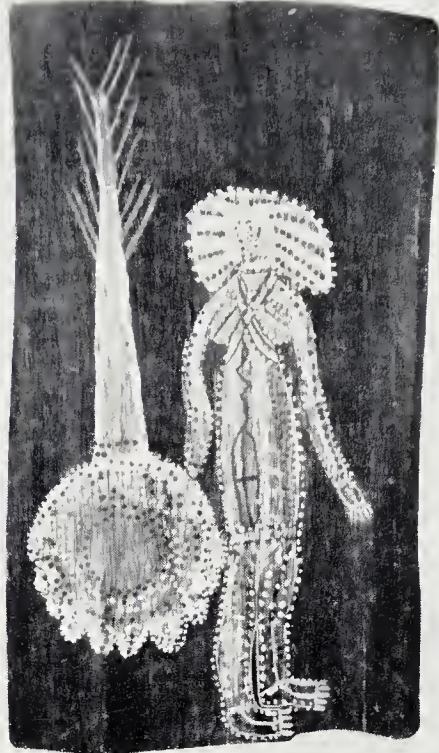
* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XXVIII.

† Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XXXII.

‡ Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XXIX.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 54. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The men, Eradbatli and Kumail-kumail B The woman, Naluk
 C The fisherman, Timara D The man, Gradau

The Woman, Naluk

Naluk is another of the harmless *Mimi* people who live in the jungle. *Naluk*, with her husband and family, eat only the yams she collects.

Plate 54B is a good example of a human being drawn in the X-ray art form. The long hair of *Naluk* is indicated by a series of radiating lines. On the left of *Naluk* is the yam.

Timara, the Fisher

At one time a mythical man, *Timara*, caught a large cat-fish (*Cnidoglanis* sp.) at Kurultul, a place not far from the Liverpool River.⁸⁶ Putting the cat-fish on his shoulder, he walked to a jungle at Gugandja, a long way north-east of Oenpelli.

At Gugandja, *Timara* was so pleased with his surroundings that he decided to change himself into one of the *Mimi* people, and make the place his permanent camp. *Timara* now lives by himself in deep caves under the Gugandja jungle, the entrance to which is an opening in a large hollow tree. He is able to catch the fish in the billabongs but, because he has not learned the secret of fire, must eat them raw.

No aboriginal has ever seen *Timara* because he quickly enters his underground home whenever his large ears warn him of the approach of human beings. But the aborigines do not fear him, although they are careful not to interfere with the hollow tree which forms the door of his subterranean home.

Plate 54C is an X-ray painting of *Timara*. In the upper right-hand corner is the cat-fish which he caught at Kurultul. His two eyes, with the optic nerves attached, are shown on one side of his head. His large ears, his spine, ribs and arm bones are also indicated.

The Man, Gradau

Gradau, with long hair all over his body, is a quiet *Mimi*, who lives in the jungle near the mouth of the East Alligator River. One day, when out hunting, he threw his spear at the scrub wallaby, *dagu*, with so much force that the spear-thrower flew out of his hand.

On Pl. 54D, *Gradau* is shown in the act of spearing the scrub wallaby. The wallaby is a particularly decorative example of X-ray art. The rectangle below *Gradau* is the ground on which he stood.

The Man, Naljanio

Naljanio lives in the rocks of Unbalanja.⁸⁷ One day when *Naljanio* was hunting he saw an approaching thunderstorm. Not wishing to be out in the rain, he hurried toward his home in the rocks. But the storm broke before he reached it and made him very wet. *Naljanio* was cold and miserable until he arrived at his camp-fire under the rocks of Unbalanja.

86. Map, Fig. 1.

87. Map, Fig. 10.

Plate 55A shows *Naljanio* after he had been drenched by a shower of rain. The vertical lines on the head and chest indicate the water running down his body.

The Man, Makurindba

The man, *Makurindba*, his wife and three children have their home in a gorge called Gurujun, near Koepang Creek,⁸⁸ beside which there are two high pillars of rock. The *Makurindba*, who are tall and thin like the *Mimi*, live entirely on yams.

Reading from the left on Pl. 55B, the figures are *Makurindba*, one of the smaller children, an infant, the wife, the eldest child. The second figure, according to the artist, was drawn upside down because it 'looked better'.

(b) THE MARM OR MAMANDI

Whereas the *Mimi* are harmless, shy spirit folk, the *Mamandi* are malignant spirits, always ill-disposed toward the aboriginal people.

Some of the *Mamandi*, the *Barun-barun* (Pl. 55F), the *Warluk* (Pl. 55C), or the *Waramuntjuna* (Pl. 56C), attack the aborigines only if they are interfered with. Others, like the *Namarakain* (Pl. 55D), the *Nadubi* (Pl. 58B), or the *Nabarakbia* (Pl. 57B), are always on the lookout to hurt or kill.

The *Mamandi* have several methods of injuring the aborigines. The *Nabarakbia* and the *Namarakain* first steal, then eat the spirits of sick men. The *Warluk*, the *Matjiba* and the *Nadubi* kill by projecting the barbed spines from their own bodies into those of their victims; the lightning-man, *Mamaragan*, if disturbed in his waterhole, floods the country and drowns the inhabitants; and the lone forest dweller, *Garkain*, smothers all who intrude on his domain by wrapping himself round them.

The *Mamandi* also have their homes in many places, in the jungles, in the rocks, in termite mounds, in hollow trees, and in the waterholes. All these places are well-known to the aborigines and strictly avoided.

The Man, Warluk

Warluk, a much-feared spirit being, lives with his wife and family in some invisible country high up above the clouds, but no aboriginal, not even a medicine-man, knows exactly where.

Although the *Warluk* family have no wings, they can descend to the earth to collect food. Because of lack of tools, this food is limited to acacia gum, fish caught with bare hands, and the hives of wild bees in the termite mounds. Also, not having learned the secret of fire, the *Warluk* must eat their food raw. At times, the *Warluk* family visits the camps of the aborigines during the hours of darkness and steals those portions of cooked kangaroos and fish which have been left in the trees. If particularly hungry they, like *Nadubi* (p. 203), will even eat the fat spilt on the ashes of the camp-fire. The aborigines claim that they often hear the *Warluk* moving round the camp at night.

88. Map, Fig. 10.



PLATE 55. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The man, Naljanio
D The Namarakain

B The man, Makurindba
E The man, Garkain

C The Mamandi, Warluk
F The double-men, Barun-barun

Sometimes the *Warluk* get tired of living in the sky and come down to the plateau to make their camp near one of the springs. They have been known to kill an aboriginal who approached their camp by projecting one of their own leg bones into his body. When this happens the aboriginal will slowly sicken and die, unless a medicine-man locates and magically removes the bone.

The painting of *Warluk*, Pl. 55C, is one of the best examples in the collection of a man painted in the X-ray art form. The heart, the lungs (on either side), the stomach and the intestines are clearly indicated. The projections on both sides of the head represent the long hair of *Warluk*. The aborigines claim that *Warluk* was sub-incised.⁸⁹

The Namarakain

The *Namarakain* are tall, thin-bodied people, similar in appearance to the *Mimi*. Like the *Nabarakbia*, Pl. 57B, the *Namarakain* are dangerous, because they steal the spirit of the sick by extracting it from the solar plexus. They afterwards cook and eat it. When the medicine-man sees the *Namarakain* sneaking round the men or women who are ill, he either hunts them away or spears them.

The *Namarakain* have wives and children, can make fire, and lead a life similar to that of the aborigines. Like the rest of the spirit people, they are invisible to all but the medicine-men.

Plate 55D shows two tall, thin *Namarakain*, the one on the right having large ears, with which he detects the approach of intruders.*

At Obiri are cave paintings of two female *Namarakain* (Pl. 44) with loops of string stretched between their fingers. These spirit women spend much of their time playing string games.⁹⁰ At night the loop of string, held between the fingers, transports the women from place to place. In a cave painting at Cannon Hill (Pl. 57A) one of the *Namarakain* women has a loop of string on her fingers.†

The Man, Garkain

The dumb spirit man, *Garkain*, lives by himself in a dense jungle, called Magurlipun, not far from the mouth of the Liverpool River.⁹¹ *Garkain* regards that jungle as his private domain. Should anyone trespass in it, he will become angry and, flying through the air, wrap the loose flaps of skin attached to his legs and arms round the intruder and smother him. *Garkain*, who is about the same size as an aboriginal, can either fly or walk. As this spirit man has neither tools nor weapons he has to catch what living creatures he can with his bare hands and, having no fire or knowledge of it, must eat them uncooked. *Garkain* hunts at night, as that is the only time he can capture the creatures which provide

89. Note 85, p. 194.

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XXVIII.

90. F. D. McCarthy collected a large series of these string games at Yirrkalla. They will be described in a later volume.

† Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. IX.

91. Map, Fig. 1.

him with food. During the day time *Garkain* sleeps on the floor of his jungle under a pile of leaves, his only means of keeping warm.

Plate 55E is a painting of *Garkain*⁹² showing the large flaps of skin round his body and limbs by which he smothers his victims. The feet of *Garkain*, as with many other of the spirit and human beings, are shown as footprints.

The Double-men, Barun-barun

The two mythical men, the *Barun-barun*, being permanently joined down the back, have to move together. Their home is a large cavern in the Arnhem Land plateau at a place called Tjeraidui, a long way to the north-east of Oenpelli. During mythical times the *Barun-barun* used to sit all day long in this cavern, manufacturing the large stone spear-heads for which the aborigines of Arnhem Land are well known.⁹³ In those times the *Barun-barun* used to teach the medicine-men how to make these stone spear-heads, the medicine-men in turn passing that knowledge on to the aborigines.

The *Barun-barun* still live in the cave at Tjeraidui, but they no longer allow anyone to visit them. Should an aboriginal be so foolish as to go near their cave, the *Barun-barun* kill him with one of their stone spears. These spirit people live solely on the flesh of kangaroos, which they kill with the only hunting weapon they possess, their stone-headed spears.

Plate 55F depicts the double-men, *Barun-barun*, wearing a feather head-dress. The heart-shaped design above their heads is the cave at Tjeraidui, and the designs, two on one side and one on the other, are stars which are associated in some unknown way with these mythical beings.

The Evil Spirit, Matjiba

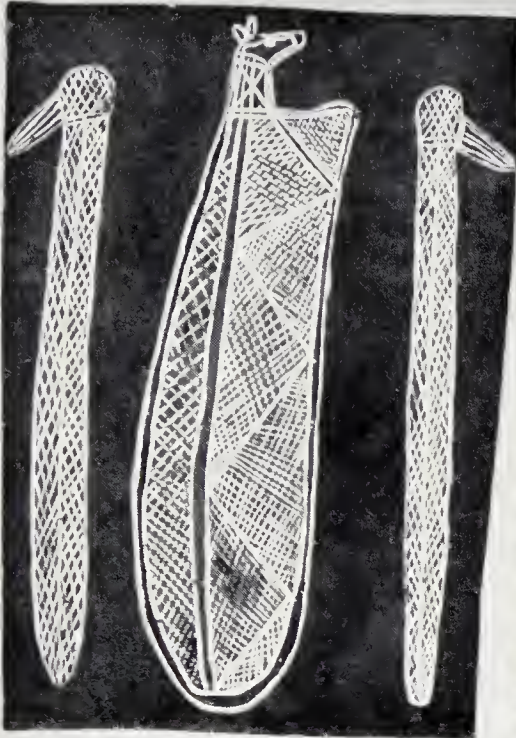
Many malignant spirits, called *Matjiba*, live in the rocks of the plateau. They have wives and families, know the use of fire, and possess the weapons of the chase.

The aborigines are afraid of the *Matjiba*, for should they see a man travelling alone a *Matjiba* will catch the native by hooking a sharp-pointed stick round his neck or in his hair (Pl. 57C), then kill him by beating their hooked sticks across his nose and head.

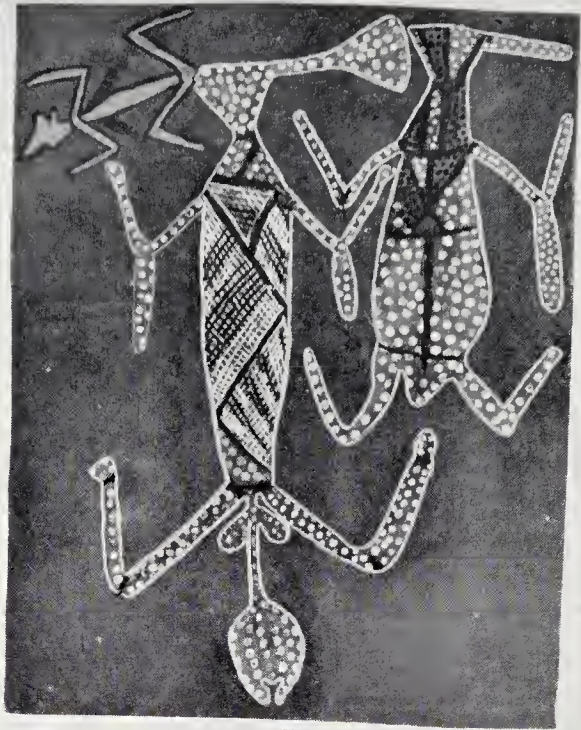
The *Matjiba's* method of cooking the man was described by one of my informants. The spirits first heat a number of stones in a fire, then, laying their victim flat on the ground, place those stones on various parts of his body. They cover him first with paper-bark, then with earth and leave the body in the oven for a long time, because the *Matjiba* like their meat well done. When they think the meat is sufficiently tender, the *Matjiba* take the body from the oven, wrap it in clean paper-bark and carry it to their families in the plateau.

92. Spencer (1914), p. 436, Pl. 83, shows a much-feared spirit, *Warraguk*, with flaps of skin running between his arms and legs.

93. Spencer and Gillen (1904), p. 641, Fig. 182, describe the methods of manufacture and illustrate some examples of these artefacts. Thomson (1949), Pl. 4, pictures the famous flint quarry at Nilipidji, the source of the Arnhem Land blades.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 56. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

- A The Mamandi, Matjiba B The men, Marli-ili and Moia, and the woman, Mali
 C The Waramuntjuna D The Mamandi woman, Nadubi

Plate 57C is a cave painting at Unbalanja, site 3, Fig. 11, of one of the *Matjiba*, a curious creature with a double body and a head somewhat resembling a kangaroo. To the right and left of him are the sticks, with a sharp hook at each end, with which the *Matjiba* catch their victims.

Plate 56A is a bark painting of *Matjiba*. The sticks, although they only have a hook on one end, and the kangaroo-like head of the *Matjiba* are similar to those in the cave painting. The body, however, is somewhat different.

The Men, Marli-ili and Moia, and the Woman, Mali

This group, the man, *Marli-ili*, his daughter *Mali*, and her promised husband, *Moia*, includes some of the most dangerous spirit people of the Liverpool River area. They live in a large paper-bark hut situated in a jungle, called Narui-onaminja, which is adjacent to the bank of the Liverpool River. The young man, *Moia*, spends most of the day catching fish and game for the father and daughter.

Both these spirit people and their camp are invisible and should anyone inadvertently go near, *Marli-ili* will track him down and, pointing the bone which projects from his own elbow at the intruder, cause him to fall sick. If a trespasser is so unfortunate as to walk right through the camp of these *Mamandi*, *Marli-ili* will transfix him with an invisible spear that leaves no wound.

The largest figure on Pl. 56B is *Marli-ili*. In the upper left-hand corner, apparently projecting from his head, is his daughter, *Mali*. The young man, *Moia*, is on the right. The two men are wearing feather head-dresses. The projections from the elbows are pieces of bone which *Marli-ili* points at his victims.

The Waramuntjuna

The family of the *Waramuntjuna*, who live on a rocky island at the mouth of the Liverpool River, consists of two men and a young boy, the son of one of them.

The *Waramuntjuna*, like all of the spirit people, are never seen, as they hurry into the rock crevices of their island when the aborigines approach. These *Mamandi*, who live entirely on turtle meat, become angry when the aborigines go near their island, and especially so if the aborigines capture a large fat turtle, which they look upon as their special property. At those times the *Waramuntjuna*, by simply pointing a finger at the canoe, cause a large wave to rise, fill the canoe and drown the occupants. The *Waramuntjuna* then bring the turtle to life by blowing upon it. If, however, the aborigines capture a small turtle, the *Waramuntjuna* allow them to take it away.

The large figures in Pl. 56C are the adult *Waramuntjuna* wearing feather ornaments in their hair. The man on the right, having pushed a wooden drone tube through a hole in the rock at a totemic place, is playing a tune. The small figure on the right is his son, whose right leg is short and his left afflicted with a boomerang shin.

The Nadubi

The aborigines are particularly afraid of the *Nadubi* spirit people, whose usual habitat is in the low scrub which often surrounds the springs at the base of the Arnhem Land plateau.

The *Nadubi*, not knowing the way to make fire, have to eat their fish and game raw. They are often so hungry that they steal the meat the aborigines have placed in the trees overnight, the honey from their honey baskets, and sometimes even eat the ashes and charcoal where the fat has been spilt (evidently the work of some animal). No aboriginal has seen a *Nadubi*, although he has often heard them grunting in the darkness.

The *Nadubi* have barbed spines growing from their knees, their elbows, and, in the case of the women, from their vulva. When they see an aboriginal travelling by himself, or drinking from the springs, the *Nadubi* sneak up behind him to shoot one of their barbed spines into his body. If it is known that the aboriginal has been near the haunts of the *Nadubi*, his friends immediately call the medicine-man to remove the spine. Sometimes the medicine-man succeeds, but more often the aboriginal dies.

This cave painting, Pl. 58B, was found on the roof of one of the many caves at Unbalanja, site 7, Fig. 11A. It shows a female figure with the legs turned backward toward the shoulders.⁹⁴ The barbed spines with which this *Nadubi* spears her victims are projecting from the elbows, knees, and vulva.⁹⁵

Plate 56D is a bark painting of a *Nadubi* woman. She also has barbed spines growing from various parts of her body.

The Fisherman, Nabarakbia

Nabarakbia, another spirit being of whom the aborigines are afraid, lives in the clefts of rocks, or in commodious caves under banyan trees, the entrances to which are little larger than that of a bandicoot burrow.⁹⁶ Although his main diet is fish, *Nabarakbia* is always trying to steal the spirit of a sick man or woman by extracting it through the solar plexus. He then cooks and eats the spirit and the patient dies. It is the duty of the medicine-men to hunt *Nabarakbia* away when they see him loitering round the camps of sick people.

Plate 57B shows *Nabarakbia* with his catch of fish threaded on a length of vine. This painting, in red and about eight feet high, was found on the ceiling of a cave at Obiri.⁹⁷

94. In the cave paintings this is the usual position of the limbs of the evil spirits which are grouped under the general name of *Marm* or *Mamandi* (Pl. 46A, E).

95. Professor C. van Reit Lowe, Director, Archaeological Survey of South Africa, sent me a photograph of a Bushman painting from the Giant's Castle game reserve, which has many points of resemblance to the *Nadubi* woman of Oenpelli—upturned legs, enlarged vulva and barbed spines projecting from the breasts. In the light of our present knowledge, there is no way of accounting for these remarkable parallels.

96. These become temporarily larger when the *Nabarakbia* blow upon them; cf. note 84.

97. Map, Fig. 10.



PLATE 57. Cave paintings of spirit people, Oenpelli
 A Namarakain B Nabarakbia C Matjiba D Adungun

Adungun

Adungun was a *Mamandi* who, at one time, travelled over the country killing and eating the aborigines, later regurgitating them. One day the aborigines chased *Adungun* and speared him so many times that his stomach dropped out and he died.

This unusual and rather remarkable cave painting, in red, Pl. 57D, was found on an exposed face of rock at Unbalanja (site 5, Fig. 11A). The leading figure is *Adungun*, his stomach full of aborigines whom he had caught and eaten. He has a honey bag round his neck, spears in one hand, and a spear-thrower in the other. *Adungun* is pursued by an aboriginal who has cast a spear at him, (upper left) but missed. This painting was considered to be the work of the *Mimi* spirit people.*

Plate 59D is a bark painting of two *Adungun* who live in anthills and eat aborigines.

The Man, Boubit-boubit

In the early days of the world the wild-honey man, *Boubit-boubit*, and his family ate nothing but the honey from the hives of wild bees.

One day *Boubit-boubit*, when out searching for food, located a nest of wild bees in the hollow limb of a tree growing on the edge of the waterhole, Gudjamandi, near the source of the East Alligator River. With his stone tomahawk *Boubit-boubit* cut a hole in the limb about half way along its length and took out much honey and bee bread, part of which he ate and part of which he put on the ground beside him. He found, however, that the hive extended still further down the hollow tree, so he cut another hole closer to the ground and tried to extract more of the honey.

Unknown to *Boubit-boubit*, the tree belonged to *Ngaloit*, the rainbow-serpent of Gudjamandi (p. 210). When *Ngaloit* heard the buzzing of the bees, telling him that someone was interfering with his property, he became so angry that he went into the sky and, creating heavy rain, drowned both *Boubit-boubit* and his family. They now live in the bottom of the waterhole at Gudjamandi.

According to the present-day myth, there are two trees at the bottom of the waterhole, one covered with blossoms, the other old, dry and full of hives of wild bees. The wild-honey men, *Boubit-boubit*, collect the honey from the hives, store it in cabbage-palm baskets and honey bags⁹⁸ which they hang on the dry tree.

On a particular night, about the time when the first rains of the wet season are due, the spirit of an aboriginal medicine-man⁹⁹ will leave his sleeping body and travel to Gudjamandi. To protect himself from the attacks of the honey men, *Boubit-boubit*, and to appease the rainbow-serpent, *Ngaloit*, the spirit of

*Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XIII.

98. A basket so tightly woven that it will hold honey.

99. There are numerous records of the belief that the spirit leaves the body when asleep, Elkin (1945), p. 142, Mountford (1948), p. 42.

the medicine-man is armed with powerful chants.¹ As his spirit nears the place, two of the honey men, *Boubit-boubit*, whose duty it is to guard the waterhole from intruders, try to stop him. But the medicine-man's spirit, confident that the chants will protect it, continues on its mission. At Gudjamandi the spirit of the medicine-man goes to the bottom of the waterhole, takes the honey containers from the dry tree and, coming to the surface, throws them towards the various aboriginal localities, naming each of them in turn: 'Let there be much honey at Unbalanja; let there be much honey at Nimbawah', and so on.

The honey people, *Boubit-boubit*, become particularly aggressive over the theft of the honey which they collect for themselves. But the medicine-man, still chanting, and unafraid, continues to cast the honey baskets toward the different camps of aborigines so that they will have plenty of honey during the coming year. He performs this duty annually.

There are five different kinds of honey on the trees at the bottom of the waterhole at Gudjamandi (for description, see bark painting, Pl. 58A).

Plate 58C shows *Boubit-boubit*, his hand shielding his eyes from the sun, searching for the hives of wild bees. A line of bees (as dots) issues from the hive in a hollow limb near by. The two short transverse lines across the trunk of the tree mark the places where *Boubit-boubit* cut the holes to extract the honey. On the left of him is his stone axe. The cone-shaped figure on the right is the heap of honey, wax, and bee bread which *Boubit-boubit* placed on the ground.

Plate 58D is a diagrammatic painting of a hive of wild bees. The transverse lines at *a*, *b* and *c* symbolize the beeswax. The two upper rectangles are masses of honeycomb, and those below, bee bread (young bees and eggs). This bee bread is an aboriginal food.

Plate 58A pictures a sub-incised honey-man, *Boubit-boubit*, on the right, and the five different kinds of wild honey which the medicine-man takes from the trees at the bottom of the Gudjamandi waterhole.

Reading from the left, the names of the various kinds of honey are:

(i) *Gubulak*, black, like treacle, and not very good to eat. It is found only in trees.

(ii) *Nabiwa*, also black like treacle, and 'hot',² particularly at the end of the dry season. It becomes much milder when the monsoonal rains begin to fall. *Nabiwa* is found in many places, in the ground, in termite mounds, in rock crevices, as well as in trees.

(iii) *Boubit*, found only in trees. It is a clear honey, similar to that belonging to the white man, and excellent food.

1. Only the spirits of medicine-men may go near the waterhole at Gudjamandi, and even they, only when armed with powerful songs and magic. If they went without such protection, *Ngaloit*, the rainbow-serpent, would become annoyed and create storms so heavy that they would flood the country and drown the inhabitants.

2. The myth of *Duwuliana* of Arnhem Bay, p. 439, accounts for the cause of 'hot' honey.

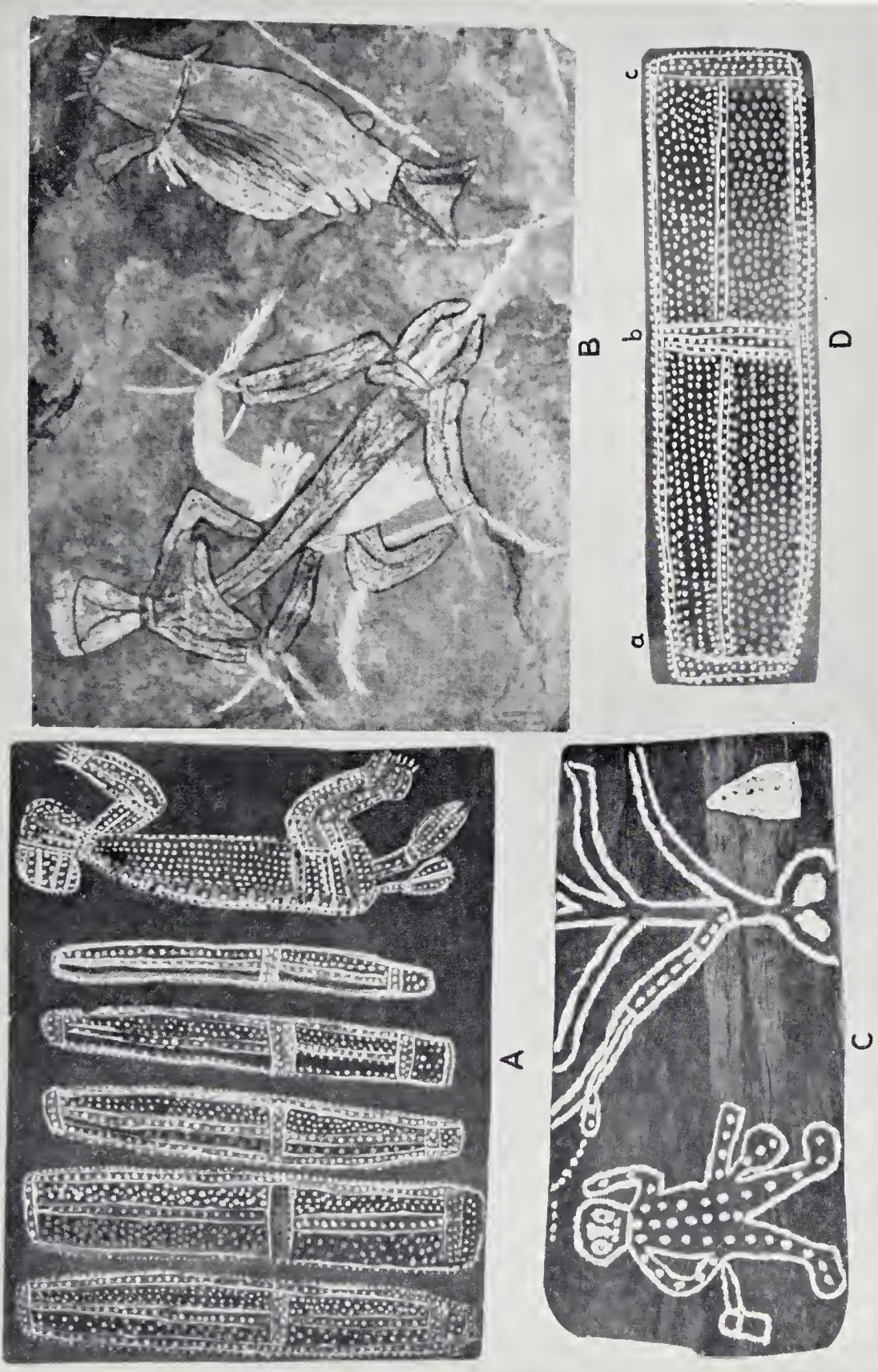


PLATE 58. Bark paintings, Oenpelli
 A, C, D The honey-man, Boubit-boutbit B The Mamandi woman, Nadubi

(iv) *Laubun*, also found only in trees. It is darker in colour than *boubit*, but equally pleasant to eat.

(v) *Munjalb*, also found only in hollow trees, is light in colour and never 'hot'. Sometimes the aborigines find this honey in solid masses which resemble sugar candy. This 'candy' is a special delicacy.

The symbolism of the hives is the same as that on Pl. 58D.

The Man, Dalbudia

Dalbudia, a man of ordinary size, lives with his wife and children in the deep gloom of the clefts and the caves of the Arnhem Land plateau. Being a good hunter, and gifted with weapons, he is able to capture much game for both himself and his family. Ordinarily *Dalbudia* is a peaceful fellow, but should the aborigines enter the caves in which he lives, he will attack them with his club and batter them to death.

Plate 59A is an X-ray painting of *Dalbudia*. The artist explained that he cross-hatched the figure in red to give the idea of darkness.

The Lightning-man, Mamaragan

During the dry season *Mamaragan* spends most of his time at the bottom of a waterhole, called Ugulumu, not far from Nimbawah.³ Occasionally, however, he leaves his watery home and hunts for food among the cabbage-palms of the jungles surrounding Ugulumu.

Although the tops of these cabbage palms are edible, no aboriginal would even touch their trunks. If he did, *Mamaragan* would kill him with lightning. Further, should any aboriginal be so foolish as to throw a stone in the waterhole, an even greater misfortune would happen, for *Mamaragan* would rise up in the sky and create such heavy thunderstorms that everyone would be drowned.

During the wet season the lightning-man leaves his home at Ugulumu and travels from place to place on the top of the thunder-clouds. At this time he often becomes angry, roars with a loud voice (thunder) and, striking downward with the stone axes which grow on his hands and knees, shatters the trees, frightens the *Mimi* people, and sometimes kills the aborigines.

Plate 59B is the lightning-man, *Mamaragan*, with the stone axes in his hands and on his knees.⁴ The lightning is represented as a band between the hands and the feet. *Mamaragan* is shown with a sub-incised penis.

Plate 59C is another bark painting of the lightning-man, *Mamaragan*. His body is almost surrounded by the lightning symbol.

3. Map, Fig. 10.

4. It is of some interest to remember that the first stone axes found in Europe were thought to be thunderbolts. Putman (1948), p. 338, referring to the African pygmies of the Ituri forests and their beliefs in lightning, said: 'From time to time, the negroes and the pygmies find neolithic axes which they say are the "turds" of lightning, i.e., excreta dropped (by the lightning) in the process of a storm; when lightning splits a tree, one of these "turds" is always left behind.' *Bumawali*, the lightning-woman of the Melville Islanders, also carries stone axes with which she strikes the ground. Mountford (1955), p. 129.



PLATE 59. Bark paintings, Oenpelli
 A The man, Dalbudia B, C The lightning-man, Mamaragan
 D The men, Adungun E The woman, Wilintji

The Lightning-man, Wala-undajua

During the dry season the lightning-man, *Wala-undajua*, sleeps in a large fresh-water pool, Nandjajuba, on the Liverpool River. As the wet season develops he wakes up, leaves his waterhole and travels across the sky in the thunderstorms. With one of his long arms, which are the lightning flashes, he strikes the earth beneath him, splitting the trees and setting the grass on fire. His voice is the thunder.

Plate 60A is the lightning-man, *Wala-undajua*, lying across the sky. His head is in the upper right and his genitals, much enlarged, in the lower left. The meandering lines attached to the body of the thunder-man are his arms, with which he strikes the trees and the earth. The cross-hatched background indicates clouds, and the circles with radiating lines, stars showing through the clouds after the storm has passed.

The Woman, Wilintji

During mythical times, there lived a woman called *Wilintji*, who made her camp at Babanara, on the Liverpool River (map, Fig. 1). She was always dancing,⁵ even when she moved from one locality to another in search of food. *Wilintji* had an intense dislike of men and gained much pleasure by catching and killing them. She first broke their ribs and backbone with a large stone, then struck them across the nose with a piece of wood until they died. Finally the men of the tribe, alarmed by the number of their companions whom *Wilintji* had killed, surrounded her camp and speared her to death.

She is now one of the harmless *Mimi* people who live at Babanara, on the Liverpool River. Her only food is the nuts of one of the jungle trees.

On Pl. 59E is the woman *Wilintji*. The circular design on the left is the stone with which she crushed the bones of her victims, and that on the right, the pear-shaped piece of wood with which she struck them across the nose.

(c) MYTHICAL SERPENTS

Most of the mythical serpents in the Oenpelli area, under different names, spend the dry season in deep waterholes and the period of the monsoonal rains in the thunder-clouds. The aborigines are somewhat afraid of these mythical creatures, for should anyone interfere with their earthly home the serpents, particularly *Ngaloit* (myth, p. 212) will make their waterholes overflow and drown everyone. The rainbow-serpent woman, *Narama* (myth, p. 212) of the Liverpool River area destroys all aborigines who approach her home. The rainbow in the sky is supposed to be the body of a rainbow-serpent.

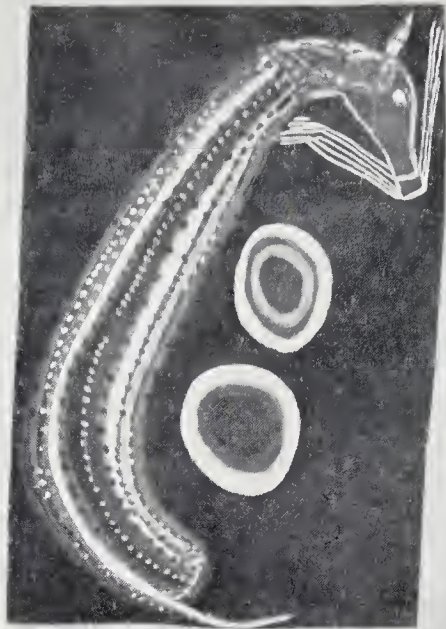
The Rainbow-serpent, Ngaloit

This rainbow-serpent, *Ngaloit*, which is associated with the rain-making ceremony described on p. 218, now lives at the bottom of a waterhole at Fish

5. The *Alknarinja* women of Central Australia were always dancing. They, like the woman *Wilintji*, had a strong dislike of men. Mountford (1942), field notes.



A



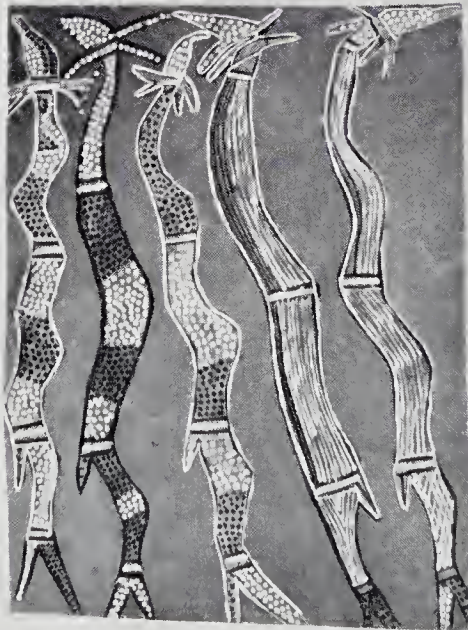
B



C



D



E

PLATE 60. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The lightning-man, Wala-undajua
C Rainbow-serpent, unidentified

B The rainbow-serpent, Ngaloit
D, E The rainbow-serpent, Narama

Creek, some fifteen miles north-east of Oenpelli.⁶ *Ngaloit* is highly coloured, has a luxuriant growth of whiskers, and long teeth. Should the children bathe in his waterhole, *Ngaloit* will release small snakes which, entering the navels of the children, cause their death.

Ngaloit made the East Alligator River as he moved from the sea to his present waterhole. He lives there only during the dry season, for when the wet season develops *Ngaloit*, like all rainbow-serpents, goes into the sky in the form of a rainbow.

Plate 60B is the rainbow-serpent, *Ngaloit*.⁷ The circles on the right refer to spherical stones belonging to the totemic place.

Rainbow-serpent

Plate 60C is a cave painting at Unbalanja, near site 2, Fig. 11A, of a serpent-like creature, in all probability the rainbow-serpent, because it has a beard, and a mane. I could not obtain an explanation for either the human figures at the head of the creature or those along its back.

The Rainbow-serpent Woman, Narama

A female rainbow-serpent,⁸ *Narama*, and her sons live among the rocks in the sea at the mouth of the Liverpool River. She is highly coloured, has large ears and a beard. *Narama* has such a strong dislike of strange aborigines that should one of them approach her home she 'bites' his spirit, and he dies. When the serpent, *Narama*, becomes annoyed she first makes a snuffling noise, then rises into the sky in the form of a rainbow. *Narama* also creates clouds and rain.

The Liverpool River aborigines made two paintings of their female rainbow-serpent.

Plate 60D shows *Narama* and her sons in the sky. The female snake, with her long ears and projecting tongue, stretches from the lower right-hand corner of the painting to the upper left. The other serpents form the diamond-shaped patterns. The cross-hatched background represents rain clouds.

Plate 60E shows *Narama*, second from the left, and her four sons. The artist has indicated their many colours, long ears and manes, but not their beards.

The Emu, Gurugadji

One day during creation times two aborigines were hunting at Kabawudnar, near Malay Bay,⁹ when they saw an emu which, unknown to them, was the mythical emu-man, *Gurugadji*. Creeping up, they rushed at *Gurugadji*, one man holding him by the neck and the other by the head. But the emu-man escaped, jumped into a waterhole and, transforming himself into a rainbow-serpent, swallowed the two hunters. This serpent, the transformed emu-man, who appears

6. Map, Fig. 10.

7. *Ngaloit* resembles the mythical serpent, *Numereji*. Spencer (1928), p. 781.

8. A female rainbow-serpent is unusual in aboriginal mythology.

9. Map, Fig. 10.

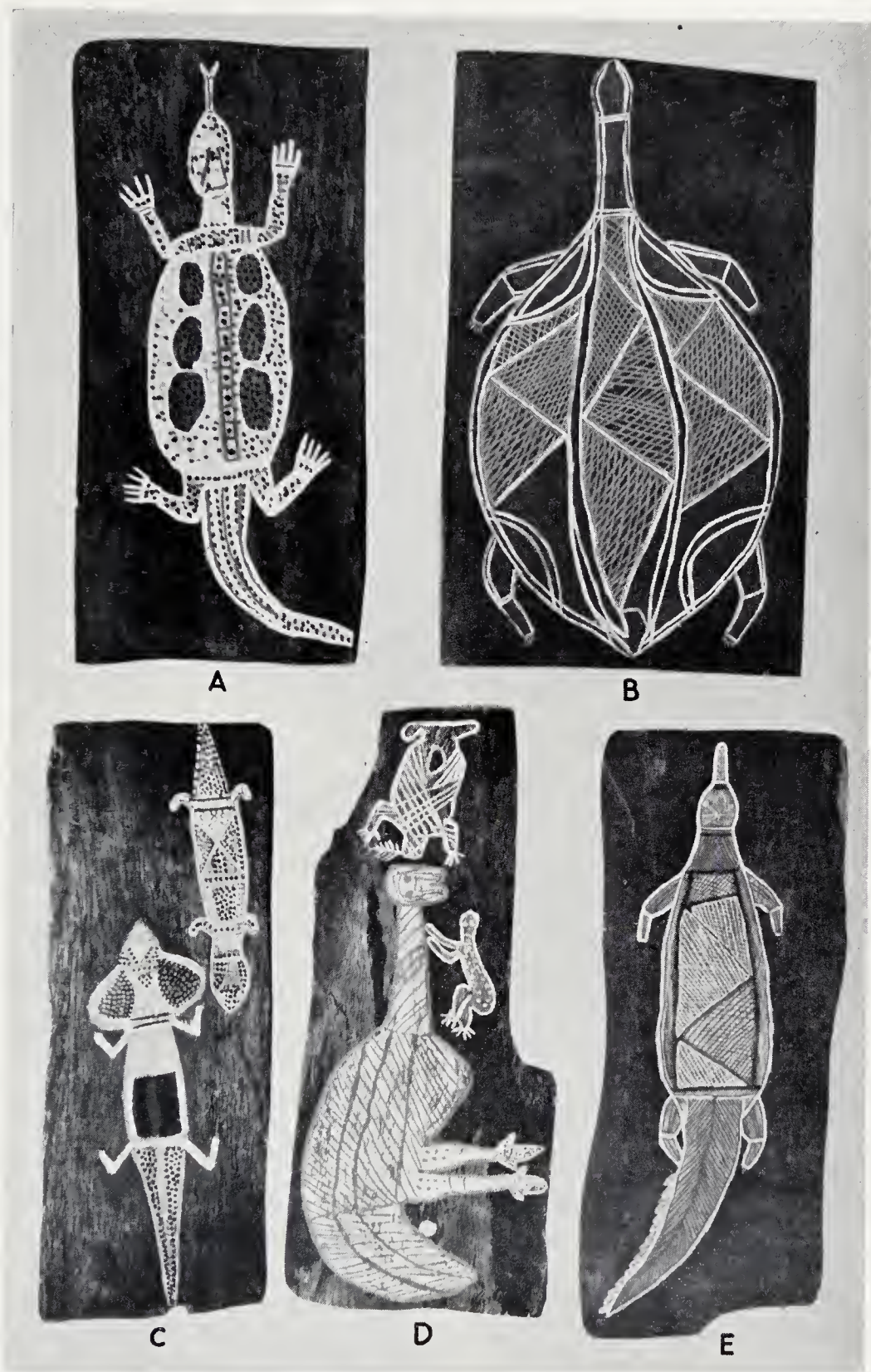


PLATE 61. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

- | | | | |
|---|--|---|--------------------------|
| A | The goanna | B | The fresh-water tortoise |
| C | The blue-tongued lizard, Tjangura, and the gecko, Naraba | D | The emu, Gurugadji |
| D | The emu, Gurugadji | E | The crocodile, Gumangan |

in the sky in the form of a rainbow, is feared by the native people because, they believe, he can swallow them as he did the two hunters.

In Pl. 61D the two men are shown holding on to the mythical emu-man, one to his neck and one to his head.

The Water-snake, Aniau-tjunu

The snake, *aniau-tjunu*, with his wife and children, came from the Matjili lagoon, to the west of the East Alligator River, and travelling southward, reached Obiri, a series of tor-like rocks about ten miles south-west of Oenpelli.¹⁰ *Aniau-tjunu* decided that Obiri would be a good place to remain for ever. So he painted his image (Pl. 62B) on the walls of a cliff, after which he and his family went inside through a rock crevice, which opens wide enough during the night to allow the family to go out food-gathering. Before daylight comes the family return to their home and the rocks close up again.

This painting is an increase centre for water-snakes, a favourite aboriginal food. When the aborigines want to increase the supply of water-snakes in the lagoons they choose the correct season, and standing before the painting, beat it lightly with a bough to hunt out the spirits of the water-snake, directing them meanwhile to go to the various waterholes and there become large water-snakes.¹¹ By means of this simple magical formula the aborigines believe that there will be an adequate food supply.

My informants were definite that the design was painted by the snake, *aniau-tjuna*, and that it has never been retouched by human beings. It is unlikely, however, that the aborigines have not retouched the painting at one time or another.

This cave painting, Pl. 62B, of the snake, *aniau-tjuna*, is about six feet long and painted in yellow with a red outline on a vertical face of rock at Obiri. The aboriginal is holding a branch in his right hand, with which he has beaten the painting to hunt the spirits of the water-snake, *aniau-tjuna*, into the lagoons.

(2) HUMAN BEINGS

The Man, Biwit

In the rocky country south of Oenpelli there once lived a mythical man called *Biwit* who was expert in killing crocodiles. One day when he was out hunting he saw many crocodiles, which he killed one by one. After that incident he transformed himself into an unidentified creature whose totemic place is a lagoon at the base of the Arnhem Land plateau, not far from Oenpelli. There is a painting of *Biwit*, in white, on the walls of a cave near that lagoon.¹²

10. Map, Fig. 10.

11. This ritual is similar to that of other increase centres in the Oenpelli area, such as those of the gar-fish at Unbalanja (p. 254) and the water-lily bulbs at Inagurdurwil. Pl. 62A, D, represents the roots of the lily and the bulbs respectively.

12. It is probable that this painting, like those at the increase centres of the gar-fish (Pl. 82E, F), snake (Pl. 62B) and others, is an increase centre for the unidentified creature into which *Biwit* transformed himself.



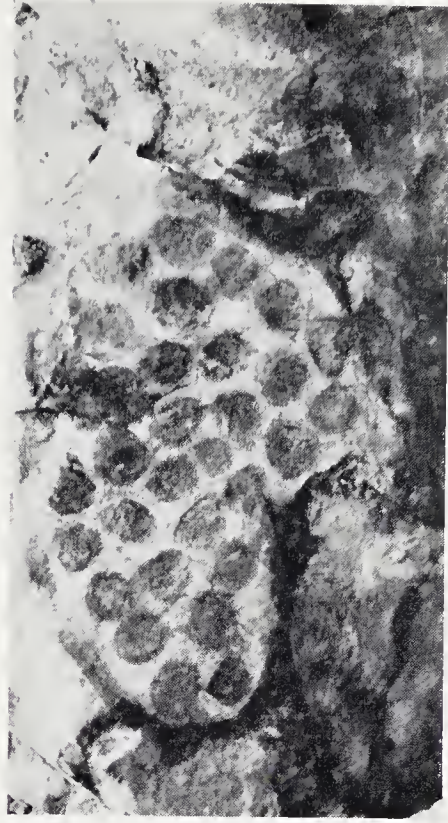
A



B



C



D

PLATE 62. Increase centres, Oenpelli area
 A, D The lotus lily, Inagudurwil B The snake, Obiri C The echidna

Plate 63D shows *Biwit* and the crocodiles he speared. The figure on the right is the cave painting of *Biwit*.

The Woman, Adurimja, and her Children

A mythical woman, *Adurimja*, whose camp was near the head of the King River,¹³ spent all her time collecting and cooking bulbs for her numerous children. At the end of the creation period the whole family went into a deep waterhole near by and stayed there.

On the left of Pl. 63C is *Adurimja*, her baskets filled with water-lily bulbs. Near by are her children eating the bulbs she had cooked. These are outlined in white. The woman, upside down, with a dish on her head, is probably *Adurimja*.

The Mopoke-men

These mythical men, later transformed into night-birds, the mopokes (*Ninox boobook*), were quiet people, who ate only the leaves of the cabbage-palm (*Livistoua benthamii*). Some of the songs of the mopoke-men were chanted at the *ubara* (log drum) ceremony we witnessed at Oenpelli.

Plate 63A shows the two mopoke-men wearing feather head-dresses.

The Crocodile-man, Gumangan, and the Plover, Birik-birik

In the days when the world was young a crocodile-man, *Gumangan*, and a plover-man, *Birik-birik*, possessed a pair of sticks which, when rubbed together, produced fire. They were the only sticks of their kind in the world.

Gumangan and *Birik-birik* always travelled together, and it was the crocodile-man who did most of the work, because *Birik-birik* was a lazy fellow. One morning, as the crocodile-man was leaving camp to hunt, he asked *Birik-birik* to light the fire, so that on his return he could cook the food he caught. But when hours later *Gumangan* returned, carrying a large kangaroo, he found *Birik-birik* asleep and there was no fire. Thoroughly annoyed with his companion, he lost his temper, abused him for his laziness and, snatching the fire-sticks from the ground, ran toward the river, intending to dip them in the water and so extinguish fire for ever.

But *Birik-birik*, acting quickly, tore the firesticks from him and ran into the hills. From that day the crocodile has always lived on or near water and the plover in the hills.

So the aborigines look with favour on *Birik-birik*, the plover, because he saved fire for mankind. Had he not done so the aborigines, like some of the spirit people, would have had only raw food to eat.

Plate 63B shows the plover-man, *Birik-birik*, taking the firestick from under the arm of the crocodile, *Gumangan*. The body of the crocodile is in plan and the tail in side elevation, so that the crest can be seen. The backbone of the reptile is indicated.

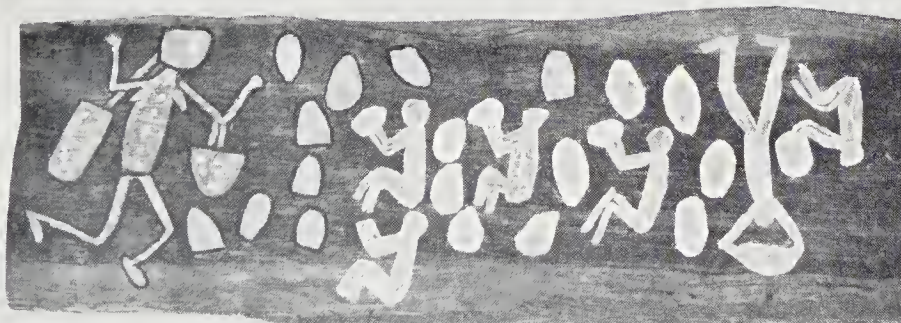
13. Map, Fig. 10.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 63. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The mopoke-men

B The crocodile-man, Gumangan, and the plover, Birik-birik

C The woman, Adurimja

D The man, Biwit

The Kangaroo, the Rainbow-serpent and the Rain-making Ceremony

At one time a mythical man, *Liumarara*, decided to create rain. He made a rain-pole, called *munbura-wara*, and covered it with human blood, on which he stuck lines of red and white bird-down. Placing the stick in the ground and seating himself in front of it (Pl. 64C), *Liumarara* chanted two songs.

The first time he chanted the song, *walouna lonalau jaua-jaua*, the spirit of the red and white lines of the *munbura-wara* went into the ground. When the chanting was repeated the spirit of the rain-pole itself went into the ground and became a mythical female kangaroo, which had the power to make clouds and rain.

The second song, *waia waiajapa waiajapa*, caused the female kangaroo to urinate over wide areas of the countryside. This was the rain. At the same time the kangaroo-woman ordered the rainbow-serpent, *Ngaloit*, to leave his water-hole at Gudjamandi and span the sky as a rainbow. *Ngaloit*,¹⁴ who is many hundreds of yards in length, is feared by the aborigines because they believe he can, if he so desires, eat a number of them at one meal.

While we were at Oenpelli the aborigines made a demonstration rain-pole, *munbura-wara*, in the same manner as did the mythical man *Liumarara*. They refused, however, to chant the rain songs until the rain-pole was heavily wrapped in paper-bark and taken so far away it could not hear the songs. My informants explained that should the spirit of the *munbura-wara* enter the ground at the wrong time of the year, *Ngaloit* would be so annoyed, and the rain so heavy, that everyone, even the members of the expedition party, would be drowned.

Plate 64A illustrates the mythical female kangaroo urinating to make the clouds and the rain. She is wearing a head-dress of a single white feather.

Plate 64B is the rainbow-serpent, *Ngaloit*. The appendage from his lower jaw is a long beard, and the one from behind his ears, a head ornament decorated with feathers.

Plate 64C is the rain-pole, *munbura-wara*. It is placed in this position when the songs are chanted to it.

Balmuknuk

For the myth of *Balmuknuk* see p. 458.

Plate 64D illustrates the myth of *Balmuknuk*. On the left is the emu, *guru-gadji*, who later entered the earth and became a rainbow-serpent; notice the alimentary canal, heart and lungs; *balmuknuk*, the dog, is shown below. *Balmuknuk* the man, is beating the drum with the beater, *labait*.

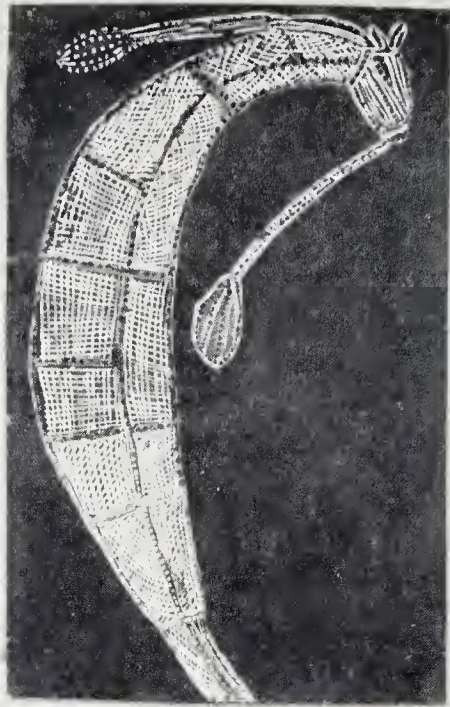
Men Dancing at a Ceremony

Plate 64E pictures two men taking part in a ceremony. Their bodies are covered with dots of white paint and their heads decorated with tall, feather-covered helmets.

14. *Ngaloit* possesses all the characteristics of the rainbow-serpent of Central Australia (Mountford, 1948, p. 136). He has a mane (or head-dress), a beard, is associated with (or is) the rainbow, is highly coloured and is dangerous to human beings, particularly strangers.



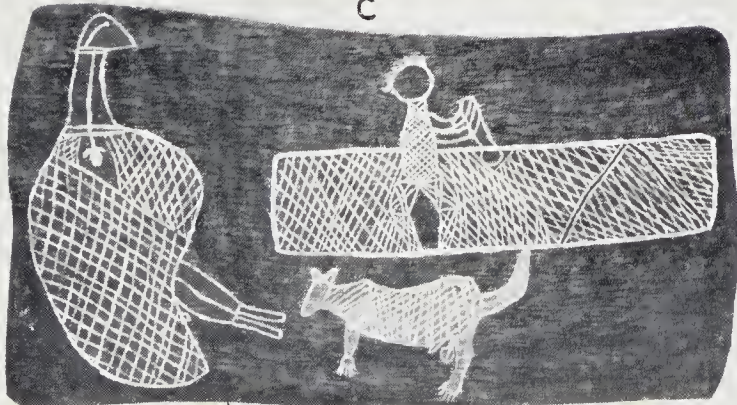
A



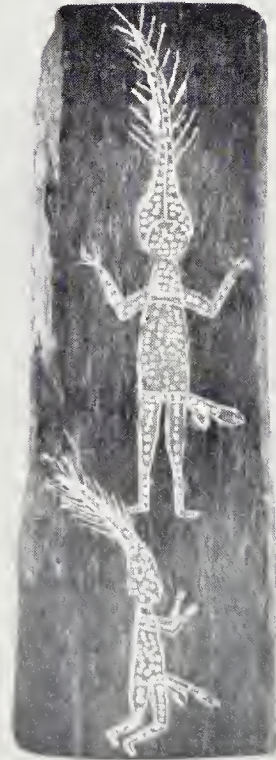
B



C



D



E

PLATE 61. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The kangaroo-woman, the rain-maker

B The rainbow-serpent, Ngaloit

C Singing to the rain-pole

D The man, Balnuknuk

E Men dancing at a ceremony

The Starving Children, Mamalait

At one time a family consisting of a father, mother, and a number of young children of both sexes lived at Mambadiri, not far from Gudjamandi, the home of the rainbow-serpent, *Ngaloit*. Both the father and mother died, leaving their children to the care of a man called *Wirili-up*, who shirked the responsibility thrust upon him. Although he did make a half-hearted attempt to feed the children by cracking a few edible nuts, the amount he gave them was so small that the children were always hungry and continuously cried for more. This crying so annoyed the rainbow-serpent, *Ngaloit*, that he rose up from the bottom of his waterhole and flooded the whole of the countryside.

When the man saw what was happening, he ran to the rocky plateau and escaped, but the children, even though they climbed up the trunk of a tall tree, were finally drowned. Now the tree and the children are under the water at Gudjamandi, a place which everyone is afraid to go near. If they do, *Ngaloit* will attack their spirits and make them ill.

In Plate 65A is painted the story of *Wirili-up* and the starving children, *Mamalait*. On the lower left-hand corner, in white, is *Wirili-up* cracking nuts and giving them to one of the children. The children climbing the tree to escape the rising water form the main subject of the painting.

The Myths of Nimbawah

Three myths are associated with Nimbawah.¹⁵ They are:

- (i) The man, *Nimbawah*;
- (ii) The kangaroo-man, *Kurabara*, and the dog-man, *Buruk*;
- (iii) The kangaroo-man, *Kandarik*.

(i) *The man, Nimbawah*. This myth refers to the time when the topography, the creatures and the plants of the world were being created by one or another of the ancestors. One of the creators, a man called *Nimbawah*, accompanied by his two dogs, *gungarik*, travelled to a large swamp and the waterhole, Gudjamandi, near which they camped for the night. Next morning they set out again, going northward until toward evening, when they reached a place in the hilly country, called Maduluk.

Leaving his two dogs at Maduluk, *Nimbawah* continued his journey but became so confused among the many hills and trees that he lost himself. After much thought, he cut a path through the undergrowth until he came to another lagoon, Gunjudruk, on whose shore, unknown to *Nimbawah*, lived a mythical man, *Diundu*, his wife, *Glara-manduik*, and their many children.

Seeing a pigeon-hawk sitting on a tree, *Nimbawah* started to talk to him. In the course of conversation *Nimbawah* told the hawk that he was tired of being a man and, as the water looked cool and pleasant, he had decided to change himself into a barramundi (a giant perch, *Scleropages* sp.) and, when necessary, into a rainbow-man.

15. Map, Fig. 10.

Just as *Nimbawah* had transformed himself into a barramundi, *Glaramunduik* came along, and seeing a large fish lying on the top of the water, threw her digging stick at it, but missed. The barramundi, *nimbawah*, swam away for a short distance and, while still resting on the surface, caused the water in the lagoon to increase greatly. The woman, not suspecting that anything was wrong, made a second unsuccessful attempt to kill the fish. By that time, unbeknown to her, the water was overflowing the banks of the Gunjudruk lagoon. But *Glaramunduik*, still intent on the capture of so large a fish, made the third attempt to kill it. *Nimbawah* created so much water that the woman was forced to swim. Turning himself into a rainbow-man, he pulled her under the water, then, coming to the bank, put her on his shoulder and ran away with her. Later *Nimbawah* transformed himself into a large pillar of rock, now called *Nimbawah*, and the woman, *Glaramunduik*, into a boulder which juts out from the side.

The children of the woman, seeing the flood coming toward them, tried to keep it back with stones. But the water overwhelmed them just as their father, *Diundu*, returned from the hunt, carrying many goannas. *Diundu*, who was a noted magician, took his stone axe and set out to kill the man *Nimbawah*. But he was too late, for *Nimbawah* had already transformed himself and *Glaramunduik* into the pillars of rock at the hill *Nimbawah* of the present day. In desperation *Diundu* endeavoured to decapitate *Nimbawah* with his stone axe, but the rock was too hard. He then tried to cut *Nimbawah's* throat, but again was unsuccessful because his stone axe broke into many pieces. Disgusted at his failure, *Diundu* changed himself into another pillar of rock, east of *Nimbawah*, but the children, who were drowned in the flood, are nowhere to be seen.

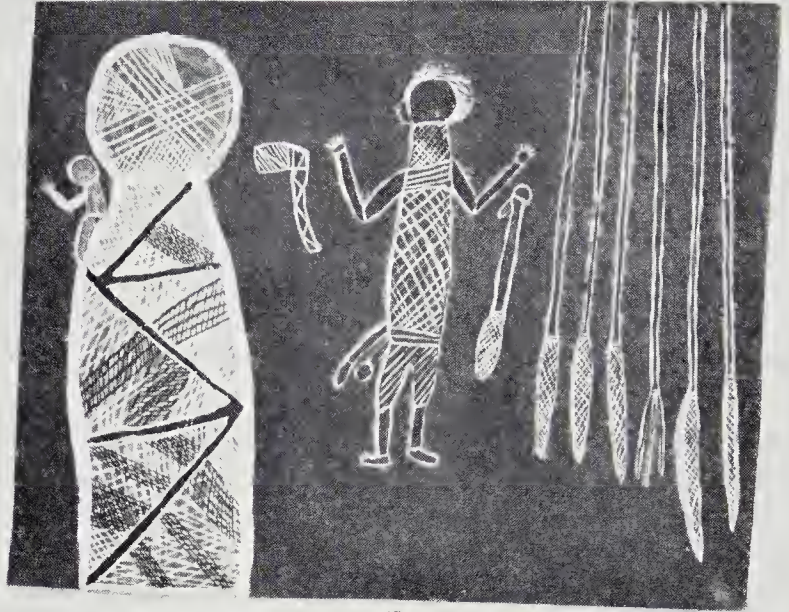
Plate 65B deals with the legend of *Nimbawah*. On the left is the tall rock of *Nimbawah*, with a constriction near the top where *Diundu* tried to cut off the head of the ancestral man. On the top upper left is the woman, *Glaramunduik*, a large boulder projecting from the main mass. The human figure is *Diundu* who, with his stone axe (shown on left) tried to decapitate *Nimbawah*. To the right is a spear-thrower and six spears; the central multi-pronged one is used for spearing fish.

(ii) *The kangaroo-man, Kurabara, and the dog-man, Buruk*. The kangaroo-man, *Kurabara*, and the dog-man, *Buruk*, once camped at Cape Don, on the Cobourg Peninsula. After a while they decided to go on a journey to see some of the country.

As there was much water in the lagoons, the men had no difficulty in spearing enough fish for food. After walking for many days the two companions reached Tor Rock, a high pillar of stone rising precipitously from the level country (myth, p. 227). *Kurabara* and *Buruk*, impressed with the magnitude and beauty of the place, spent some time wandering round its base and looking up at its lofty precipices. One day *Buruk* found a cave in which there were many paintings



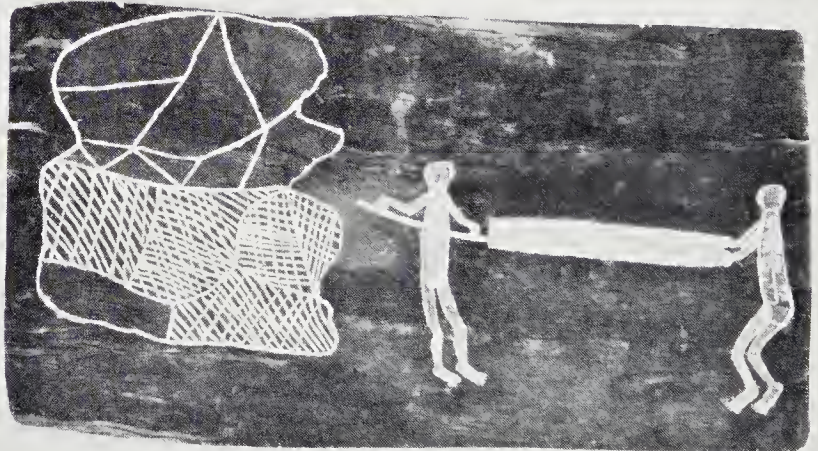
A



B



C



D

PLATE 65. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The starving children, Mamalait
 C The woman, Malintji

B The man, Nimbawah
 D The snake-man, Jirbaik-baik

of animals, fish and human beings. He examined them closely, then called out to the kangaroo-man to have a look at them.

After looking at them for a while, *Kurabara* suggested to his companion that they should try and paint each other. *Buruk* agreed, but for the time being did nothing about the matter.

That night they camped at a hill called Idit and next morning found more cave paintings, this time of emus. Again both admired the paintings, but again deferred doing any themselves. So *Kurabara* and *Buruk* wandered over the countryside, camping sometimes at a waterhole to catch fish, sometimes among the hills, spearing wallabies. Some weeks later they found a place not far from Nimbawah where the surroundings were so pleasant and the game so numerous that the two mythical men decided to make it their permanent camp. When sitting round their fire talking about the cave paintings they had seen at Tor Rock and Idit, the dog-man suggested to his companion that he should make a painting of him on a nearby rock surface.

'I'll lie on the ground,' said *Buruk*, 'so that you can see me properly, but don't trouble about putting in my insides; just paint me as I look from the outside.'

When the kangaroo-man had finished the painting, *Buruk* was so pleased with the result that he offered, in return, to make a painting of the kangaroo-man. To this his friend was agreeable but asked that *Buruk* should not only make a picture of his external form, but should add his heart, lungs and windpipe. When the two friends found that they had painted a dog and a kangaroo, instead of two men, they transformed themselves into those animals.¹⁶ For a time the two animals stayed at Nimbawah. Later they shifted their camp to a cave in an adjacent rocky hill, where they changed themselves into the two paintings¹⁷ they had made previously.

Plate 66A is a simple painting that illustrates the mythical story. To the right is the kangaroo, *Kurabara*, with the lungs, windpipe and heart included in the painting. Except that the painting of the dog, *Buruk*, does not show any internal organs it does not vary greatly in appearance from that of the kangaroo, except in the position of the genitals.

(iii) *The kangaroo-man, Kandarik*. In creation time the kangaroo-man, *Kandarik*,¹⁸ lived at Nimbawah (map, Fig. 10). One day he made a painting of himself, in white pigment, on the walls of a cave so that the people who lived after him would know how to do the same. He called the cave painting *dibabar*.

The kangaroo-man decided to perform a *ubara*¹⁹ ceremony, so he sent two

16. Because many cave paintings depict creatures lying on the ground, some writers have been led to assume that the primitive artists painted only dead creatures. This is not so. See Pl. 73B, 77C.

17. John Bray, the transport officer of the expedition, saw the totemic painting of the kangaroo in a cave at the base of a rocky hill near Nimbawah. It is a kangaroo increase centre.

18. *Kurabara* and *Kandarik* may be the same creature in two different myths.

19. *Ubara* is the secular name of a sacred log drum used by the aborigines in some parts of the north coast. Warner (1937), p. 313, mentions it, under the name of *uvar*, in the *ulmark* ceremonies, which have many features in common with the *ubara* ceremony. The sacred name of the drum at Oenpelli is *balnuknuk*.

kangaroo-women to invite everyone, except uninitiated youths, women and children to attend. Before the *ubara* ceremony was performed, however, *Kandarik* told the men that only the fully initiated should be allowed to see the log drum or to take part in its ceremony. Women or uninitiated youths should not even hear its sound, nor must its sacred name, *balnuknuk*, be mentioned in their presence.

The kangaroo-man then cleared a space before the cave in which he had painted his image and, making the drum, *ubara*, and the beater, *labait*, showed everyone how to perform the ceremony. Since then the *ubara* ceremony has always followed the pattern laid down by the kangaroo-man, even to the painting of his design on the rocks.²⁰ *Kandarik* also decreed that, should the *ubara* ceremony be performed in a place where there were no rocks on which the designs could be painted to instruct the initiates, sheets of bark called *balabor* should be used.²¹

The large white painting of the kangaroo, made by himself, can still be seen in that cave at Nimbawah. In the front is a level strip, practically clear of trees, which, according to the myth, had been cleared by the kangaroo-man, *Kandarik*, when he prepared the ground for the *ubara* ceremony.

Plate 67E, a well-executed bark painting, shows the kangaroo-man, *Kandarik*, wearing a small feather-like head-dress and holding in his fore-paws a beating stick which he used when teaching the aborigines how to perform the *ubara* ceremony. Two eyes are shown on one side of the head, as well as the heart, lungs, liver, stomach and backbone.*

The Woman, Malintji

This bark painting, Pl. 65C, illustrates a fragment of an extensive myth, with many songs and rituals, which belongs to the mythical woman *Malintji* and her husband, *Makaukau*, both of whom came from far to the east. While camping at an unidentified locality called Gumburia, *Makaukau* deserted his wife. The woman, *Malintji*, however, was able to gather an abundance of vegetable foods, such as yams, lily-roots, and fruit, but she could not catch the animals, and only the smallest of the fish.

Plate 65C deals with a long and involved series of chants telling of the magical ceremony by which *Malintji* made the first log coffin. One day, finding a hollow log lying on the ground, *Malintji* chanted a song over it until the opening became large enough to contain the bones of dead men. She then up-ended the log, placed grass inside, and chanted another song which had the power of transforming the grass into a human skeleton. Taking the log coffin in her arms, *Malintji* carried it to the plateau and placed it in a cave where rain

20. The myth of the dog-man, *Balnuknuk*, Pl. 64D, gives another explanation for the origin of the log drum.

21. Warner (1937), p. 318, describes how bark paintings are used in the *ulmark* ceremonies of the Murgin.

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, Pl. XXXII.

would not fall on it. She then decreed that ever afterwards the aborigines, on the completion of the burial rituals, would put the bones of their relatives in log coffins²² and store them in dry caves.

On the right, in Pl. 65C, is *Malintji*, with her carrying-basket on her arm. On the left she is 'singing' the log coffin to transform the grass into the bones of dead men. Within the coffin are two human figures and a carrying-basket. There was no explanation for the latter.

The Snake-man, Jirbaik-baik

At one time a mythical man, *Jirbaik-baik*, wishing to see the country, walked from Port Essington to Cooper Creek. He then made a permanent camp at Warabal, near Tor Rock (map, Fig. 10).

One day when out hunting he found a hollow tree which, he considered, would make a good wooden drone tube, or trumpet. As the tree was large and *Jirbaik-baik* possessed only a stone axe, he spent several days felling it and stripping the bark. Even then, it was some time before he was successful in cutting the hollow log to the correct length to blow properly. *Jirbaik-baik* found that after all this trouble he had misjudged the weight and that it was far too unwieldy to use in a ceremony. So he left it on the ground and travelled to the camp of a relative who had promised his daughter to him as a wife.

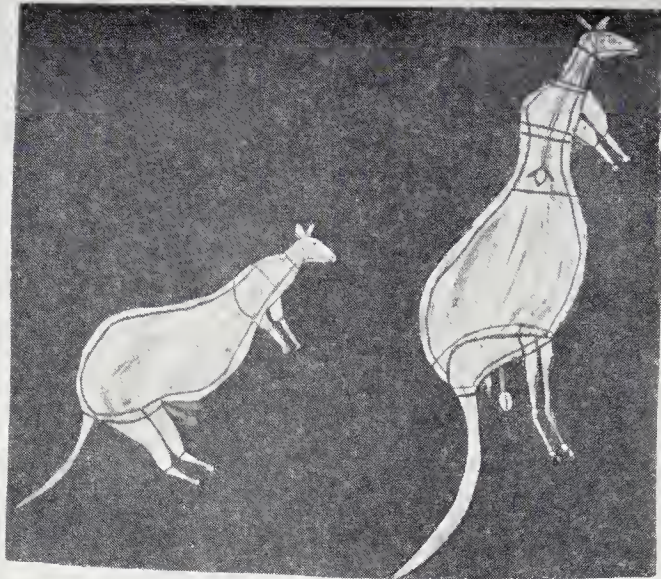
But when the girl saw that *Jirbaik-baik* had a barbed penis like that of *Muluwulji-kaitja* (Pl. 67C) she steadfastly refused to go to his camp. After unsuccessfully pleading with the daughter to honour their promise, *Jirbaik-baik* left the camp in anger. Determined to punish the girl, he returned to the wooden trumpet and around it, with his spear-thrower, made marks in the sand resembling the tracks of a snake. Then, blackening himself all over, *Jirbaik-baik* transformed himself into a snake, crawled into the log and waited.

On their way to collect water-lily bulbs the mother and daughter, seeing snake tracks on the ground, naturally concluded that it had gone into the hollow log. The young girl took a long stick to poke the reptile toward her mother, so that she could catch it at the other end, but although the mother could feel the tail of the snake, it kept on eluding her. Finally the mother took the stick from the daughter and started poking from her end of the log, whilst the girl endeavoured to take hold of the snake.

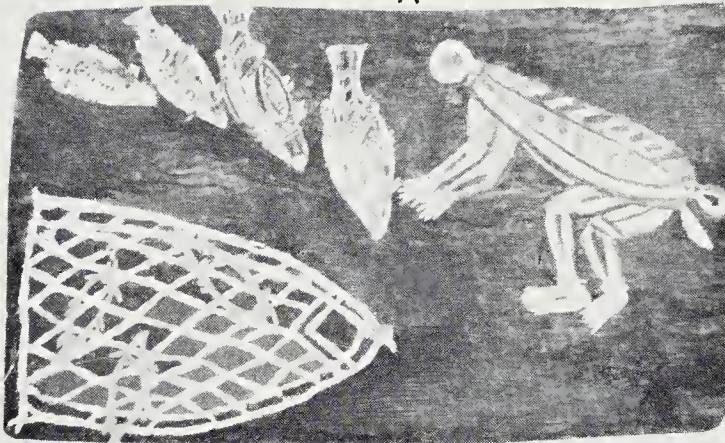
This was what *Jirbaik-baik* had planned. As soon as the girl's hand came within reach, he bit her and she died. Since then the snake, *jirbaik-baik*, has been shunned and feared by everyone.

On the right of Pl. 65D are the mother and daughter endeavouring to capture the snake, *jirbaik-baik*. The mother is on the left, with a stick, and the daughter on the right, with her hand in the log. The designs on the left picture a rocky hill at Warabal, in which there are many caves, once the camp of the man, *Jirbaik-baik*.

22. This myth probably belongs to the Liverpool River or Milingimbi area. Log coffins are not used at Oenpelli.



A



C



D



B



E

PLATE 66. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

- A The kangaroo-man, Kurabara, and the
dog-man, Buruk
D The jabiru-man, Tjagana, and the crow-man

- B The two women, Wi-in
C The man, Waraguk
E The Nadjibit women and their sons

The Two Women, Wi-in

During creation times the two women, *Wi-in*, travelled northward from their camp until they came to Cahill Crossing on the East Alligator River, south of Oenpelli (map, Fig. 10), where they decided to live. Each woman had a family of two children, a boy and a girl. Those belonging to the elder woman were called *Mandulari* and *Guramalunun*, and those of the younger, *Gurup* and *Inmaluka*.

The two women, having made a long line, went to a nearby lagoon to fish. Their first catch was a fish so large that it took the combined strength of both the women to land it. The next catch was so much larger that the women broke their new line trying to pull the fish to the bank. As the water was clear, the elder sister dived down, took hold of the broken end of the fishing line, and tried to surface their catch, but could not. The younger *Wi-in*, seeing that her sister was unable to do anything by herself, dived down to help, but even the combined efforts of the two women could not dislodge the fish.

While the *Wi-in* sisters were resting on the bottom of the waterhole after their exertions, the elder suggested that as it was so quiet and peaceful down there, they should change themselves into fish and make it their permanent home. However, before the *Wi-in* transformed themselves they returned to the surface, each telling her children that they must marry those of the other family and populate the world. At the same time the *Wi-in* sisters made the painting of themselves, as fish, on the walls of a cave so that, whenever the aborigines wanted to increase the supply of fish in the lagoons, they had only to strike the painting with a branch.²³ This would make the spirits of the *Wi-in* sisters leave the painting, enter the water and grow into fish.

The *Wi-in* sisters are shown on Pl. 66B, the elder on the left, sitting down, shielding the sun from her eyes. Above are her two children, *Mandulari* and *Guramalunun*. The younger sister is on the right. Her two children, *Gurup* and *Inmaluka*, are shown above her head.

Waraguk, Ilamilik and Mamuvalarin, and the Origin of Tor Rock

This series of bark paintings deals with the mythical origin of Tor Rock. During creation times a family, consisting of a woman, *Ilamilik*, her son, *Waraguk*, and her brother, *Mamuvalarin*, came out of the sea near Cape Don and, travelling in a southerly direction along the Cobourg Peninsula, created many swamps, watercourses, plains and rivers. *Waraguk*, accompanied by his dog, *Inamunmara*, captured the food for the family, bringing into camp many kangaroos, turtles, goannas and geese.

One day *Waraguk*, wanting some fish, constructed a net with four sticks and string made from the bark of a fig tree, and walking to the lagoon, Mankanalawia, east of Tor Rock, netted his first fish by diving under the water. At another

23. This is another example of an increase centre associated with a cave painting. The ritual is similar to that used at the snake increase centre of Obiri, p. 214.

swamp, near Cooper Creek, he caught many more. Returning to the camp of his mother and uncle, *Waraguk* built an oven by making a fire on which, when it was well alight, he placed large pieces of termite mound. This he covered first with paper-bark, then with green leaves, using them as a base on which to put the fish. *Waraguk* then completed the cooking oven by covering the fish with more green leaves, paper-bark, and finally sand.²⁴ While the food was cooking, *Waraguk* placed the liver and fat of the fish on another small fire. These, when cooked, he ate as titbits. At the end of the meal *Waraguk* transformed himself and his two relatives into the tall pillar known to the white man as Tor Rock and to the aboriginal as *Guruka*.

Before this event there were no rocks in Arnhem Land; it was just a level plain covered with trees. *Waraguk* decreed that Tor Rock, the transformed bodies of himself and his relatives, should be the source of all the rocks in Arnhem Land. Because of this decree the aborigines believe that the great boulders, and even the extensive and deeply eroded Arnhem Land plateau itself, all originated at Tor Rock.

In Pl. 66C is *Waraguk* with the net he made and the fish he caught. There are three fish within the net, painted in outline, and four fish above, showing the backbone and internal organs. *Waraguk* is on the right.²⁵

Plate 68A, E depicts the family at Tor Rock. On the left of E is the woman *Ilamilik*, *Waraguk's* mother, and on the right *Mamuralarin*, her brother. Pl. 68A shows *Waraguk*, wearing a band round his head and ornaments hanging from his elbows. He is sub-incised (see note 85). The figures of both *Ilamilik* and *Waraguk* resemble those of the well-known 'hocker' design of the Melanesians.²⁶

The Jabiru-man, Tjagana, and the Crow-man

In the early times the jabiru-man, *Tjagana*, had a camp at a lagoon called Aruwatara, about seven miles south of Oenpelli. The crow-man's camp was at Argaluk, a rocky tor about a mile south of Oenpelli (map, Fig. 10).

One day the jabiru-man, who had made a net of which he felt very proud, caught so many fish that he could not eat them all. So he sent an invitation to his friend the crow-man, at Argaluk, to share his meal. Although the crow-man, when he received the invitation, had just launched his canoe to collect goose eggs, he beached it again and set out at once for Aruwatara.

On his way the crow-man found a nest of green tree-ants and ate some of them, but one of them became entangled in his hair.

By the time the crow-man had reached Aruwatara the fish were cooked. So the jabiru-man passed one to the crow-man, who was just about to eat it when the host saw the green ant in the hair of his visitor.

24. This method is still used in the cooking of large fish.

25. Whether fortuitous or not, *Waraguk* bears more than a passing resemblance to the famous French cave painting of the Sorcerer at Trois Frères (Pl. 68C); Brown (1932), p. 167.

26. The 'hocker' figure has a wide distribution in the Oceanic area.



A



B



C



D



E

PLATE 67. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

- A The two brothers, Gumundili and Mamula
- C The man, Muluwultji-kaitja
- E The kangaroo-man, Kandarik

- B The woman, Akurindipa
- D The man, Malamuju-jalkjalk

'Stop,' said *Tjagana*. 'If you've been eating green ants, don't touch that fish. If you do, I'll never catch any more fish in my net.'

Not wishing to spoil the net of his friend, the crow-man threw the fish away, saying that he did not feel hungry; the meal of green ants had satisfied him.

The crow-man spent the night with his friend, returning to his camp at Agaluk next morning to gather goose eggs. When he had sufficient he returned to camp and buried them in the ashes of the camp fire, meanwhile sending a message to the jabiru-man asking him to come and share his meal.

Tjagana, pleased that his friend should invite him to a meal, especially after the unfortunate incident of the previous day, set out at once. On the way he found a hive of wild bees, which he cut out and put in his honey bag. A single bee, however, became entangled in his hair. The host had shelled most of the eggs by the time his guest arrived and was just passing one to his friend when he saw the wild bee crawling in his hair.

'Don't touch that food,' said the crow-man, 'for, if you do, I'll never find any more goose eggs. Wild bees always bring me bad luck when I am looking for eggs.'

'It doesn't matter. I've much wild honey which I found on my way here,' said the jabiru-man. 'That'll do me for a meal.' So, diluting the honey,²⁷ he drank it and returned to his own camp. Inadvertently, each of the friends had brought to the other's camp an insect which would bring bad luck when food-gathering.

Since that time the descendants of the two ancestors, the crow and the jabiru, though friendly, have nothing to do with each other. The jabiru lives on fish, the crow on the eggs of wild geese, when he can get them.

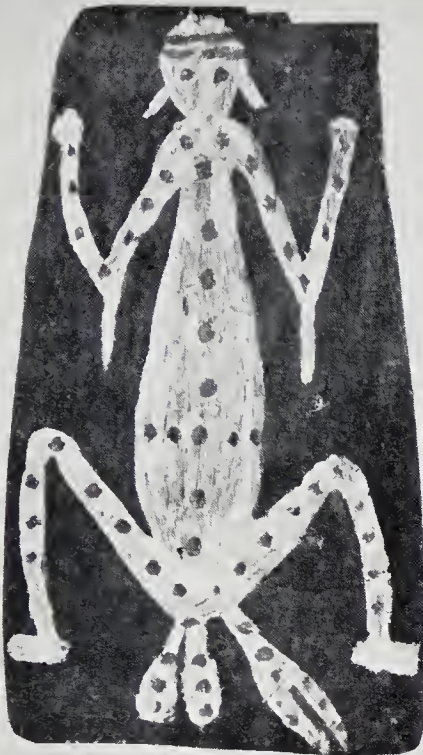
On the left of Pl. 66D is the jabiru-man. Near by is his stone axe, his spears, the fishing net of which he was so proud, and the fish he caught in it. In the centre are his honey bags. On the right is the crow-man. At the bottom is the canoe, and above it the goose eggs. To the right of the crow-man is a stone axe, and to the left his spears.

Nadjibit and their Sons

At one time the only fire in the world was owned by two women called *Nadjibit*, each of whom had a son named *Gumangan*. The two women, however, kept their secret from the men, cooking their water-lily bulbs when their sons were away hunting, concealing the fire in their vaginas when they heard the men returning. For a long time the women were able to keep their secret and every night they watched their sons eat their meat uncooked, but neither gave any sign of the secret that they possessed.

One evening when the two men were returning home they thought that they saw a strange glow in the camp. But when they reached there all they saw was the two mothers sitting quietly in their bark shelters. Suspicious that something strange was going on, the men went out next morning as usual, but sneaked

27. The aborigines claim that a drink of undiluted honey makes them ill. They always add water to it.



A



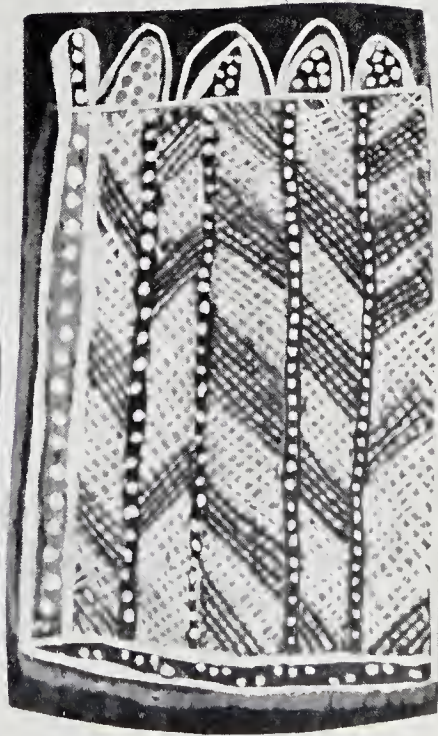
B



C



E



D

PLATE 68. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The man, Waraguk

B The cannibal-man, Karowailai

C The sorcerer, cave painting from Trois Frères

D The man, Junaduria

E The woman, Ilamilik, and the man, Mamuralarin

back and saw how the women took the fire from their bodies, cooked their water-lily bulbs, then put the fire back again.

The men were so annoyed over the deception and the fact that they had had to eat raw meat while the women had been able to eat cooked food that they decided to transform themselves into crocodiles, kill the women, and steal the fire from them. Taking it in turn, each man hammered out the head of the other until it was long and thin; then, by the addition of the gum from the iron-wood tree, they moulded their heads and faces until they resembled crocodiles. So that neither could be accused of matricide, each man decided to drown the mother of his companion. Waiting until the women were busy collecting the water-lily bulbs, the crocodiles entered the water, caught hold of them and dragged them under.

But before the *Nadjibit* women were drowned, they threw the fire from their bodies into the air, where it entered every dry piece of wood. From that day the aborigines have always had fire, for when they want to cook their food they have only to rub two dry sticks together and the fire, left behind by the *Nadjibit* women, comes out and ignites the wood.

Plate 66E depicts one of the men, *Gumangan*, when he was a human being and later when he had transformed himself into a crocodile. The artist did not indicate the internal organs of either the man or the reptile, although he followed the conventional style of the bark paintings by turning the tail of the crocodile to show its crest.

Karowailai, the Cannibal Man

A man called *Karowailai* once lived at Malay Bay, south of Croker Island.²⁸ One day *Karowailai* was in the forest collecting yams when he heard two women knocking the fruit from a tree belonging to him, called *mangara-lapman* (a species of *Eugenia*). *Karowailai* was so annoyed at this theft that he chased the women, one of whom was pregnant, killed them both with his large wooden club, dismembered and buried them in his camp fire. When they were well cooked he put them in his carrying-bag, took them back to camp, and ate them. After that *Karowailai* killed and ate so many people that the aborigines finally assembled and speared him to death.

Plate 68B shows *Karowailai* and the two women whom he killed and ate. The bag in which he carried the cooked human flesh is hanging from his shoulder, and his club, with which he killed the women, is in his hand. Between the man and the women is the tree bearing the fruit. The foetus of the child is shown in the abdomen of the woman on the right.

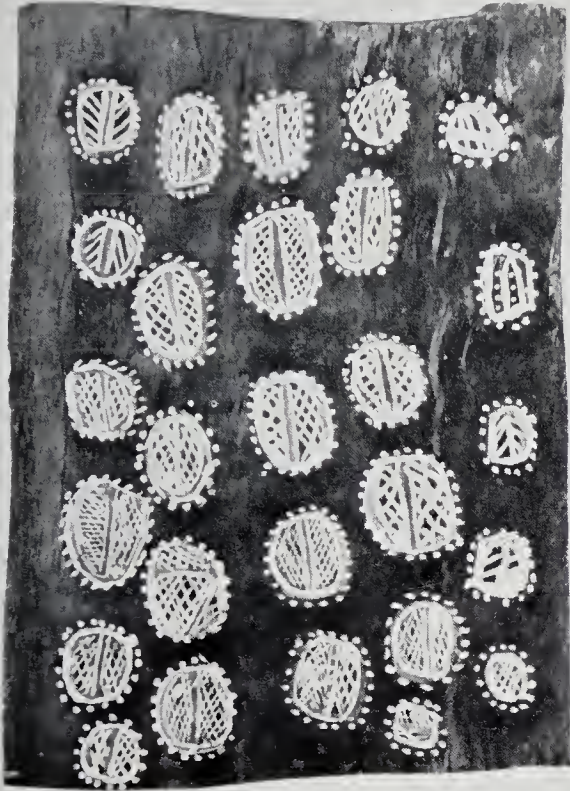
The Man, Junaduria

Plate 68D illustrates a rocky hill called Raba-awil, situated at the mouth of the Liverpool River. Raba-awil is the metamorphosed body and totemic place

28. Map, Fig. 1.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 69. Bark paintings, Oempelli

- A The heron, nananduka, the tortoise, naltunia, and the echidna, narabet
- B Cycad nuts
- C The tortoises, naltunia
- D Cycad tree and fruit

of a mythical man called *Junaduria*. The serrated upper edge represents the rocky spires on the hill; the cross-hatched areas are the cliff faces; lines of dots, the footholds by which the aborigines climb to the top.

The Two Brothers, Gumundili and Mamula

One day two brothers, *Gumundili* and *Mamula*, were travelling along the base of the Arnhem Land plateau, not far from Oenpelli, when they saw many cat-fish, *kada*, swimming toward the Gunman (Fish Creek).

'We must catch some of those fish,' said the elder brother.

'Good,' said the younger, clapping his hands together, 'we want some food.'

So the brothers stood on the side of the stream and with their multi-pronged spear soon captured all the fish they required. After having cooked and eaten the cat-fish the brothers decided to go to Fish Creek, at the base of the plateau. There were not many fish in the first waterhole, Munganomunma, so they went on to the next one, Gungaibirik, where there were so many cat-fish that the brothers decided to stay.

To keep themselves supplied with food they made a fish-net and a special spear, the point of which was a sharpened leg bone of a kangaroo. But the brothers, tiring of a diet of cat-fish, and not wishing to continue their journey, turned themselves into two large rocks near the Gungaibirik waterhole.

The two brothers are depicted in Pl. 67A, the upper being *Gumundili* and the lower *Mamula*, who is clapping his hands together because he saw so many fish in the water. The designs on the heads of the two men picture a form of hair-dress used only by these brothers.

The Woman, Akurindipa

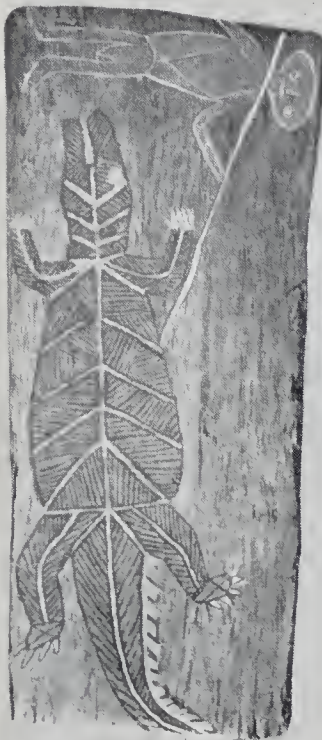
There was a woman called *Akurindipa* who lived with her husband at a totemic place called Mangongon, on the Liverpool River. The woman gathered the yams, and the man the flesh foods. At the end of the creation period the bodies of both the man and the woman were transformed into tall rocks near the totemic place.

On the lower left of Pl. 67B is the woman, *Akurindipa*, and round about her the yams she has collected.

The Man, Muluwulji-kaitja

Muluwulji-kaitja once lived by himself in a spring not far from Cahill Crossing, south of Oenpelli. Although he had learned the secret of fire, his only weapon was a wooden club. But in spite of his limited hunting equipment, *Muluwulji-kaitja* was a terror to all the aborigines in the surrounding country. If he caught a man he killed him with his club; if he caught a woman he raped her, and because his barbed penis lacerated her so badly, she died.

One time he visited the camp of an aboriginal family, and demanded their daughter as a wife. The terrified father and mother granted his request, but when he copulated with the daughter she, like many women before her, died



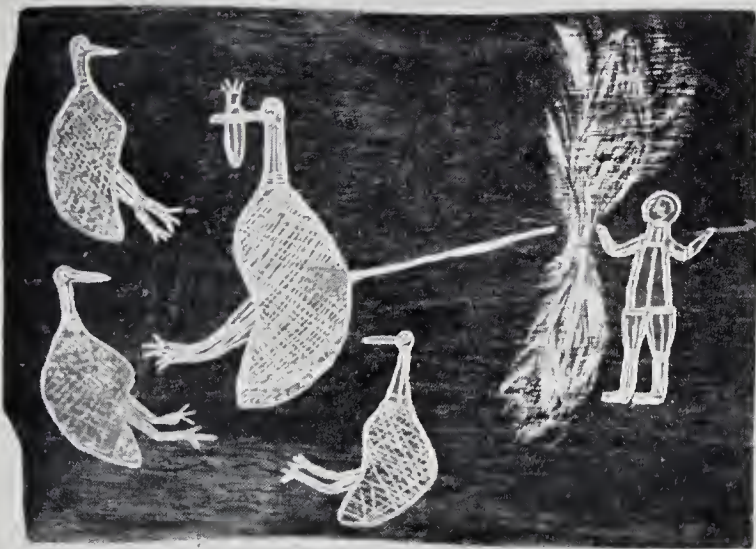
A



B



C



D



E

PLATE 70. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A, B The crocodile hunt

C The kangaroo-rat, nabut

D, E Hunting jabirus

from her wounds. When the aborigines heard of this atrocity they gathered together, surrounded the camp of *Muluwulji-kaitja*, and beat him to death with clubs.

Plate 67C shows *Muluwulji-kaitja* depicted in a simplified X-ray form. He is circumcised and has a barbed penis.

Malamuju-jalkjalk and his two Wives

On a hill not far from Nimbawah²⁹ there once lived a rain-maker, *Malamuju-jalkjalk*, and his two wives, *Guruilja*. Every day they went out food-gathering, the two women collecting the nuts of the pandanus trees, and the man the animals and the hives of the wild honey, *boubit*. On their return to camp the two women soaked the nuts in water to make a sweet drink for their husband, after which they cooked them and extracted the kernels for food.

Although there was an abundance of food in the country, the family was most unhappy because of the jealousy of the two women for the affection of their husband. If he granted a favour to one, the other would become so abusive that the poor husband's life became a torment. One day, after his wives had had a particularly violent quarrel, *Malamuju-jalkjalk*, deciding that he would end this unpleasant situation, went into the jungle and performed a rain-making ceremony. This brought up such a heavy storm that in order to escape being drowned the whole family had to take shelter in a high cave which could be reached only by climbing the trunk of a dead tree. Waiting until his wives were asleep, the husband 'sang' the floodwaters, causing them to subside; then, climbing down, he took away the dead tree, leaving his quarrelsome wives marooned in the cave. *Malamuju-jalkjalk* travelled toward Nimbawah, where he turned himself into a tall rock. The quarrelsome women are now a rough, stony hill.

On the lower right of Pl. 67D is *Malamuju-jalkjalk* and in front of him the bark dish which contains the sweet drink made from the pandanus fruit. Round his feet are the nuts gathered by his wives. On the lower left is a pandanus palm, with the nuts, *mangudjet*, hanging from its branches. Above are his two wives, *Guruilja*, with string bags hanging from their shoulders.

*The Echidna, Narabet, the Fresh-water Tortoise, Nalunia,
and the Heron, Nananduka*

A long while ago three men, the echidna or spiny ant-eater, *Narabet*, the fresh-water tortoise, *Nalunia*,³⁰ and the heron, *Nananduka*, camped together on the northern shore of Melville Island.

One day they made a bark canoe and set out for the Cobourg Peninsula, landing finally at a place called Malkamula, near Port Essington. They abandoned the canoe at Malkamula, established a new camp, and started to look for

29. Map, Fig. 10.

30. In a fragment of the same legend, the tortoise is called *biri-biriga-galaba*.



A



B



C



D



E

PLATE 71. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A, B The kangaroo hunt
D Hunting the sea-going turtle

C Hunting the tortoise, nadarawa
E The wallaby hunt

food in the scrub and along the seashore. The tortoise, however, was a lazy fellow who often slept late, leaving the labour of gathering food to his two companions. One day when the heron was absent, the spiny ant-eater abused the tortoise for his lazy habits. This incensed *Nalunia*, who replied sharply and in no time the two men were fighting.

The tortoise, with his short wooden spears, was able to transfix the spiny ant-eater many times before *Narabet* was near enough to attack. When he did attack, however, he hit his opponent on the head with a large stone so often that the body of *Nalunia*, the tortoise, was flattened so much that his arms, legs and head, instead of being in line with his body, projected out of his sides. Both men, vowing undying hatred, and not wishing to see each other again, transformed themselves into creatures that would live in entirely different elements. *Nalunia*, his back now resembling a block of stone, became a tortoise and made his home in a lagoon called Mundaigadjun, not far from Nimbawah. *Narabet*, his body still bristling with spears, is now an echidna, which lives only among the rocks and on the dry ground.

When these two were fighting, the heron, who had heard the sounds of their strife, hurried back to camp, hoping to mediate and perhaps restore good feeling between his two companions. But he found that his companions had gone, the only signs of their presence being broken spear shafts and fragments of stone. Sadly he travelled southward along the Cobourg Peninsula until he reached the East Alligator River,³¹ where he transformed himself into a low rock which projects from the water.

Plate 69A illustrates, in simplified X-ray art, the three mythical creatures, the heron, *Nananduka*, the fresh-water tortoise, *Nalunia*, and the spiny ant-eater, *Narabet*.

Plate 69C shows six fresh-water tortoises, *Nalunia*, travelling southward from the Cobourg Peninsula to their totemic lagoon of Mundaigadjun.

The Cycad-men, Mundiga

During the time of creation many of the stars came down from the sky, transformed themselves into cycad-nut men, called *Mundiga*, and wandered round the rugged plateau adjacent to Nimbawah, near Oenpelli. After a while the *Mundiga*, deciding to stay at a place called Gunulkjau, transformed themselves into paintings³² of cycad nuts. They said:

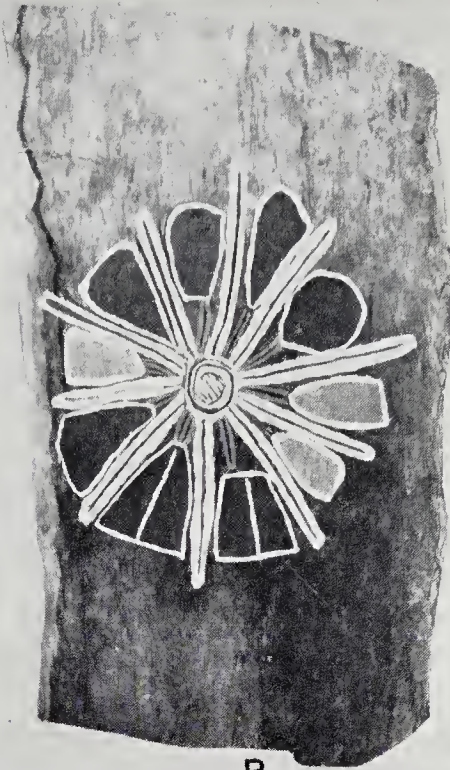
'This is a good place. We'll stay here, and when the people want our food (cycad nuts) they will come to this cave and hit the paintings with a bough, say which locality they came from, and we'll send our cycad nuts both there and everywhere else. This will make sure that the aborigines have plenty of food.'

31. Map, Fig. 10.

32. There are many records at Oenpelli of ancestral beings transforming themselves into paintings, most of which are now increase centres for kangaroos, p. 223, water-snakes, p. 214, gar-fish, p. 254, and others. Elkin (1948), p. 12, records a similar belief from north-western Australia.



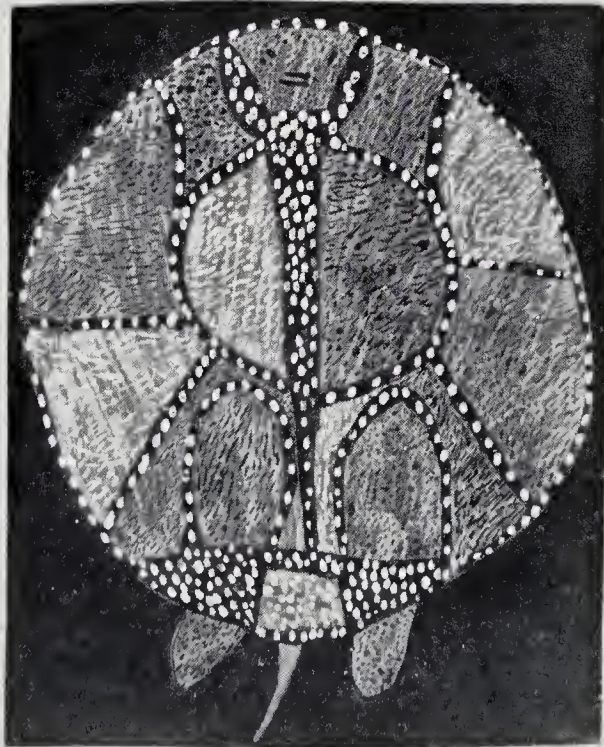
A



B



C



D

PLATE 72. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The crocodile hunt

B, C The star-fish, kadikata

D The stingaree

Plate 69B, a bark painting, represents the cave paintings at Gunulkjau, which were once stars in the sky. They are now an increase centre for cycad nuts.

Plate 69D pictures a cycad and its fruit.

(3) HUNTING

As was to be expected, a number of the bark paintings produced by the aborigines dealt with hunting and food-gathering. From these I have selected eleven examples as being typical.

The Crocodile Hunt

I have chosen three bark paintings that show aborigines in the act of spearing a crocodile. One method of hunting this reptile is to paddle quietly over the swamp, then suddenly strike the water with the flat of the paddle. The noise so startles the crocodiles resting on the bottom of the swamp that they release small bubbles of air. The bubbles reveal their position. After several tries, the hunters are able to locate the exact positions of their prey. Paddling over the top of the creature, they drive a spear through its heart. Although this method of locating crocodiles is most effective, the hunting and killing of them from a wooden canoe is a hazardous undertaking.

Plate 70A shows a single aboriginal spearing a crocodile. In this painting the body of the crocodile, shown in plan, except for the tail, is filled with decorative herring-bone designs.

In Pl. 70B three men have speared a crocodile. The bodies of both the men and the crocodile, instead of being painted in the X-ray form, are filled in with lozenge-shaped designs.

Plate 72A is another bark painting of a crocodile hunt, in which an aboriginal has speared the creature in the head.

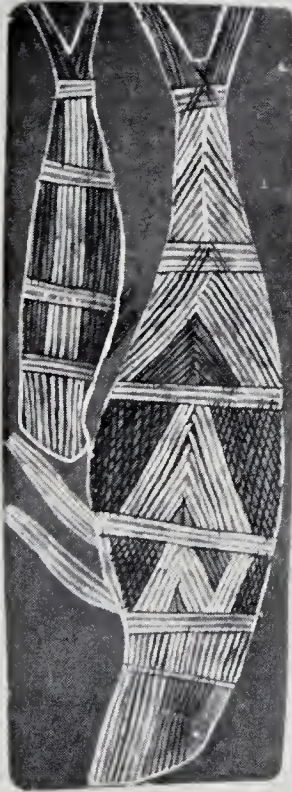
Kangaroo Rat, Nabut

Plate 70C illustrates an aboriginal chasing a small kangaroo-like marsupial, called *nabut*, a creature about two feet in height. The aborigines assert that this little creature is so fast in its movements that they are seldom able to capture it. *Nabut* can outrun a dog.

Hunting Jabirus

Plate 70D is a hunting scene. An aboriginal, sheltering behind a bundle of reeds, has crept up to a flock of jabirus (*Xenorhynchus asiaticus*) and speared the largest of them with a multi-pronged fishing spear. This bird is holding a cat-fish in its mouth (see square head, tentacles, and absence of projecting fins). There is an interesting comparison between the posture of these birds and those painted by the Groote Eylandt aborigines (see Pl. 21A, E).

Plate 70E depicts an aboriginal spearing a jabiru. The oesophagus, heart, lungs, stomach and intestines of the bird are shown. The jabiru is defecating



A



B



C



D

PLATE 73. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The dugong B The black wallaroo C, D The echidna, narabet

after it has been struck with the spear. The feet of the man are drawn as footprints.

A Kangaroo Hunt

Plate 71A shows, in X-ray art, an aboriginal who has used so much force in throwing his spear at the kangaroo that the spear-thrower flew out of his hand.

Plate 71B is the painting of a kangaroo hunt. Although this was the work of an old man of the Kakadu, the original tribe of Oenpelli, he did not show either the skeleton or the internal organs of the kangaroo.

Hunting the Fresh-water Tortoise, Nadarawa

This painting, Pl. 71C, depicts an aboriginal capturing a fresh-water tortoise, *nadarawa*. The design indicating the carapace is of some interest, the spaces on one side being filled in with dots, on the other side with cross-hatching. The backbone of both the man and the tortoise³³ are indicated. The man has the same curious hook-shaped face as is often seen both in the Oenpelli cave paintings and in the art of the South African Bushman.³⁴

Hunting the Sea-going Turtle, Gariwa

Plate 71D, from the Liverpool River, illustrates a turtle hunt. The central design, in modified X-ray art, is a sea-going turtle. On each side is a sucker fish (*Remora remora*), which often attach themselves to the turtle. The aborigines know, when they see a *remora*, which they call the friend of the turtle, that their prey is near at hand. In the lower left-hand corner are the turtle hunters in a canoe. One man is holding a paddle, the other has speared the turtle. In this painting, as in many others from Arnhem Land, the hunted creature occupies a disproportionate space in the painting.

Wallaby Hunt

Plate 71E is the painting of an aboriginal and the wallaby he has speared. Although the artist has painted the vertebrae, arm and leg bones, the heart and the liver in a realistic manner, he has represented the stomach and intestines by abstract lozenge-shaped patterns.

(4) ANIMALS

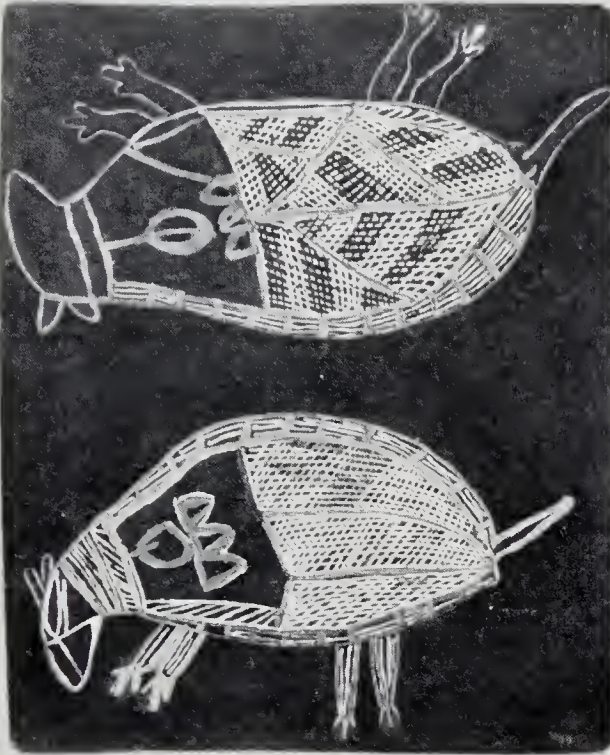
There was only a small number of animal paintings among those which I collected at Oenpelli.

The Dugong

The dugong (*Dugong australis*) which lives along the north coast of Australia is one of the rare sea-mammals. The aborigines detect the presence of these creatures by watching for the pieces of submarine grass, torn off by the dugongs, floating on the surface of the water. Paddling quietly to the spot where the

33. The vertebrae of the tortoise are fused together.

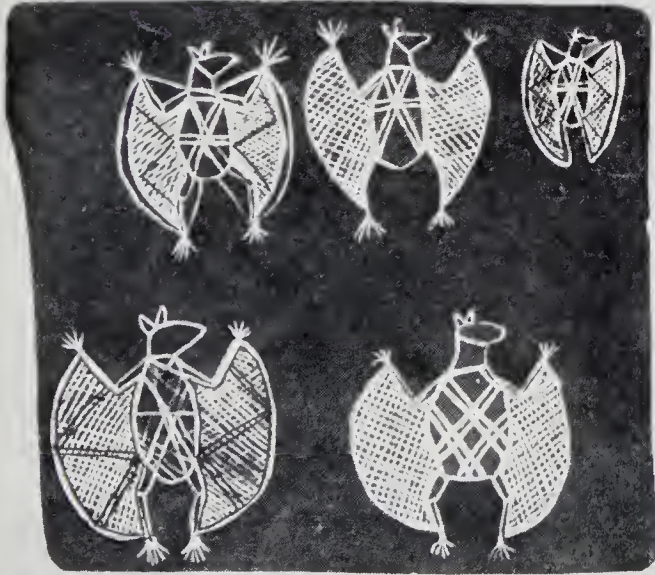
34. See Fig. 52B.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 74. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A Bandicoots B, C Bats D The kangaroo, narabuk

dugongs are feeding, the aborigines spear these creatures from their canoe. The flesh of the dugong, which resembles veal or pork, is both nutritious and tasty.

Plate 73A, from the Liverpool River, is a conventionalized painting of a female dugong and its young. The extended trunk-like proboscis is well shown.

The Black Wallaroo, Barak

This bark painting shows the rare small black wallaroo, *barak* (*Osphranter bernardus*), a creature that appears to be confined to the Arnhem Land plateau. The aborigines say that these little creatures are the 'dogs' of the cave-painting *Mimi* and the *Nadidjit* (p. 182, p. 192). Should the aborigines kill too many of them, the spirit people of the rocks will not only punish the hunters by making them ill, but will take their 'dogs' into the caves, so that the aborigines cannot kill any more.

In this X-ray bark painting, Pl. 73B, the artist has indicated the heart, the lungs (on each side of the heart), the diaphragm with the liver immediately below it, the bones of the arms, legs and spine, and the brush on the end of the tail. The stomach is not shown.

The Echidna, Narabet

Two bark paintings of the echidna (*Tachyglossus aculeatus*) were collected, one, Pl. 73C, made by an aboriginal from Oenpelli, and the other, Pl. 73D, by a Liverpool River aboriginal. The difference in the methods of presentation by the artists of two different localities is of some interest.

In Pl. 73D (Liverpool River) the body is filled with cross-hatched designs, in contrast to 73C (Oenpelli) in which the artist has painted the internal organs, backbone, heart, lungs, stomach and intestine.³⁵ An echidna is shown on Pl. 62C.

The Bandicoots

Plate 74A illustrates two bandicoots, a small scrub-dwelling marsupial which the aborigines hunt for food.

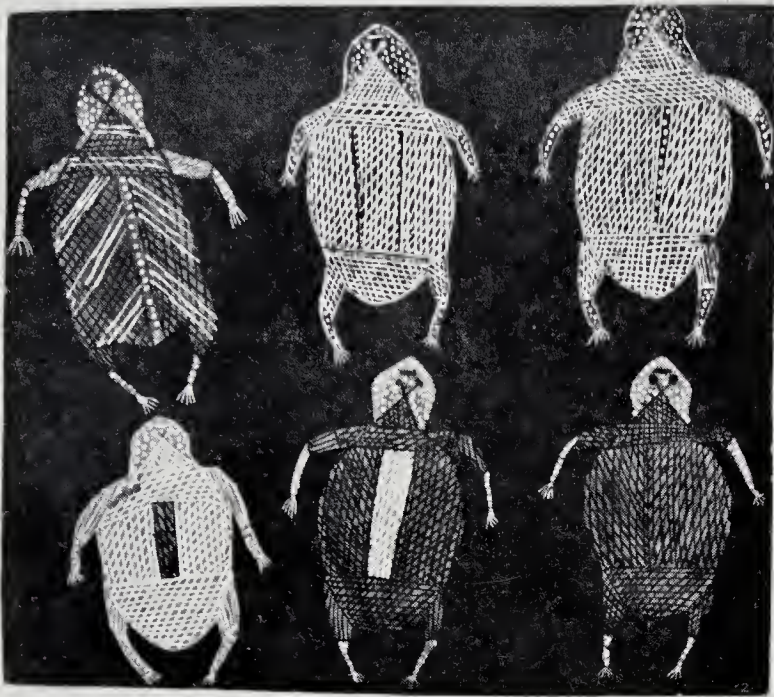
The Bats

There are many bats of the order Chiroptera living in the trees, the caves, and the rock crevices of the plateau. They range from the large, well-known fruit bat, or flying-fox (*Pteropus gouldii*), with a wing spread of four feet or more, to the small horse-shoe bat, like *Hipposideros stenotis*, with only a few inches of wing span.

There are two bark paintings of bats. The first, Pl. 74B, which the aborigines described as large bats (probably the fruit bat), is pictured in a simplified X-ray form, showing the heart (or lungs) and intestines.

Plate 74C is a bark painting of five smaller unidentified bats.

35. Mountford (1939a), Pl. 14, p. 366, recorded a bark painting of an echidna from Goulburn Island in which, although the artist painted the two eyes on one side of the head, he did not indicate the internal organs.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 75. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A, C Frogs B, D Kangaroos

The Kangaroo, Narabuk

Plate 74D is a bark painting of the kangaroo, *narabuk*, which shows the heart, lungs, liver, stomach and intestines.

The Frogs

Plate 75A is the work of an aboriginal from the Liverpool River area who has used cross-hatching to fill in the spaces.

Two bark paintings of frogs were collected. Pl. 75C, by an Oenpelli artist, is a particularly simple X-ray art form.

The Kangaroo

Two bark paintings of the red kangaroo (*Megaleia rufa*) are included. Both Pl. 75B and D are good examples of X-ray art. This beautiful kangaroo, the largest of all the Australian species, is eagerly hunted by the aborigines for food. Throughout aboriginal Australia the kangaroo is one of the most important of the totemic ancestors.

(5) BIRDS

The Jabiru, Tjagana

Plate 76A is a painting of the jabiru, *tjagana*. This large and beautiful bird, often called the black-necked stork, lives in the shallow waters of the swamps, spearing fish and crabs with its sharply pointed bill. In this painting the jabiru, *tjagana*, is scratching itself with its beak. The internal organs can be distinguished between the cross-hatched designs.

The Royal Spoonbill

Plate 76B is an Oenpelli painting of five royal spoonbills (*Platalea regia*), wading birds with spatula-like bills which are especially adapted for finding creatures in the soft mud of the swamps.

Plate 77A is an X-ray bark painting of a single royal spoonbill.

Unidentified Bird

Plate 76D is a bark painting of an unidentified bird, perhaps a cormorant.

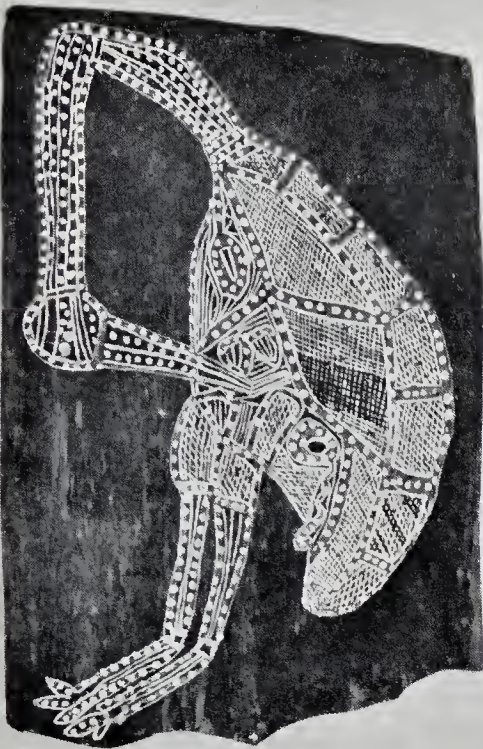
Plate 76C, E, are cave paintings from Unbalanja which resemble the bark painting in general form. They almost certainly picture the same creature.

Unidentified Water-bird

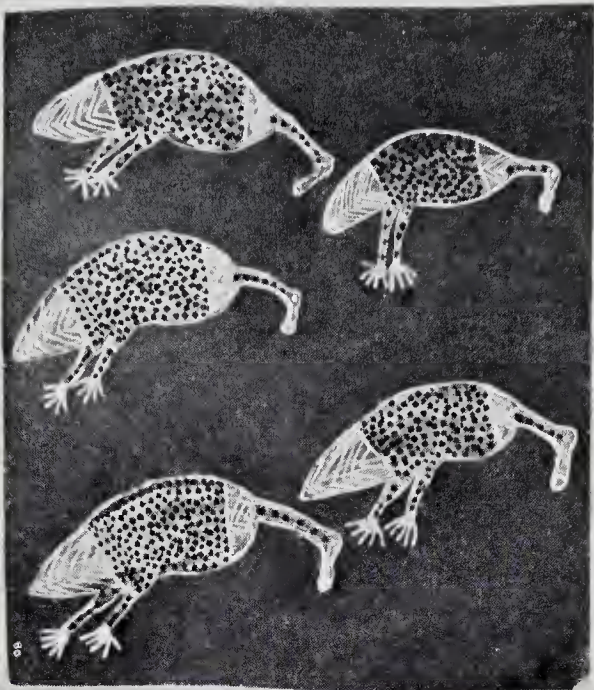
Plate 77B is a simplified bark painting from Oenpelli of an unidentified water-bird.

The Emu, Gurugadji, and Chicks

Plate 77C shows a male emu, *gurugadji*, eating the fruit from an unidentified palm tree, *mangu-luruit*. The two smaller figures are young emus, which are always tended by the male.



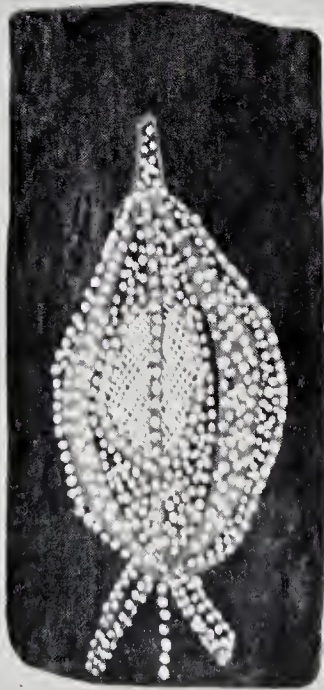
A



B



C



D



E

PLATE 76. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The jabiru

B The royal spoonbill

C, D, E Unidentified birds

The Plain Turkey

Plate 77D is a simplified X-ray bark painting, from Oenpelli, of a plain turkey (*Eupodotis australis*). Although the backbone is clearly indicated, few of the internal organs are shown.

A Nest of Emu Eggs

Plate 78A is an Oenpelli painting of a nest of emu eggs. The dots represent the developing chicks within the shell; the white central dot is the opening, and the radiating lines the cracks made by the chick as it forces its way out of the egg.

Sea-bird catching Fish

Plate 78C is an attractive Liverpool River bark painting of a sea-bird catching a fish.

(6) REPTILES

Goannas

The goannas of Arnhem Land live in several habitats, the sea, the fresh-water swamps and the forests. The forked tongue always indicates a goanna.

Plate 61A is a goanna, *kalounn*, from the Liverpool River. The ovals within the body are eggs.

Plate 78B is a land goanna (*Varanus* sp.). The linked ovals represent body fat; the three parallel lines joining the forelegs, the shoulder bones. The rectangle immediately below is the lungs.

Plate 78D illustrates three reptiles, two water-goannas (outside), and a crocodile (centre). My informant did not say whether the goannas lived in salt-water or fresh-water.

Plate 78E is a salt-water goanna, *burava* (*Varanus* sp.). In their search for food these creatures can remain under the sea-water for a considerable period. The single cross-hatched oval near the tail represents a mass of fat.

The Fresh-water Tortoise

Plate 61B is the painting of a fresh-water tortoise in which the body is covered with a cross-hatched design. This example makes an interesting comparison with the cave painting of the same creature at Unbalanja, Pl. 38A.

The Blue-tongued Lizard, Tjangura, and the Gecko, Naraba

Plate 61C illustrates two lizards from Liverpool River; the upper is a blue-tongued lizard, *tjangura* (*Tiliqua scincoides*), and the lower a gecko, *naraba*, which is about eight inches long. The black rectangle in the gecko indicates its stomach and intestines.

The Crocodile

In Plate 61E is a painting from the Liverpool River area of a crocodile (*Crocodilus porosus*), the body area of which is filled in with cross-hatching and the tail turned to show the crest.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 77. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The royal spoonbill
C The emu and chicks

B Unidentified water-bird
D The plain turkey

(7) FISH

The aborigines from both Oenpelli and the Liverpool River produced a large number of paintings of fish. This is not surprising when we realize that the Liverpool River people depend largely on the sea for sustenance, and the Oenpelli aborigines on the fish in the lagoons.

The Star-fish, Kadikata

The aborigines from the Liverpool River area made two paintings of the star-fish, *kadikata* (probably *Goscinasterias muricata*), (Pl. 72B, C). Although the star-fish are numerous on the fringing coral reefs they do not seem to have been used as food. There was no explanation for the difference in appearance of Pl. 72B and C.

The Stingaree

Plate 72D is a Liverpool River painting of a stingaree (*Urolophus* sp.) in which the eyes and the gills are indicated. The two ovals toward the tail represent masses of fat inside the creature.³⁶ The other designs are markings on the skin.

Unidentified Fish

Plate 79A is a decorative painting of an unidentified fish, in which a smaller fish is shown within the stomach. This is not an uncommon characteristic in the art of both the bark and the cave paintings.

Plate 79B is an attractive example of Oenpelli X-ray art. The artist first painted the ground in white, then added anatomical details, the backbone, stomach, gills, and the two eyes on one side of the head, in fine red lines.

Plate 80D is another unidentified salt-water fish, painted in X-ray art form by an Oenpelli aboriginal.

Plate 81A is a fish from the coral reefs near the mouth of the Liverpool River.

The Coral Fish

Plate 79C, from the Liverpool River area, pictures a decorative coral fish with highly developed fins.

The Sweep

In this decorative painting of a sweep (probably *Scorpiis* sp.), Pl. 79D, the anatomical details are clearly defined. The artist shows the gills as parallel lines leading from the stomach to the head, and the mass of fat, which is an aboriginal delicacy, as a cross-hatched oval between the stomach and the backbone.

The Gurnard, Nuimen

Three of the bark paintings of one of the gurnards, *nuimen*, are included to show how differently aboriginal artists will depict the same creature.

36. This practice of showing masses of fat is common throughout Arnhem Land. See Yirkalla, Pl. 106D.

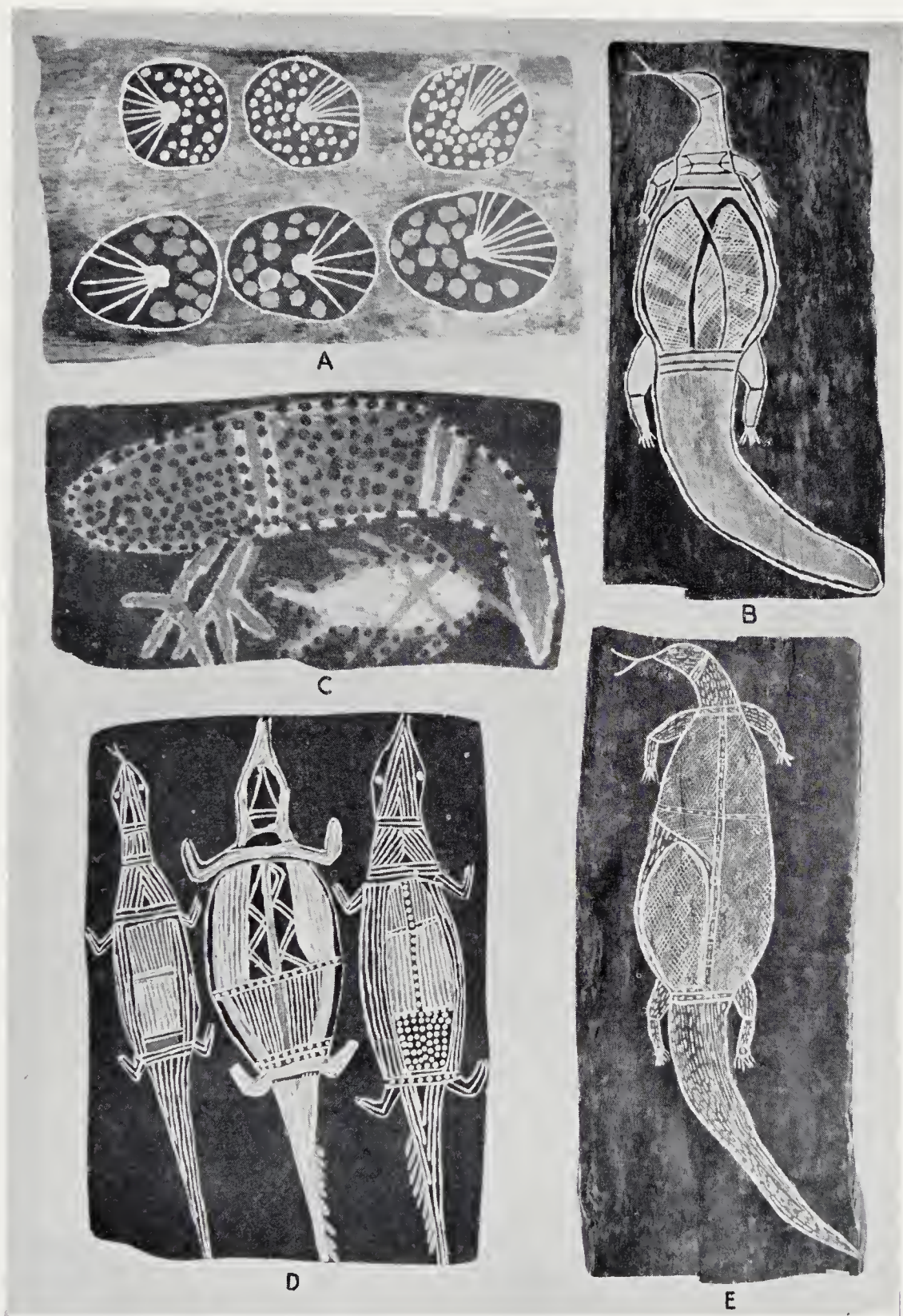


PLATE 78. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

- A Nest of emu eggs B The land goanna C A sea-bird with fish
 D A goanna and crocodiles E A salt-water goanna

In Pl. 80A the body is covered with a decorative pattern of parallel lines.

A similar form is used in Pl. 80E, except that the lines are not as close, and more of the inner details are included.

In Pl. 80C the artist has only painted the two eyes, backbone and stomach, filling in the spaces with dots.

The Skip-jack, Guluibiri

Plate 80B, from Oenpelli, in X-ray art, depicts a fresh-water fish, *guluibiri* (*Temnodon* sp.). This painting is a particularly accurate representation.

The Hammer-headed Shark

Plate 80F is a Liverpool River painting of that curious sea creature, the hammer-headed shark.

Division of Fish

The bark painting, Pl. 81B, illustrates the method of dividing a fish for cooking and later distribution. On the left-hand side, at *d*, is the complete fish, probably one of the gurnards. The fish is cut down the backbone and below the vent, after the head has been removed. The piece *a*, the tastiest portion, is called *gunmirik*, the head, *c*, *gungoit*, while the back and tail, *b*, are known as *gunbotmir*.

Plate 81D is a cave painting at Unbalanja, site 7, Fig. 11A, that illustrates a similar division of fish, *a*, *gunmirik*, *b*, *gunbotmir*, *c*, *gungoit*, and *d*, the swim bladder.

The Stinging Jelly-fish, Mabaia

Plate 81C is a painting, by a Liverpool River aboriginal, of the much-feared stinging jelly-fish, *mabaia* (*Physalia utriculus*). The artist explained that the black rectangle in the middle of the creature was its 'heart'.

The Fish, Japanbulka

Plate 82A pictures a sea creature, *japanbulka*, about three feet long, which the aborigines described as a shark. The ichthyologist could give no indication of its possible species.

The Trevally, Gunman-naudi

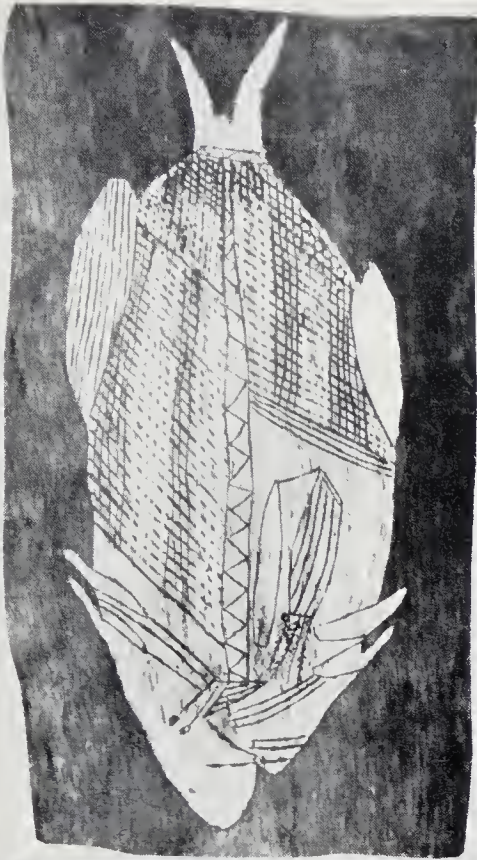
Plate 82B is an X-ray bark painting of a trevally, *gunman-naudi* (probably *Caranx* sp.).

The Long-toms or Gar-fish, Indurduin and Gurgabul

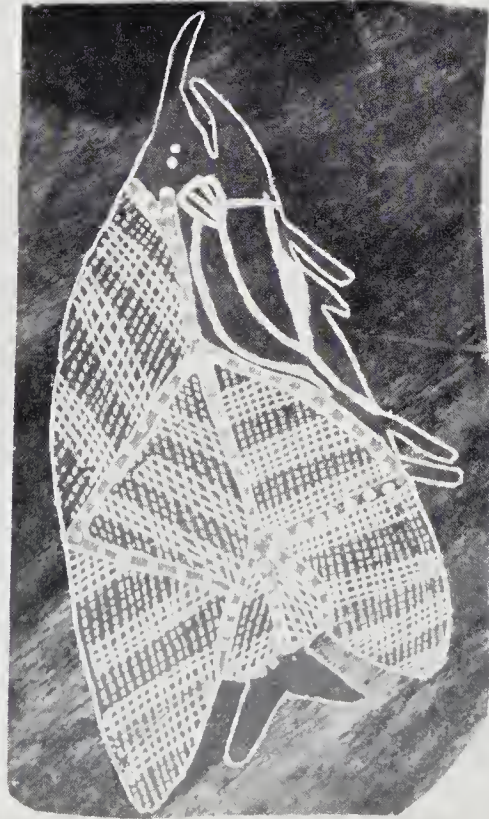
Two mythical fish, *indurduin* and *gurgabul*, came from a place a long way north of Oenpelli, and lived under the rocks at Unbalanja, Fig. 11A, site 9. After a while they left their underground home, painted their images on the rock face, then jumped on to the plain beneath. The place where they landed is now the Oenpelli lagoon. These cave paintings are believed to be the actual bodies of the two fish, *indurduin* and *gurgabul* (Pl. 82E).



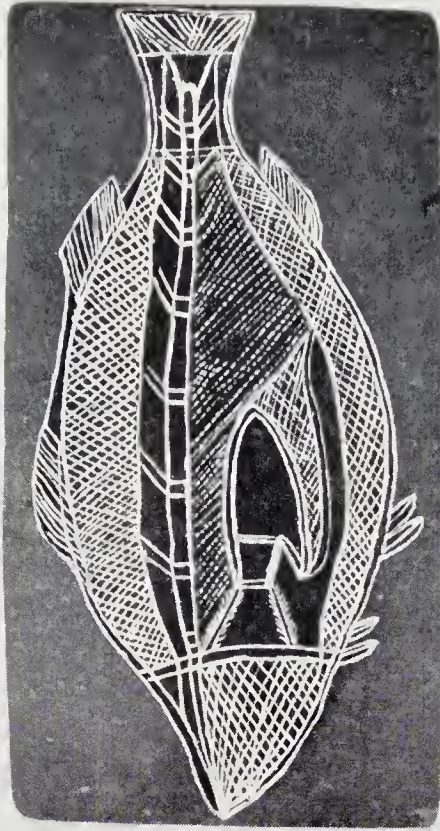
A



B



C



D

PLATE 79. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A, B Unidentified fish C A coral fish D The sweep

When the aborigines want to increase the supply of gar-fish in the lagoons they climb the steep side of Unbalanja to the increase centre and beat the paintings with a bush. This frightens some of the fish spirits from the painting. They go to various lagoons, and grow into the two species of fish, *indurduin* and *gurgabul*.

Plate 82C is another simple X-ray painting from Oenpelli, of the gar-fish, which may be either *indurduin* or *gurgabul*.

Plate 82D is an X-ray bark painting of one of the gar-fish which created the lagoon at Oenpelli.

Plate 82E is a close-up photograph of the paintings made by the gar-fish, *indurduin* and *gurgabul*.

Plate 82F shows, in the upper left, the cave paintings of *indurduin* and *gurgabul* at their increase centre at Unbalanja. The opening in the cliff, in front of the head of the aboriginal, is the place where the two fish emerged to paint their images on the rock face.

The Stingray

In this Liverpool River bark painting of a stingray (*Dasyatis* sp.), Pl. 83B, the two cross-hatched cone-shaped designs near the tail are masses of fat within the body. The other marks indicate skin patterns.

The Cat-fish

Three Oenpelli paintings of the cat-fish are included. On Pl. 83D a cat-fish is executed in modified X-ray, the backbone and ribs being represented diagrammatically. The artist has also shown the fleshy tentacles which project from the mouth.

Plate 83E shows a male cat-fish, with the extended pouch which is present only when the male fish is hatching the eggs of the female in its mouth. During this time the fish, being unable to eat, becomes very thin. This bark painting is similar to a cave painting at Unbalanja (Pl. 38G).

Plate 83F is a diagrammatic picture of a cat-fish which is similar to those seen in many of the cave paintings.³⁷

The Eagle-ray

Plate 83A pictures two of the rays (*Myliobatis* sp.). As with the paintings of similar creatures, the oval designs near the tail indicate fat within the body, and the dots, skin patterns.

The Saw-fish, Djin-gundagmuu

Plate 83C is an X-ray bark painting of a saw-fish, *djin-gundagmuu* (probably *Pristiophorus* sp.). This painting makes an interesting comparison with a Groote Eylandt representation of the same creature, Pl. 9C.

37. The square head and lack of projecting fins are characteristic of cave paintings of the cat-fish (see Pl. 39E).



A



B



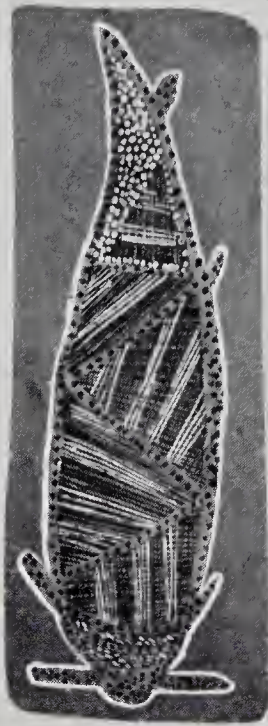
C



D



E



F

PLATE 80. Bark paintings, Oenpelli
A, C, E The gumard, nuimen B The skip-jack, guluibini D Unidentified fish
F The hammer-headed shark

(8) PLANTS

The Yam, Garabara

Plate 84A is an edible yam, *garabara*, the symbol of which is painted on the bodies of the men of that totem in the *ubara* ceremonies (Pl. 84D). Roots are growing from one end of the yam, tendrils and leaves from the other.

Plate 84B is an abstract design of the totemic place of the same yam, at Gunwakinin, near the Liverpool River. The central square is the yam in the ground, the parallel radiating lines are the stems of the plant, and the more or less triangular pattern at the top and the bottom the leaves. The designs also refer to large rocks at the totemic place. These were yams in creation times.³⁸

The Yam, Mungait

This yam, *mungait* (Pl. 84C) is found all over the country. Being poisonous in its raw state, it cannot be eaten until shredded and soaked in water for about twenty-four hours. The soaking removes the poison. The young men of the tribe are not allowed to eat this yam until they have passed through the rituals of the *ubara* ceremony. In this ceremony the men of the *mungait* totem have this design painted on their bodies (Pl. 84E).

Cycad Nuts

The aborigines believe that during the wet season a large unidentified star, called Munguguan, sends down hailstones. These hailstones are the seeds of the cycad, the fruit of which is an important food.

Plate 69D is a bark painting of the cycad and its fruit. Although I did not obtain specific details, it is possible that this painting is linked with the myth of *Mundiga* (p. 238) and the increase centre for cycad nuts.

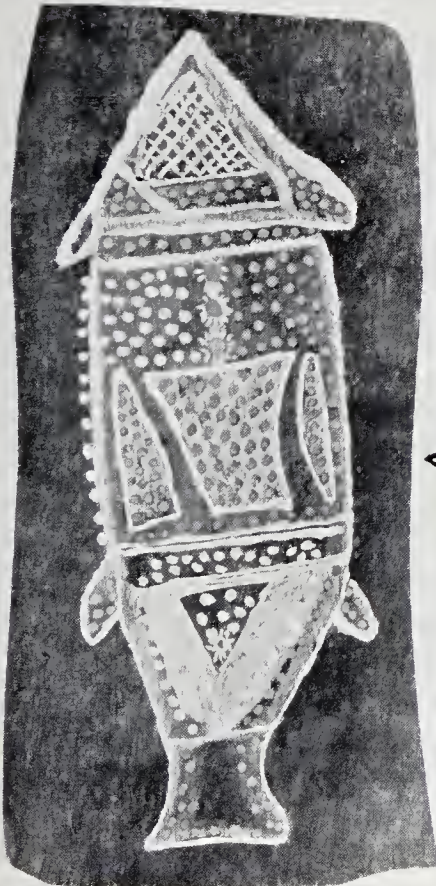
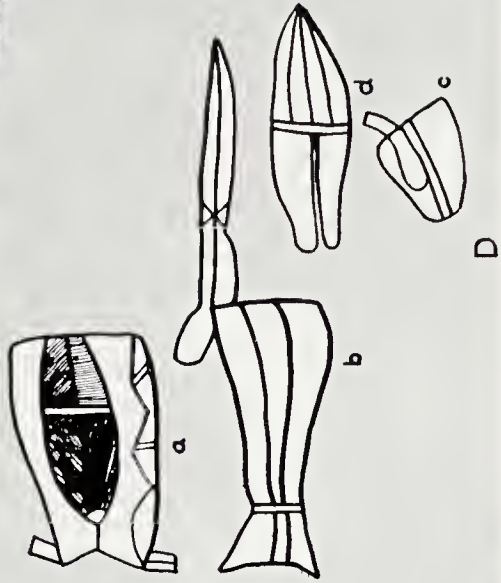
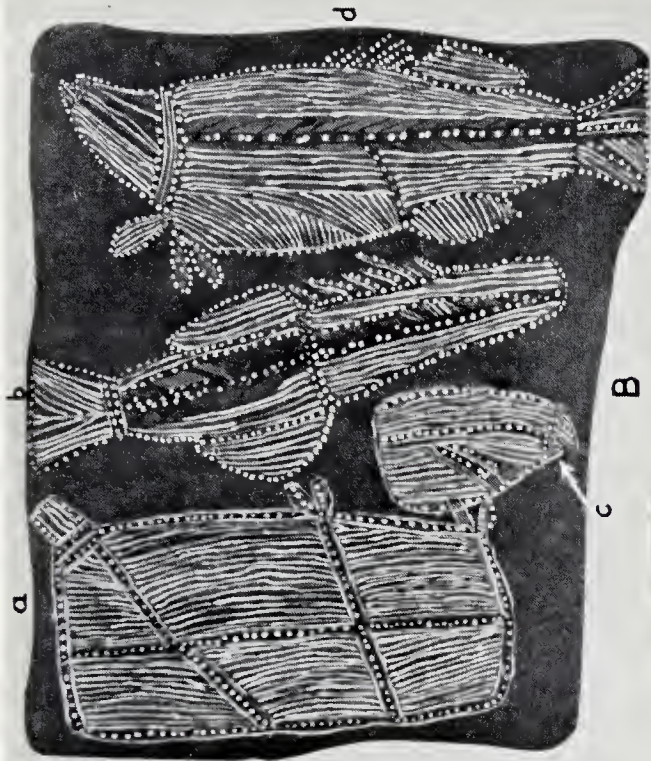
CONCLUSIONS

A number of factors make Oenpelli the most interesting art area in Arnhem Land. They are:

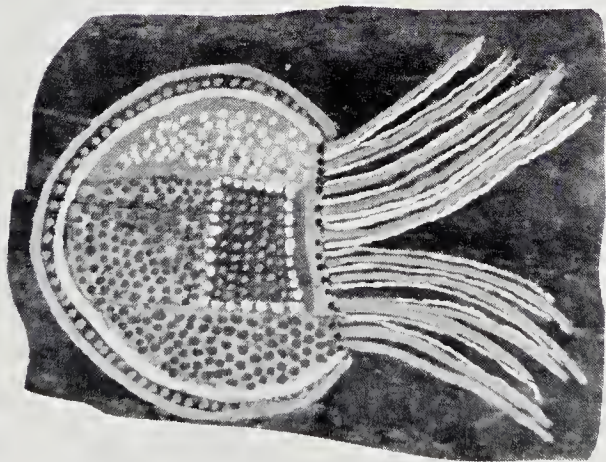
- (a) The polychrome X-ray art
 - (b) The monochrome *Mimi* art, supposedly the work of fairy people
 - (c) Specialized designs which resemble those in other parts of the world
 - (d) Paintings of invisible spirit people who live in the surrounding country
 - (e) Cave paintings, which are believed to be the body of one of the mythical ancestors and a source for the increase of its living counterparts
 - (f) Cave paintings used in sympathetic magic to punish an enemy
 - (g) The high development of cave art in the limited area of western Arnhem Land.
- (a) The polychrome X-ray art

Although this curious art exists, in possibly its simplest form, in the decorations on the ceremonial objects of northern Central Australia and the bark

38. Mountford (1939a), Pl. XIV, Fig. D. Pl. XVI, Fig. A, figures bark paintings of yams from Goulburn Island.



A



C

PLATE 81. Bark and cave paintings, Oenpelli
 A Unidentified fish B Division of fish C The jelly-fish, mabaia
 D Cave painting of division of fish

paintings of Groote Eylandt, it is also used by the primitive people of Melanesia, New Mexico, British Columbia, and southern Alaska. It is in western Arnhem Land, however, that the art has reached a higher stage of development than elsewhere.

(b) The monochrome *Mimi* art

There is an aboriginal myth that the monochromatic drawings are the work of a fairy-like invisible people called the *Mimi* (p. 182). The fact that this *Mimi* art is overlaid by the polychromatic X-ray art, and that the myth is an attempt to explain an art style which the aborigines themselves do not use, suggests not only that the *Mimi* art is the older, but that it is the work of an extinct cultural group.

There are several other cultural traits in Australian ethnology of which the aborigines have no knowledge, such as the cylindro-conical stones of the River Darling, the finely-made microliths of the southern part of Australia, the crude 'horse-hoof' scrapers and the pecked rock engravings of South Australia. As our present extremely limited knowledge of aboriginal prehistory does not explain these extinct cultural traits, we cannot even guess at the identity of the *Mimi* artists.³⁹ A series of carefully conducted archaeological excavations may give us the answer to that question.

(c) Specialized designs

Although few specialized designs from sources outside Australia, except stencilled hands, have crept into the basic art of Arnhem Land, there are a number of designs in the art of Oenpelli which resemble those in other parts of the world. They are:

(i) *Stencilled hands*. These are widely spread throughout Australia and other parts of the world. They are contemporaneous with the X-ray art at Oenpelli but, as far as we know, not with the *Mimi* art. Stencilled hands form the only art expression now being practised in the caves of Oenpelli.

(ii) *Joint marks*. Among the interesting parallels between the *Mimi* cave art of Oenpelli and that of the world at large are the 'joint marks' recently described by Schuster,⁴⁰ who has shown that these 'joint marks' in varying forms extend from south-eastern Asia, across the Pacific to Central America, reaching their highest development in British Columbia, where the 'joint marks' become human faces.

At Oenpelli a considerable number of the human figures in the *Mimi* cave paintings and in the bark paintings have marks, dots and designs on their joints. Sometimes these 'joint marks' take the form of discs at their knees, elbows, shoulders and hips (Fig. 29), sometimes they are shown as distended knees and

39. There is no evidence, archaeological or otherwise, to suggest that the *Mimi* artists were other than aboriginal.

40. Schuster, 1951.



A



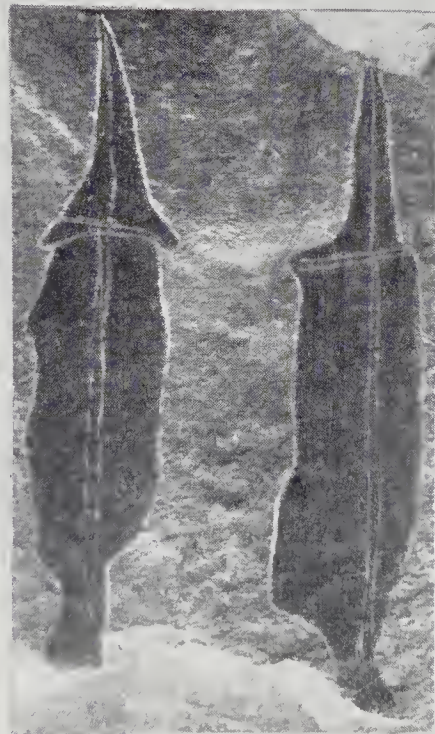
B



C



D



E



F

PLATE 82. Bark and cave paintings, Oenpelli

A The fish, japanbulka B The trevally, gunman-nandi C, D The gar-fish
E Cave paintings of mythical gar-fish, Unbalanja F Increase centre of gar-fish, Unbalanja

elbows (Pl. 51F), but more often they are only single or double lines across the junctions of the body (Pl. 49C).

(iii) *Hocker or crouching figures*. Hocker figures, which at Oenpelli consist of a human figure, front view, with knees and elbows almost touching (Pl. 53D), are widely known, in many variations, in both the Old World and the New. The figures do not have a wide distribution in Australia, having been found only on carrying-baskets in north-eastern Arnhem Land, Darwin, Oenpelli, and on the back of north Queensland shields. At Oenpelli there were many 'hockers' in both the bark paintings and the *Mimi* cave drawings.

As the specialized designs, i.e. 'joint marks' and 'hocker' figures, belong to the Oceanic area, it is not surprising to find them in northern Australia, which is on its periphery. But it is not easy to explain why these specialized figures are much more numerous in and around the Oenpelli area than elsewhere on the continent. Perhaps it is because few areas have been so intensively examined.

But what is more puzzling than the presence of the Pacific figures at Oenpelli is the surprising resemblance between some of the figures in the *Mimi* art of Oenpelli and those in the prehistoric Levantine art of eastern Spain, and in the Bushman art of South Africa.

(iv) *Running figures*. In Australia running figures throwing a spear, which resemble those in Europe and South Africa, have only been found at Oenpelli and Napier Broome Bay, about three hundred miles west,⁴¹ although simpler stick figures without weapons are not uncommon in aboriginal cave art (Fig. 9C). The Napier Broome examples suggest that the running figures may extend across north-western Australia.

Frobenius,⁴² when writing about the resemblance between the running figures of the ancient Levantine art of Spain and those of the Bushmen, considered that the resemblance indicated the southern migration of the Bushmen from Europe to South Africa. A comparison between the running figures of Frobenius, Battiss,⁴³ Bleek,⁴⁴ and Obermaier and Kühn,⁴⁵ with those of Oenpelli shows a striking resemblance.

(v) *Figures with hook-shaped faces*. These figures have been found both among the cave paintings of the *Mimi* at Oenpelli and those of the South African Bushmen recorded by Bleek,⁴⁶ and Obermaier and Kühn.⁴⁷ When I asked one aboriginal the meaning of this symbol, he said that it indicated that the *Mimi* had his mouth open. Although this may be so, it is possible that the man guessed at the meaning of a symbol he did not understand. Other aborigines, when asked the same question, said that they did not know.

(vi) *Sequence of polychrome and monochrome art*. The cave art of the prehistoric Europeans, the Bushmen of South Africa, and the aborigines of Oenpelli

41. Mountford (1937), pp. 30-40, Fig. 2.

43. Battiss (1948), pp. 195-6.

45. Obermaier and Kühn (1930), Pl. 36.

47. Obermaier and Kühn (1930), Pls. 26, 35.

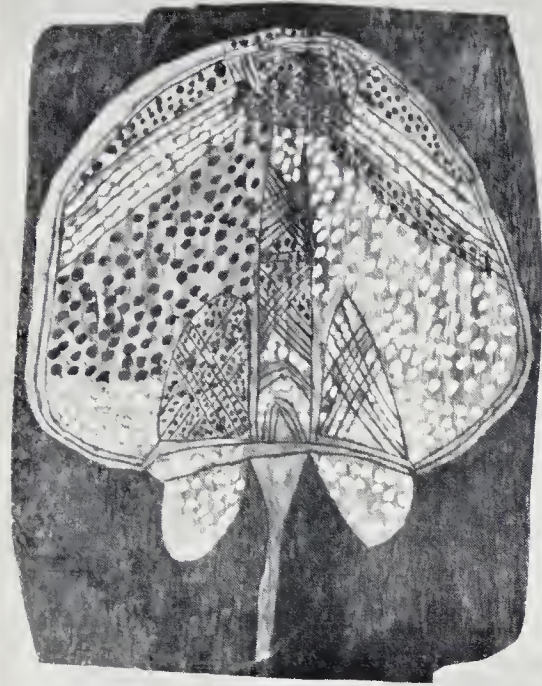
42. Frobenius (1937), p. 27.

44. Bleek (1940), Pl. 7.

46. Bleek (1940), Pl. 8a.



A



B



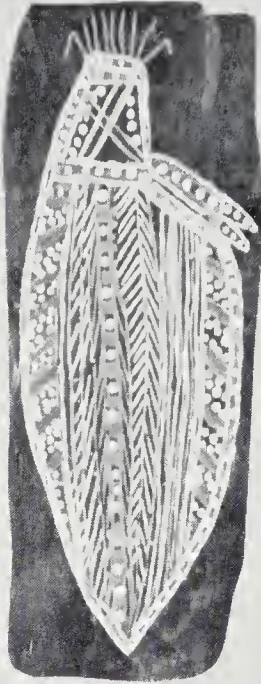
C



D



E



F

PLATE 83. Bark paintings, Oenpelli

A The eagle-rays B The stingray C The saw-fish D, E, F The cat-fish

can be divided into two widely differing art forms; in Europe, into the colourful Franco-Cantabrian art of animals at rest, such as the bison on the ceiling at Altamira, and the Levantine art of men and women in motion. Frobenius⁴⁸ considers that these arts flourished beside each other in prehistoric Europe.

In South Africa Battiss,⁴⁹ when referring to Bushman paintings, writes: 'The older art is one of the large faded single animals painted in attitudes of *serene calm*. This art is the art of the beautiful polychrome eland. Overlying this old art is the second art of human beings in action. This is Bushman art.'

At Oenpelli, where the two major art styles are similar to those in Europe and South Africa, the static, colourful X-ray art which pictures, almost entirely, animals, birds, reptiles and fish, has overlaid the small-figured, vital, monochromatic art of the *Mimi*.

Thus, in Europe, the two arts existed side by side; in South Africa, the colourful art of the animal is the older; while at Oenpelli the colourful, but static, X-ray art is the more recent. We do not know why these dissimilar art expressions, so widely separated, should resemble each other in form but not in sequence.

(d) Cave paintings as increase centres

Oenpelli is the only place that we know of in Arnhem Land where certain cave paintings are believed to be the actual body of one or another of the mythical ancestors, paintings which are regarded as an inexhaustible source of the life essence from which its present-day counterparts can be created by simple increase ceremonies. In these ceremonies the appropriate rituals and chants force some of the life essence, say, in the gar-fish at Unbalanja (Pl. 82E), to leave the painting, enter the water and grow into living gar-fish, so that the aborigines can have food.⁵⁰ At Unbalanja, Inagurdurwil and Obiri, I saw and photographed increase centres for fish, plants and snakes, and through the medium of the bark paintings gathered details of many others.

(e) Spirit people

While the aborigines of Oenpelli have a multitude of spirit people living in the country about them, other Australian tribes, so far as we know, have but few. This contrast provides an ethnological puzzle for which our present knowledge of aboriginal beliefs is unable to provide an answer. Perhaps the culture responsible for the *Mimi* drawings brought with it the belief in a multitude of spirit people.

(f) Cave paintings used in sympathetic magic

The use of art to punish an enemy or a defaulting wife by sympathetic magic is probably more widespread in Australia than our present records indicate.

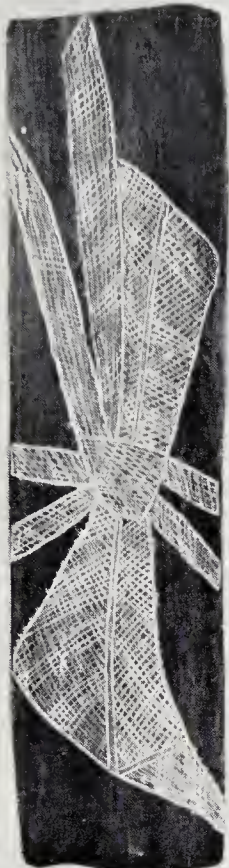
48. Frobenius (1937), p. 26.

49. Battiss (1951), p. 145.

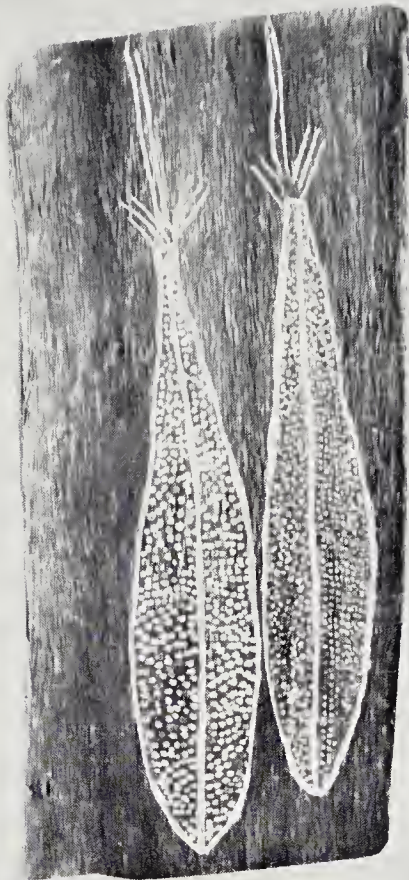
50. Some of the cave paintings of north-western Australia are associated with the *Wandjina* mythical beings. The retouching of these paintings causes the rain to fall. I recently investigated a cave painting at Yuendumu, Central Australia, which the aborigines believed was the body of a mythical snake. The painting was an increase centre for the children of that totem.



A



B



C



D



E

PLATE 84. Bark paintings and ceremonies, Oenpelli

A The yam, garabara
C The yam, mungait

B Totem place of the yam, garabara
D Body markings of the yam, garabara
E Body markings of the yam, mungait

Spencer and Gillen⁵¹ described the Central Australian procedure for punishing a wife by drawing her figure on the ground and chanting songs over it. Elkin and the Berndts⁵² refer to similar practices at Oenpelli. In the myth associated with the bark paintings of a *Mimi* woman, p. 183, the man causes the death of his future wife by painting her image on the wall of the cave, and then chanting songs of evil magic over it.⁵³

(g) The high development of cave art in western Arnhem Land

The fact that the cave art reaches a higher development within the limited area of the western face of the Arnhem Land plateau than elsewhere in Australia might well be explained by an examination of the conditions under which the aborigines live.

During the dry season, when the extensive flood plains of the Alligator Rivers have dried up, the aborigines roam far and wide, the men spearing animals, waterfowl and fish, and the women collecting underground tubers, fruit and wild rice. During that season their life is one of continuous movement. But when the wet season comes and the torrential rains of the monsoons inundate the flood plains for hundreds of square miles, turning the hunting grounds into quagmires and dispersing the fish and waterfowl, the aborigines are forced to spend much of their time in the shelter of the caves of the plateau.

It has been well proved that art can only develop in a community whose members have leisure and materials with which to exercise their talents. These conditions most certainly operate at Oenpelli during the time of the monsoons. The aboriginal artists have ample leisure—the almost incessant storms and flooded country see to that; they are surrounded by suitable surfaces on which to paint; they always carry with them a store of coloured ochres; and the fact that many people are congregated together in one place provides an audience to appreciate their efforts, a necessity for any artist, for it has been well said that art cannot exist in a vacuum.

51. Spencer and Gillen (1899), p. 549.

52. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 80.

53. Killing or injuring an enemy by sympathetic magic is widespread among primitive and peasant people. Frazer (1933), chap. II.

PART FOUR
THE ART OF YIRRKALLA



Bark painting, Yirkalla
The rain-makers, Wuluwait and Bunbulama

4

THE ART OF YIRRKALLA

DURING THE EIGHT weeks the expedition camped at Yirrkalla¹ my research was concentrated on bark paintings, carved animal and human figures, and their associated myths.

F. M. Setzler and F. D. McCarthy, while engaged on archaeological research at Milingimbi, collected several painted ceremonial objects from that locality. The Rev. Arthur F. Ellemor also arranged for the aborigines of Milingimbi to make a number of bark paintings for me. These objects and bark paintings from Milingimbi are valuable because they indicate little change in the art forms over north-eastern Arnhem Land. Setzler and McCarthy also assisted me in the interpretation of some of the Yirrkalla bark paintings.

When I returned to Yirrkalla for a short period during 1952 I was able to check the work of other investigators as well as my own. As the art forms of both Yirrkalla and Milingimbi are similar they will be treated as one unit from north-east Arnhem Land.

Barrett² figured cave paintings from the Wessel Islands, as well as fish and animals which the aboriginal children moulded in the sand. The Berndts³ described a series of sacred carved figures from Yirrkalla and later⁴ another series of secular carved figures from the same area; they⁵ also published a myth of the moon and the words of the song belonging to it. Elkin and the Berndts⁶ described a number of bark paintings, carved animal and human figures, and ceremonial objects. It is, however, from Warner's⁷ descriptions and analyses of the culture of the aborigines of north-eastern Arnhem Land that we have learned so much about the mythology, philosophy, social organization and the clan and language groups of north-eastern Arnhem Land. Thomson⁸ has described the movement of goods and the trade cycles of eastern Arnhem Land.

1. BARK PAINTINGS, DECORATED OBJECTS AND MYTHS

(1) HUMAN BEINGS

The Man, Djungkgo

Among the aborigines of Arnhem Land the myths of the *Wawalik* sisters and of the *Djungkgo* form the bases of all the important ceremonies, the myth of the *Wawalik* for the *gunabibi*, *ulmark*, *djungguan* and *marndiella* rituals, and the myth of *Djungkgo* for the *dua* and *jivitja narra* rituals.⁹

1. Map, Fig. 1.

3. Berndt (1948), pp. 309-26.

5. Berndt (1948a), pp. 17-50.

7. Warner (1937).

2. Barrett and Croll (1943), p. 70.

4. Berndt (1949), pp. 213-20, Pl. 1-3.

6. Elkin and the Berndts (1950).

8. Thomson (1949).

9. Warner (1937), p. 244.

ARNHEM LAND: ART, MYTH AND SYMBOLISM

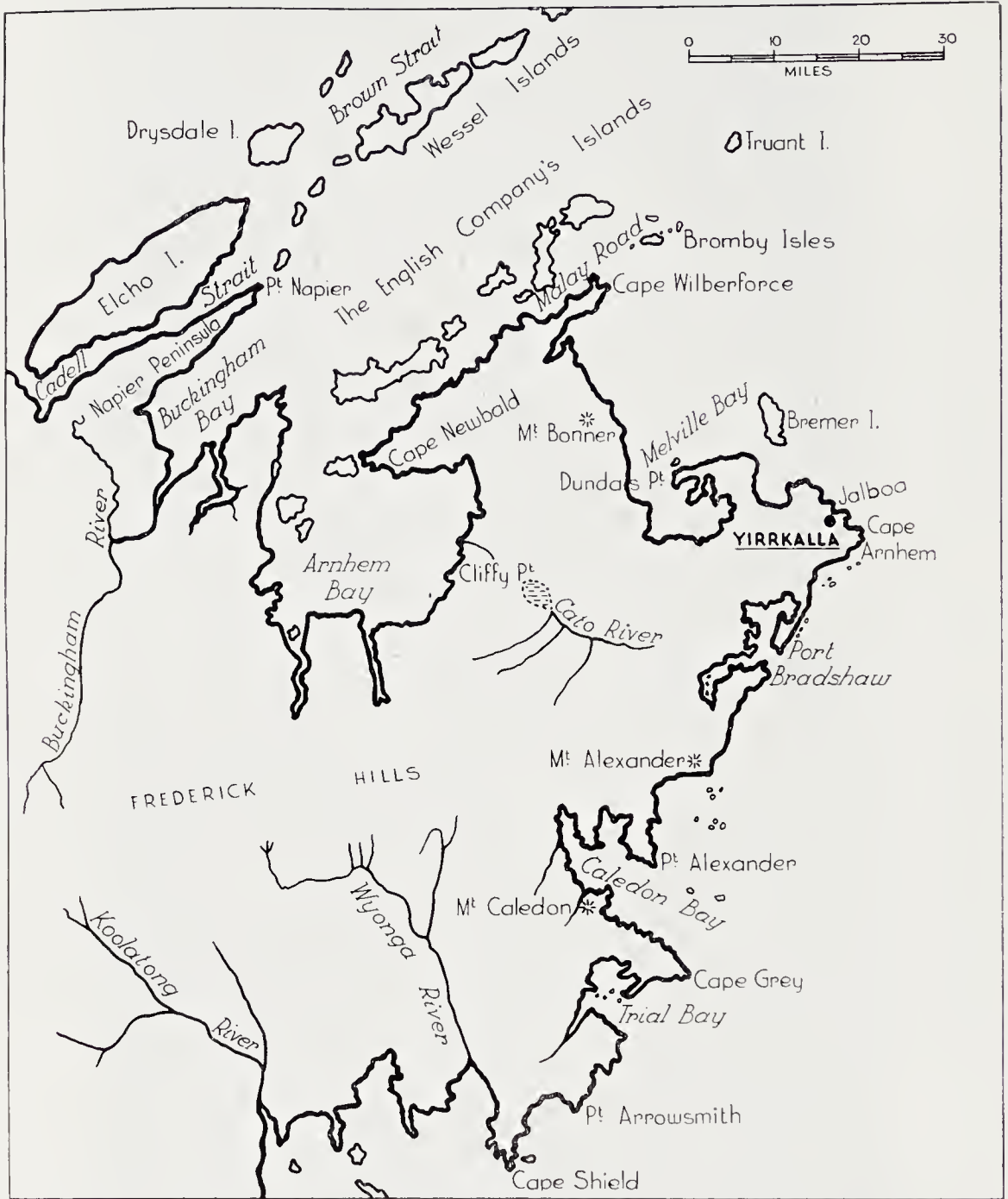


FIG. 57. Yirkalla area

The *Wawalik* myth appears to belong more particularly to the western side of Arnhem Land, and the *Djungkao* myth to the eastern. The former myth appears to be the more complete; in fact, in some localities the myth of *Djungkao* actually takes on some of the elements of that of the *Wawalik* sisters (p. 278). On the eastern side of Arnhem Land *Djungkao* is a man; on the western side, two

women. In my collections of bark paintings there is, fortunately, a series dealing with the *Djungkao* myth, which is associated with localities extending from Port Bradshaw, in the Gulf of Carpentaria, to Goulburn Island on the north coast. These paintings show a gradual shift from male to female dominance as the myth moves westward.

At Jelangbara, near Port Bradshaw, where *Djungkao*¹⁰ and his sister first landed, it was *Djungkao* with his digging sticks who created most of the waterholes and topography, his sister being relatively unimportant. At Arnhem Bay¹¹ some thirty miles westward, although *Djungkao* created the waterholes, he was under the dominance of his sister, *Madalait*. About fifty miles west of Arnhem Bay, and south of Elcho Island, is a sacred waterhole, Milmigarak, which was created by the *Djungkao*, who by then had become two sisters, instead of brother and sister. Some elements of the *Wawalik* myth are incorporated in this one.¹² In the *Djungkao* myths of the Milingimbi area, recorded by Warner,¹³ the *Djungkao* are two important female ancestors who named the animals, plants and birds, and created many sacred waterholes.

As most of the bark paintings dealing with *Djungkao* have separate myths, each painting will be described in association with the relevant myth.

Djungkao and Madalait at Port Bradshaw

The myths associated with this collection of bark paintings, carved figures and ceremonial objects deal with both the arrival of *Djungkao* and his sister *Madalait* at Port Bradshaw¹⁴ and the origin of some of the totemic designs of the *riredjingu* language (*mata*) group associated with the *Djungkao* at Port Bradshaw.

In early *bumun* (creation) times *Djungkao*, his wife *Walo*, the sun-woman¹⁵ their daughter, *Bara-bararinja* and *Madalait*, his sister, lived at Tjurinjina, a place far across the water to the east of Yirrkalla.¹⁶

One day *Djungkao*, having decided to go on a journey to Port Bradshaw, set out in his bark canoe, taking his sister with him, but leaving his wife, the sun-

10. Myth, p. 273.

11. Myth, p. 275.

12. Myth, p. 275.

13. Warner (1937), p. 336.

14. The carved figures and ceremonial objects are described in Part 5.

15. Berndt (1952), p. 3, states that the Djanggawul [*Djungkao*] people were closely associated with the sun. One myth tells that the sun had two daughters who later became the *Djungkao* sisters. In the myth of the sun, p. 502, which I collected in association with the relevant bark painting, Pl. 85E, the sun-woman, *Walo*, was the wife of *Djungkao*. Their home was not at Puralko (Berndt's Bralku or Bralgu), but at Tjurinjina, some distance beyond.

16. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 28, state that Djanggawul [Warner's and my *Djungkao*], his two sisters, Maralaitj [my *Madalait*] and Pildjiwureroiju, and a companion, Beralberal, came from Bralku [Warner's and my Puralko]. Later Berndt (1952), p. 2, corrects this statement and records that the party 'came from a far distant country, and on their way to the Arnhem Land mainland stopped at Bralgu [Puralko], the *dua* moiety island of the dead.'

My aboriginal informants were definite that the *Djungkao* party came, not from Puralko, the *dua* 'heaven', but from Tjurinjina which, although it lies in the same general direction as Puralko, is not the same place. This statement, and Berndt's later correction, are important because they dispose of the evidence that an important mythical ancestor originated in the home of the dead, evidence which might give rise to a theory that the aborigines of Yirrkalla believe in reincarnation.

woman, *Walo*, and daughter, *Bara-bavarinja*, behind. On their way the brother and sister passed and named Urapingboi, Bauadi, Garangaranbi, Kakoubi, Waipingboi, Takalpa and Bilapinja Islands.

When passing Takalpa Island *Djungkao*, hearing the calls of the flying foxes, *maiakou*, picked up his music sticks¹⁷ and made a song about these creatures and their calls.

Djungkao beached his canoe on the sandy shore of Bilapinja Island, and on looking back saw his wife, the sun-woman, sending out great banners of light across the eastern sky as she rose from her camp at Tjurinjina in readiness for her daily journey. The light from the sunrise was, in turn, reflected from the crests of the waves as they broke on the shore. The spectacle pleased *Djungkao* so much that he composed a series of songs about the sunrise, the reflected light from the waves and the sounds made by the waves as they rushed across the sand.¹⁸ He also decreed that the sunrise and the light on the waves should be both his 'mark' and that of his descendants forever.¹⁹

Djungkao made another song when he heard the harsh call of the black cockatoo, *natili* (*Calyptorhynchus banksi*), and two more at Waipingboi Island, one describing a hawksbill turtle, *kouwaradji*, he saw floating on the surface of the water, the other about the oyster-catcher, *kalaka*, seated on a rock.²⁰

As *Djungkao* and *Madalait* were paddling along the shores of Aparina Island, near the entrance of Port Bradshaw, he was attracted by the beauty of the light reflected from the ridges on the sea-shore and the meandering lines left on the wet beach by the sand-dollars.²¹ Again, these were the subject of a song. At Aparina, the *Baijini*²² were cooking trepang on his, the *dua*, side of the island. *Djungkao* ordered them to leave, made a song about the incident and taking two of the paddles from the *Baijini* as a punishment, crossed the sea to Jelangbara, a place north of the entrance to Port Bradshaw.²³

As the two ancestors walked inland, they admired the lines of sand-hills at Jelangbara which, they thought, resembled the waves of the sea. *Djungkao* also noticed a *dua* lizard, *tjunda*, walking along the crest of one of the drifting sand-hills, and the lines of sand that ran down either side of the sand-hill from under his feet. He made songs about these incidents, and, at the same time, decreed that whenever the *dua* men of that locality painted the design of the lizard, *tjunda*, they must always include the parallel marks of the running sand.²⁴

Djungkao and *Madalait* always carried a digging stick in each hand which they pushed into the ground as they went along.²⁵ At Jelangbara, *murinja* trees (*Casuarina equisetifolia*) still grow at those places. At the end of the day, the

17. Pl. 132E, F, illustrates the music stick of *Djungkao*.

18. Bark painting, Pl. 85E, left-hand panel.

20. Bark painting, Pl. 85A.

22. Pl. 87B.

24. Bark painting, Pl. 86D.

25. In other localities, the holes made by the digging sticks became sacred wells. Pl. 85E, right-hand side.

19. Bark painting, Pl. 85E, left-hand panel.

21. Pl. 88D.

23. Bark painting, Pl. 85B.

brother and sister made their respective camps some distance apart by pushing back the sand-hills.²⁶ Next morning *Djungkao* and *Madalait* moved westward and, according to the Yirrkalla informants, again made camps at Arnhem Bay,²⁷ Napier Peninsula,²⁸ Milingimbi,²⁹ Goulburn Island,³⁰ and Cape Don.

The aborigines of the *dua* moiety produced fourteen bark paintings, two carved figures and five decorated ceremonial objects,³¹ all dealing with the myth of *Djungkao* and *Madalait*.

Djungkao at Bilapinja Island

The left-hand side of Pl. 85E and the upper panel of Pl. 86C describe the sunwoman, *Walo*, rising from her camp at Tjurinjina at the same time as *Djungkao* and his sister, *Madalait*, beached their canoe on Bilapinja Island.³² The diagonal lines are the rays of light from the sunrise, and the parallel lines, the light reflected from the crests of the incoming waves. The bands of yellow, black and white across the disc of the sun are symbolic of the red-feathered string ornaments which the sun-woman wore round her head and waist as she travelled across the sky.

Djungkao at Waipingboi Island

As *Djungkao* and *Madalait* were passing Waipingboi Island the former made a song about a hawksbill turtle, *kouwavadji*, in the water, and an oyster-catcher, *kalaka* (*Hoematopus ostralegus*) seated on a rock. The turtle is now a boulder which is submerged at high tide, and the oyster-catcher a tall pillar of rock projecting above the water.

On the upper panel of Pl. 85A is the hawksbill turtle, and below, the oyster-catcher. The cross-hatched panels symbolize the seas breaking over the totemic rocks.

Djungkao and the Sand-dollars at Aparina

When *Djungkao* was paddling along the coast of Aparina Island he noticed the light reflected from both the ridges left in the wet sand by the receding tide and the marks made by the sand-dollars (*Laganum depressum*) as they moved along the wet beach.

The panels of dots on Pl. 85D are the sand-dollars, which are still numerous in that locality, and the cross-hatched panels, the light reflecting from the ridges on the beach made by the sand-dollars.³³

Djungkao and the Baijini at Aparina Island

When *Djungkao* and his sister landed on Aparina Island they found that the *Baijini*³⁴ (who were *jiritja* people) were cooking trepang on the *dua* half of

26. Bark painting, Pl. 85E, right-hand panel.

27. Bark painting, Pl. 87C.

29. Bark painting, Pl. 87D.

31. Described in Part 5.

33. Pl. 88D shows the tracks of sand-dollars.

28. Bark painting, Pl. 87A.

30. Bark painting, Pl. 86E.

32. The right-hand side of Pl. 85E will be described on p. 273.

34. The *Baijini* were a fair-skinned people who came to Port Bradshaw to collect trepang. They are now included in the mythological stories, p. 333.

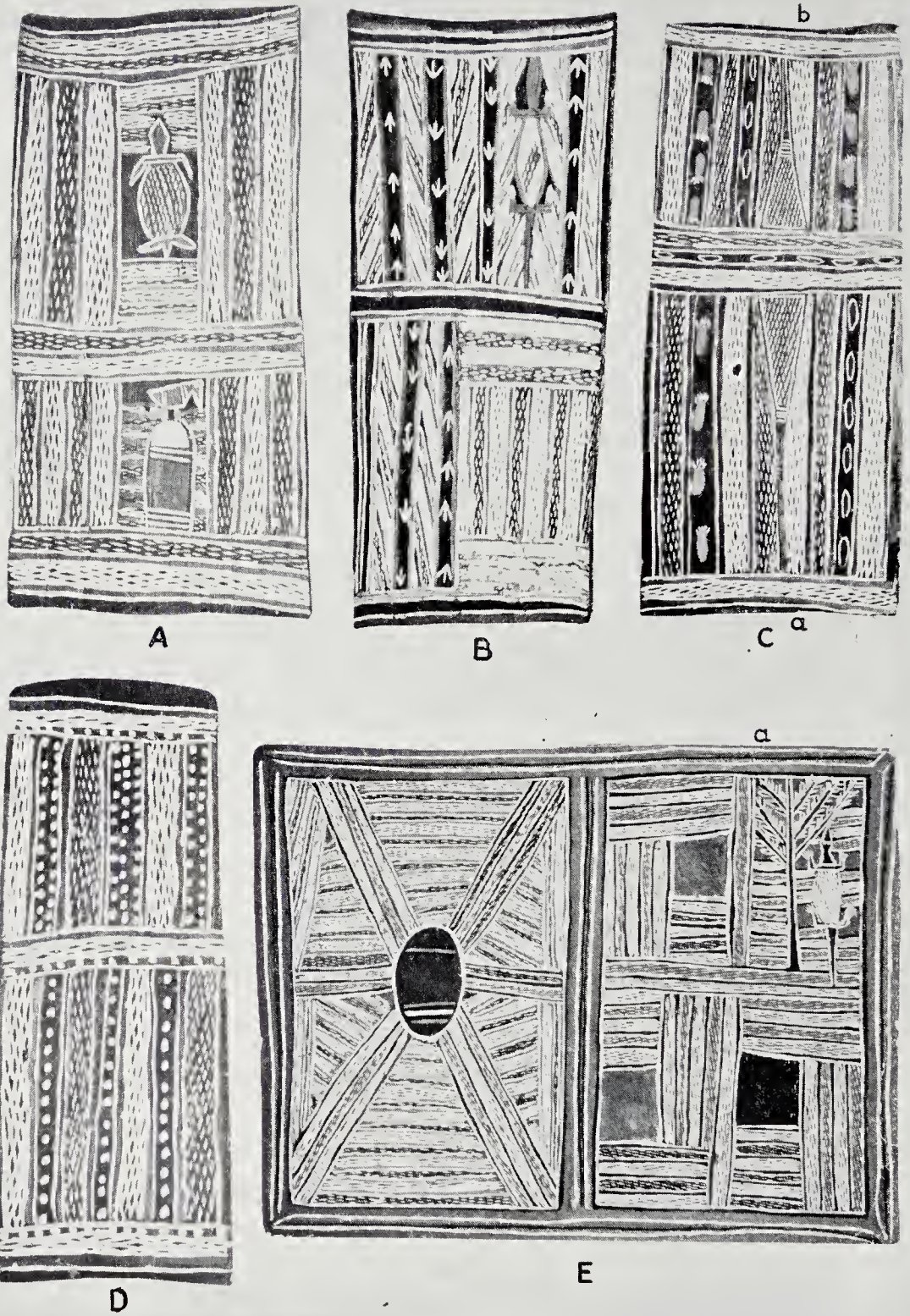


PLATE 85. Bark paintings, Yirkalla

- A Djungkao at Waipingboi Island
 B Djungkao and the lizard, tjunda
 C Djungkao and the Baijini
 D Djungkao at Aparina
 E Djungkao and Madalait at Bilapinja Island and Jelangbara

the island. *Djungkao* asked the *Baijini* to shift their camp to the *jiritja* side, and as a punishment for their trespass confiscated two of their paddles. Two bark paintings deal with this part of the *Djungkao* myth.

On the lower-left and right-hand panels of Pl. 87B are the paddles which *Djungkao* took from the *Baijini* as a punishment. The cross-hatched panels throughout the painting symbolize both the fires used for the cooking of the trepang and the ashes and charcoal from those fires. The lootmarks are those of the *Baijini*.

On Pl. 85C the meanings are similar. Paddles *a* and *b* are those which once belonged to the *Baijini*. On either side of these are lines of *Baijini* footprints. The intermediate cross-hatched panels indicate the ashes and charcoal from the cooking fires.

Djungkao and Madaloit at Jelangbara

When *Djungkao* and *Madaloit* reached Jelangbara, north of the entrance of Port Bradshaw, they admired the parallel sand-hills and the lizard, *tjunda*, which lived among them. When *Djungkao* saw the lines of soft sand which ran from under the feet of the lizard as it walked along the crest of a sand-hill, he decreed that this would be the mark of his people forever, i.e. the *rivedjingu mata*³⁵ design.

Plate 86A is the sand-hill and lizard design decreed by *Djungkao*. In the centre is *tjunda*, with the running sand design on either side of it. The groups of parallel cross-hatched panels on the left represent the light on the breaking waves seen by *Djungkao* at Bilapinja Island, and on the right the parallel sand-hills at Jelangbara.

Plate 86B refers to the lizard, *tjunda*, and its tracks in the sand. The central vertical panel, *a*, is the sand-hill at Jelangbara along which the lizard travelled. The meandering line indicates the mark of his tail, and the herring-bone pattern, the sand disturbed by the feet of *tjunda* running down the slope of the sand-hill. The lizard travelled toward the top of the painting on the left-hand side and toward the bottom on the right.

Plate 86D depicts the lizard at Jelangbara, with the parallel lines of running sand on either side of it. The black semicircles are holes the lizard dug at the totemic place, the cross-hatched vertical panels the sand thrown out, and the series of meandering lines the mark of the lizard's tail in the sand.

The left-hand side of the painting, Pl. 85E, which deals with the sunrise, was described on p. 271. The groups of parallel lines on the right-hand panel refer to the sand-hills which *Djungkao* and his sister admired at Jelangbara. The three dark-coloured squares³⁶ are patches of bare earth among the sand-hills,

35. See *mata* design, Fig. 64D.

36. Although my aboriginal informants stated that there was only one woman, *Madaloit*, in the canoe with *Djungkao*, the fact that there are three camps shown in this bark painting suggests that, as recorded by Berndt (1952), p. 2, there were two. There is no evidence, however, that the man, *Bralbral*, accompanied them.

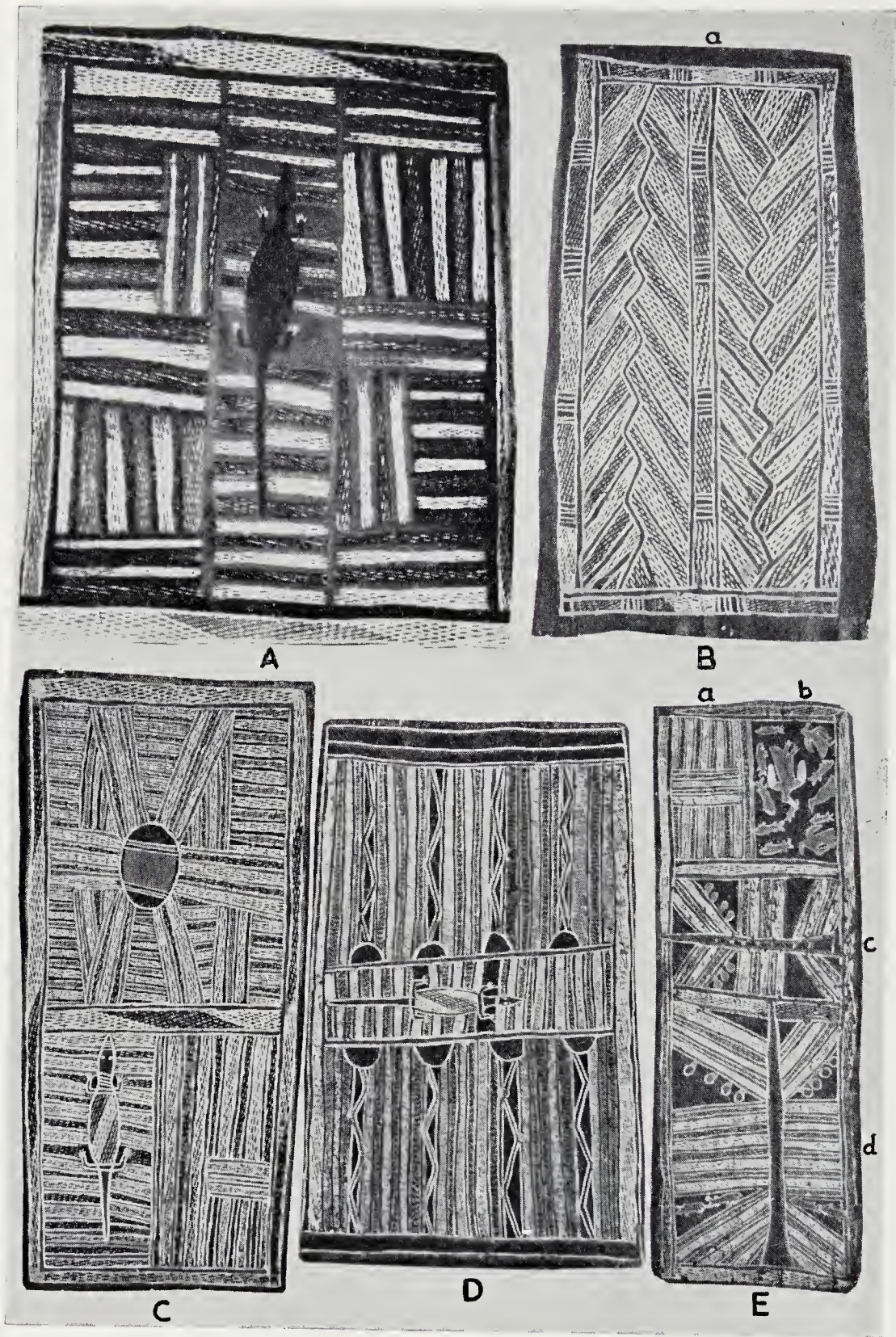


PLATE 86. Bark paintings, Yirkalla
 A, B, C, D Djungkao and Madalait at Jelangbara
 E The Djungkao sisters at Goulburn Island

once the camp of *Djungkao* and his sister. The aborigines pointed out that, because *Djungkao* and *Madalait* were brother and sister, their camps were some distance apart.

At *a* is the lizard *tjunda* resting under one of the *murinja* (casuarina) trees created by *Djungkao*. The groups of parallel lines on either side of the lizard indicate again the lines of soft sand which ran from under its feet as it walked along the crest of the sand-hill.

Plate 86C is more or less a duplicate of Pl. 85E. It is included because of the attractive design and fine brush work. The meanings are similar, the upper panel representing the sunrise, the lower right the parallel sand-hills, and the lower left the lizard, *tjunda*, at Jelangbara.

Djungkao and the Lizard, Tjunda

Plate 85B pictures the lizard, *tjunda*, associated with *Djungkao*, at a *dua* totemic place at Arnhem Bay. The painting is figured because it is an example of how the different language groups illustrate similar subjects. The language group, or *mata*, of Port Bradshaw pictures the running sand design on either side of the lizard, *tjunda*,³⁷ while the members of the *kapin mata* of Arnhem Bay modify the design by replacing the running sand design with that of the leaves of the *darra* palm leaf.³⁸ The tracks are those of the swamp-bird, *buorta*.³⁹

Djungkao and Madalait at Arnhem Bay

When *Djungkao* and *Madalait* reached Arnhem Bay, *Djungkao* pushed his digging sticks into the ground and created many fresh-water springs. When the water started to rise *Djungkao* told his sister that the wells would be sacred and that she would be in charge.

Plate 87C pictures the open plain and swamp country near Arnhem Bay, some of which is periodically covered by the sea. The small circles at the junctions of the straight lines are the springs created by *Djungkao*, the diagonal lines the channels made in the mud of the mangrove swamps by the water flowing from the sacred wells, and the footmarks those of a mangrove curlew (*Numenius madagascariensis*).⁴⁰

The Djungkao Sisters at Milmigarak

This myth refers to the two *Djungkao* sisters⁴¹ at the Milmigarak waterhole, situated on the Napier Peninsula, south of Elcho Island. In mythical times the two sisters, after travelling extensively over the surrounding country and naming

37. *Mata* design, Fig. 64D.

38. *Mata* design, Fig. 64E.

39. The tracks of the same bird are present on the music stick of *Madalait*, Pl. 133E, F, and on the painted coffin, Pl. 102A.

40. This is the design of the *Nainmeri mata* of Arnhem Bay, Fig. 64C.

41. As mentioned earlier, p. 269, the *Djungkao* group changed from a brother and sister to two sisters as the myth moved westward.

the various creatures and plants, created a sacred waterhole, Milmigarak, which later was inhabited by the giant mythical serpent, *wangaruk*.

One day the elder sister, when dipping water from the springs, accidentally polluted it with her menstrual blood.⁴² This pollution so annoyed the serpent that he caused the water to boil over, i.e. flow out.⁴³ Even at the present day, when *wangaruk* becomes annoyed by the presence of unauthorized trespassers, he tries to leave the waterhole. But as soon as his head is visible the aboriginal medicine-men send him back by singing powerful chants, for should *wangaruk* start wandering over the land he would destroy everyone.

Wangaruk is of great length and size. He has a prominent nose, large eyes and a luxuriant beard. His head, however, is entirely bald, having the same appearance as a grey weathered boulder.⁴⁴ Although *wangaruk* has a voice like thunder, he does not appear to be associated with either the rain or the rainbow. Only the old men of the tribe are allowed to visit Milmigarak, drink its waters, or catch its fish.

On Pl. 87A the cross-hatched disc in the centre of the painting is the waterhole, Milmigarak. The other discs are non-sacred waters in the surrounding country, and the parallel lines native roads between them. The darker-coloured cross-hatched panels *a*, *b*, etc., represent the menstrual blood of the *Djungkao* sister which polluted the waterhole.

The Djungkao Sisters at Milingimbi

This is a fragment of a myth from Milingimbi, which relates how the *Djungkao* women created a spring of water at Milnur, a place on the mainland, south of Elcho Island.

On Pl. 87D the two women, shown as lizards, with their carrying-baskets beside them, occupy the upper part of the painting. The design below symbolizes the sacred waterhole created by them.⁴⁵

The Djungkao Sisters at Goulburn Island

Plate 86E depicts a swamp at Goulburn Island which is associated with the *Djungkao* sisters.

On panel *b* are a number of water-birds catching fish, one of them having a fish in its mouth. Panel *a*, which is similar to the sand-hill design of the *rivedjingu mata* of Port Bradshaw,⁴⁶ represents the ripples on the swamp caused by the water-birds as they chase the fish.

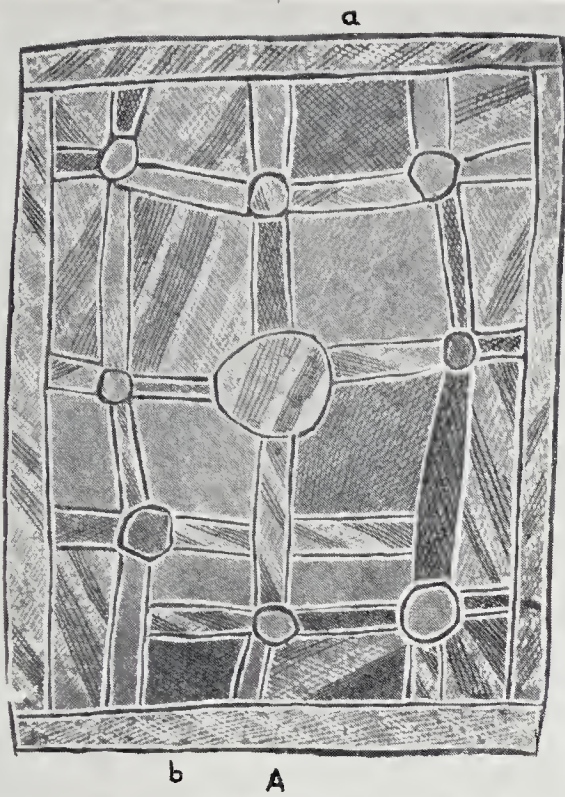
42. This fragment has been borrowed from the *Wawalik* myth, see p. 278.

43. The mythical serpents in the Oenpelli area cause their waterholes to overflow when they are annoyed (see p. 208, p. 218, etc.).

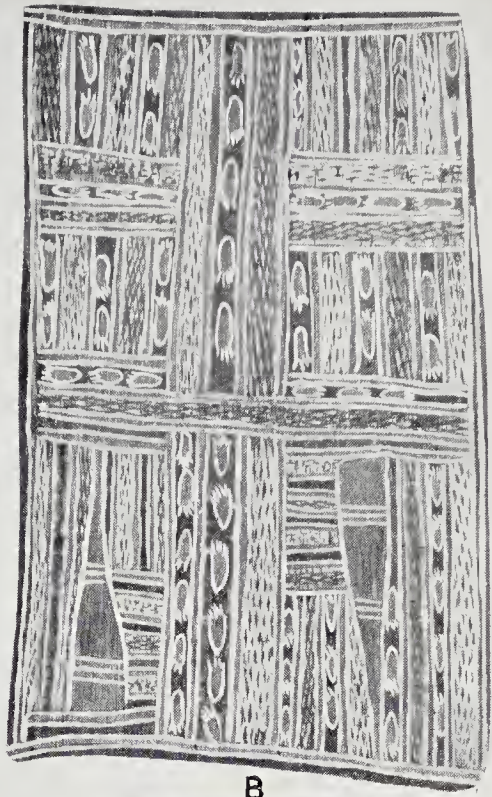
44. The head of the mythical serpent living in the spring near the Elcho Island mission station is said to resemble a stone.

45. This design is similar to that used for the sacred wells, shown in Pl. 87A. This may be a *mata* design belonging to a *dua* language group (see Fig. 64F).

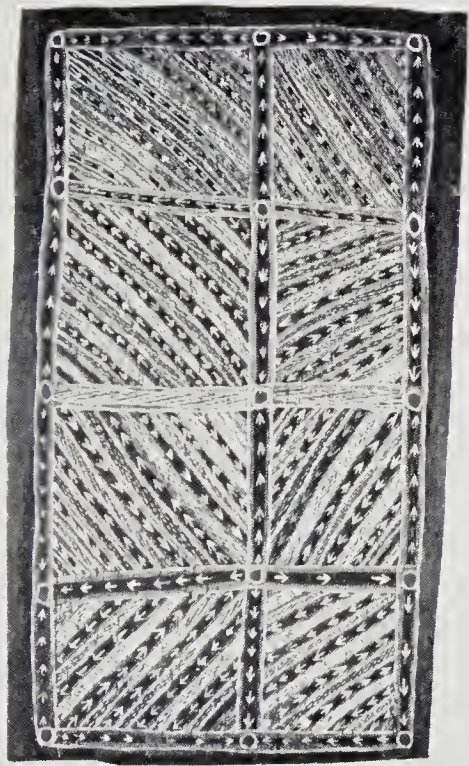
46. The same design is present on a crayon drawing dealing with *Djungkao* at Port Bradshaw. Berndt, 1952, Pl. 7.



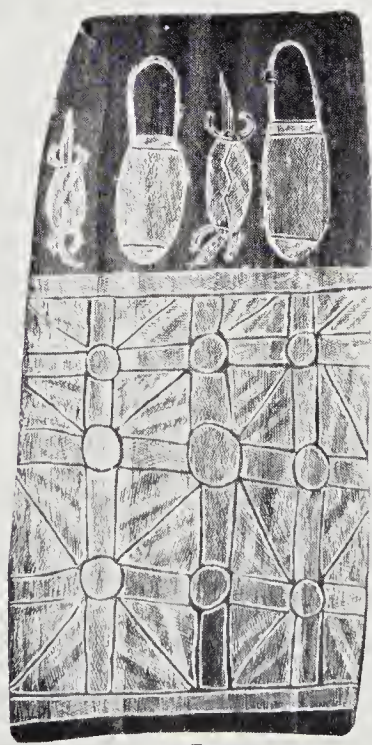
b A



B



C



D

PLATE 87. Bark paintings, Yirkalla

A The Djungkao sisters at Milmigarak
 C Djungkao and Madalait at Arnhem Bay

B Djungkao and the Baijini
 D The Djungkao sisters at Milingimbi

In panel *c* are unidentified palm trees with fruit hanging from their upper branches.⁴⁷ The upper sloping lines are the branches, the lower, the water flowing around the roots, and the cross-hatched central band the swamp.

The Wawalik Sisters

The story of the travels of the *Wawalik*⁴⁸ sisters is the basis of four great ceremonial cycles, the *djungguan*, the *gunabibi*, the *ulmark* and the *marndiella*. It is one of the most important myths of north and north-eastern Arnhem Land.

The myth associated with the bark painting (Pl. 88A), although abridged and differing somewhat from Warner's *Wawilak* myth, nevertheless contains the basic elements, i.e. the naming of the plants and food animals, their flight when placed on the fire, the profanement of the sacred pool, and the swallowing and later regurgitation of the women by the serpent, *jurlungur*.

At Yirrkalla the aborigines told me that the *Wawalik* sisters came from a locality far away to the west. As they travelled they collected and named all the yams. They are: *arituna*, black inside; *jakwa*,⁴⁹ white inside; *mawoka*, milky white inside, with a black stem; *dilkarun*, with hair from its roots like a beard; *wunga-rapu*, red inside with black roots; *kungari*, a large round yam that must be soaked all night to make it edible; and many others. The sisters also caught and named a number of the food animals and reptiles—the kangaroo, *karitjimba*, the lizard, *tjunda*, the bandicoot, *warnt-kura*, the blanket lizard, *baltjira*, to mention but a few.

When they reached a waterhole called Mirrimina,⁵⁰ the elder sister, who was pregnant, begged her companion to make a camp because she felt that she was about to give birth to her child. The younger woman quickly built a bark hut, placed her sister inside, then lit a fire to cook the yams. However, no sooner had she placed them on the fire than they all came to life and ran away. Again she tried to prepare a meal, this time placing the dead animals and reptiles on the coals, but they too became alive and escaped into the forest. Both of the *Wawalik* women then retired into the hut and soon afterward the elder sister gave birth to a son.

In the bottom of the nearby waterhole, Mirrimina, lived a huge mythical brown python called *jurlungur* (non-sacred name, *witik*). The odour of the blood of the birth so annoyed him that he first came to the surface and sent flashes of lightning into the sky, then, leaving his waterhole, approached the

47. Panel *a* resembles the *mata* design of the *riredjingu* language group of Port Bradshaw (Fig. 63D), and the sloping lines on panel *d* that of the *kapin mata* (Fig. 63E).

48. The *Wawalik* myth and the four ceremonies are described and analysed in considerable detail by Warner (1937), p. 335. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 32, make a short reference to the same myth and ceremonies. Berndt (1951a) also describes the *kuaapipi* (*gunabibi*).

49. The yam, *jakwa*, was also created by *Maibuno*, the wife of *Borolo-borolo*, p. 341. The flower of the yam, *mawoka*, is used by the spirits at Dambalia (Bremer Island). See myth of journey of the dead, p. 323.

50. Warner (1937), p. 251.

hut to punish the women. When the women saw the enraged serpent approaching, they sang many magical songs⁵¹ and danced many powerful dances, to send the serpent back to his waterhole, but he still came on. In desperation, the women went inside and blocked the openings of their hut with bark and leaves to keep *jurlungur* at bay. But the serpent pushed his head inside, swallowed the child, then the younger and finally the elder sister. He then returned to the waterhole, but later came again to the surface and regurgitated the women and child, whose bodies are now large rocks.

On Pl. 88A, the rectangle at the top represents the bark hut built by the women. Within are the two *Wawalik* sisters and the newly-born child. *Jurlungur*, at the bottom, *a*, is leaving his sacred well. In the next position the serpent has encircled the hut, thrust his head inside and swallowed the child. On the lower right, he is returning to the sacred well of Mirrimina after having swallowed the whole family.

The designs on either side of *jurlungur* at *a* represent the water in the sacred Mirrimina well. The central parallel lines, with the footmarks between them, indicate the path of the women leading to the hut. The design to the left of the path symbolizes the blood which offended *jurlungur*, and that to the left, dry ground. The designs on the right-hand edge of the painting again represent the water in the sacred well of Mirrimina.

Banaitja and his Son, or Counterpart, Laitjun, at Blue Mud Bay

*Banaitja*⁵² and his son, or counterpart, *Laitjun*, are to the *jiritja* moiety of eastern Arnhem Land what *Djunkgao*, his sister *Madalait* and the *Wawalik* sisters are to the *dua*. Neither the mythology nor the ceremonies of *Banaitja* and *Laitjun* are as varied or as extensive as those of the *dua* ancestors.

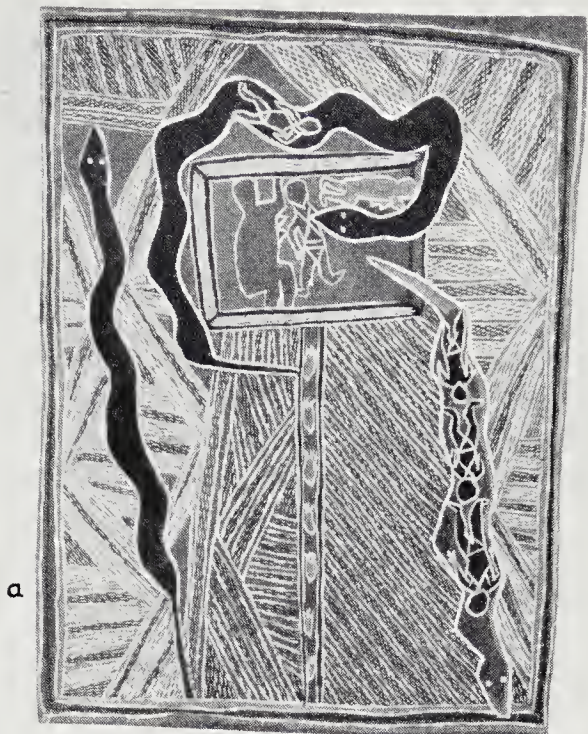
Banaitja came from the south-west⁵³ to Blue Mud Bay during the time that ordinary men and women lived in the world. He was a huge man, with deep chest and long powerful limbs, who always carried a long spear, called *balinin*, and a spear-thrower, on one end of which was a tassel of human hair.⁵⁴ As he walked around the countryside he shouted 'Wah-wah' in a voice so loud that

51. One of the songs which the sisters sang is still used by the women in the *ulmark* ceremonies when they hear the sound of the log gong. This sound is supposed to be the voice of the serpent (Warner, 1937, p. 314).

52. In some of the myths *Banaitja* recreated himself in the name of *Laitjun*, in another he is the father of *Laitjun*, and in still another he travelled as *Banaitja* through a number of localities, including Cape Arnhem. The fact, however, that Warner (1937), p. 364, in his description of the *jiritja narra* ceremonies of Milingimbi refers only casually to *Banaitja*, and makes no reference whatever to *Laitjun*, suggests both that the *Banaitja* myth is unimportant in the Milingimbi area, and that the creation of *Laitjun* is only a local development in the Blue Mud Bay area.

53. The carved figure of *Banaitja*, Pl. 135A, B, shows him to be sub-incised. As sub-incision is not practised in Arnhem Land, this would suggest that the *Banaitja* myth extends south into the area of sub-incision.

54. A similar spear-thrower was used by the members of the *wirinikapara* moiety (equivalent to the *jiritja*) during the ceremonial bathing of the *arawaltja* rituals of Grootc Eylandt, p. 56.



a

A



B



c

b

a

C



D

PLATE 88. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla
 A The Wawalik sisters B Laitjun C Banaitja
 D Marks of the sand-dollars at Aparina

the aborigines either ran into the forest to hide themselves or climbed the trees to get out of his way. But when the aboriginal men saw that *Banaitja* was making his camp on the Duluru-waltjalapa swamp, which was close to their territory, they decided to kill him. Waiting until *Banaitja* was asleep, the aborigines crept up and cast many spears into his body. Roaring with pain, *Banaitja* jumped into the swamp, calling out as he sank beneath the water:

'You'll never kill me properly. I'll come again before long.'

For many days *Banaitja* stayed on the bottom of the swamp, pulling the spears from his body and waiting for his wounds to heal. Then one day he rose from the water, his body covered with painted designs and carrying in his right hand a bundle of paper-bark⁵⁵ tightly bound with string, with which he started to beat the ground, the dull thudding sounds of which so frightened the aborigines that they all ran away.

Banaitja called to the adult men not to be afraid, for not only had he brought them many good things but he had much to tell them. After some hesitancy, the men gathered round to hear what he had to say. *Banaitja* first announced that he had changed his name to *Laitjun*. He then showed the members of each *mata* (language group) which designs they should paint both on their bodies and their sacred objects during the times of ceremony, so that everyone would know to which *mata* group the others belonged. The designs they would use were those he had painted on his own body.⁵⁶

As soon as each language group or *mata* had copied their own designs from his body, *Laitjun* transformed himself into a large white-barked eucalyptus tree which can still be seen on the shores of the Duluru-waltjalapa swamp of Blue Mud Bay.

As time went on the *jiritja* people became so contrite over the killing of *Banaitja* that they made a replica of his bark bundle, calling it by his name, *banaitja*. Each time the aborigines hear its dull thudding noise in the secret rituals they are reminded of their killing of the giant man and his gift to them.

Three bark paintings and a carved figure⁵⁷ belong to the myth of *Banaitja* or *Laitjun*.

Plate 88C pictures *Banaitja*, his death and his transformation, first into *Laitjun*, then into the white-barked eucalyptus tree at Blue Mud Bay. In panel *a*, the aborigines of Blue Mud Bay are spearing *Banaitja*. He is carrying his spear-thrower, but has no designs painted on his body. The group of short lines

55. The aborigines of Yirrkalla used a similar paper-bark bundle during the non-secret totemic rituals of the circumcision ceremony which, they told me, was similar to that used in the *Banaitja-Laitjun* ceremony. These bundles were identical with the *alukwira* (Pl. 16C) of the *awawaltja* ceremony of Groote Eylandt. Warner (1937), p. 502, mentions their use in the *dua narra* ceremonies.

Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 31, record that the aborigines, to commemorate *Banaitja*, 'made the "likeness" of *Banaitja* in paperbark, bound together on a framework of cane.' It would seem likely that the authors, having heard of the bark bundle, *banaitja*, gained a wrong impression of its appearance, and described it without having seen a specimen.

56. See carved figure, Pl. 135A, B.

57. This is figured and described on Pl. 135A, B.

at the lower part of his face represent his beard. In panel *b*, *Banaitja*, with many spears still embedded in him, is under the water of the Duluru-waltjalapa swamp. His body is already covered with the special designs which, later, he showed to the *jiritja* groups of north-eastern Arnhem Land. In panel *c*, *Banaitja*, now *Laitjun*, is showing those designs to the assembled *jiritja* tribesmen. To the right of *Laitjun* is the eucalyptus tree, upside-down, into which he later transformed himself. The other five figures in the same panel are those of aborigines beating the ground with the *banaitja* bundles of paper-bark. The cross-hatching to the right of *Laitjun* is the dust that rises when the aborigines beat the ground with the *banaitjas*.

Plate 88B is a painting of *Laitjun*. The designs on his body are those belonging to the *dalwongu* language group (*mata*) whose land is at Blue Mud Bay. He is wearing a sacred bag around his neck and feathered bands on his arms.

Plate 89C deals with three mythical men of the *jiritja* moiety, among them being *Laitjun*. Their names are, *a*, *Kalparimu*, *b*, *Barama*, *c*, *Laitjuu*. The zigzag lines joining the heads of the men together, at the feet of *a* and between *a* and *b*, depict the hair and *jiritja* string ornaments worn by the three men. The designs between *b* and *c* and to the right of *c* are those which were painted on the back of the men. Because the artist could not show the designs on the back of the figures, he has painted them alongside. The same design, which belongs to the *mangalili mata* of Blue Mud Bay, is repeated on the lower panel.

At the feet of *Barama*, *b*, is the triangular ceremonial ground⁵⁸ in which these three men conducted their sacred rituals. This painting deals with only a fragment of the *Laitjun* myth.

Tjambuwal, the Thunder-man

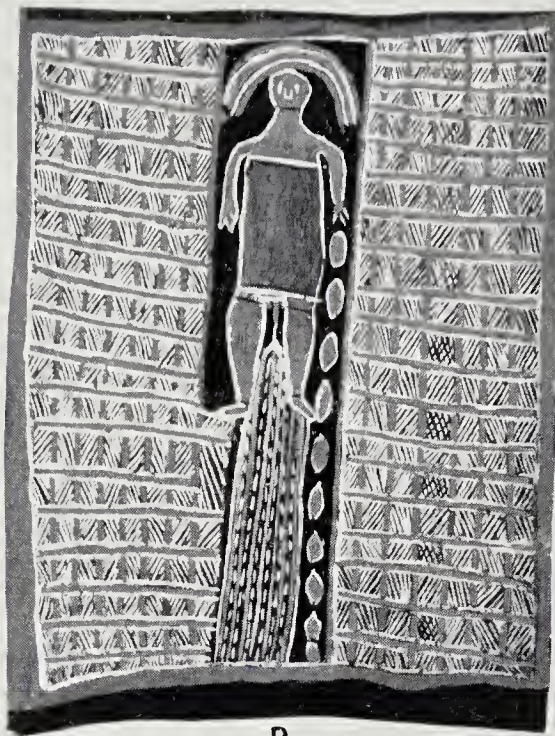
The thunder-man, *Tjambuwal*, is an important ancestor of the *dua* moiety of the Yirrkalla aborigines. *Tjambuwal* is the creator not only of the clouds, the storms and the thunder, but also of the little *dua* spirit children, *jurtu*, who descend from the sky in the raindrops to become human beings.

In the early days of the world *Tjambuwal* was a giant who lived at Waranaka, an island east of the Wessel Islands. One day, as he was sitting in the shade, *Tjambuwal* saw, in the distance, a Malay prau approaching his island. Annoyed at the intrusion, he waded into the sea and, taking hold of the boat, started to pull it to land. But the Malays attacked *Tjambuwal* with a large knife, cut off both his hands, turned the boat about and sailed for home. *Tjambuwal's* hands, however, joined miraculously to his body, and soon he was again in pursuit. That time he succeeded in pulling the prau to shore and was preparing to smash it in pieces when the crew again attacked him, this time amputating his forearms. Although his arms, like his hands, joined miraculously to his body,

58. A triangular ceremonial ground is used by the aborigines of Milingimbi in the *djungguan* ceremonies. Warner (1937), p. 265.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 89. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

A Tjamuwat at Arnhem Bay
C Kalparimu, Barama and Laitjun

B Bolngo at Wulwulwi
D Tjamuwat and Maíjaunguri at Jalboa

Tjambuwal felt so ill from his wounds that he left the stranded prau on the beach, lay down in his camp and went to sleep.

During the night tide the Malays launched their boat and by the time *Tjambuwal* woke up in the morning were actually within sight of their homeland. When the thunder-man saw that his enemies had again escaped him, he was furious. Stretching himself to his full height, for he was a very tall man, and seeing the Malay prau far away in the distance, he pushed his way through the water at even greater speed than before, the waves which formed in front of him almost swamping the pran. *Tjambuwal* succeeded in pulling the prau back once more to Waranaka, even though the crew threw out their anchor to retard his progress and paddled strongly in the opposite direction. However, before *Tjambuwal* was able to destroy their boat the Malays succeeded in fatally wounding him by cutting off both of his arms at the shoulders. As *Tjambuwal* lay dying on the beach he called out in a voice of thunder:

'Listen to what I say. When I die I will go into the sky; you will always hear my voice in the storms.'

From that time onward *Tjambuwal* has lived in the clouds. When, at the beginning of the wet season, the clouds on which he travels reach a point of land called Jalboa, about three miles north-west of Yirrkalla, they get lower and lower until the thunder-man is able to throw a double-ended club, *burununda*,⁵⁹ at the cliff, which, as it strikes, shatters the rock, then breaks in many pieces. These pieces enter the ground and become edible yams, called *bualku*.⁶⁰ Almost immediately afterwards the thunder-man urinates and, as the urine falls down an adjacent cliff, it cuts a series of parallel meandering lines in the rock. *Tjambuwal* then picks up a number of white stones, *milarik* (once hailstones) which are lying at the base of the cliff⁶¹ and throws them into the sky. These stones quickly grow in size and become large thunder-clouds, on the top of which *Tjambuwal* rides from place to place. As the storm develops the thunder-man, with another double-ended club, similar to the *burununda*, creates black rain clouds. The aborigines say that the thunder from the cumulus clouds is the voice of *Tjambuwal* and the banner of rain which falls from the base of a thunderstorm is his penis.⁶²

Within the rain clouds *Tjambuwal* places many spirit children, *jurtu*. These little creatures descend in the raindrops into the sea and enter the bodies of either the *dua* fish or green turtles, or if on the land, the nests of *dua* wild honey and other foods.⁶³ Sometimes when *Tjambuwal* is sailing along on the top of the clouds he sees the rock cod, *akurata*, in the sea below. From his high place *Tjambuwal* transfixes the fish with his spear, *larapan*,⁶⁴ then descends into the sea and kills it with his club, *bavlait*. The stench from the decaying fish, rising into the air, causes more rain clouds to form,

59. Pl. 130D.

60. Pl. 131E.

61. Pl. 91F.

62. See carved figure of *Tjambuwal*, Pl. 130A, B.

63. The spirit children of *Tjambuwal* will only live on the land or sea foods belonging to the *dua* moiety.

64. Pl. 130J.

The aborigines produced seven bark paintings, two carved and painted figures and five ceremonial objects which belonged to the myth of *Tjambuwal*.⁶⁵

Plate 90A illustrates the myth of *Tjambuwal* and the prau of the Malays. In the upper right-hand panel is the Malay prau with the characteristic tripod mast and curious projections from the bow. Within the prau are five men, one of whom, with a large knife, is amputating the arms of *Tjambuwal* (lower right panel). The groups of curving parallel lines round *Tjambuwal's* arms represent the sea-water that was stained by the blood which poured from his wounds. Similar groups of lines round the body of *Tjambuwal* (lower right) are the waves rising in front of his legs as he waded after the prau.

In the upper left-hand panel the main design is a Malay anchor made of wood and shod with metal. This is the anchor the Malays threw overboard to hinder the progress of the prau as *Tjambuwal* dragged it to shore. The vertical parallel lines in this panel represent rain falling from the clouds above (triangular patterns). The lower left-hand panel pictures the injured *Tjambuwal* with his arms cut off at the shoulders. Round him are the curving clouds, *wulmu*, usually associated with the thunder-man.⁶⁶

Plate 90B is the thunder-man, *Tjambuwal*.⁶⁷ In one hand is the spear, *larapan* (Pl. 130J) he used to capture the rock cod, *akurata*, and in the other his club, *barlait* (Pl. 130C) with which he killed it. The curving lines over the ancestor's head are clouds called *wulmu*. On the right, the clouds are pouring rain upon the earth, and on the left are the 'pink' clouds which, the aborigines say, form in the sky when the rain is finished.

Plate 90C shows *Tjambuwal* holding above his head the spear thrown to kill the rock cod. When a meteor speeds across the sky the aborigines believe that *Tjambuwal* has thrown his spear, and that the fiery trail of the meteor is its path. The shaft of the spear is curved to represent the path of the meteor.

Plate 90D deals with the green turtle, *gariwa*, the storm clouds and the thunder-man, *Tjambuwal*.⁶⁸ In panels *a* and *b* are two green (*dua*) turtles in the sea-weed (shown by curving lines of cross-hatching). The crescent-shaped designs in the panels on the left of the turtles are waves beating against each other, and those on the right, rough seas breaking on a reef of rocks, indicated by the central cross-hatched panel, *c*. On the upper right-hand panel, *d* symbolizes a large rain cloud, while below it are several thunder-men who have come down from the cloud; rain is still falling from their feet (shown as vertical parallel lines). In their left hands the thunder-men hold the club, *barlait*, and in their right the spear, *larapan*, with which they have transfixed the rock cod, *akurata*. They are holding the rock cod in the sky on the ends of their spears. Immediately to the left of the figures of *Tjambuwal* is a double-ended club, *burununda*, and a spear.

65. The carved and painted objects are described in Part 5.

66. See also bark paintings, Pl. 90B, D.

67. Interpretation by F. D. McCarthy.

68. Interpretation by F. D. McCarthy.



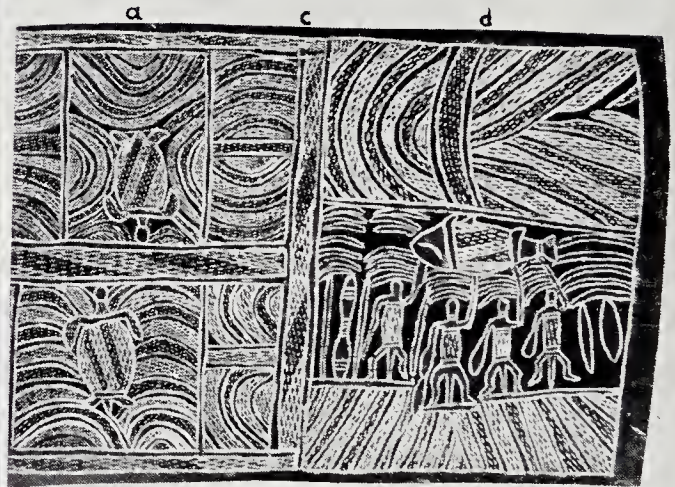
A



B



C



b

D

PLATE 90. Bark paintings, Yirkalla

A Tjambuwal and the Malays

C Tjambuwal and his spear, larapan

B Tjambuwal

D Tjambuwal and the rock cod

The Totemic Place, Jalboa, of the Thunder-man, Tjambuwal

About four miles north-west of Yirrkalla is a short headland, from the point of which a small reef extends into the sea. This headland, called Jalboa, is the totem place of the thunder-man, *Tjambuwal* (Fig. 57).

On its southern end the distorted rock strata of the cliff have formed into a number of more or less vertical irregular gutters which, according to the myth, are made when *Tjambuwal* urinates. On the point of the cliff about fifty yards to the north are the rocks which are shattered by *Tjambuwal* (Pl. 91E) when he strikes them with his club, *burununda*, and on its slopes a number of white stones, *milarik* (Pl. 91F). It is these, or the spirits of them, which *Tjambuwal* throws into the sky to make thunder-clouds.⁶⁹

On the adjacent beach are two small casuarina trees (Pl. 91A), once the bodies of *Tjambuwal* and his relatives. Not far from these casuarinas is a large fig tree (Pl. 91B), the transformed body of another of *Tjambuwal's* relatives. The fruit of this fig tree is sacred, as indeed is the whole area at the base of the cliff. No one would dare to eat that fruit, for he would surely die, nor would he dig for ochre in the base of the cliff for, if he did, *Tjambuwal* would kill him. Should the women even look at the place where *Tjambuwal* urinated they must atone for their misdeeds by a gift of food to the members of the thunder-man's totem. If not, *Tjambuwal* will make them ill.

The Thunder-man, Bolngo (or Tjambuwal) at Wulwulwi, Koolatong River

This version of the *Tjambuwal* myth places the totemic site at Wulwulwi, on the Koolatong River. The myth differs slightly in detail, but not in general form, from that at Yirrkalla; *Tjambuwal* becomes *Bolngo*;⁷⁰ the looped clouds, *wulmu*, become *djalijal*; and *Bolngo* urinates from a high tree,⁷¹ instead of, as in the *Tjambuwal* myth, from the clouds.⁷²

On the middle panel of Pl. 89B is *Bolngo* urinating on the ground beneath. This urine later rises into the sky and becomes rain. There is a line of hailstones, *milarik* (shown as ovals) to the right of *Bolngo*, and looped clouds, *djalijal*, above his head. The series of squares⁷³ on either side of *Bolngo* symbolize the open sea near Wulwulwi.

The Thunder-man, Tjambuwal, at Naitjulma, Arnhem Bay

When the thunder-man, *Tjambuwal*, was camped at Naitjulma, Arnhem Bay, two of his sons died and their bodies were transformed into white stones, called *milarik* or *jarambai*. At the beginning of the wet season the thunder-man throws

69. See bark paintings of *Bolngo*, Pl. 89B.

70. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 44, refer to the thunder-man under the name of Butngu.

71. See myth of *Bolngo* on carved pipe, p. 393. 72. See myth of *Tjambuwal*, p. 282.

73. This is the design belonging to the *dua tjapu mata* of Caledon Bay language group (Fig. 63A).



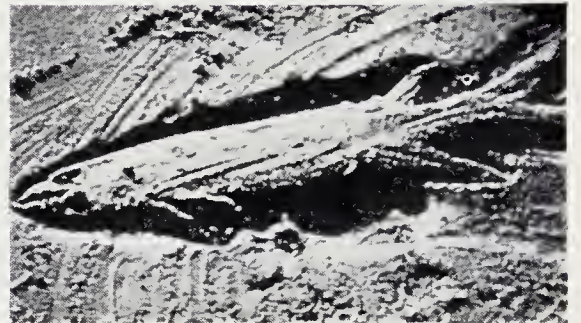
A



B



C



D



E



F

PLATE 91. Totem places and sand figures, Yirrkalla

- A Casuarina tree, Jalboa
- C Sand drawing, goanna
- E Cliff at Jalboa

- B Fig tree, Jalboa
- D Sand figure, fish
- F White stones, milarik, Jalboa

these stones (or their spirits) into the sky, so that they will become cumulus clouds in which he can travel from place to place.⁷⁴ The thunder-man also throws his spear, *larapan*, at the rock cod, *akurata*, and kills the fish. But instead of eating it he allows it to become putrid, so that the stench will rise into the sky and create more rain clouds.⁷⁵

The two figures on Pl. 89A are the dead sons of *Tjambuwal*, whose bodies were transformed into the white stones, *milarik* (cross-hatched ovals). The parallel black lines on the left-hand edge are the spears, *larapan*, used by *Tjambuwal* to transfix the rock cod (the three cross-hatched ovals at *a*). The pear-shaped figure at *b* is the yam *bawal*,⁷⁶ the food of *Tjambuwal*. The black area at *c* is a rain cloud formed from the stench of the decaying rock cod.

The Thunder-man, Tjambuwal, and the Man, Maijaunguri, at Jalboa

One day a mythical man, *Maijaunguri*, went fishing along the coast near the totemic place, Jalboa, of the thunder-man and speared many rock cod, *akurata*. He returned to his camp, made a fire and put on the fish to cook. The smoke and the odour of the cooking fish, ascending into the sky, attracted the attention of *Tjambuwal*, who happened to be passing in a cumulus cloud. On looking down he saw that *Maijaunguri* had speared and was cooking a fish which, belonging only to him, was forbidden all other people. *Tjambuwal*, angry over the outrage, created a rain-storm to extinguish the fire, then descended from the clouds and killed the offender with his club, *barlait*.⁷⁷

Plate 89D illustrates the myth of the mythical man, *Maijaunguri*, and the rock cod. In the bottom panel is the man spearing the fish, which he has placed on the fire, *a*. In the top panel is *Tjambuwal*. Above him at *b* is the large cloud in which he was travelling when he smelt the odour of the cooking fish. The cross-hatched vertical panels on either side of the thunder-man represent the sky and broken clouds.

Oijal and his Sister, Neri-neri

In the early days of the world *Oijal* and his sister, *Neri-neri*, travelled along the western coast of the Gulf of Carpentaria and through north-eastern Arnhem Land, creating many rivers and other natural features.

When camping at Dimbuka, near Blue Mud Bay, the brother and sister made several honey baskets. Then, taking a stone-headed spear, a spear-thrower and a stone axe, they set out to find a nest of the *dua* male wild honey, *jarapang*. By following a bee flying towards its home, they located a hive in a hollow tree near Trial Bay. *Oijal* and *Neri-neri* cut the tree down and, splitting it open,

74. The aborigines believe that there is a thunder-man in every cumulus cloud, even those which form on the top of the smoke of a bush fire.

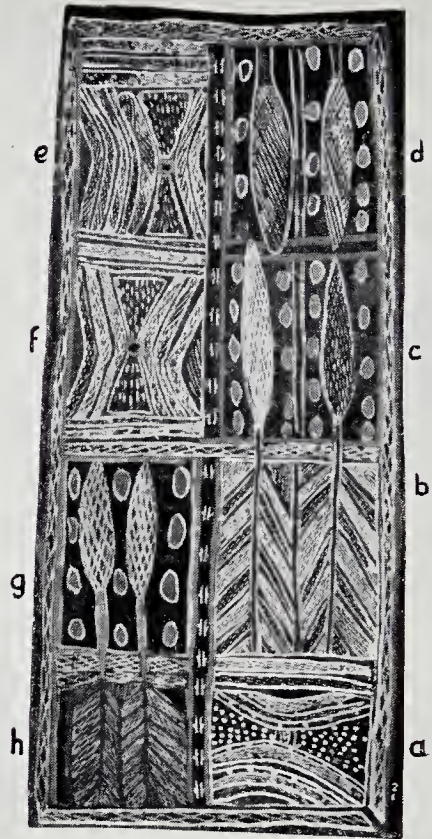
75. In the *jiritja* myth of *Waikinbu*, rotting fish left behind by the mythical man caused the thunder-clouds to form (p. 296).

76. See Pl. 131E for the illustration of this yam, called *bualku* at Yirrkalla.

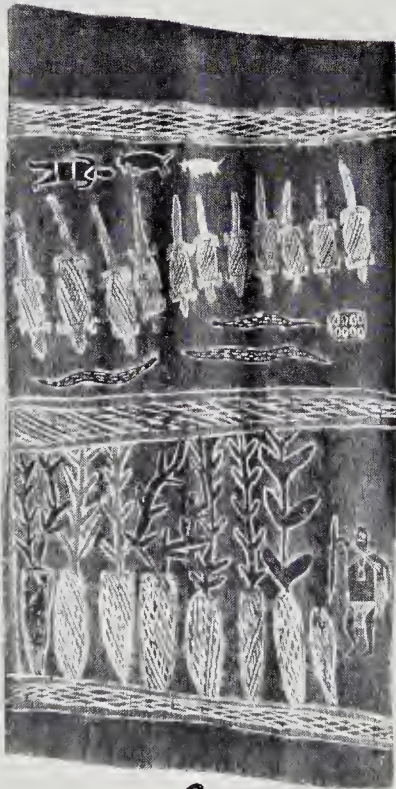
77. See the club, *barlait*, Pl. 130C.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 92. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

- A Oijal B Oijal and the yams C Oijal and Neri-neri
 D Oijal and Neri-neri at Melville Bay

took from the hive so much wax, bee bread (the pupae of bees) and honey that it filled one of the honey baskets. The place where the tree fell is now the fresh-water stream, Gurakawi, which runs into Trial Bay.

Again the brother and sister walked northwards, this time searching for the *dua* female wild honey, *lirawar*. Near Caledon Bay they again followed a bee to its hive and, after cutting down the tree, filled another honey basket. The depression made by the fallen tree has since become the Mandarauik River. Still searching for honey, the brother and sister saw many bees near Port Bradshaw but were unable to locate the hive, because the bees, instead of flying to and from their nest, were drinking at a spring. The next bee led them on a long journey from Caledon Bay, cross-country, to Cape Wilberforce, where the contents of a particularly large hive at Jaraua, near Melville Bay, filled many baskets. Again, the tree they felled created a watercourse, this time the Wandaraui River.⁷⁸

As *Oijal* and *Neri-neri* were pounding the comb to extract the honey, the sound attracted the attention of a lizard-man. Seeing the brother and sister had collected so much honey, he asked for some and they willingly gave it to him. But as the lizard-man was eating the honey a fragment of stick caught in his throat, causing him to cough and almost choke. For a long time he tried unsuccessfully to extract the stick, then, in disgust, he changed himself into a blanket-lizard, *baltjira* (*Chamydasaurus kingii*). The aborigines say that the stick, now a thin bone, is still in the throat of the lizard.

After that incident *Oijal* and *Neri-neri* went to a group of large caves near Melville Bay and started to cook the wild honey in a large bark dish.⁷⁹ While they were engaged in the task an ancestral man, *Wulangini*, was cooking fish at Port Bradshaw. On seeing the large amount of honey the brother and sister were preparing he held up his fish to show what he was cooking, hoping that *Oijal* would offer him some honey in exchange. But *Oijal* insulted *Wulangini* by saying that he did not want his fish; honey was much better food.

After the honey was cooked, *Oijal* and his sister went into the caves, where they have lived ever since. No aboriginal will go near the locality, for fear of *Oijal*, who would cripple him by breaking his legs with boomerangs, then spear but not kill him. *Oijal* would then put the wounded aboriginal in a bark dish, take him into his cave, pound his shins with a stone until they were bent like a boomerang, then starve him to death.

The spirit of such a man, unlike those of other aborigines, does not go to the aborigines' heaven, but lives in the forest until able to enter the body of some woman. When born that child will develop boomerang shins.⁸⁰

78. See engraved smoking pipe, Fig. 62B.

79. Some kinds of honey, when first taken from the hive, burn the throat. After this 'hot' honey, called *bilku*, is cooked by heating it for a while in a bark dish resting in the hot sand and ashes of the camp fire, it becomes much milder in flavour. Cooked honey is *balwuru*.

80. The shins of some aborigines are curved and flattened like a boomerang. This is caused by the tropical disease of yaws.

Four bark paintings and an engraved smoking pipe⁸¹ deal with the myth of *Oijal* and *Neri-neri*.

Plate 92A is the ancestor *Oijal*. He is carrying his stone-headed spear and spear-thrower in one hand, three boomerangs, *kunilili*, in the other, a spirit bag⁸² round his neck and an opossum string pubic apron. The transverse bars across his chest and abdomen are body scars and the band round his neck, as well as the V-shaped line of dots on his chest, are painted body decorations.

In the bark painting, Pl. 92D, the story of *Oijal* and his sister in their caves at Melville Bay is illustrated in considerable detail. *Oijal*, the central figure, carries a boomerang in his left hand and two boomerangs, a stone-headed spear and a spear-thrower in his right. Groups of three boomerangs are shown to the left of his head and the right of his thigh. Another stone-headed spear is immediately to the left. The caves in which *Oijal* and his sister now live are indicated by two crescents, *b, b*, on the upper edge. The two designs, *a, a*, on the right and left-hand edge of the painting are totemic rocks near the caves. Hanging from the right-hand crescent, *b*, from the right arm of *Oijal* and in the extreme upper right at *d* are three of the baskets which *Oijal* and *Neri-neri* filled with honey. The four dotted semi-circular designs below, *a, a*, are the bark dishes in which the ancestors cooked their honey at Melville Bay. Wandaraui River, near Melville Bay, made when the ancestors felled the tree, is represented by the zigzag cross-hatched lines at *e* on the lower edge. A similar design, *f*, upper left, is a tributary of Wandaraui River. Cabbage palms, *c, c, c, c*, grow near the caves of *Oijal*.

In Pl. 92B the panels *a, e* and *f* are the boomerangs belonging to *Oijal* and *b, h*, the foliage of some unidentified edible tuber, the tubers being shown on panels *c, d* and *g*. The dots on either side of the tubers are small stones on the ground. The central parallel vertical lines represent a track showing many wallaby footprints.

The upper part of this bark painting, Pl. 92C, deals with the man, *Oijal*, at Trial Bay and his day's catch of three snakes and eleven goannas. There is also a number of snake eggs in a basket made from the leaves of the cabbage palm (rectangle, lower right). *Oijal*, with his two hunting dogs, is on the upper left. The central cross-hatched transverse band is a stream at Trial Bay. On the bottom panel are the food-gathering efforts of his sister, *Neri-neri*. She is pictured on the right, digging stick in hand, a large carrying-basket over her shoulder and a small one round her neck. During the day she collected a number of edible yams.

An Aboriginal's Visit to the Land of the Malays

This painting describes a visit of a *jiritja* man, *Amalatja*, to the land of the Malay trepangers, who, during last century, periodically visited the coast of

81. This is described elsewhere (Fig. 62B, p. 396).

82. The spirit bag worn by the medicine-man gives him greater power in healing or magic, because of the totemic spirits which live in it. See Warner (1937), p. 479; also p. 40.

Arnhem Land. The painting was made by *Amalatja's* son, *Mungaraui*, to whom his father had related his experiences. When the old man, *Amalatja*, was wandering round a village called *Jumaina*⁸³ on one occasion he saw women making calico (cloth) by putting two bamboos in the ground and stringing cotton thread between them, obviously a native loom. They shook the bamboos, and made a hammering noise (possibly either the sound of the shuttle or the beating of the thread in place), and 'calico' came off. These same women, called *Jubara*,⁸⁴ also collected the rice from the fields.

One day he saw a bandit, or a robber, called *Wurumu*, burn down the house of one of the weavers, apparently a raid. *Mungaraui* said that his father, who was puzzled about this outrage, thought that perhaps *Wurumu* did not like the sound of the women making calico.

In the bottom of the painting, Pl. 93A, is *Mungaraui's* picture of the Macassan women weaving. The women are shaking the bamboo handles by which *Mungaraui's* father believed they made the calico (cloth). The cloth on each loom is a different colour. In panel *c*, one of the weavers is standing on the raised floor of a house under which the fowls are resting (right-hand edge), and in the upper central panel, *b*, *Wurumu* is striking a light to burn down the house. The cross-hatched upper left panel, *a*, is the smoke from the blazing house, and the band on the upper edge, a cliff behind the women's residence.

Three Mythical Men and a Bush-fire, Caledon Bay

Three men, *Wirili*,⁸⁵ *Wureri* and *Balang-altji*, among many others, once performed a sacred *jiritja* ceremony near the Gainmaui River, which runs into the sea between Caledon and Trial Bays. The camp-fires of these men, through not being properly attended, started a bush-fire which spread over a wide area, destroying the trees, the animals and even the men who took part in the ceremony. The fire also burnt out the nest of the bandicoot, *warut-kura*, and so frightened a hive of wild bees in a nearby swamp that they flew to Milingimbi to escape the danger. The men of the ceremony are now large white-barked eucalyptus trees, *gururi*, and the place of the bees, the Matamataui swamp, is now filled with large paper-bark trees.

Two bark paintings deal with the ceremony and the fire.

Plate 93B pictures three men, *a*, *Wirili*, *b*, *Wureri*, and *c*, *Balang-altji*, standing in the *jiritja* ceremonial ground, near the Gainmaui River. The camps of the performers are indicated by the five dark-coloured squares at *d*. It was from one of the lower of these camps that the bush-fire originated. The series of lozenges below the ceremonial ground, to the left of the men, and completely

83. This is supposed to be the home of the *Baijini*, p. 333. The later generations of aborigines, knowing of *Jumaina*, may have attached it to the *Baijini* myth.

84. See carved figure of *Jubara*, Pl. 137A, B.

85. *Wirili* is also associated with the lizard, *bije*, and the deposit of yellow ochre at Gurunga.

filling the panel *e*, symbolizes the bush-fire.⁸⁶ They also represent the white-barked eucalyptus trees, *gurui*, once the men who took part in the ceremony. On panel *f* are the paper-bark trees of the Matamataui swamp, and on panel *g* the hive of wild bees which escaped to Milingimbi. The diamonds indicate the paper-bark trees at Matamataui.⁸⁷

Plate 93D is another representation of the bush-fire on the Gainmaui River. On the two lower panels are nine camp-fires, the circles representing the fire and radiating cross-hatched lines the logs of wood on the fire. The two large circles, with a human figure inside, are bark huts, each having a camp-fire at the entrance. The parallel cross-hatched bands at *a* represent a stack of firewood, the longitudinal band, *b*, the Gainmaui River and the cross-hatched band, *c*, a nearby range of hills. The area destroyed by the fire is represented by the two upper panels, the curving parallel lines to the left being a tributary of the Gainmaui River.

Aborigines Gathering Eggs of Sea-birds

This painting deals with the time when two groups of aborigines, in their canoes, went to an island where the sea-birds nested. They gathered many eggs and brought them back to camp.

Plate 93C illustrates some of the incidents of that journey. The left-hand panel is the island covered with nesting sea-birds. The birds on the left are sitting on their eggs, while those on the right adjacent to two men are in flight. The numerous white dots are eggs. On the left-hand side, near some of the nests, are fish which the birds have brought in to feed their young. On the right are two canoes, loaded to the gunwale with eggs (white dots). The two rectangular cross-hatched areas in this panel represent rough water which almost swamped the canoes. The three dolphins, lower right, were seen on the outward journey.

The Man, Walanwanga, at Garawinu Island

During creation times a mythical *dua* man lived on a small island, Garawinu, east of Woodah Island.

Walanwanga, who was skilled in fishing and hunting, was successful in capturing many dolphins, fish, water-snakes and green turtles. Since that time, there has always been an abundance of those creatures at Garawinu Island.⁸⁸

On the upper and lower panels of Pl. 94A are five dolphins, *indjapana*, and between them three water-snakes, *jalu*; the small fish are unidentified. In the central panel are five green turtles, *gariwa*. The ovals above and below are rocks that project from the sea, the haunt of many green turtles, and the transverse lines, *a* and *b*, reefs of rock outside Garawinu Island.

86. The design of the *gumaitj mata* of Caledon Bay, Fig. 63M. The same fire symbol was painted in the body of an initiate during a circumcision ceremony at Yirkalla, Pl. 129C.

87. The design of the *dalwongu mata* of Blue Mud Bay, Fig. 63J.

88. This is a parallel myth to that of the *jiritja* island of Garabi, off the coast of Port Bradshaw, p. 378.

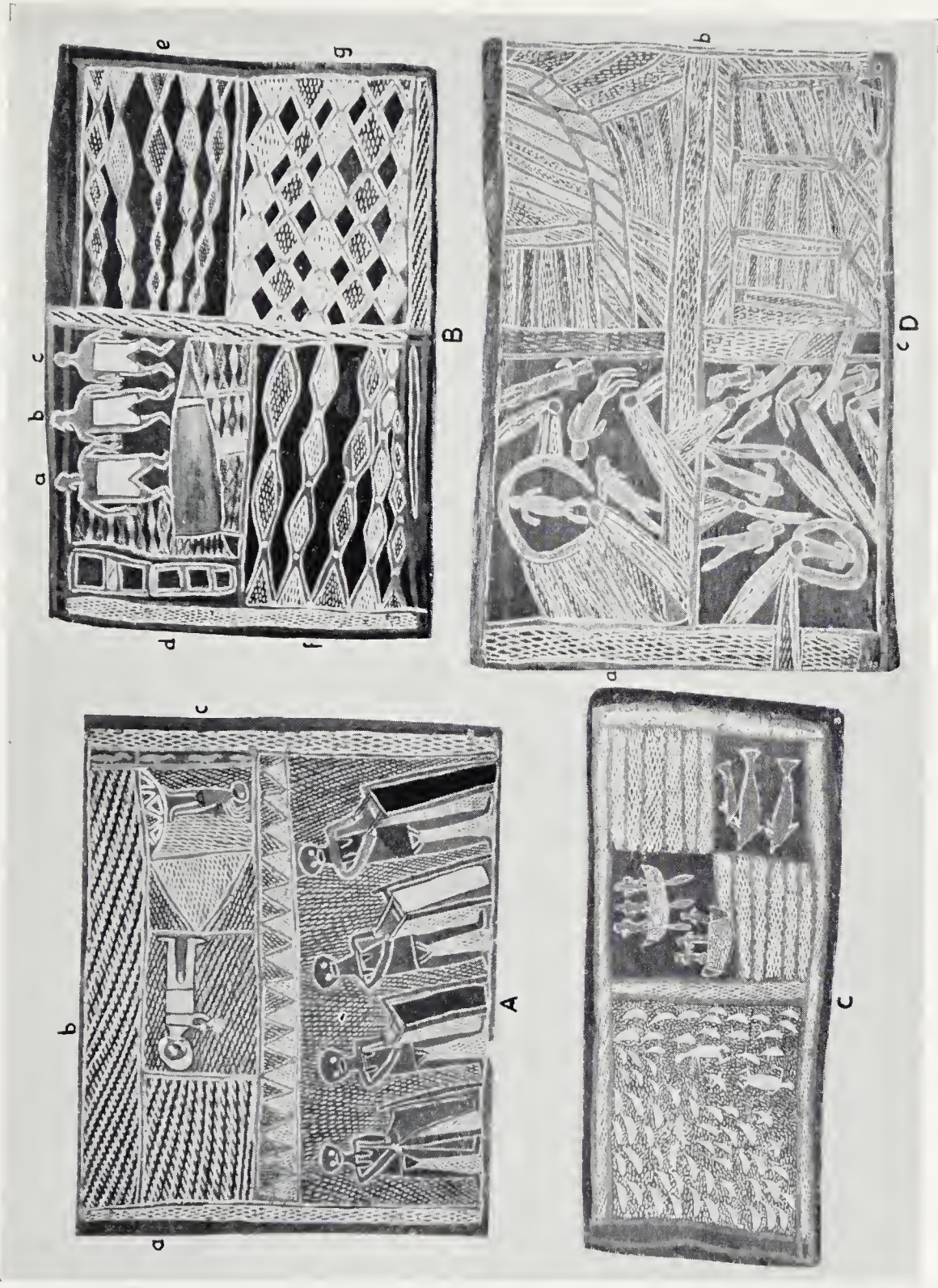


PLATE 93. Bark paintings, Yirkalla

A Malay women weaving

B, D Three men and the bush-fire

C Aborigines gathering sea-gull eggs

The Man, Waikinbu, at Cape Shield

At Cape Shield, during mythical times, a *jiritja* man, *Waikinbu*, speared two large fish in a nearby lagoon. He cooked them, had a very large meal, then lay down in the shade of the trees to sleep off the effects, leaving the fish beside the camp-fire. But he slept so long that the fish, becoming fly-blown and putrid, created such a stench that heavy thunder-clouds formed over the top of them.⁸⁹

The long ellipse, Pl. 94B, is the lagoon at Cape Shield in which *Waikinbu*, lower right, speared the two fish. The design across the centre of the ellipse is the camp-fire where *Waikinbu* cooked his catch, and at *a* is the tree under which he went to sleep. The short strokes on the periphery of the ellipse represent the maggots from the decaying fish travelling away from it in long lines. At *b* and *c* are the tracks of the *gunjun* crabs leaving their holes to eat the fish. When *Waikinbu* woke and looked up into the sky he saw that three thunderstorms, *d, d, d*, had formed in the sky over the putrid fish. The boomerang shapes indicate small stratus clouds which form underneath the thunderstorms.

The central ellipse of the painting is now an extensive lagoon and the tracks of the maggots and of the crabs are lines of sand-hills close to the shore.

The Rain-makers, Wuluwait and Bunbulama

When the mythical people *Wuluwait*, the man, and *Bunbulama*, the woman, wanted rain they tied bundles of water-grass together and soaked them in the swamp. The aborigines still follow a similar practice. After the bundles have been in the water for a day or more, clouds begin to form. In a short time the rain not only falls but continues to do so as long as the rain-making bundles are left in the swamp.

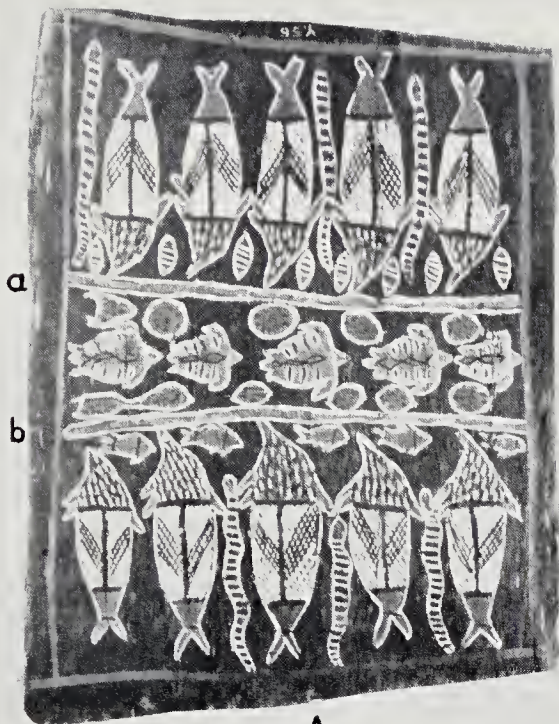
The figures in Pl. 94C are the rain-makers, *Wuluwait* and *Bunbulama*,⁹⁰ with the magic bundles in their hands. Above them is a rainbow, with the rain, vertical cross-hatched panels, falling from it. The black space between the rain symbols is a gap in the storm. The hair radiating from the heads of the rain-makers is also associated with rain, one informant stating that, instead of hair, the water-grass used to make up the rain-making bundles grew from the heads of the mythical people. On the bottom edge of the painting, reading from the left, the first two cone-like figures are rocks and the last three, termite mounds associated with the totem place of the rain-makers. The vertical lines on the sides represent falling rain. Rain is also pouring from the two rain-making bundles.

The Man, Nalili, at Caledon Bay

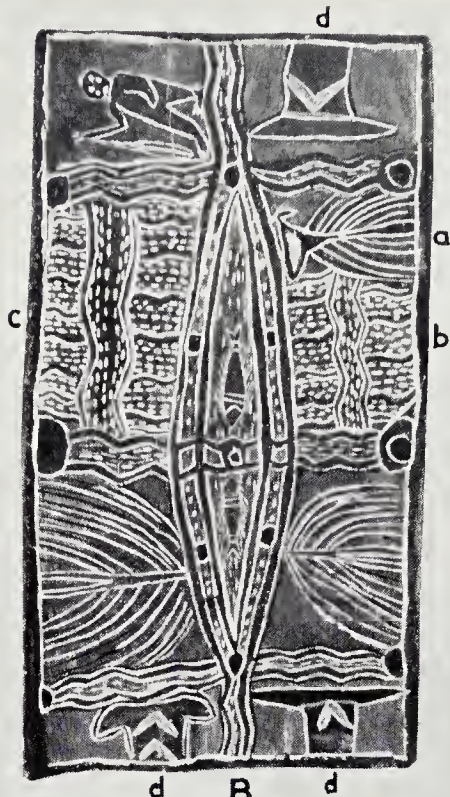
The mythical *jiritja* man, *Nalili*, lived on the sea coast and beside the swamps of Caledon Bay, collecting as food shell-fish, crabs and oysters from among the mangroves, and fruit, yams and animals from the forest and swamps at the rear.

89. There is a *dua* myth of the thunder-man *Tjambuwal* in which the stench of rotting fish caused thunderstorms and rain (Pl. 89D).

90. See carved wooden figure of woman, *Bunbulama*, Pl. 133A, B, and bark figures of *Wuluwait* and *Bunbulama*, Fig. 65C, D; also colour plate facing p. 267.



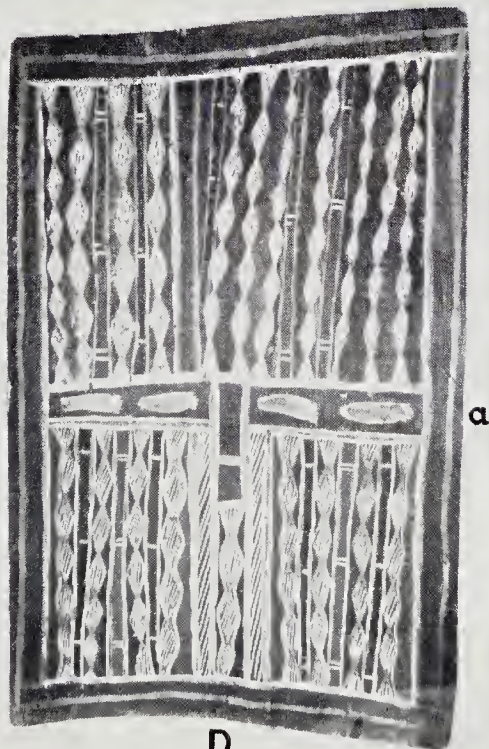
A



B



C



D

PLATE 94. Bark paintings, Yirkalla

A Walanwanga at Garawinu Island
 C Wuluwait and Bunbulama, the rain-makers

B Waikinbu at Cape Shield
 D Nalili at Caledon Bay

The upper panel of Pl. 94D represents the mangrove swamps, intersected by fresh-water streams, lines of lozenge-shaped designs. The transverse panel, *a*, is the aboriginal path from Port Bradshaw to Caledon Bay, and the footprints those of *Nalili*. The lozenge shapes on the lower panel are salt-water areas, and the parallel lines between, sand-hills on the sea coast.

Nguru-gujameri and his Wife, Njinpili-lingou

At one time a mythical *jiritja* man, *Nguru-gujameri*, and his wife, *Njinpili-lingou*, lived at Djerakoi, near Cape Shield.

One day *Nguru-gujameri* and a companion, *Ikawunga*, were spearing fish in a mangrove swamp when they noticed a number of crab-holes around the base of a tree, and the many tracks made by the creatures as they ran from one hole to another. *Nguru-gujameri* suggested to his companion, *Ikawunga*, that they should make a painting of the crab-holes and the marks of the *gunjun* crabs, so that they could keep the design for themselves.⁹¹ The two men did this, but before they died they showed the design to some young men of their group so that the memory of it would not be lost. Since then the design has been passed from father to son. No other aboriginal is allowed to paint these marks without the owner's permission.

Two paintings illustrate the myth of *Nguru-gujameri* and *Njinpili-lingou*.

On Pl. 95A the upper panel pictures the sea and the lower, the land. The overall pattern of the upper panel is the crab-holes and tracks of the crab, *gunjun*, which formed the design mentioned in the myth.

In the right-hand squares are four cormorants, *madu*, in black. One of them is standing on a rock. The two squares on the extreme right contain two parrot-fish which were too large for the cormorants to swallow. The four grey reef herons, *kaulau-witbit*, in the centre and left, lived on the sand-crabs, *gunjun*. In the lower right panels are six emus and three yams, and in the left, five emus and their footprints. The curious sixth design in the left-hand panel is a cockatoo in flight. The emus and cockatoos depicted on the lower panels are the same as those disturbed by the woman, *Njinpili-lingou*.

In the upper right of Pl. 95C, *Nguru-gujameri* is standing on a rock, spearing fish. He has a string of three in his left hand and has transfixed another with the spear held in his right. The narrow cross-hatched vertical band between *Nguru-gujameri* and the upper left panel, *b*, is the tree, mentioned in the myth, around the base of which *Ikawunga* and *Nguru-gujameri* saw the crab-holes. In panel *b* the crab-holes are indicated by dots at the junction of the series of wavy lines, and the marks made in the mud by the feet of the crabs by the many short straight lines. In the lower left-hand corner of the same panel are the holes and tracks made by the *gunjun* crabs.

91. This design, like others in the Yirrkalla series (Fig. 63), belongs exclusively to a language group, or *mata*, of aborigines. This myth explains the origin of one of those designs which has not been identified.

Whereas the upper panels deal with the sea and seashore, the lower two deal with the land. In the central panel is the woman, *Njinpili-lingou*, a bark dish on her head, standing on the top of a sand-dune near Cape Shield. The rectangles on either side of her are nearby sand-dunes. In panel *a* the five cockatoos in flight were disturbed by *Njinpili-lingou*. There are also five emus in the same panel. Their tracks are shown on panel *c*.

The Man, Wanatjai

Plate 95B is the painting of an aboriginal, *Wanatjai*, with a long Malay smoking pipe in each hand.⁹² On the upper edge of the painting are four steel axes, and on the left-hand side two steel knives. *Wanatjai* is wearing a belt. On his chest is a design of triangles⁹³ which he brought back from Macassar with him.

The Woman, Malwulwi

In the early times a pregnant ancestral woman, *Malwulwi*, accompanied by a little rat, *nik-nik* (the woman's dog), went into a mangrove swamp at Gunumungu, on the north side of Blue Mud Bay, to collect oysters. While filling her carrying-bag with the oysters, she was swept off her feet by a strong tide. She tried to swim to land, but was drowned because the tide was too strong and she too heavily pregnant. The little rat, *nik-nik*,⁹⁴ however, was able to swim to safety.

Malwulwi's body is now a large tree in the mangrove swamps at Gunumungu. On the trunk of this tree there are marks indicating three maximum water levels: spring tides, usual tides and tides when, during the wet season, the fresh-water from the rivers floods the mangrove swamps.⁹⁵

Plate 95D depicts *Malwulwi* in the mangrove swamp at Gunumungu, near Blue Mud Bay, where she used to collect oysters. The cross-hatched panels *a, a*, indicate the fresh-water from the river running among the mangrove trees and meeting the tide coming up from the bay. As mentioned in the myth, when the tide ebbs it leaves dark lines on the trunks of the trees.

Muruma, the Fisherman

In early times *Muruma*, a noted fisherman, lived with his wife beside a stream called Bamui, near the totemic place of Jalboa, north-east of Yirrkalla.

One day *Muruma*, having speared many fish, put them on the fire to cook. He was resting under a tree when one of the *Bukalatji* (enemies of *Muruma*) paid him a visit, saying that he and his wife were hungry, having just paddled all the way from Dambalia (Brenner Island). Little suspecting treachery, *Muruma* gave his cooked fish to the *Bukalatji*, who, after having eaten them, rose to go.

92. Interpretation, F. M. Setzler.

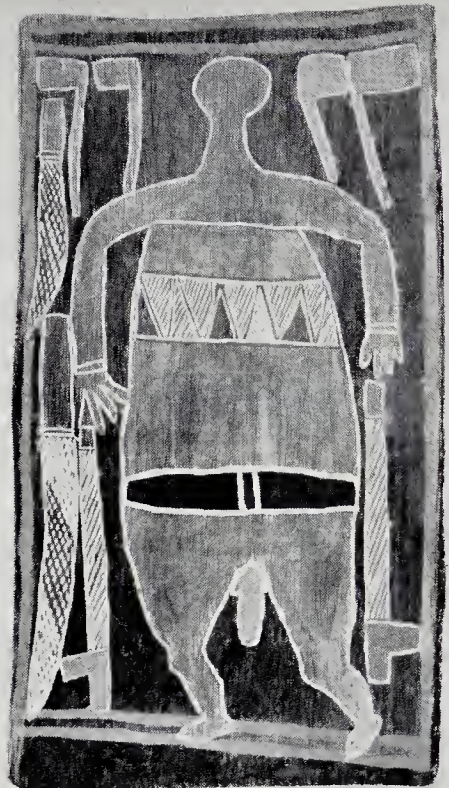
93. This is the same as the *jirilja* cloud symbol of Cape Arnhem (Fig. 63H). It is also present in the art of the Celebes, Fig. 63R.

94. See bark painting of the rat, *nik-nik*, and *Bourngawuli's* dog, *dulairuja*, Pl. 121A.

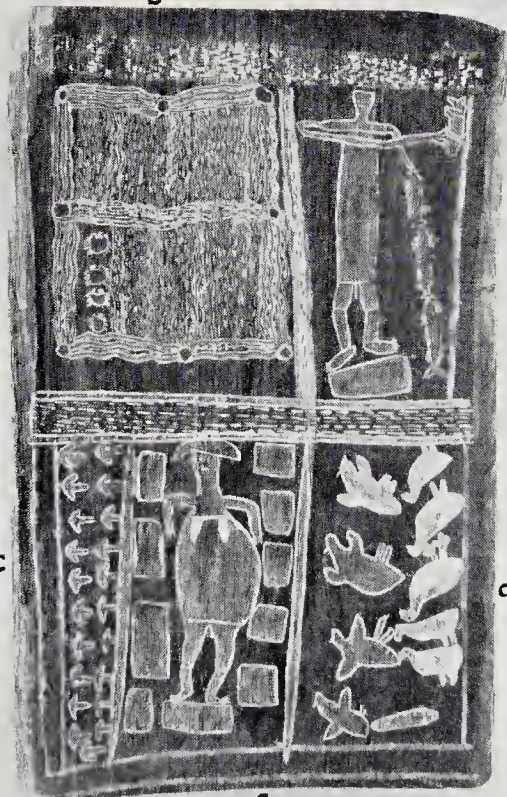
95. These marks are indicated on the carved wooden figure of *Malwulwi*, Pl. 133C, D.



b A

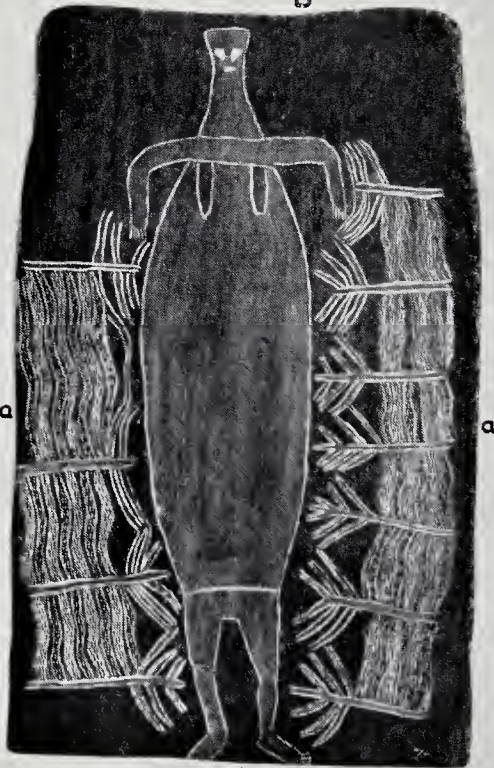


B



c

C



a

a

D

PLATE 95. Bark paintings, Yirkalla

A, C Ngutu-gujameri and Ikawunga at Cape Shield

B Wanatjai

D Malwulwi

This was a signal for a number of *Bukalatji* men, who were hiding among the trees, to attack the unsuspecting *Muruma* and spear him to death. His body is now a rock which projects out of the sea near the shore at Jalboa (map, Fig. 57).

Two bark paintings illustrate the mythical story.

The central figure in Pl. 96A is *Muruma*. In one hand he holds four fish and in the other a twin-barbed fishing spear with which he has transfixed another fish. The crescents above his head and on the left-hand side of the painting represent curious loop-like clouds, *wulmu*.⁹⁶ The circles and cones along the right and left-hand edges are also clouds. In the upper part of the painting *Muruma* is asleep under a tree, with the fish (upper left) cooking on the fire, *a*, beside him.*

Plate 96D deals with the death of *Muruma* at the hands of the *Bukalatji*. In the centre is *Muruma* spearing fish and stingrays. In the lower left he is resting by his camp-fire, around which are the fish he is cooking. The *Bukalatji* are grouped along the upper edge. At the right, the unfortunate *Muruma* is being speared by one of the *Bukalatji*. Already there are many spears in his body.

Nakundia and Munuratan

Nakundia and *Munuratan* were two fishermen who once lived at Blue Mud Bay. One day, on returning to their camp after a day's fishing, they were set upon and speared to death by aborigines from a hostile group.

In the lower right panel, *a*, of Pl. 96C are *Nakundia* (lower) and *Munuratan* (upper), both with a large fish in each hand. Above them is their canoe with the sail set. The next two panels to the left are the oval ceremonial grounds, similar to those used in the *arawaltja* ceremonies of Groote Eylandt (Fig. 6). Still further left is one of the fishermen standing on a rock, shown as an oval beneath his feet, with a fish in each hand. Above him are five fishing lines with hooks and sinkers attached. In the lower left, *b*, of the left-hand lower panel, one man (unidentified) is spearing another (possibly referring to the death of either *Munuratan* or *Nakundia*). There are six spears to the left of this group. The designs on the upper half at *c* are totemic rocks and a palm tree, upper right.

The men responsible for the death of *Nakundia* and *Munuratan* are shown in the central transverse panel *d*, while in the upper left panel, *e*, are the two dead fishermen transfixed with spears. At the right of the same panel are many fighting spears of a type used only in avenging ceremonies.

Minjapa and Wuluwil, the Turtle Fishermen

Two mythical fishermen, *Minjapa* and *Wuluwil*, one day captured a large turtle. They brought it into Jalboa, about three miles north-west of Yirrkalla.⁹⁷

96. These clouds, *wulmu*, also belong to the thunder-man, *Tjanbuwal*, Pl. 90D. It is evident that *Muruma* and *Tjanbuwal*, both belonging to the *dua* moiety, are associated in the mythical stories.

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XXVI.

97. This is also the totemic place of *Tjanbuwal*, the thunder-man, and *Muruma*, the fisherman.



PLATE 96. Bark paintings, Yirkalla

A Muruma at Jalboa

C Nakundia and Munuratan at Blue Mud Bay

B Minjapa and Wuluwil at Jalboa

D Muruma and the Bukalatji at Jalboa

and cut it up in the same manner as do the aborigines of today. The fishermen, the canoe and the pieces of turtle meat are now natural features at Jalboa.

In the upper right of the painting, Pl. 96B, *Minjapa* and *Wuluwil* are spearing the turtle. They are shown again seated on either side of a rock, a black circle. Below them are two casuarina trees, Pl. 91A,⁹⁸ which grow near the totemic place. The metamorphosed bodies of the two men, *Minjapa* and *Wuluwil*, now the turtle-rock⁹⁹ *Ai-aika* (Pl. 97A), are indicated at *a*, on the outer edge. There is a similar design immediately beneath the turtle. A semi-circular design near the tail of the turtle is the metamorphosed canoe, now a low red rock in the shallow water (Pl. 97C, on the left). The oval *b*, on the lower edge of the painting, is the carapace of the turtle (Pl. 97B). In the lower right are two pieces of flesh, *baiwu*, from the inside of the turtle's front flippers, and above is the club, *barlait*, with which the hunters killed the turtle. Above the carapace are two pieces of meat (more or less triangular figures) from the chest, called *tiritiri*. The fat from the creature is indicated by a barred oval on the extreme upper left. The turtle spear and spear-thrower are on the right-hand edge at *c*. Immediately to the left of them are two more pieces of meat from the inside of the front flipper.

The fishermen, the canoe, and the parts of the dismembered turtle have all been transformed into natural features on the sea-shore at Jalboa. The turtle-rock, *Ai-aika* (Pl. 97A) is the metamorphosed bodies of the turtle fishermen, *Minjapa* and *Wuluwil*. The canoe is a small low rock on the extreme left (Pl. 97C), the carapace (Pl. 97B) and parts of the dismembered turtle (Pl. 97D) large eroded boulders on the coast.

There is hardly a rock or a tree in this locality that is not linked, in one way or another, with either *Tjambuwal*, the thunder-man, *Muruma*, the fisherman, or *Minjapa* and *Wuluwil*, the turtle-fishers.

Tjuna-tjuna, Wururunga and the Bukalatji

Two brothers, *Tjuna-tjuna*¹ and *Wururunga*, were the first people to live on Dambalia (Bremer Island). They were paddling to the mainland in their bark canoe on one occasion when they noticed smoke among the trees and, on sneaking ashore, saw a *Bukalatji* man, *Djunmundia*, asleep by the fire. He was wearing, around his neck, a particularly large carrying-bag.

The brothers said to each other, "This is the man who killed our father last year. We now have our chance to pay him back."²

98. The same trees as those mentioned in the *Tjambuwal* myth.

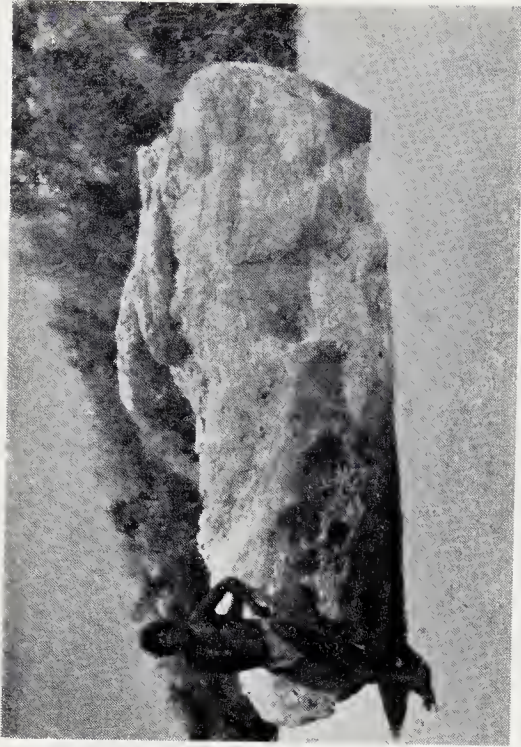
99. The aborigines throw stones on the top of this rock in order to ensure success in catching turtles.

1. In the myth associated with the two carved heads, Pl. 139D, E, *Tjuna-tjuna* is called *Bauaramin*.

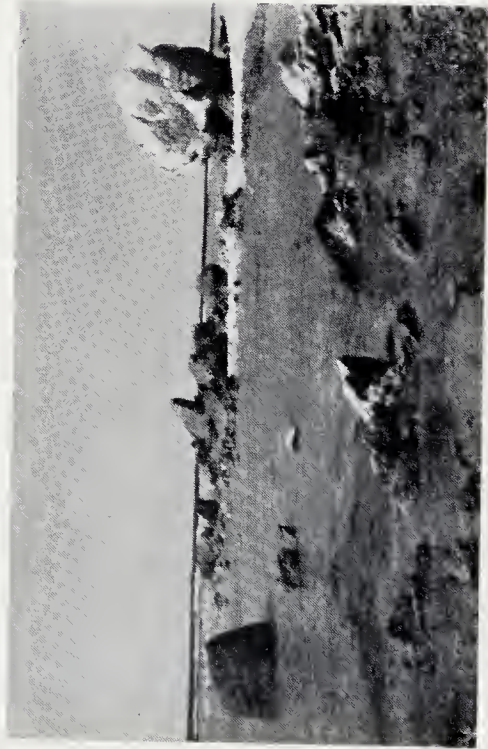
2. Blood feuds are common in Arnhem Land and the cause of most of the killings. They can, however, be ended at a ceremonial peace-making fight, the *makaraka*. See Warner (1937), p. 174, also the myth of crocodile and stingray and the origin of the first *makaraka*, Pl. 122D.



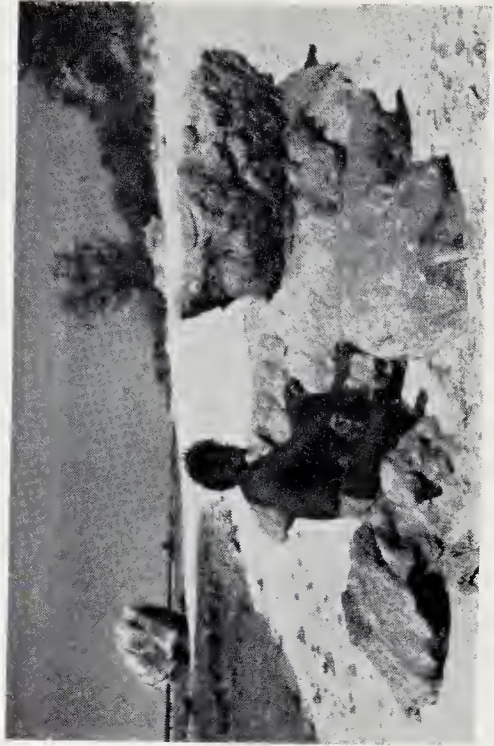
A



B



C



D

PLATE 97. Totem places, Jalboa

- A The turtle rock, Ai-aika
- C Totem rock of canoe

- B Totem rocks of turtle carapace
- D Totem rocks of dismembered turtle

After performing the dance of the tiger snake, *dunbania*, they each painted the death mark of the snake on their faces³ and cast their spears at the sleeping man. These passed through both his chest and carrying-bag, killing him instantly.

The two brothers, waiting until the wives of *Djunmundia* returned from food-gathering, captured them and, putting them aboard the canoe, paddled to an island north of Bremer Island. During the night, however, the women escaped, swam to the mainland, and told the *Bukalatji*,⁴ relatives of the murdered *Djunmundia*, how their husband had been murdered. When the two brothers discovered their loss they returned to their camp on Bremer Island.

During the next few days the *Bukalatji* worked hard making a number of bark canoes. Waiting until there was no moon, they launched them and paddled to Dambalia. Leaving their canoes to the north of the island, the *Bukalatji* crept through the low scrub to surround and kill *Tjuna-tjuna* and *Wururunga*. But the brothers heard them and, in their flight, came by chance on the bark canoes, which they started to cut to pieces with the large steel knives which the Malays had given them. They had almost finished their work of destruction when the head man of the *Bukalatji* came up and begged them not to destroy his own canoe, so that he could take all of his people home. The brothers relented and allowed the *Bukalatji* to depart.

After some time the two brothers left Bremer Island and went to live near Cape Wilberforce, where they met and married two women from the nearby islands. The wives were out collecting oysters one day when the *Bukalatji* again attacked the brothers and this time succeeded in killing them. This so enraged the women that they attacked the *Bukalatji* with the knives belonging to their husbands and killed them all. *Tjuna-tjuna* and *Wururunga* were then transformed into goannas and their camps on Bremer Island into trees. Between those trees there is a path, which must be kept clean by the local aborigines.

On Pl. 98A the two brothers, at *a*, are paddling their canoe to the mainland. On the left, at *b*, they are holding their spear-throwers and avenging spears in their hands. The elder brother, *Tjuna-tjuna*, is on the right. At *c* is their enemy, *Djunmundia*, transfixing by the two avenging spears, one of which has passed through both his chest and his carrying-bag (cross-hatched oval). In the lower right panel *d*, black circles enclosing the goannas are totemic trees mentioned in the myth; the parallel lines, the path between them; and the curves, nearby sand-hills.

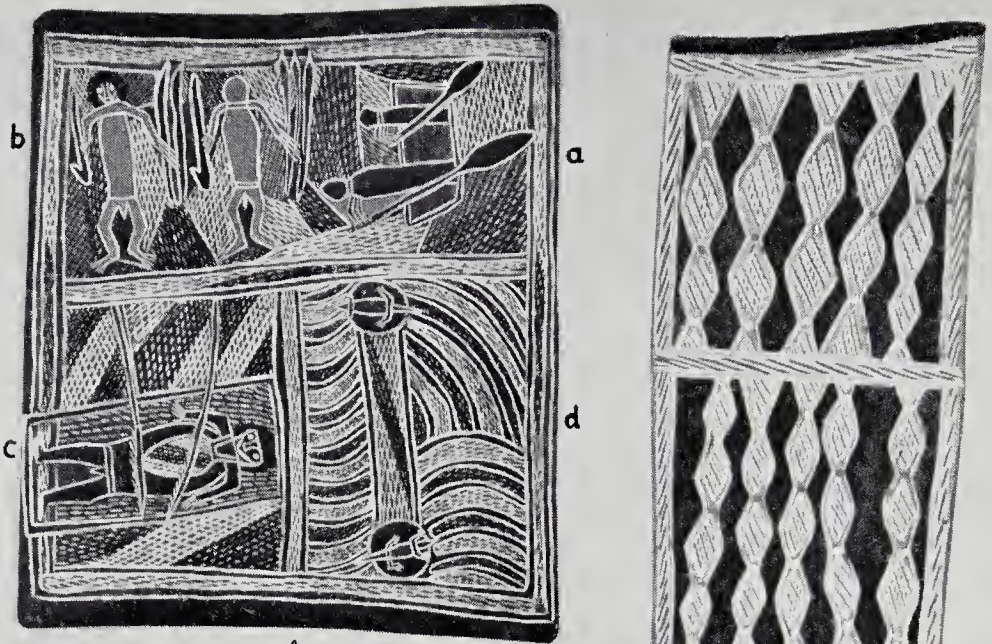
The Man, Balonarati, and the Paper-bark Trees of Matamataui

Between Trial and Caledon Bays is a river, Gainmaui. Near this river is the Matamataui swamp,⁵ about half a mile across and filled with paper-bark trees,

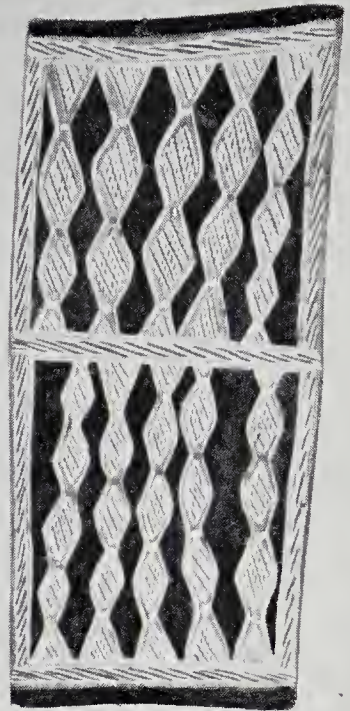
3. The death mark, shown on the carved and painted head of *Bauaramin*, Pl. 139D, E, is painted on the faces of all the men who take part in an avenging ceremony.

4. These are the mythical people who killed *Muruma*, the fisherman. See Pl. 96D.

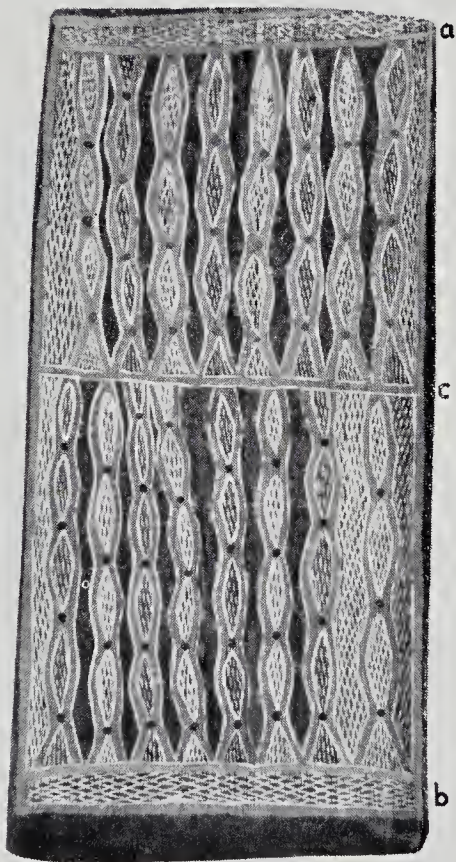
5. This swamp is also mentioned in the myth of the three men and the bush-fire. Pl. 93B.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 98. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

A Tjuna-tjuna, Wururunga and the Bukalatji B, C Balonarati at Matamataui
 D Rualko and the turtle, Cape Shield

dulwar. This is the totemic place of the mythical man *Balonarati* and the paper-bark trees.

During the early days of the world *Balonarati* invented the method of preparing *natu* from the fruit of the cycad⁶ so that it would be fit for human consumption. *Balonarati* first broke the shells, pounded the kernels into flour, placed the flour in a finely-woven basket and soaked the food for three days in running water to remove the poison. At the end of that time he stripped sheets of paper-bark⁷ from the adjacent trees and taking the sodden flour from the water, wrapped it in the paper-bark and allowed it to drain for several hours. After this treatment the flour was ready to eat. *Balonarati's* invention, still in use, ensures a plentiful food supply for the aborigines. The place where the mythical man prepared the cycad flour, *natu*, is now a swamp filled with large paper-bark trees, some of them still bearing the marks where *Balonarati* stripped the bark from them.

Two bark paintings, although somewhat similar in design, illustrate different aspects of the same myth.

On Pl. 98C,⁸ the transverse bands *a* and *b* are sand-banks on the River Gainmaui, and *c* the main track between the north and the south of Caledon Bay. The lozenges are the paper-bark trees in the swamp, and the dots on the ends of the lozenges, fine white dust in the bark which the wild bees collect and carry to their hives. The cross-hatching indicates the pieces of bark lying about the base of the tree after the stripping is finished.

Plate 98B represents an individual tree at Matamataui. The lozenges on the upper and lower panels indicate places on the trunk from which *Balonarati* had stripped the bark, and the dots, like those on the previous painting, the white dust which the bees take to their hives. The cross-hatched bands surrounding the two panels indicate the upper part of the tree which the mythical man, being unable to reach, could not strip of its bark.

The Man, Rualko, and the Turtle, Muratu-muratu, at Cape Shield

The *jiritja* man *Rualko* lived, during mythical times, on the beach at Cape Shield. He ate only the eggs of turtles and sea-birds.

On Pl. 98D the central panel is the track of the female turtle, *muratu-muratu*, the herring-bone design being the marks she made in the sand as she crawled from the water to lay her eggs. The inner oval at *b* is the sand disturbed by the turtle in the preparation of her nest, and the dots in the outer oval her eggs. On his way to the turtle nest (see footmarks, panel *c*), *Rualko* collected the eggs (dots in panel *c*) which the four black seagulls had laid on the path. His returning footmarks are shown in panel *d*. The horizontal groups of wavy lines *e, e, e*, are the marks made in the sand by the sand-crabs, *gunjun*, and the semicircles

6. This fruit is poisonous if eaten in its raw state.

7. Paper-bark, being particularly soft and flexible, is used for a wide variety of purposes.

8. Interpretation by F. D. McCarthy.

at each end, their holes. Cross-hatched panels *f, f, f*, represent the paths made by the *gunjun* crabs as they ran from one hole to another.

The turtle track has now been transformed into a group of red and yellow sand-hills and the holes of the *gunjun* crabs into low bushes.

(a) THE CONCEPTION BELIEFS

Throughout the eastern side of Arnhem Land the aborigines believe the spirit child visits the father in a dream and asks to be directed to his future mother. The sources from which these children spring, however, vary with the different localities.

At Groote Eylandt, the children travel on the winds, those of the *wirikapara* moiety on the *mamariga* (south-east) wind,⁹ and those of the *oranikapara* (equivalent to the *jiritja* on the mainland) on the *bava* (north-east) wind.¹⁰ The little spirit child hides in the grass until it has an opportunity of visiting the father in a dream and asking him for a mother.

At Milingimbi, Warner¹¹ states, the spirit child, who has been living in the totemic well in the form of a small fish, asks the sleeping father the name of its mother. The father points her out, the child enters her body and starts life as a human being.

It was at Yirrkalla, however, that I was able to obtain, through the medium of the bark paintings, a more complete account of the conception beliefs.

(i) *The Conception Beliefs of the Dua Moiety of Yirrkalla*

The people of the *dua* moiety believe that when *Tjambuwal*, the thunderman, creates the rain clouds he places in them a number of spirit children, *jurtu*. These *jurtu*, who are so small that only the medicine-men can see them, descend on the raindrops to the land, or the sea. If on the land, the little *jurtu* enter one of the various *dua* yams, fruits, and especially the *dua jarapang* or *lirawar* wild honey; if the *jurtu* falls in the sea, it inhabits the *dua* fish or the green turtles. The little child spirits of *Tjambuwal* will not have anything to do with *jiritja* foods.

One day, as shown in the painting, two men catch a green turtle, bring it to the shore and cut it up so that everyone can have a meal. The cutting up of the turtle releases the *dua* spirit child living in its body. That night, when everyone is asleep, the spirit child, *jurtu*, visits one of the men in a dream and says:

'You are my father. *Tjambuwal* put me in the turtle you cut up today, so that I could find a mother. Where is she?'

The father points out one of his wives, whom he has been told has ceased menstruating; the child enters her body and starts a terrestrial existence. Next morning the father, if he remembers the dream (the aboriginal men said that it was not often that they did), says to his wife:

9. Myth of *mamariga* wind, Pl. 24D.

10. Myth of *bava* wind, Pl. 24B.

11. Warner (1937), p. 21.

'Last night a *jurtu* came and asked me for a mother, so I sent it to you.'

Within a short time the mother shows signs of pregnancy.

In the middle of Pl. 99B is *Tjambuwal*, holding the spirit child, *jurtu*, by the hand. Over his head are the boomerang-shaped clouds, *wulmu*. The groups of curving cross-hatched panels on the upper edge and the left-hand side of the painting are rain clouds, *b*, the home of the spirit child. On the right-hand side are two men spearing a turtle inhabited by a *jurtu* and on the left a pregnant woman. The curving cross-hatched lines at *a*, on the extreme right of the painting, represent the water disturbed by the wounded creature.

(ii) *The Conception Beliefs of the Jiritja Moiety*

The conception beliefs of the *jiritja* moiety vary somewhat from those of the *dua*. They believe that when a woman ceases to menstruate her blood goes into the sky and is there changed into a spirit child, *jurtu*. After some time the little *jurtu*, desiring an earthly mother, creates a thunderstorm and a rainbow, and, using the raindrops as a vehicle of travel, descends to the earth. If the *jurtu* falls into the sea, it enters some *jiritja* creature such as a dugong, a hawkbill turtle or a queen fish; if on the land, a hive of *jiritja* honey, *kamou* or *barangit*, or the body of some *jiritja* creature. Should the aborigines spear a dugong and find that it is particularly fat, or locate a hive well stocked with honey, they know that the dugong or the hive is inhabited by a spirit child.

When, for example, the dugong is cut open, and the *jurtu* escapes, it visits the sleeping father and asks him which of his wives is to be his mother. As with the *dua* moiety, the father points out a wife who has ceased menstruating. The child enters her body through the vulva. If the father remembers next morning he tells the expectant mother about his dream. Soon afterwards the woman feels the movements of the *jurtu* within her body. As soon as a woman ceases to menstruate, she must not eat meat or fish. Her diet is limited to grass-seeds, yams, the fruit of the cycad, shell-fish and crabs.

On Pl. 99C the father and pregnant mother are at the upper edge of the painting. On either side of them are large thunder-clouds created by the spirit child, *jurtu*. On the right of the painting is falling rain, parallel lines of cross-hatching, and on the extreme left two dugongs; the cross-hatching around them is the sea. The U-shaped symbol is a rainbow created by the little *jurtu*, at the base of which is one who has descended on the raindrops. He is swimming about in the sea, waiting for an opportunity to enter the body of one of the dugongs which, he hopes, will be captured by the men in the canoe.¹² The artist explained that he had made a mistake by not allowing himself enough room to paint the dugong in the canoe with the spirit child inside of it. So he painted the *jurtu* only.

12. The *jurtu*, like the *muri* of the Adnjamatana tribe of the northern Flinders Ranges of South Australia, are, before they enter the mother, complete, self-directing beings. Mountford and Harvey (1941), p. 159.

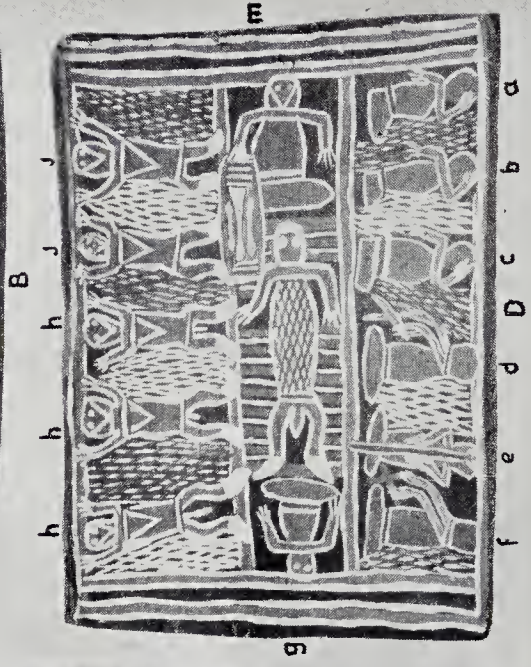
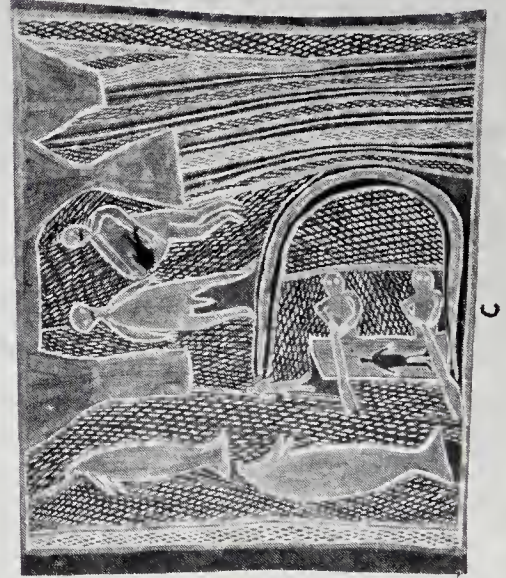
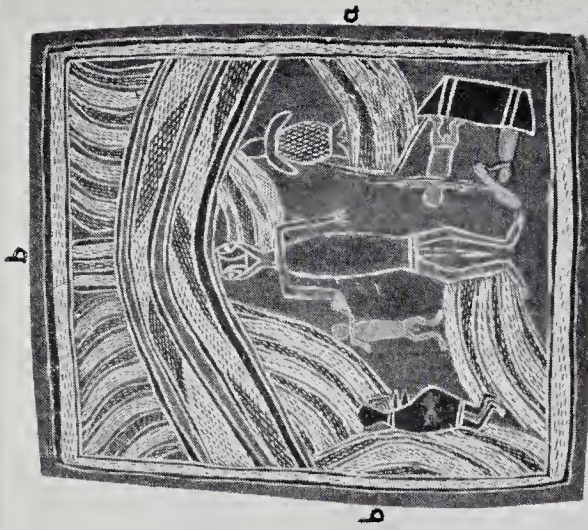
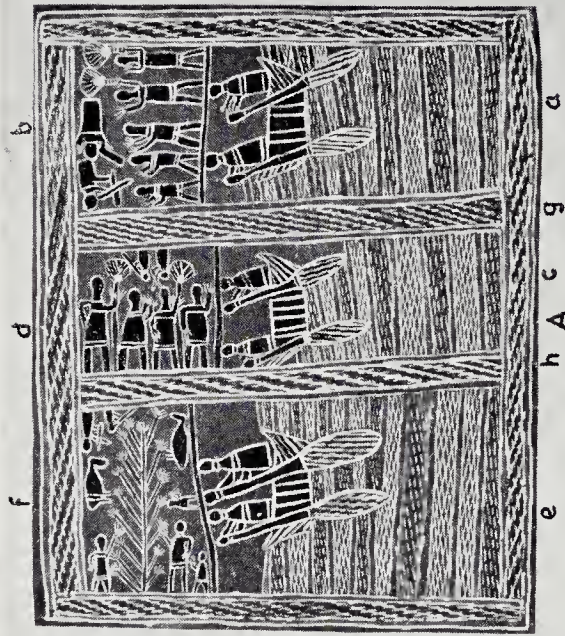


PLATE 99. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

A The journey of the dua dead

B Dua conception beliefs

D Burial, cleansing the bones

C Jinitja conception beliefs

(b) DEATH AND BURIAL

There are three important events in the life of every male aboriginal of Arnhem Land—in fact, in the life of any tribalized Australian aboriginal—birth, when he leaves the land of the spirits and enters the every-day world; initiation, when he is admitted into the sacred or ritualistic world, where age makes him increasingly important; and death, when he leaves the every-day world, and again enters into the land of the spirits.

Although there are few rituals associated with birth, those of initiation and the later age-grading ceremonies are long and complicated, for it is by these ceremonies that men are admitted deeper and deeper into the secret life of the tribe.

At death, the burial rituals extend over many weeks, their purpose being not only to send the spirit so happily to its future home that it will not be a danger to the living, but also to allow the living to adjust themselves to their loss.

The burial ceremonies at Yirrkalla have three main phases: (i) the ceremonies at death, (ii) the cleansing of the bones, and (iii) the final burial, after which the spirit of the dead leaves for its aboriginal 'heaven'. If the dead are of the *dua* moiety, the spirit goes to Purelko, and if of the *jiritja*, to Nalkuma.

(i) *The Ceremonies at Death*

When a man dies his relatives gather round the dead body, wailing loudly, the women cutting their scalps with sharpened bones until the blood flows freely. After a short period of wailing the men form a group apart from the women and chant the long series of songs which belong to the totemic group of their dead companion. Next morning the men proceed with the rites of burial, first by rubbing red ochre over the body of the corpse, and on that painting his totemic design.¹³ The men also make two bark effigies¹⁴ which they put under the arms of the corpse. They explain to him that the effigies are his children, whom they have killed and placed beside him to prevent him being lonely and wishing to return to haunt the living. The corpse is then wrapped in a thick layer of paper-bark and tied with string.

While all this is being done, other men are erecting a platform of logs about five feet in height and covering it with a layer of leaves. Then, while the men chant another series of totemic songs belonging to the dead man, two aborigines

13. This totemic design is the same as that painted on his body during circumcision. See body paintings associated with circumcision, Pl. 128. Warner (1937), pp. 415-16, in his description and interpretation of the mortuary rituals of the Murugin, an adjacent people, records that the totemic design is painted on the body of the dead man so that the spirits, or *Mokoi*, can identify him.

14. Similar to the bark figures, Fig. 65C, D. Frazer (1936), p. 59, records: 'In Tahiti . . . the priest took a number of small slips of plantain leaf-stalk, fixed two or three pieces under each arm of the corpse, placed a few on the breast, and then, addressing the corpse, said, "There are your family, there is your child, there is your wife, there is your father, and there is your mother. Be satisfied yonder (that is, in the world of the spirits). Look not toward those who are left in this world."'

climb to the top of the platform and, taking the corpse from those below, lay it on the bed of leaves,¹⁵ face upwards.

As the two men descend, others blow a wooden trumpet informing the *Mokoi*¹⁶ of the death, knowing that they will take the spirit from the locality for a time so that it will not be a danger to its living relatives. At the same time another man climbs a tall tree and makes a noise like the night-bird, *karawak* (associated with the *Mokoi*).¹⁷ As soon as the aboriginal in the tree hears the *Mokoi* coming (they make a coughing sound) he descends quickly and with the rest of the mourners runs quickly from the burial ground. This is done, not only to make the dead man's spirit go with the *Mokoi*, but because the *Mokoi*, particularly that of the newly dead man, are dangerous to the living.

(ii) *The Cleansing of the Bones*

For the next two or three months no one goes to the burial platform. When, however, putrefaction is complete, the maggots from the body have entered the ground and turned into blowflies, the aborigines meet to perform the second phase in the burial rituals, the cleansing of the bones.¹⁸

Totemic dances belonging to the clan of the dead man are performed to the accompaniment of much singing, the beating of music sticks and the blowing of the wooden trumpet. The noise of these rituals is supposed to scare the spirit of the dead man and his ghostly attendants, the *Mokoi*, from the burial platform. The body is lifted from the platform or, if an earth burial, exhumed and a curious ritual performed over it, in which two men sit, one on either side of the corpse, whilst a third thrusts a spear into it, saying that he has speared a turtle.¹⁹ The women, who have been sitting at one side, then come forward, take the skeleton apart, wash the bones in water and wrap them in paper-bark to remove the smell. At the end of three days the women unwrap the bones, rub them with red ochre and place them in a temporary bark coffin, on the outside of which the men have painted the totemic symbols of the deceased.²⁰

15. If when a man dies there are only a few people present, the corpse is wrapped in paper-bark and buried in the ground.

16. The *Mokoi* (*jiritja*) and *Wuna* (*dua*) are spirits living in the jungle, who are always seeking souls of the newly-dead for company. A dead person has two spirits, one, *wakimu*, which finally goes to a distant 'heaven' (p. 326) and one which stays on earth. The latter are the *Mokoi*. (See Warner (1937), p. 416; also p. 338.) There are, however, many kinds of *Mokoi*, and our information about them is very limited.

17. See ceremonial staff of *karawak*, Pl. 134E.

18. See description of bark coffins, p. 317.

19. The significance of this ritual is obscure. Warner (1937), p. 443, refers to it. A similar ritual is supposed to be carried out at Purelko, the final resting place of the *dua* dead, p. 325.

20. Frazer (1936), p. 5, mentions that, 'In Misol, a small island to the north-west of New Guinea, . . . the body, wrapped in clothes, is deposited on a scaffold built for it in the forest. From time to time the relations come to inspect the corpse until decomposition is complete. The skeleton is then brought to the place, generally a cave, where the bones of all the dead inhabitants of the village are collected.' This is a similar burial custom to that carried out by the aborigines of north-eastern Arnhem Land and might well be the source from which the Arnhem Land custom originated.

The skull,²¹ which also has been painted with its totemic design, is placed in a string carrying-bag. Both the skull and the bark coffin containing the bones are carried from one camp to another by a near female relative of the dead man and suitably mourned over, so that the dead spirit will be happy. At night the bark coffin is placed on a pair of forked sticks, and the skull, in its carrying-bag, hung on a nearby tree.

(iii) *The Final Burial*

At the end of some months, after the old men have decided that the time is ripe for the final disposal of the bones, the brothers of the dead man cut down a hollow tree to make a log coffin and, after taking off the bark, paint on it the totemic design of the dead man.²²

While the bones are being transferred from the bark to the log coffin the men perform the water dance. A tribal sister then digs a hole in the ground, the log coffin is placed in the hole in an upright position,²³ the earth packed tightly round the base, and the burial rituals are over. Sometimes the small bones of the hands and feet are given to near relatives as mementoes. The skull, being too large to go in the log coffin, is usually broken up and thrown away.

Four bark paintings illustrate the burial rituals: Pl. 100A, the ceremonies at death; Pl. 99D, the cleansing of the bones and the placing in the bark coffin; Pl. 100B, the transference of the bones to the log coffin; and Pl. 101D, a complete sequence of burial.

On Pl. 100A, panel *a*, a newly deceased man is surrounded by mourning women. On panel *b*, the dead man is in his grave (this is an earth burial). On the lower edge of the painting three men are beating their music sticks together and singing, accompanied by a fourth, blowing his drone tube.²⁴ Above the grave are four dancing women and, on panel *c*, another line of women singing and dancing. The remainder of the painting deals with the journey of the spirit to Nalkuma, the *jiritja* heaven. This will be described later, p. 529.

Plate 99D pictures a ceremony associated with the second phase of the burial ceremonies of a *dua* man, the cleansing of the bones.

In the centre of the painting is the desiccated body resting on the burial platform (short lines on either side). At *a* his mother, *b* his sister, *c* his wife, are stabbing themselves in the scalp with a bone specially sharpened for the occasion. The blood flowing from each woman is indicated by the adjacent cross-hatching. At *d* and *f*, two *dua* men are beating their music sticks and chanting the burial songs, and at *e* a *jiritja* man is blowing the drone tube.

21. See painted skull, Pl. 101C, E.

22. This design is the same as that painted on the body of the dead man throughout his life.

23. See Milingimbi log coffin, Pl. 105A. Those used at Yirrkalla were longer, simpler and without projecting spikes on top.

24. This is a hollow stick, or sometimes a length of bamboo, about two inches in diameter and up to five feet in length, which is blown like a trumpet. Some investigators call them by the European name of didjeridoo.

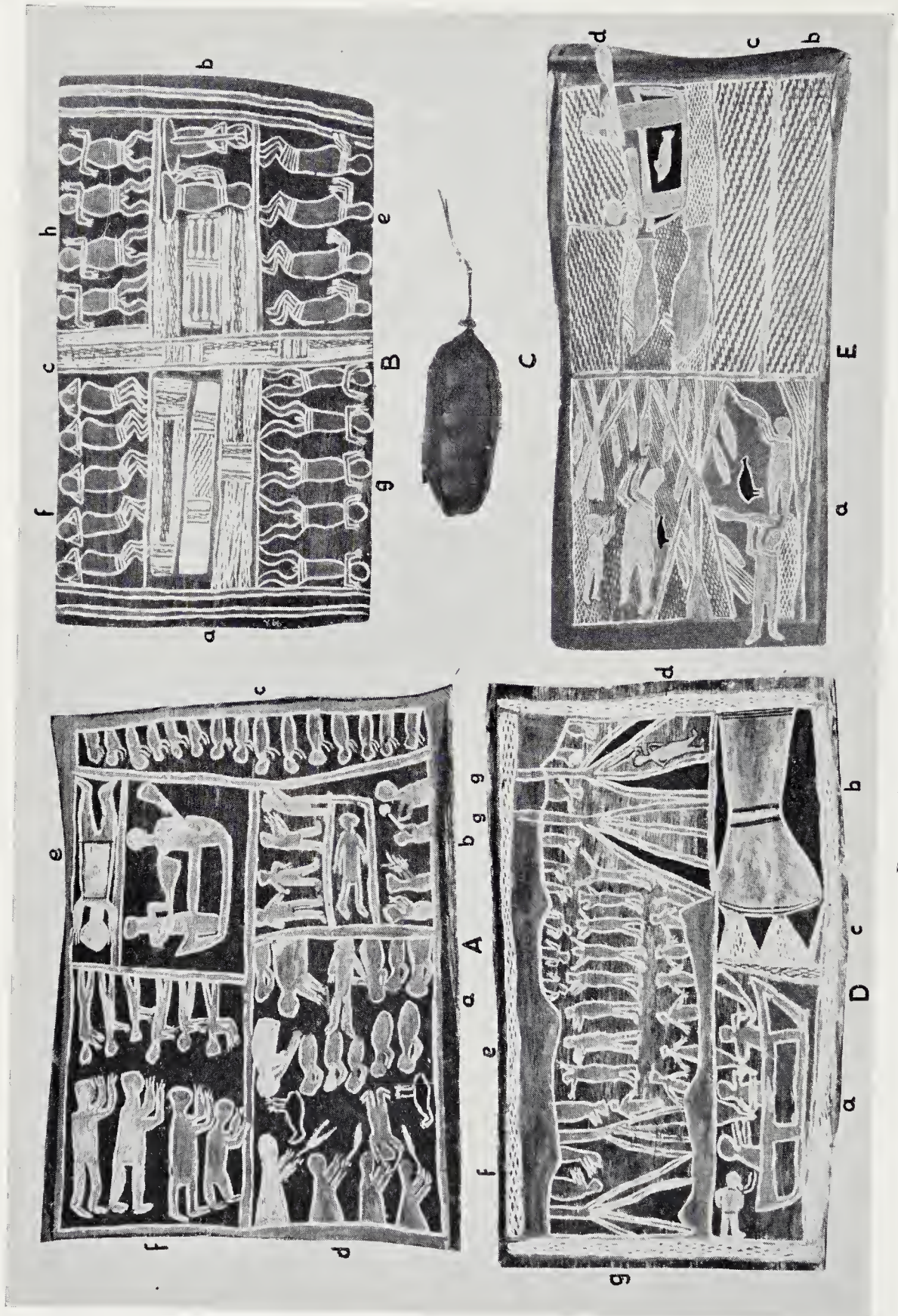


PLATE 100. Bark paintings, Yirkalla

A, E. Journey of jiritja dead
 B Final stage of burial
 C Bean of menin vine
 D Jiritja heaven, Nalktuma

Three *dua* men, *h, h, h*, and two *jiritja* men, *j, j*, are performing the totemic dances of the dead man, the cross-hatching between the figures symbolizing the dust rising from under their feet. At *g* is a *dua* woman ready to take the skeleton apart, and at *m* a *jiritja* woman waiting with the bark coffin.

Plate 100B deals with the third and final stage of burial, the transference of the bones from the bark to the log coffin.²⁵ In panel *a* there are two *dua* log coffins and one *jiritja*, the *jiritja* being in the middle. In the left of panel *b* are two bark coffins, the left-hand one containing the bones of a *jiritja* man and the right-hand one the bones of a *dua* man.²⁶ The cross-hatched panels on both sides of the coffins are the forked sticks of the burial platform, and the vertical panel *c* the framework. The various performers in the ceremony are depicted in panels *d, e, f* and *g*, each group holding their hands and arms in a manner peculiar to their moiety and sex.

Thus, in panel *e* the *jiritja* women are dancing with their hands held at waist level, and on panel *f*, the *dua* women, with their knuckles held tightly against their heads. On panel *g*, the *dua* men are holding both hands above their heads, and at *d* the *jiritja* men have one hand held high and the other at waist level. In the right of panel *b*, two men are providing music for the dancers, the *jiritja* (right) blowing the drone tube and the *dua* (left) singing and beating his music sticks.

Plate 101D is divided into seven panels, each picturing some phase of the second, third or fourth stages of the ceremonies.

In panel *a* (lower right), the dead man, the central figure, is being lifted from the burial platform by four aborigines, two on each side. The small figure at the feet of the corpse represents one of the wives whose duty it is to clean the bones. In the next panel, *b*, one man is blowing the drone tube, and to the right of him another is singing and beating his music sticks together. The central figure of this panel is a woman wrapping the bones in paper-bark to remove the smell before they are placed in the temporary bark coffin. The four figures on the right are women performing the burial dance. On panel *c* (lower left) are six more dancing women.

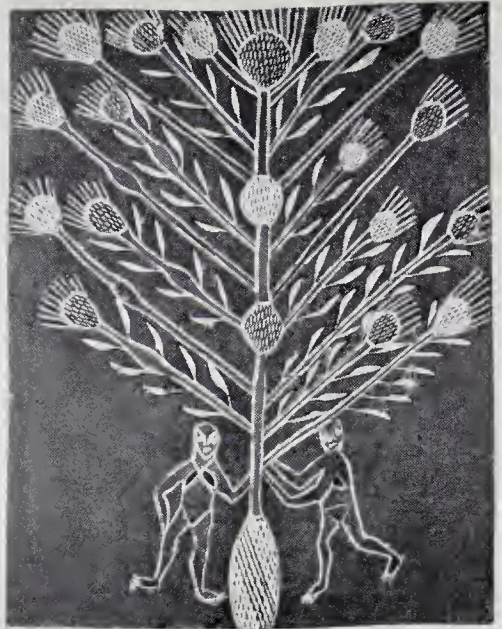
The upper left panel, *d*, shows the bones, now encased in the temporary bark coffin, being passed to the mother, or the wife, of the deceased (central position). On the lower edge of the same panel, reading from the left, is a drone-tube player, one man beating his music sticks and singing and five women dancing. The two lines of men on the upper edge are performing a totemic dance at the same time as the bark coffin is being handed to the woman. The remaining panels depict the final disposal of the bones in the log coffin. In *e* are seven men and the log coffin containing the bones, whilst in panel *f* the women are dancing. Some men are playing the drone tube in panel *g*, others are beating the music

25. See bark coffin, Yirrkalla, Pl. 102C, D, and Milingimbi, Pl. 103B, C.

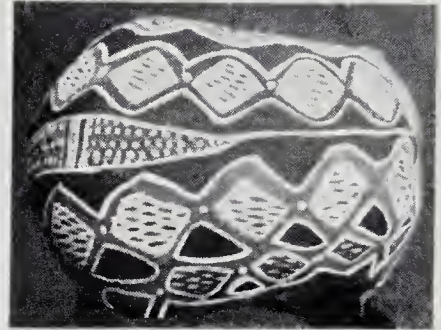
26. This painting suggests that on some occasions the bones of the members of both moieties are transferred to their respective log coffins at the same time.



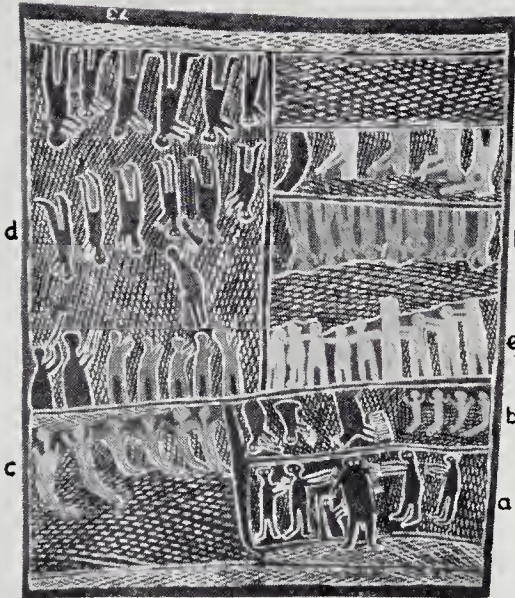
A



B



C



D



E

PLATE 101. Bark paintings and painted skull, Yirrkalla

A The dua journey of the dead
C. E. A painted skull

B The flight of the morning star
D A burial ceremony

sticks and singing the burial songs. The cross-hatched areas throughout the painting symbolize the dust rising from the feet of the dancers.

Plate 101C, E pictures the painted skull of a *jiritja* woman of the honey bee totem of the *dalwongu mata*²⁷ of Blue Mud Bay.

On Plate 101C the central dotted triangular design is the bee-bread, and the transverse lines across it, the young bees. The diamond shapes, covering the whole skull, represent the comb filled with honey, and the surrounding white lines, the wax.

(iv) Coffins

The aborigines of Yirrkalla use two kinds of coffins: log coffins, in which the bones are finally deposited, and temporary bark coffins, in which the wife or mother carries the bones from camp to camp.

I saw several log coffins at Yirrkalla. They were placed vertically in the ground and stood up to seven feet in height. Although some had rings cut round their circumference, all evidence of painted decoration had been washed away by the elements.

However, my informants made me seven replicas of the temporary bark coffins. These coffins belonged to individuals of five totems: *Tjambuwal*, the thunder-man; *gariwa*, the green turtle; *kapu*, the water totem; *tungaldji*, the brolga; and *kundura*, the serpent.

Warner²⁸ describes how, when the log is being prepared and painted as a coffin, it is treated in a similar manner to a totemic emblem. It is kept in a special place and, while being painted, is chanted over by men singing a cycle of songs belonging to the moiety of the dead men.

Tjambuwal, the Thunder-man

Plate 102A, B is the design painted on a temporary bark coffin of a man who was a member of the totemis of *Tjambuwal*, the thunder-man, *tjunda*, the lizard, and *buorta*, the water-bird.

The three top centre panels on A refer to the *Tjambuwal* myth. In the centre is *Tjambuwal* with splashes of his urine rising into the sky and forming clouds. The clouds, *wulmu* (curious loops of clouds, which the natives pointed out to me), occupy the panels on either side of *Tjambuwal*. The outer upper panels deal with the bird, *buorta*, whose tracks are indicated in one group of diagonal lines, and the seeds of the swamp grass on which *buorta* feeds are shown as dots in the adjacent group. The cross-hatching between these lines represent the leaves of the swamp grass.²⁹

The designs in the four lower panels all refer to the lizard, *tjunda*, at Port Bradshaw. In these panels the artist has painted the traditional designs of the

27. This is the *mata* design of the *dalwongu* language group, Fig. 64J.

28. Warner (1937), p. 441.

29. These designs are almost identical with those on the music stick of *Djunkgao*, Pl. 132E, F.

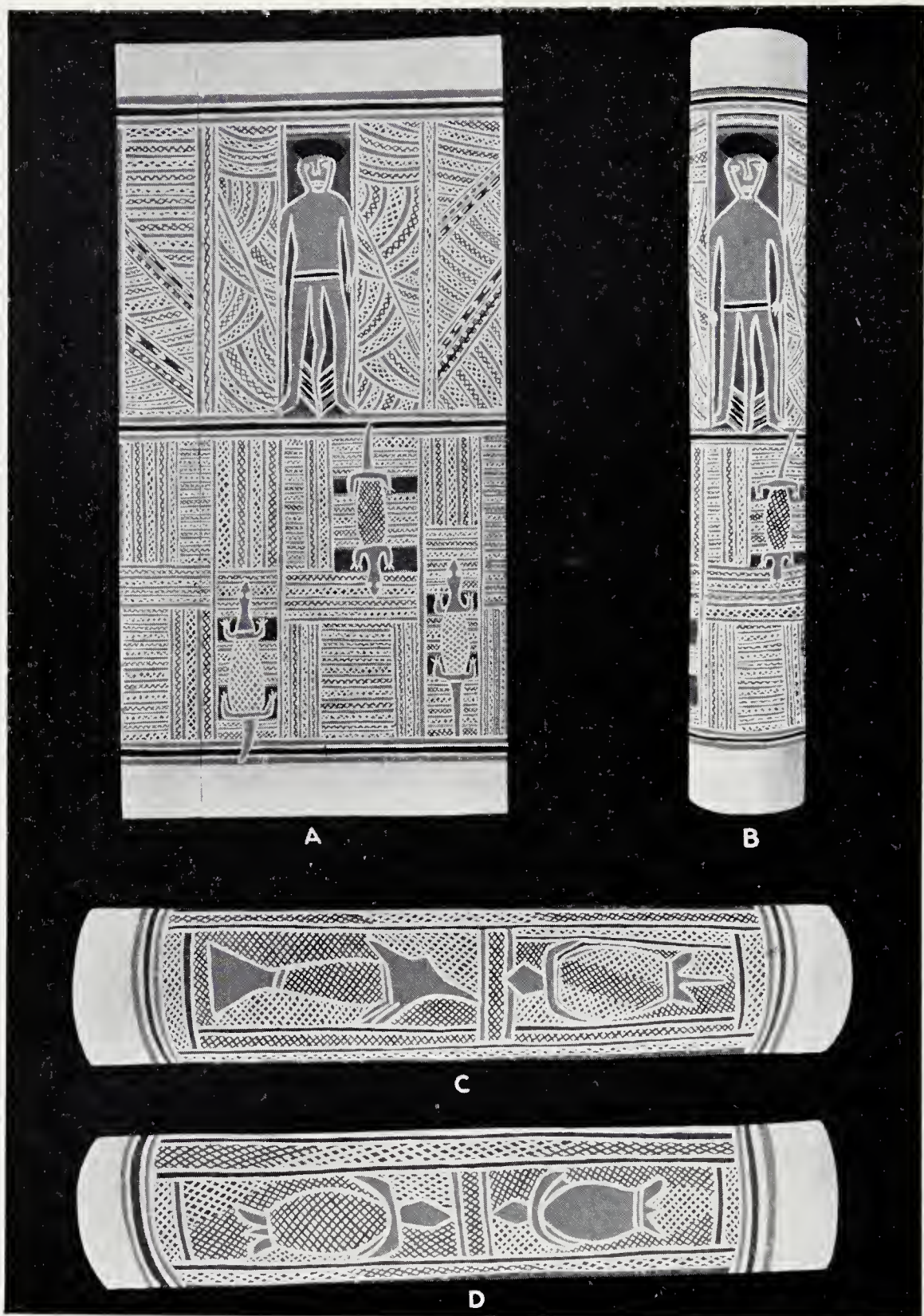


PLATE 102. Coffins, Yirkalla and Milingimbi *Betty Hunter*
 A, B The thunder-man, Tjambuwal C, D The green turtle, gariwa

parallel sand-hills and the lizard walking on the soft sand, as they were seen and 'sung' by *Djungkao* at Port Bradshaw.³⁰ On the lower left-hand panel the lines of cross-hatching symbolize the light on the crest of the breaking waves, seen by *Djungkao* as he landed on the beach at Bilapinja Island.³¹

The Green Turtle, Gariwa

Plate 102C, D pictures the coffin of a man belonging to the totem of the mythical green turtle, *gariwa* (*Chelonia mydas*), whose totemic place is on the floor of the sea between Yirrkalla and Bremer Island.³² On one side of the coffin, Pl. 102D, are two green turtles, *gariwa*, and on the other, Pl. 102C, in the left-hand panel, is a dolphin, and in the right an unidentified turtle, *jurnungi*. The cross-hatched band between them is the totemic rock at the bottom of the sea and the surrounding cross-hatching, the ocean.

The Water Totem, Kapu

These two coffins belonged to *dua* men of the *kapu*, water, totemic place near Blue Mud Bay, where three fresh-water streams run into the Koolatong River.³³ One, Pl. 103C, appears to belong to the fresh-water side, and the other, Pl. 104B, to the salt-water side of the totemic locality.

The transverse bands encircling the coffin, Pl. 103C, are the three water-courses mentioned in the myth. The lower cross-hatched vertical panels represent the 'new' water, i.e. the fresh water which flows into the river after the heavy rains. The lines of dots on the upper section of the coffin are frog's eggs, the cross-hatched areas between, running water, and the short transverse lines at *a*, logs lying in the bed of the streams.

On Pl. 104B the lines of rectangles³⁴ represent the waters of the sea, and the groups of lines encircling the coffin, ridges of sand left by the receding tide.

The Brolga, Tungaldji

When the brolgas (*Grus rubicundus*) were men, during creation times, they used to walk between the Meilinourit waterholes in the extensive swamp country of Diaunjari, Blue Mud Bay.

Later these men transformed themselves into brolgas, which still live in considerable numbers in that locality.

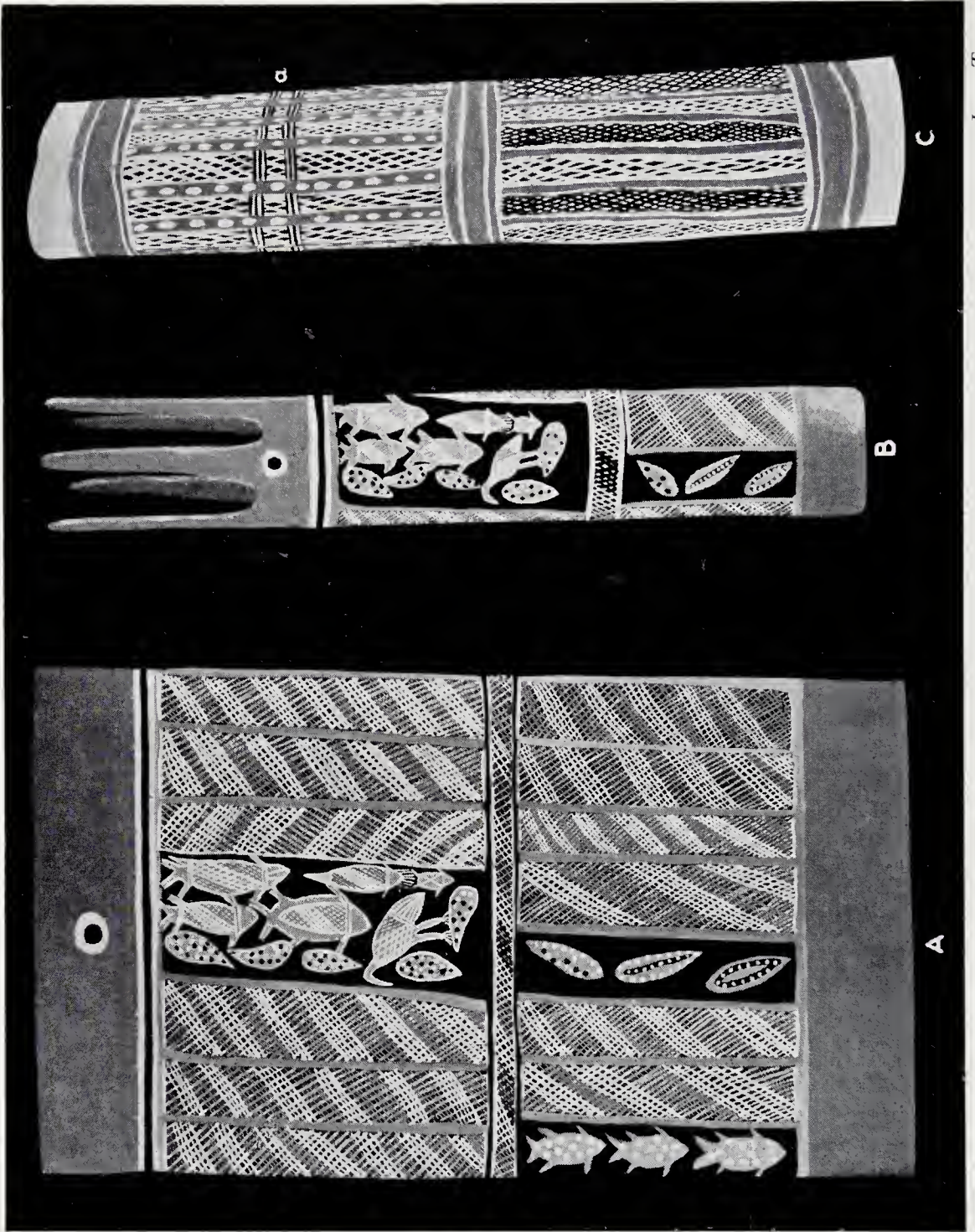
Plate 104D is the painted designs on a bark coffin belonging to a man of the *tungaldji*, brolga, totem. The circular designs are the Meilinourit waterholes. Paper-bark trees, *mambara*, now grow in the swamps. The radiating paths are those made by the brolga men as they travelled from one waterhole to the other in search of food.

30. Bark painting, Pl. 86A; myth, p. 273. 31. Bark painting, Pl. 85E; myth, p. 271.

32. See carved figure of green turtle, Pl. 141A, B; myth, p. 447.

33. Map, Fig. 57.

34. This is the *mata* design of the *djapu* language group, Fig. 64A.



Jean Truran

PLATE 103. Coffins, Yirrkalla and Milingimbi

A, B Unidentified C Water, kapu

*The Serpent, Kundura*³⁵

Two temporary bark coffins belonging to a man of the *kuudura*, snake, totem were made and painted by the same artist. Though the designs on the two coffins are similar in appearance, they relate to different parts of the same myth.

During creation times there were a number of mythical *kuudura* snakes in north-eastern Arnhem Land. One *kuudura* lived in the mangrove swamps at a place called Baimaruna, south of Milingimbi. Whilst there, he swallowed two women and a child.³⁶ Later, when the *kuudura* moved his camp to Tualki, at Arnhem Bay, he vomited up the dead people. Two other mythical *kuudura* (Pl. 104A) made their camp at Karami, in the forest country near Arnhem Bay. They were quiet people and did not interfere with anyone. The Milingimbi *kundura* lived at Tualki for some time before he invited the two *kuudura* at Karami, who were then man and wife, to stay with him. When they agreed to do so, they all changed themselves into the present-day harmless python of that name which lives among the rocks.

The coffin designs on Pl. 104C deal with the Milingimbi *kundura* snakes which moved to Tualki, a mangrove swamp at Arnhem Bay. The transverse panel, *a*, is a fresh-water stream. When the tide is out, this stream flows down the central watercourse *c*, filling the swamps, panels *d* and *e*, with fresh water. At high tide the water flows from the sea, panel *f*, along watercourse *c*, in the opposite direction, replacing the fresh water in the swamps with salt water. The painting on the coffin shows two *kuudura* in each swamp. The design at the head of the snake on panel *e* is their camp.

Plate 104A, although similar in design to C, deals with the section of the myth in which two *kundura* snakes camped in the forest country at Karami, Arnhem Bay. In panel *a* are two of the *kundura* snakes, the crescent at the head of the one on the left representing their dry-season camp. The transverse lines of cross-hatching on panels *a* and *b* are symbolical of the ribs of the snakes.³⁷

Whilst engaged on archaeological research at Milingimbi, F. M. Setzler and F. D. McCarthy collected three log coffins, together with a simple interpretation of the designs.

Fresh-water Tortoise, Mimala

Plate 105A, B belongs to a man of the *mimala*, fresh-water tortoise, totemic group. The main figure is the fresh-water tortoise.³⁸ The pear-shaped designs near the head and on the right are fresh-water snakes, called *tjalning*. The holes cut through the upper end of the coffin are the 'eyes' of the coffin.³⁹ In these the mourners sometimes place the long leg bones of the dead man. The prongs

35. The snake, *kundura*, is also known by the aborigines of Groote Eylandt, Pl. 25E.

36. This bears some resemblance to the myth of the *jurlungur* serpent which swallowed the *Wawalik* sisters, p. 278; Warner (1937), p. 250.

37. The convention of showing the ribs of snakes external to the body, a simple form of X-ray art, is not unusual. See Pl. 7C and Fig. 5 from Central Australia.

38. See bark painting, Pl. 126A, and engraved pipe, Fig. 59D, belonging to *mimala*.

39. Warner (1937), p. 441.

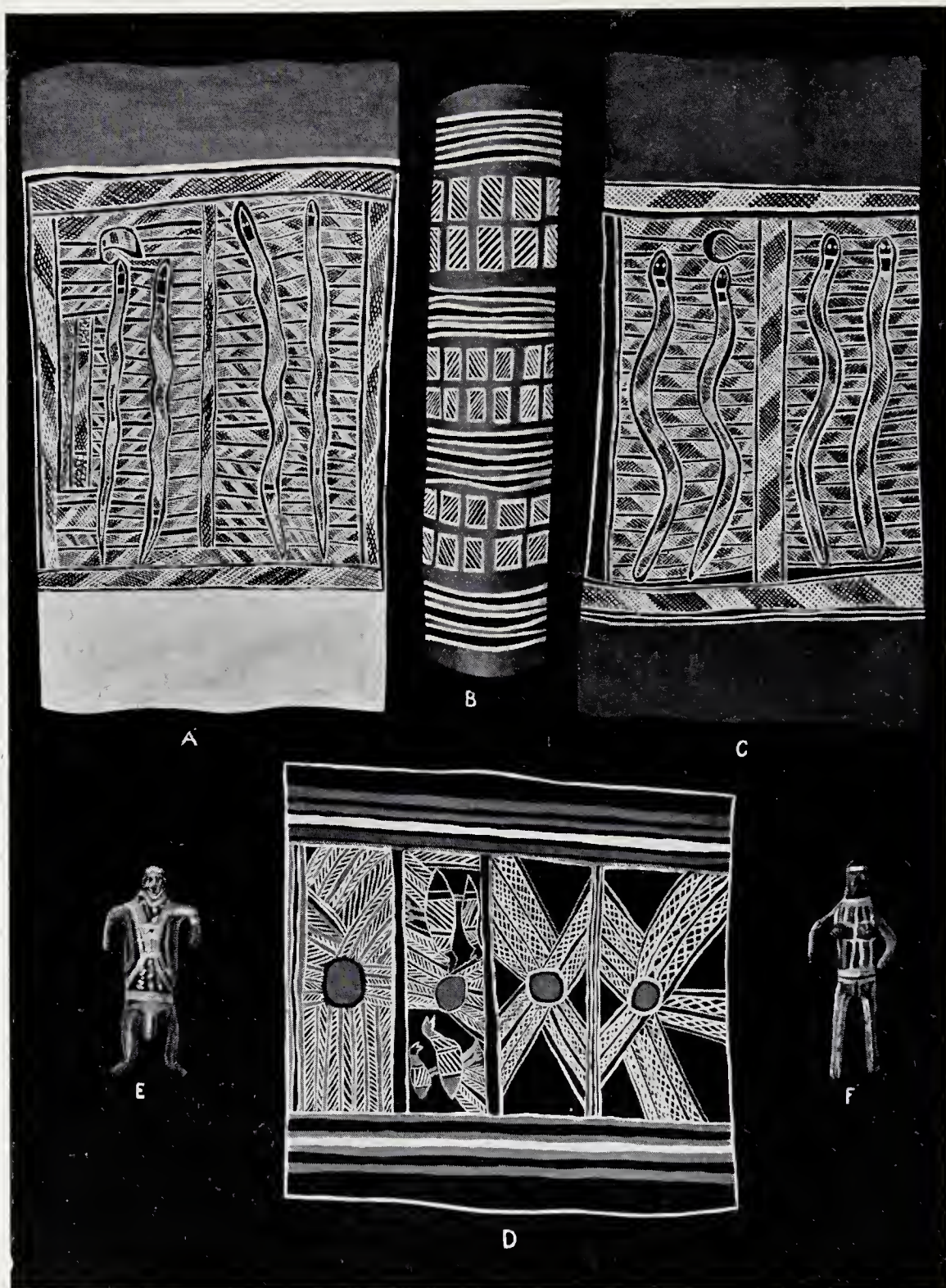


PLATE 104. Coffins and wax figures, Yirrkalla

Jean Truan

A, C The snake, kundura B Water, kapu D The brolga, tungaldji
 E, F Oijal and Neri-neri

represent the mouth and teeth of an unknown mythical monster. There was no explanation for the fish designs on the lower right.

Fresh-water Fish, Kwiwarina

Plate 105C, D belongs to a member of the fresh-water fish, *kwiwarina*, totem of the *dua* moiety, whose totemic place is on the Glyde River. The more or less triangular designs, upper left, represent huts, called *ambit*, and the oval designs on the other panels, women's carrying-baskets. The dots on the edge of the baskets symbolize the mythical fresh-water fish, *kwiwarina*, and the cross-hatching inside, smaller fish. As in A, the holes are the 'eyes' of the coffin, and the prongs the teeth and jaws of some unidentified monster.

Unidentified Totem

Plate 103A, B is a coffin of an unidentified totem from Milingimbi. In the upper central panel, A, the bird is an emu, and the pear-shaped designs, yams. Three large fresh-water fish occupy the upper right. Below them is a cat-fish, *kingding* (distinguished by the tentacles from the mouth and the lack of fins), and near the head of the cat-fish, a diamond fish. Three king-fish, *jungala*, are shown in the lower left panel, and three cat-fish, *kingding*, in the lower central panel.

(c) THE JOURNEY OF THE DEAD SPIRIT AND ITS AFTER-LIFE

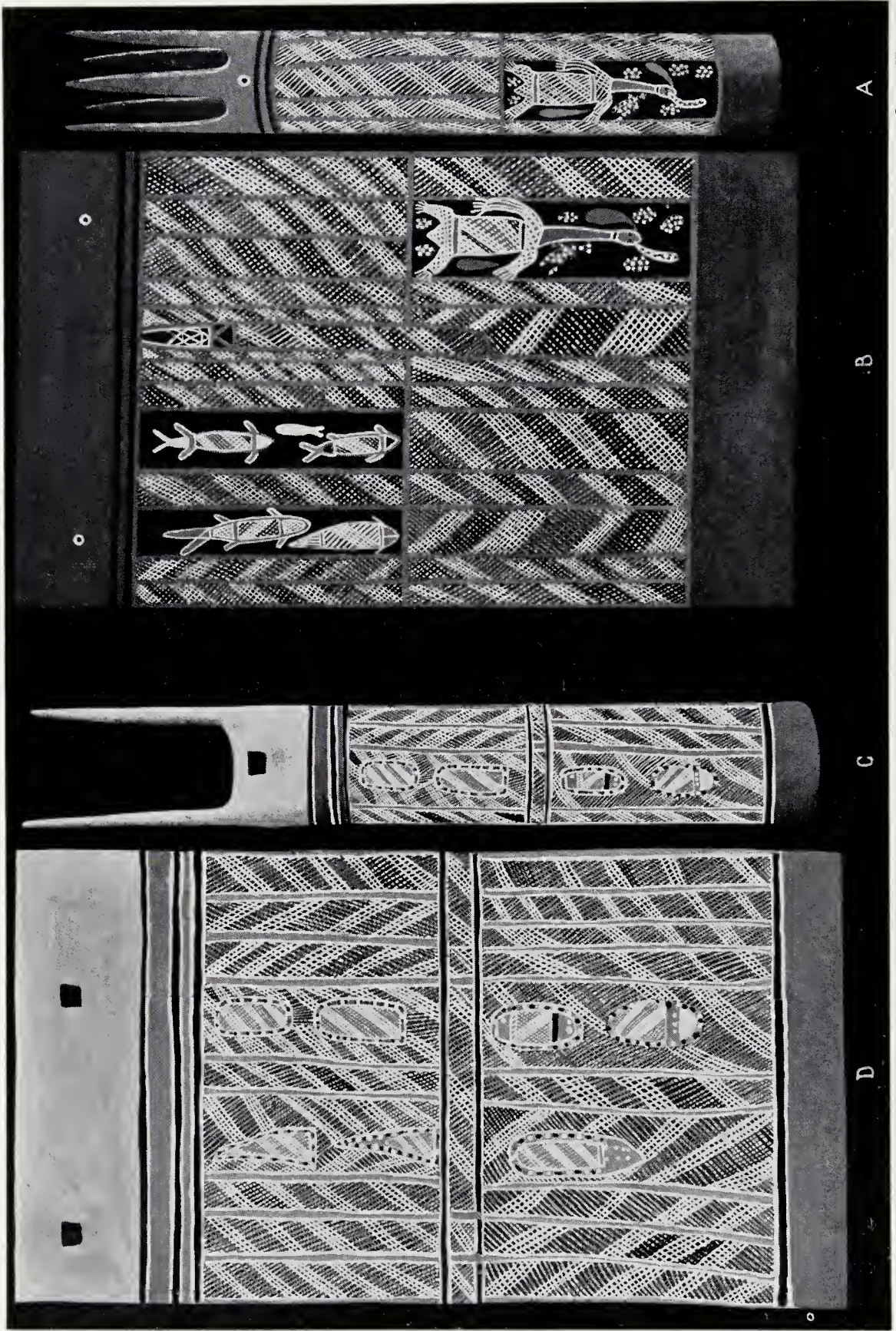
When the log coffin has been placed in its final position and the people have returned to their camps, the spirits of the dead leave their bones, and according to their moiety, travel to their respective 'heaven'. In these 'heavens' there is always pleasant weather and ample food. Everyone is happy, because each spirit on its arrival, whatever its previous disposition, is changed into a person of equable temperament and good health. All day long the spirits may bask in the sun, talking to old friends about their mutual experiences when on earth together, and every evening they perform their favourite ceremonies and sing their favourite songs. Many of the spirit people, however, amuse themselves by going out in their canoes to hunt the sea-creatures for food.⁴⁰

Although the *dua* and *jiritja* myths of the journey of the spirit to the land of the dead have many points of resemblance, the destinations are different, the *dua* spirits travelling east to Purelko,⁴¹ an island near the sunrise, and the *jiritja* to Nalkuma,⁴² a land to the north, where in addition to the usual

40. See *dua* myths, *Turi-turi*, p. 329, and *Balu-balu*, p. 452; also *jiritja* myth of *Kultana*, p. 329, the *Mokoi* and the dugongs, p. 345.

41. Warner (1937), p. 524, tells an interesting myth of the journey of a mortal man to Purelko.

42. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 54, record that Badu (Mulgrave Island in the Torres Straits) is the *jiritja* home of the dead. My Yirrkalla *jiritja* informants said that Nalkuma, their 'heaven', is to the north. It would appear, however, from the myth associated with the carved figure of *Jindjarani* (Pl. 139J, K), p. 441, that the *jiritja* groups at Arnhem Bay have a different 'heaven' from that of the aborigines of Yirrkalla.



Jean Truhan

PLATE 105. Coffins, Milingimbi

A, B The tortoise, mimala C, D The fresh-water fish, kwiwarina

aboriginal foods there are many coco-nut trees and much tobacco.⁴³ These exotic foods do not exist in the *dua* heaven.

(i) *The Journey of the Dua Spirits of the Dead*

As soon as the mourners have left the final burial ground, the *dua* spirit leaves his bones, and entering a bark canoe, is paddled by a *Mokoi*, the first man who died, to Junundi, a jungle on the western shores of Melville Bay. At Junundi he meets a number of other spirits called together for the occasion by the two *Mokoi*, *Wuluwait* and *Bunbulama*.⁴⁴ The new spirit and the *Mokoi* dance all night, carrying in their hands the jungle-flower, *wakoro-nani*, collected by the woman, *Bunbulama*. When morning comes the spirit of the dead man and his ghostly boatman leave for Dambalia, accompanied by a number of dolphins.⁴⁵

The boatman and his companion spend the next night at Dambalia (Bremer Island), performing ceremonies and dancing. This time they carry in their hands the red flower of a yam called *mawoka*.⁴⁶ Next morning the spirits start on the last stage of the journey for the distant isle of Purlko. After paddling for many days toward the sunrise and the place, where the morning star, *barnumbir*, rises above the horizon, the two boatmen, accompanied by many dolphins, reach their destination. As they land and walk along a path a masked plover, *berrk-berrk* (an onomatopoeic name), which has been watching for their arrival, rises from the ground with a shrill call, a call which tells the inhabitants of Purlko of the arrival of a new spirit. The leader of Purlko, *Jaualin-wura*, a man with a painted penis, meets and welcomes the new arrival and offers him wives and food.

After the new spirit has met his wives, established his camp and satisfied his hunger, he is welcomed by many of his old friends. Later, when walking through the trees, he surprises two women who are gathering food. The women run quickly to their camp, distinguished by the smoke rising from the many cooking fires, and tell the men of Purlko that they have just seen a new spirit. The men form themselves into a line, spears in hand, and wait. When the dead man sees them, he endeavours to distract their attention by dancing first the broлга dance, then the moon-fish dance. But the spirit men of Purlko quietly wait until the visitor has finished his dances before they cast their spears into his body, one

43. The aborigines believe that the coco-nuts, lengths of bamboos and occasionally canoes (see engraved pipe, Fig. 63B) which are cast up on the Yirkalla beaches during the northerly, *lunguruma*, winds are sent to them by the spirits of Nalkuma. The *lunguruma* winds (see winds, p. 433) which originate at Nalkuma are also a gift from the spirits of the dead.

44. See myth of *Wuluwait* and *Bunbulama*, p. 296.

45. Warner (1937), p. 366, records that the porpoises (dolphins) take the spirits of the *dua* Milingimbi men to Purlko. At Yirkalla, the dolphins carry only the spirits of the *dua* children to Purlko.

46. In one account, a ceremonial object made from the yam, *mawoka*, and its flower is taken from Dambalia to Purlko, where it was transformed into the morning star, *barnumbir*. It is not clear whether this flower is carried by every spirit that passes through Dambalia, or whether it was made in creation times, and is now permanently at Purlko.

after another. At first the spears penetrate deeply into his flesh, but after a while it becomes so hard and tough that the spears cannot even pierce the skin.⁴⁷ While this is going on, the women sit on the ground and wail in sympathy for the sufferings of the new spirit.

This ordeal over, the men of Purelko take the new spirit to their camp, tell him that he has passed his initiation, teach him many new songs and dances and invite him to join in their ceremonies.

The method of entry of the spirit of a woman is somewhat different. When the masked plover, *berrk-berrk*, announces the arrival of a new spirit and the head man, *Jaualin-wura*, finds out that it is a woman, he sends a small child along the track which leads from the beach to Purelko, telling it to find its mother and bring her to him. *Jaualin-wura* always camps on that track so that no one can reach Purelko without being properly prepared. After *Jaualin-wura* has met the new arrival and, if necessary, transformed her into a young woman in good health, she stays in his camp until she is pregnant. She is then admitted to Purelko where, after a short and painless period of gestation, she gives birth to her child. The idea behind this belief is that a woman, who must be perfect to enter Purelko, has to show that she is capable of bearing a child.

Two women, *Dunjun-jina* and *Mitjuna*, live at Purelko and keep the morning star, *barnumbir*, in a string bag, guarding it jealously all the day and most of the night, lest it should escape. A little before dawn, *Jaualin-wura*, the head man of Purelko, says to the women: 'It's time that you let the morning star out of that bag so that it can visit the *dua* camps on earth both to wake up the men, women and children and to give them the messages from the dead.'

The woman *Mitjuna* objects strongly to this suggestion, because she is afraid that she might lose *barnumbir*, but *Jaualin-wura* overrules her, and releases the morning star, which is already struggling to get out of the bag to perform its allotted tasks.⁴⁸ At first *barnumbir* rests on the top of a tall pandanus tree from which it can see a long distance. This causes the women to cry out in fear that they might lose the star, and to ask that it be returned to them. To pacify the women *Jaualin-wura* pulls the morning star back again—it is on a string—and puts it in the bag. But, though the women are pleased, *Jaualin-wura* thinks of the aborigines on earth waiting for their messages. So he opens the bag again and allows *barnumbir* to escape. For a while the morning star dances along the surface of the water, but soon climbs rapidly into the sky. It visits each *dua* place in turn,⁴⁹ wakes the aborigines and then gives them messages from their relatives and friends at Purelko. Just as dawn is breaking *Jaualin-wura* takes hold of the

47. The body is speared when it is taken from the burial platform, p. 312. Warner (1937), p. 443, refers to the same practice. All the male spirits have to pass through this initiation ritual at Purelko. There are different rituals for the women, p. 326. There are no such ordeals in the *jiritja* heaven, Nalkuma.

48. The *dua* moiety of Milingimbi have a similar belief. Myth, p. 328.

49. See p. 327 for the list of *dua* localities.

string, pulls in the star and, placing it in the carrying-bag, gives it to the women, who guard it until the next morning.

One bark painting, Pl. 99A, illustrates the *dua* journey of the dead; another, Pl. 101B, the flight of the *dua* morning star, *barnumbir*, from Purelko.⁵⁰

The lower part of the right-hand panel, *a*, of Pl. 99A shows the dead spirit arriving at Junundi, on the western shores of Melville Bay, after he has been ferried across by his ghostly boatman. The dead man is in the stern. The upper part of the cross-hatching indicates the sea; the lower, the shore. The upper part, *b*, of the right-hand panel deals with the ceremony held by the *Mokoi* at Junundi, Melville Bay. On the right are two performers, each holding in their hands the red jungle-flower, *wakoro-nani*. A third man is blowing the drone tube, another beating the music sticks together, while three men, with their hands upraised, are chanting the songs.

In the lower part of the central panel, *c*, the dead man and his companion have crossed the sea, indicated by the vertical cross-hatched band *g*, and landed at Dambalia. Two of the *Mokoi* (*d*, upper central panel) are holding in their hands the flower of the yam, *mawoka*; others are either blowing the drone tube, beating the music sticks or singing.

The left-hand panel, *e*, pictures the arrival at Purelko. The tree-like design, panel *f*, is the morning star, *barnumbir*.⁵¹ On the right-hand edge are two men, one blowing the drone tube, the other beating the music sticks. The birds on the upper and lower edge are the plovers, *berrk-berrk*, which announced the arrival of the new spirit and the small figure at the bottom, a child, who also saw his arrival. The new spirit is in the extreme lower left. Next to him is *Jaualin-wura*, and in the upper left, a man who is singing. The vertical cross-hatched band, *h*, is the sea between Dambalia and Purelko.

Plate 101B deals with the flight of the *dua* morning star, *barnumbir*. This painting has a dual meaning. In the first place, it represents the yam, *mawoka*, apparently a climbing plant, the flower of which is used by the *Mokoi* and the new spirit in the ceremonies at Dambalia. The design at the base is the yam, *mawoka*; the two ovals on the trunk, the fruit, *bukulita*; and the designs on the end of each branch, the blossoms. The swellings on some of the branches indicate where the creeper has twined itself round a tree.

The meaning of the painting is very different in the myth of the morning star, *barnumbir*. The design at the base is the carrying-bag in which the morning star is imprisoned by the two women, *Dunjun-jina* and *Mitjuna*, standing either side. The women are objecting to the order from *Jaualin-wura* that the morning star must be released. Each of the blossoms represents a locality.⁵²

Starting from the lowest blossom on the left, and reading in a clockwise direction, the localities are:

50. Warner (1937), p. 527, records that *Barnumbir* only visits *dua* localities.

51. See bark painting of morning star, Pl. 101A, in Milingimbi myth.

52. Although I did not specifically inquire, the evidence suggests that each of these localities belongs to either a *dua* clan, *mala*, or language group, *mala*.

ARNHEM LAND: ART, MYTH AND SYMBOLISM

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. North of Arnhem Bay | 10. Blue Mud Bay |
| 2. South of Arnhem Bay | 11. Northern Blue Mud Bay |
| 3. Elcho Island | 12. West Blue Mud Bay |
| 4. South of Rocky Beach, south of Yirkalla | 13. Koolatong River |
| 5. Dambalia (Bremer Island) | 14. Between Caledon and Blue Mud Bays |
| 6. Wessel Islands | 15. Caledon Bay |
| 7. A small unidentified island in Buckingham Bay | 16. Mt Saunders, between Port Bradshaw and Caledon Bay |
| 8. English Company Islands, near Cape Wilberforce | 17. Jelangbara, near Port Bradshaw |
| 9. Buckingham Bay, south side | 18. Port Bradshaw |

I also collected a painting and myth from the Milingimbi area, which dealt with the Djiraia, the *dua* home of the dead (analogous to Purelko), and the morning star, *barnumbir*. Except for different names and locality, the beliefs are essentially the same. This painting indicates that the *dua* moiety of north-eastern Arnhem Land have more than one 'heaven'.

Djiraia, the home of the dead and the morning star, is situated on a rocky island somewhere east of the English Company Islands (Fig. 1). Two spirit men, *Jumundik* and *Dalnuranu*, are in charge. When a member of the tribes who live adjacent to Milingimbi dies, no matter where he is, his spirit, after the burial ceremonies are completed, goes straight to Djiraia.⁵³ As the spirit approaches the shore two masked plovers announce his arrival. The spirits of the dead, the *Mokoi*, then stand on the shore to welcome him.

If a man or woman has been evil, malicious or bad-tempered, he is changed into a person of good nature before he enters the spirit land, because all must be happy and at peace with each other. Also, should the spirit be aged, infirm or sick, he is made young and healthy again, for in that country all must be well. In Djiraia there is no want, no hardships and no quarrels. There is an abundance of food everywhere, fish in the swamps and the seas, and kangaroos, emus and other game in the forest. It is never cold, so that everyone, being young and transformed into a good person, is happy. The days are spent in hunting and eating, and the evenings in song and ceremony.

The morning star, *barnumbir*,⁵⁴ is kept in a cave under the care of two women, who sleep all day and most of the night. But just before dawn these women wake up and tell the two men, *Jumundik* and *Dalnuranu*, that it is time they stopped their singing and let the morning star out of the cave to wake up mankind, otherwise they will sleep all day long. When *barnumbir* is first released it dances up and down on the surface of the sea. It then climbs up a tall pandanus tree, then flies through the air to visit a number of localities where the aborigines live. When the dawn breaks the women take hold of the string

53. According to Warner (1937), p. 366, these spirits are carried by the porpoises (dolphins).

54. See Milingimbi myth of morning star, Warner (1937), p. 527.

attached to *barnumbir*, pull it back and imprison it in the cave until the next morning.⁵⁵

On the lower left of Pl. 101A is *Jumundik*, with his wooden trumpet to the left of him and his two music sticks to the right. On the right is *Dalnuranu*, who, with *Jumundik*, is in charge of Djiraia. His wooden trumpet, *a*, and music sticks are on his right. The footprints are those of the *Mokoi* spirits at Djiraia. There was no explanation for the fish. The white circle on the top of the central design is the morning star, *barnumbir*, and the long rectangle below, the rays of light, called *balai-aba*, which issue from it.

A number of spirit people provide food for the inhabitants of their respective 'heavens'. *Turi-turi* is one of them.⁵⁶

One day *Turi-turi*, an expert fisherman, set out in a bark canoe to hunt for turtles. When he was far out to sea, a heavy storm came up, broke the canoe in halves and drowned *Turi-turi*.

After his death the spirit of *Turi-turi* went to Purlko, where he still spends all of his time catching green turtles for the inhabitants of that spirit land. The *dua Mokoi*, *Balu-balu*, also provide food for their companions at Purlko.⁵⁷

Plate 106A shows the man, *Turi-turi*, paddle in hand, standing in his canoe. To the left is the green turtle he wanted to capture. The white cross-hatching on the lower edge represents the waves which destroyed *Turi-turi's* canoe and finally drowned him. The remainder of the background is the sea.

(ii) *The Journey of the Jiritja Spirits of the Dead*

When, at the completion of the burial ceremonies, the bones of the dead man are placed in the log coffin, the spirit leaves its bones, with which it has been associated since death, and, guided by the call of the jungle-fowl, makes its way to a forest, Gurila, north of Port Bradshaw. There it is met by female *Mokoi* called the *Wulu-wulu*,⁵⁸ whose duty it is to assist the spirit of newly-dead to reach the *jiritja* 'heaven', Nalkuma. The *Wulu-wulu* takes the new spirit to another *Mokoi*, *Kultana*, the head man of Nalkuma, who first gives him two paddles, then instructs him how to make a special wooden canoe, called *jililbun*,⁵⁹ in which both can travel to Nalkuma. When the canoe is finished and the two are ready to set out on their journey, the women, *Wulu-wulu*, give the new spirit two seed pods, *gurung-guru*, of the *menin* vine (*Mucuna gigantea*),⁶⁰ which will serve him as a passport to Nalkuma. Any spirit who tries to gain admittance to the land of the dead without this passport is hunted away.

55. This is similar to the Yirrkalla myth of the morning star, p. 326, except that at Yirrkalla the two women object to the release of the morning star.

56. The myths of *Turi-turi* and the *Balu-balu* are analogous to those of the *jiritja Mokoi* who come to Cape Arnhem in their wooden canoes to capture dugongs for the inhabitants of Nalkuma.

57. See myth of *Balu-balu*, p. 452, associated with a painted paddle, Pl. 144E, F.

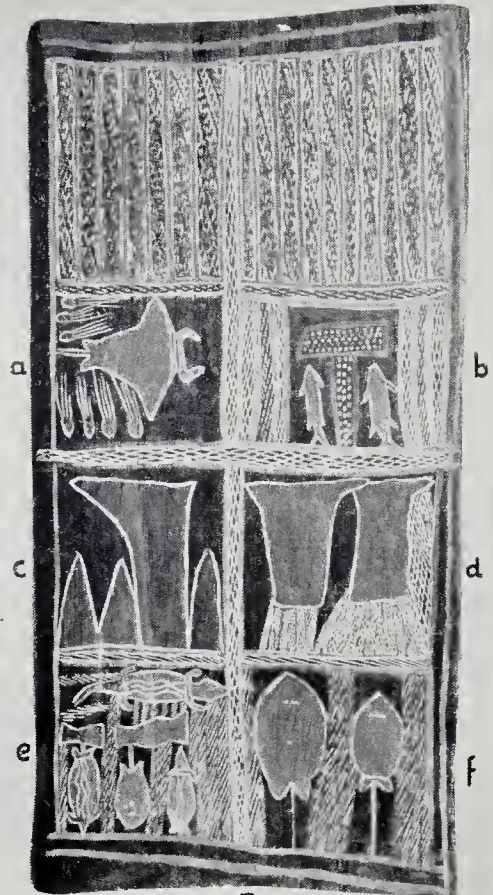
58. See myth of carved figure of *Wulu-wulu*, p. 343.

59. In another part of the same myth this canoe is called *Lampu*.

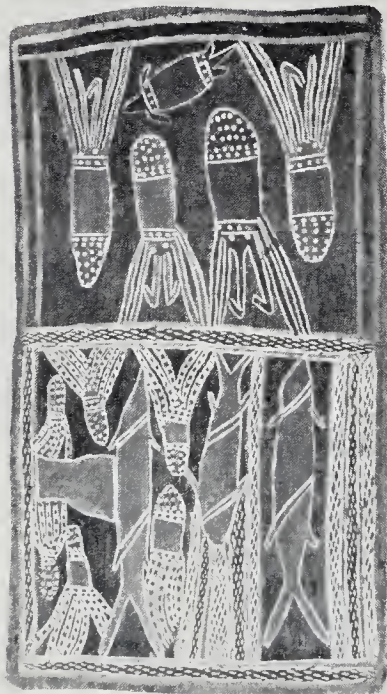
60. See Pl. 100C for illustration of these seed pods.



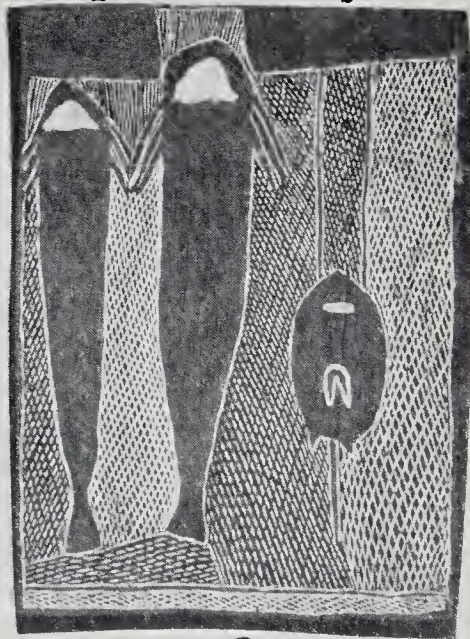
A



B



C



D

PLATE 106. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

A The man, Turi-turi

C The queen fish, turtle and octopus

B Totemic creatures, Cape Arnhem

D The whale and the stingray

Meanwhile some of the inhabitants of Nalkuma, knowing of the impending arrival of the new spirit, have paddled to Cape Arnhem to capture a dugong so that there will be food for the welcoming ceremony. Others light a grass fire, the smoke of which will guide *Kultana* and his companion to their destination.

The inhabitants of Nalkuma, when they see the canoe in the distance, assemble on the shore to welcome the new arrival. His immediate friends first embrace him, then invite him to take part in the meal of dugong flesh, recently captured at Cape Arnhem. Afterwards they perform with him their favourite dances and songs. After all these activities are over the people of Nalkuma help their new companion to prepare his camp. This activity causes so much dust to rise into the sky that large cumulus clouds are formed.⁶¹ When the aborigines on earth see those clouds they know the spirit of the man whose bones they had recently placed in his log coffin has reached Nalkuma, and that their period of mourning is over.

Three bark paintings deal with the *jiritja* heaven, Nalkuma.

Plate 100D depicts the *jiritja* heaven, Nalkuma. In panel *a* are three spirit men in the canoe, *Lampu*. Reading from the left, they are, *Deiluru*, *Uramula* and *Teri-teri*, all of whom are on their way from Nalkuma to Cape Arnhem to spear dugongs. In the upper left of the same panel and the lower right of panel *d* is *Kultana*, the head man of Nalkuma, smoking a pipe, for tobacco has always been available in Nalkuma. The long symbol on panel *b* is the cumulus cloud which forms on the top of the dust cloud caused by the spirits when preparing the camp. The triangular symbols *c*, on the left of the same panel, are the small clouds which are present after the cumulus has disintegrated.

Panel *e*, on the top of the painting, refers to the happenings at Nalkuma on the arrival of the new spirits. At *f*, on the upper left, is one of the new spirits being embraced by an old friend, and the nine figures along the upper edge are other spirits waiting to be welcomed. On the opposite edge of the same panel are a number of *Mokoi* ready to take part in the welcoming ceremony. The central line of eight figures are *Mokoi* swimming in the sea. The trees, *g, g, g*, are *kanari* (*Calophyllum inophyllum*) and the dark mark in the branches is the dense shade which this tree, with its large leaves, casts on the ground.

On Pl. 100A, panels *a, b* and *c* refer to the burial rituals. These have already been described on p. 314. Panels *d* and *e* deal with the journey of the dead to Nalkuma, and *f* to their reception at that place. On the left-hand edge of panel *d* are four of the female *Wulu-wulu* who live in the Gurila jungle of Port Bradshaw. They are giving the seed pods of the *menin* vine, *gurung-guru*, to the new spirit, centre. To the right are the two jungle-fowls whose call guided him to this locality.

In the upper right, panel *e*, the new spirit is being paddled to Nalkuma by the chief *Mokoi*, *Kultana*. A number of inhabitants of the home of the dead,

61. Cumulus clouds often form on the top of the smoke of bush-fires. Clouds of dust could cause the same phenomenon.

panel *f*, are welcoming the new spirit to his future home. In the upper part of *e* the new spirit is resting quietly in his camp after the ceremony is over.

Plate 100E also deals with the journey of the *jiritja* dead to Nalkuma.

On the upper left of panel *a*, the new spirit is asking the *Wulu-wulu* for the seed pods, *gurung-guru*, of the *menin* vine (Pl. 100C), so that he can enter Nalkuma. Three female *Mokoi*, the *Wulu-wulu*,⁶² are picking the seed pods to give to him. The black bird is the jungle-fowl whose call has guided the new spirit to Gurila jungle. At *d*, the new spirit and the boatman, *Kultana*, are in the *Mokoi* canoe, *Lampu*, while in the bottom is a dugong they have captured and are taking with them to Nalkuma. To the left of the canoe are two dugongs, the white cross-hatching at the tail of the lower, and above the upper one, representing their wake. Panel *b* is the sandy shore at Port Bradshaw, *c* the shallow water, and *d* the open sea.

(2) THE TOTEMIC PLACES AND CREATURES OF PORT BRADSHAW AND CAPE ARNHEM

In north-eastern Arnhem Land, where strong patrilineal clans or *mala* have the complete ownership of certain areas, the totemic places in those clan territories belong exclusively to the moiety of the aborigines who own the land. To show the richness of the mythology associated with one particular area, but which is typical of others, I have grouped all the art objects relating to the *jiritja* myths of Port Bradshaw and Cape Arnhem in one section.

The area around Cape Arnhem, and, so far as I could ascertain, within the harbour of Port Bradshaw, having been created by a number of *jiritja* mythical men and creatures, is owned today by *jiritja* men of the *gumaitj mata* or language group. Although the *dua* ancestors, *Djunkgao* and *Madalait*, landed on Aparina Island, at the entrance of Port Bradshaw,⁶³ they do not appear to have entered the harbour, but established their camp at Jelangbara, a few miles north of its entrance. Jelangbara is the property of the *dua* men of the *riredjingu mata*.

Even though most of the *jiritja* totemic beings of Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw were harmless marine creatures, several of them are still feared. For instance, in a group of submerged rocks at Daliwa, between Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw, lives the serpent, *bilumbira*.⁶⁴ Should aborigines paddle too near his home, *bilumbira* will rise to the surface and with his long teeth, tear them and their canoe to pieces. The dugong, *merinjunga*,⁶⁵ at Nangata, south of Cape Arnhem, blows up smoke and fire to destroy his enemies, while the hawkbill turtle, *konwaradji*,⁶⁶ creates heavy seas which drown those who intrude on his domain. Within Port Bradshaw are two other dangerous creatures, the devil-ray, *mulava*, and the trepang, *teripi*. The former creates huge waves, and the latter squirts up fountains of water to destroy any trespassers.

62. See carved figure, Pl. 140G.

64. See myth of *bilumbira*, p. 351.

66. See myth of turtle, p. 447.

63. See myth of *Djunkgao* and the *Baijini*, p. 273.

65. See myth of dugongs, p. 363.

THE ART OF YIRRKALLA

During my stay at Yirrkalla a number of the *jiritja* aborigines of the *gumaitj mata* produced paintings and decorated objects dealing with the totemic ancestors and the mythology of Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw. They were:

Port Bradshaw

<i>Baijini</i> men and women	Pl. 107A
Spirit men, <i>Mokoi</i>	Pl. 109E, F
Hawksbill turtle, <i>kouwaradji</i>	Pl. 108C
Queen fish, <i>tinimbu</i>	Pl. 110B
Devil-ray, <i>mulara</i>	Pl. 110B
Stingray, <i>kawangalkmiri</i>	Pl. 108C
Octopus, <i>mainda</i>	Pl. 108C
Trepang, <i>teripi</i>	Pl. 110B

Cape Arnhem

Man, <i>Borolo-borolo</i> , and his wives, <i>Mainbuno</i> and <i>Wurungil</i>	Pl. 110D
Spirit men, <i>Mokoi</i>	Pl. 111A
Hawksbill turtle, <i>kouwaradji</i>	Pl. 109A
Queen fish, <i>tinimbu</i>	Pl. 106C
Devil-ray, <i>mulara</i>	Pl. 109C, D
Stingray, <i>kawangalk-miri</i>	Pl. 106D
Octopus, <i>mainda</i>	Pl. 106C
Serpent, <i>bilumbira</i>	Pl. 112A, D
Crocodile, <i>barou</i>	Pl. 122A
Rock cod, <i>kouper</i>	Pl. 106B
Whales, <i>morokundja</i> and <i>welerria</i>	Pl. 106D
Dugong, <i>merinjunga</i>	Pl. 109B

(a) PORT BRADSHAW

Mythical Human Beings

The Baijini

At Port Bradshaw there is a puzzling myth of a fair-skinned people who during early times went there in search of trepang. The aborigines assert that the *Baijini* were not at Port Bradshaw during *bumun* (creation) times but were there soon afterwards, long before the Malays started to visit the coasts of Arnhem Land. The aborigines are certain the *Baijini* were not Malays, their skin being much lighter in colour.⁶⁷ They brought their wives with them (the Malays did not) and always carried a long knife, probably a sword. The uprights of their houses were made of local timber but the walls were strips of bamboo which the *Baijini* brought in their boats. The roof was thatched with unidentified

67. The aborigines likened the skin of the *Baijini* to that of the sun-burned members of our party.

fied palm leaves.⁶⁸ The smoking pipes of the *Baijini*, also, were unlike those of the Malays,⁶⁹ but resembled those used by our own party. In fact, the aborigines used to call our pipes *Baijini* pipes.

The *Baijini* may have been an isolated group of fair-skinned people, perhaps early Dutch or Portuguese, whose habits and appearance especially attracted the attention of the aborigines. The fact that the *Baijini* are now part of the mythology, as shown in the bark paintings and mentioned by Berndt,⁷⁰ does not necessarily indicate great age. The aborigines' songs of the Malay prau at Bickerton Island,⁷¹ the bark paintings from Oenpelli of the *Mimi* with a European pipe⁷², prove how the mythical stories keep up to date.

The *Baijini* party, which, in one myth, consisted of two men, two women and their children, came from a country to the north, called Jumaina. They sailed into Port Bradshaw and anchored at the mouth of a creek flowing into the south side of the harbour. As soon as they had established camp, the *Baijini* started to collect, cook and dry the trepang. The men, whom at first the aborigines looked upon as dangerous, always carried a long knife, *badi*.

One day, however, two aborigines, who had sneaked through the mangroves to have a look at the boat and its occupants, saw several small *Baijini* boys gathering cockles on the beach. The men, intrigued with the light colour of the boys' skin, crept closer to get a better view, when the boys, catching sight of the aborigines, beckoned them across. The *Baijini* children, equally puzzled about the dark colour of the aboriginal men,⁷³ felt them all over, and asked many questions, but neither group could understand the other. The *Baijini* children then took the aborigines by the hand, led them to a patch of jungle, and, motioning them to sit down, ran to tell their parents what had happened. Two *Baijini* men returned with their sons, coaxed the aborigines to their boat and gave them food. Although at first the men did not like the taste of the *Baijini* food, they soon became used to it. Later they stayed with the *Baijini* and helped them to collect trepang, bringing their wives and relatives to assist in the work.

Seven bark paintings and two carved heads⁷⁴ depict the *Baijini*.

In Pl. 107A the four figures are the *Baijini* people at Port Bradshaw. Reading from the left their names are: *Tainitja*, *Ditjaru*, name forgotten, and *Gurumuluna*, whom the aborigines looked upon as the head man.⁷⁵ The men, *Tainitja* and *Gurumuluna*, are carrying large steel knives, one in either hand.

Plate 107B represents two *Baijini* men, the one on the right *Gurumuluna*, and the other unidentified. They are surrounded by *jiritja* cloud symbols, i.e. the triangular designs associated with the Cape Arnhem-Port Bradshaw area. The

68. Pl. 128A.

69. p. 400.

70. Berndt, R. and C. (1949), p. 219.

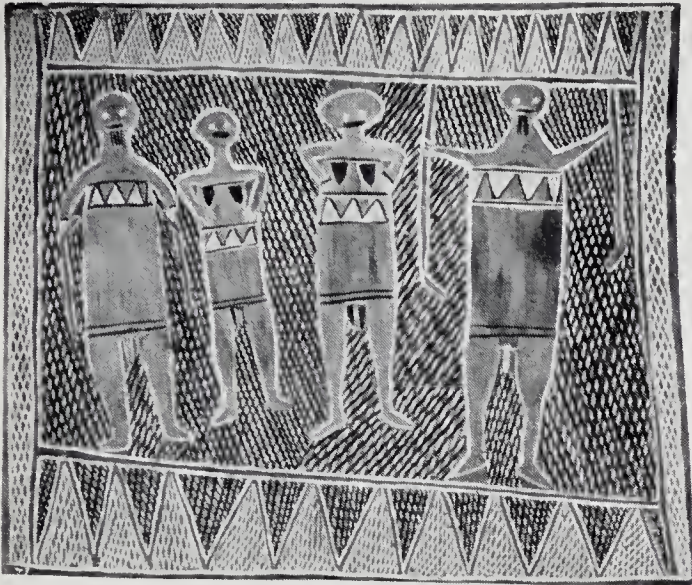
71. p. 98.

72. Pl. 49A.

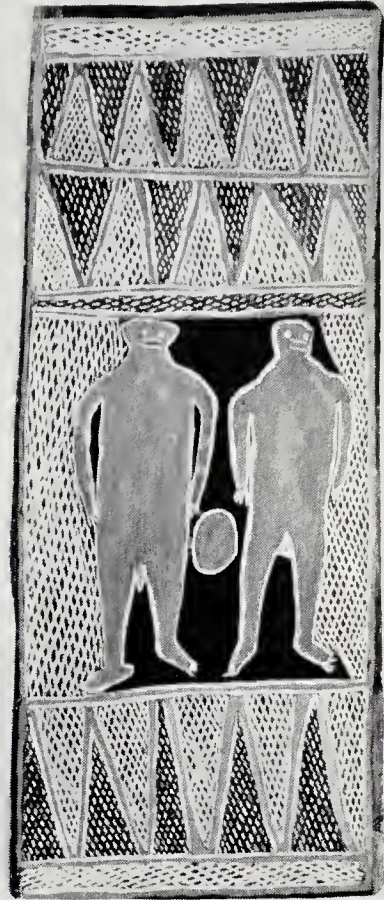
73. This suggests that the *Baijini* came from a country where the inhabitants were not as dark-skinned as the aborigines.

74. The carved heads are described in Part 5.

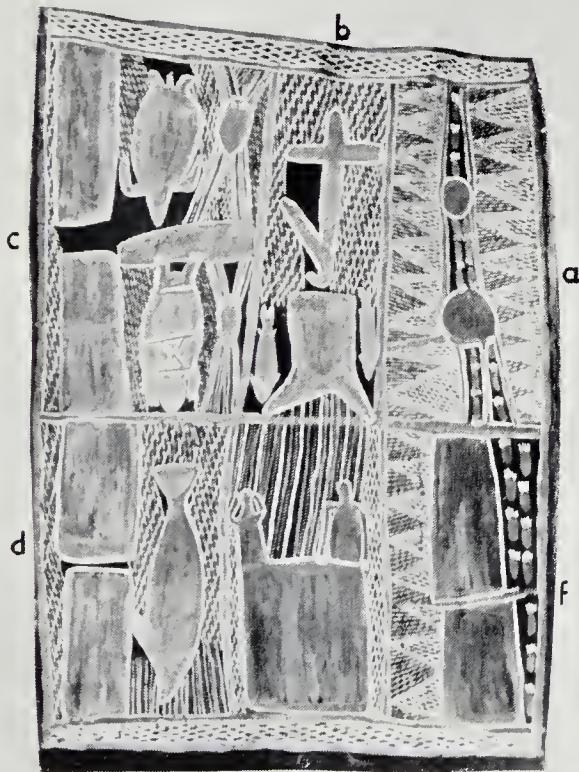
75. On a carved head, Pl. 140B, *Gurumuluna* has a distinguishing badge on his forehead or hat.



A



B



C^e



D

PLATE 107. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla
The Baijini at Port Bradshaw

radiating lines round the head indicate a ceremonial head-dress the men are wearing.

Plate 107C deals with the totemic place of the *Baijini* at Port Bradshaw. In panel *a* are lines of clouds, triangular patterns, and between them the two totemic wells, dark circles, in which the *Baijini* ancestors now live. The aborigines can drink the water. The footmarks indicate the *Baijini* coming to and from the well.⁷⁶ In the upper part of the panel, *b*, is a Malay type of anchor used by the *Baijini*, and below, a wet-season cloud, with fish on either side.

In panel *c* the two rectangles on the left side are totemic rocks under the water. The upper central figure is a turtle and the lower central figure, a frog, *garakman*, standing on a rock. On the right are two webs of night spiders which have luminous eyes. The rectangles in *d* represent two rocks under the water, besides which a dugong is feeding on the sea-grass, *gumata*, indicated by the parallel lines at the head of the creature.

Two women, *Mai-auwa*, panel *e*, are standing on a large rock on shore, crying for the wet-season rains to stop.⁷⁷ The parallel lines from the bottom of the clouds in panel *b* (above the two women) symbolize the north-westerly, *bara* (wet-season) rains pouring from the cloud. In panel *f* the rectangles are areas of land associated with the *Baijini* ancestors. There are cloud symbols on the left and *Baijini* footmarks on the right.

Plate 107D again refers to the *Baijini*, this time in a creation myth.

Gurumuluna, the head man of the *Baijini*, and his sister camped at a water-hole, Bounala, on the southern side of Port Bradshaw. After a while, transforming themselves into flying foxes, the brother and sister flew to Dulmumnia, on the western shore of the port, where they changed themselves back into human beings and copulated. Both their footprints and the marks of the woman's buttocks can be seen on the rocks at Dulmumnia. Later, as flying foxes, they flew to Melville Bay, where again, transforming themselves into human beings, they lived as man and wife. The cross-hatched triangles are clouds, *binjalo*,⁷⁸ which are seen at the beginning of the wet season. In the centre is *Gurumuluna* and his sister *Baijini* and between them the waterhole, Bounala. The footmarks were made by the brother and sister when they visited the waterhole.

Plate 108A pictures *Gurumuluna* and an unidentified *Baijini* companion. The lines from their heads are ceremonial decorations, and the triangular symbols encircling the figures, wet-weather clouds, *binjalo*.

Plate 108D pictures three *Baijini* men who came to Port Bradshaw in a boat and built a house for themselves. Reading from the left, their names are *Gurumuluna*, the head man, *Wouatjari* and *Dainbari*. On the left of *Gurumuluna* is

76. Possibly the waterhole, Bounala, Pl. 107D.

77. The aboriginal women wail in unison to stop the wet-season wind, *bara*, and to start the *timaru* wind as did the mythical woman *Muralunangau* of Bremer Island. Pl. 136B, D; myth, p. 433.

78. These triangular cloud symbols, probably a *mata* design, are particularly common in the *jiritja* art of Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw, but absent elsewhere. The same symbol is present in the Celebes (Kaudern, 1944, Figs. 134-9) and may be the source of this *jiritja* symbol.

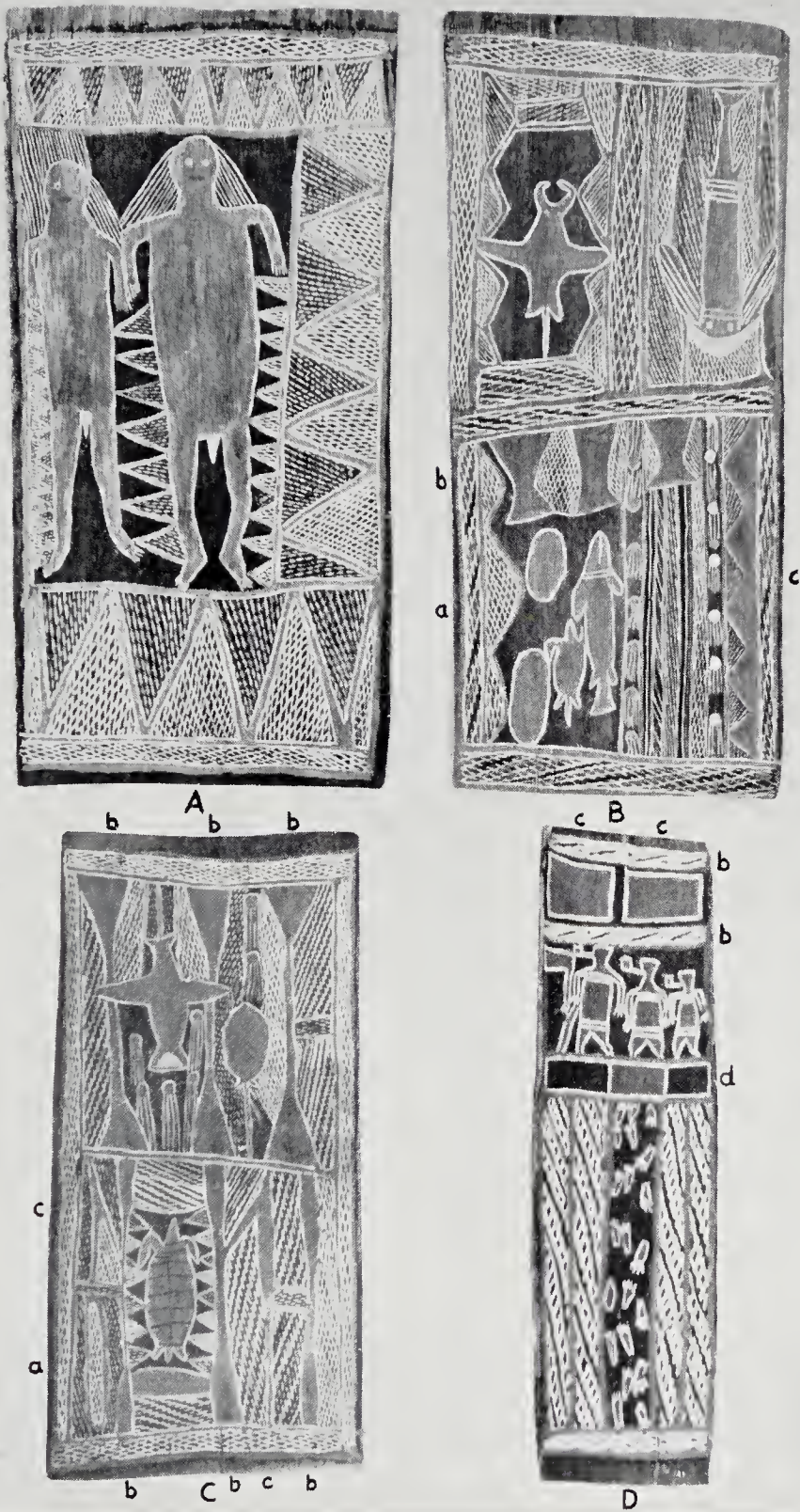


PLATE 108. Bark paintings, Yirkalla
 A, D The Baijini men B Totemic creatures, Cape Arnhem
 C Totemic creatures, Port Bradshaw

an axe he used in the construction of his house. The six vertical lines in panel *a* are the posts of the house, made from local timber, and the cross-hatching between them, walls of plaited bamboo. The transverse panels *b*, *b*, are rafters of the roof (rectangles *c*, *c*) which were thatched with the leaves of an unidentified palm.

The three rectangles at *d* are wells the *Baijini* men dug, and the footmarks in the central vertical panel, those made by the men during their house-building. The *Baijini* made their fire outside the house. Their pipes were similar to those used by Europeans.⁷⁹

Spirit People

The spirit people, or *Mokoi* (the *dua* moiety call them *Wuna*) all appear to have been living people. At the present time, they pay occasional visits to the land of the living, where they spend most of their time in the jungles. Although the aborigines are somewhat afraid of the *Mokoi*, as indeed the *Mokoi* are of human beings,⁸⁰ I did not personally collect any evidence that they were ill-disposed toward living people. Warner,⁸¹ however, refers to their malignant nature. We know little about the *Mokoi* and hope that later research will reveal more fully their place in the life and beliefs of the aborigines of north-eastern Arnhem Land.

The Mokoi, Rangi-rangi and Kultana, of Port Bradshaw

During creation times two men, *Rangi-rangi* and *Kultana*,⁸² both of them expert fishermen, came to Port Bradshaw to spear dugong. The day was so windy that the spray from the waves beating against the sides of the canoe rose into the sky, causing heavy thunder-clouds to form and rain to fall. This originated the first wet season. As soon as this happened the stringrays, heavily pregnant, travelled to the mangrove swamps to give birth to their young among the roots of the trees. Since that time the young stingrays are always born among the roots of the mangroves at the beginning of the wet season.

The man, *Kultana*, is now one of the *Mokoi* who sometimes lives at Port Bradshaw. It is his duty to assist the spirits of the dead during their journey from earth to the *jiritja* heaven, Nalkuma (p. 331).

Plate 109E, F, is the obverse and reverse sides of a painted paddle.

On panel *a* are the two men, *Rangi-rangi* and *Kultana*, in their canoe, which has since been transformed into a paper-bark tree. The cross-hatching below the canoe symbolizes the rough seas and that above the canoe, the clouds created by the spray from the waves. On panel *b* is the dugong, *balwakmeri*, with a dugong spear on either side. In panel *c* the two rain-clouds were created by the spray from the sides of the canoe. These same clouds are also painted in panel *c*.

79. See painted pipe, Pl. 128A.

80. See myths of *Rangi-rangi* and *Kultana*, p. 346, and *Birikiri*, p. 348.

81. Warner (1937), p. 73.

82. *Kultana* is now the head man of the *jiritja* heaven, Nalkuma, p. 329.

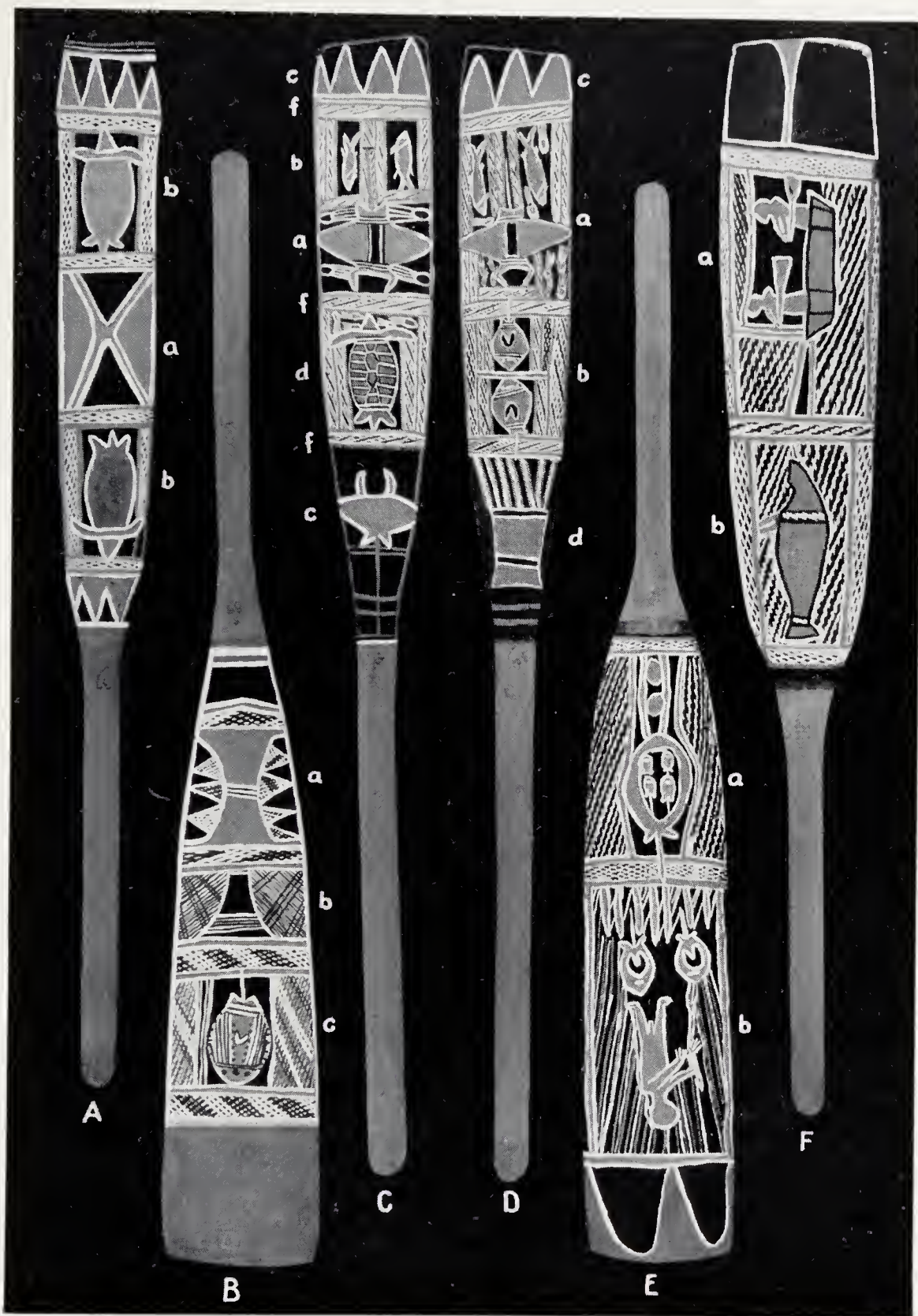


PLATE 109. Painted paddles, Yirrkalla

- | | |
|--|--|
| A The hawkbill turtle, kouwaradji | B The rain and stingrays |
| C, D The devil-ray and the hawkbill turtle | E The man, Maididji, and the stingrays |
| F The Mokoi, Rangi-rangi and Kultana | |

Plate 109E, panel *a*, shows a pregnant stingray which, during mythical times, went into the mangrove swamps to give birth to her young among the roots of the trees. Her body has become a mangrove creek at the totemic place. The ovals at the head of the stingray, places where the stingrays used to gather, are large sand-banks called Mourmourkuna. A mythical man, *Maididji*, panel *b*, is spearing stingrays among the roots of the mangrove trees (along upper edge). On either side of him are lines of falling rain created by the spray from the canoe. The transverse lines on both the obverse and reverse sides of the paddle are sand-banks at the totemic place.

Totem Creatures

In the centre of Port Bradshaw are *jiritja* totem places belonging to the turtle, the devil-ray, the trepang, the stingray, the octopus, the queen fish and the anchor of the *Baijini*.⁸³ The devil-ray swims round accompanied by his attendants, the octopi, and the trepang rests on the bottom. Should any aborigines inadvertently paddle their canoe over the totem places of either of these creatures, the trepang squirts up large quantities of water and the devil-ray creates huge waves which swamp the canoe and drown the occupants. The other totemic creatures are not dangerous to the aborigines of Port Bradshaw, although the turtle is dangerous elsewhere.⁸⁴

Two paintings and two engraved paddles deal with these creatures.

In the centre of the lower panel of the bark painting, Pl. 108C, is the hawkbill turtle, *kouwaradji*, at Doria Island, near the entrance to Port Bradshaw, whose rocky cliffs are indicated by the cross-hatched triangles on either side of the turtle. The oval at *a* on the lower left is a trepang, *teripi* (*Holothuria* sp.). The devil-ray, *mulara*, is in the upper left with the octopi, *mainda*. In the upper right is a stingray, *barindjinou*, also accompanied by octopi. The designs *b, b, b*, are the ribs and planks of a wrecked *Baijini* boat, and *c, c*, a *Baijini* anchor, now a sand-bank.

Plate 110B also refers to the totemic creatures and places of Port Bradshaw. Reading from the top, in the right panel is a *Baijini* anchor, a trepang, *teripi*, a hawkbill turtle, *kouwaradji*, and another trepang. The left panel is occupied by the devil-ray, *mulara*, and four queen fish, *tinimbu*.

The aborigines engraved three paddles, the designs of which dealt with the *jiritja* totem creatures of Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw. Fig. 58A, B, pictures one of the paddles, C and D the second, and E and K the third.

The four upper bands, *a*, on E, are the open sea. Below, at *b*, and at *d*, are queen fish, *tinimbu*. The central transverse band *c* is an arm of the sea, the triangles above being the wet-season clouds created by the devil-ray, *mulara*, and those below, rocks on the shore of Doria Island, the home of the devil-ray, whose body is now a large rock, panel *e*, below the surface of the water. The two rows of triangles in panel *f* are more wet-season clouds and the transverse bar between

83. See myth of the *Baijini*, p. 334.

84. See myth of turtle, p. 447.

them, the lower dark-coloured edge of the clouds before they discharge their rain. Panel *g* is occupied by the *jiritja* hawksbill turtle, *kouwaradji*.

On the reverse side, *K*, *a* refers to the open sea, and the row of small triangles below, small clouds resting upon it; *tinimbu*, the queen fish, is in panel *b*. The devil-ray, *mnlara*, is at *c*, also surrounded by cloud symbols. At *d* are more cloud symbols, and at *e*, another engraving of *mulara*.

The engravings on the obverse side of the companion paddle, *C*, deal with the devil-ray, *mulara*, and the turtle, *kouwaradji*, and on the reverse side, *D*, with the turtle only. On *C*, *mulara*, the devil-ray, is in panel *g*, surrounded by the clouds which he creates when anyone goes near his home in Port Bradshaw. The transverse bands, *f*, *h* and *m*, are rough seas made by him at the same time as the clouds. Near the head of *mulara* is a queen fish, *tinimbu*. At *j* is the hawksbill turtle surrounded by rocks, and at *n* and *k* are thunder-clouds which have discharged their rain.

On the reverse side, *D*, the cross-hatched bands, *a*, *c* and *f*, represent the rough seas made by the turtle, *kouwaradji*, when he is disturbed because the aborigines have approached his home. The triangles on panel *b* are the clouds, *tainul*, caused by the water the turtle blows into the sky, and the two triangles, *e*, the wind that originates in those clouds. The hawksbill turtle is at *d*, the triangles on either side of him being rocks near his totemic place.

Whilst on a canoe journey with the aborigines, I noticed that one of their paddles was covered with engraved designs. At the completion of the journey the aborigines traded this paddle, Fig. 58A, B, to me and explained the designs, all of them referring to the *jiritja* totemic creatures and natural features of Port Bradshaw.

Fig. 58A, B shows the obverse and reverse sides of the paddle. In panel *a* of *A* is the devil-ray, *mulara*, two hawksbill turtles, *kouwaradji*, and two queen fish, *tinimbu*. At *b* is a thunder-cloud created by *mulara*, and along the sides and above *b*, in the form of triangles, a number of smaller clouds.

The reverse side, *B*, shows panel *c* occupied by another thunder-cloud with smaller clouds, triangles, along its sides. The triangles in panel *d* indicate spent thunderstorms.

(b) CAPE ARNHEM

Mythical Human Beings

Borolo-borolo and his Wives at Cape Arnhem

A mythical *jiritja* man, *Borolo-borolo*, and his two wives, *Mainbunno* and *Wurungil*, once lived at Kunbulbula, near Cape Arnhem. *Borolo-borolo* was an expert hunter of both the animals and the hives of wild bees. In the middle of a saline flat at the totem place of *Borolo-borolo* was a wooden penis. This was the penis of *Borolo-borolo*. Until recently, when anyone in the vicinity was going to search for the hives of wild bees, he first visited the wooden penis and, striking it with a branch, said:

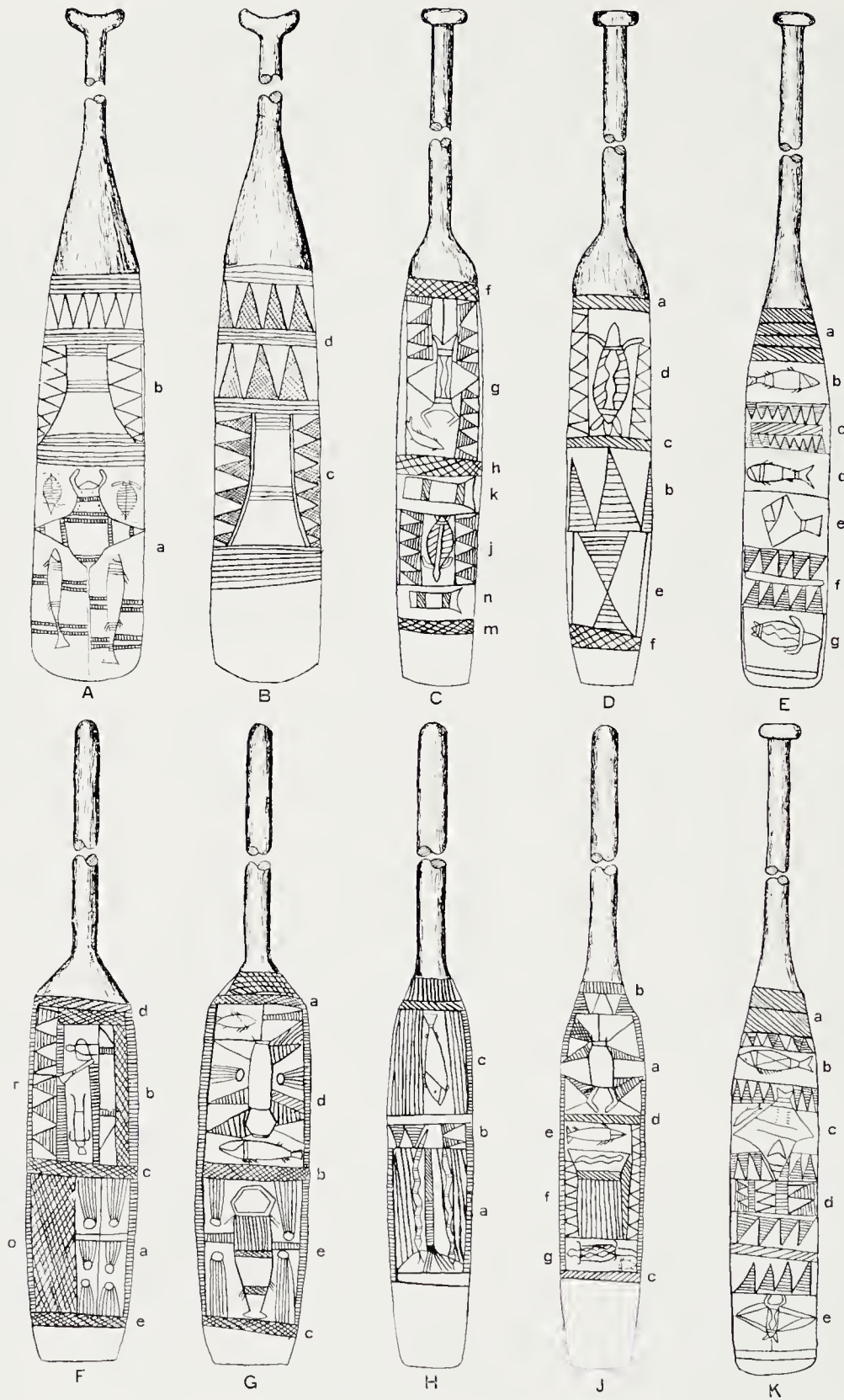


FIG. 58. Engraved paddles, Yirkalla
Totemic creatures, Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw

'Make my eyesight keen so that I can see the flight of the bees.'

This ritual enabled the hunter to see the bees and to follow their flight more easily,⁸⁵ because of *Borolo-borolo's* ability to do so during mythical times. Even though, at the present time, the wooden penis is no longer in its totemic place, the aborigines still visit the same spot and repeat the formula, which they say still makes their eyesight much clearer.⁸⁶

Borolo-borolo's wife, *Mainbuno*, was also expert in locating the wild yam, *jakwa*, and every place in which she once dug for them is known. Today, the women visit these places and, putting their digging sticks on the spot where *Mainbuno* had dug previously, say, 'Brr' in a low voice. After that, they find many *jakwa* yams.

Two paintings, a painted wooden penis and a bark figure (not published) illustrate the myth. .

On Pl. 110A is *Borolo-borolo* walking through the grass, with his hand shielding his eyes from the sun as he watches the flight of a wild bee towards its hive. On the left is an emu and a wallaby which ran away when they saw *Borolo-borolo*, and on the right the three yams, *jakwa*, which *Borolo-borolo's* wife, *Mainbuno*, had created. The tubers are at the top of the painting and their foliage is at the bottom.

Plate 110C is a duplicate of the wooden penis of *Borolo-borolo* which the aborigines made for me and on which they painted the design of the yam, *jakwa*.

Plate 110D⁸⁷ pictures *Borolo-borolo* with his two wives, *Mainbuno* and *Wurungil*.⁸⁸ *Borolo-borolo* is setting out to hunt kangaroos and emus and his wives to collect *jiritja* honey, the female, *barangit*, which burns the mouth, and the male, *kamo*, a pleasant-tasting honey. *Mainbuno* is in the upper position, and *Wurungil* in the lower. Below the family is a forest of stringy-bark trees (*Eucalyptus tetradonta*). The cross-hatched panels on the right represent the wild honey collected by the women, the three dark-coloured areas being *barangit* and the light-coloured ones *kamo*.

Spirit People

Five bark paintings and an engraved paddle deal with the spirit people, the *Mokoi*, some of whom travel regularly from Nalkuma, the *jiritja* heaven, to their totemic place on the southern side of Cape Arnhem⁸⁹ so that they can spear dugongs, turtles and fish to provide the inhabitants of Nalkuma with food. Two others, the woman *Wulu-wulu* and the man *Kultana*, visit Port Bradshaw so

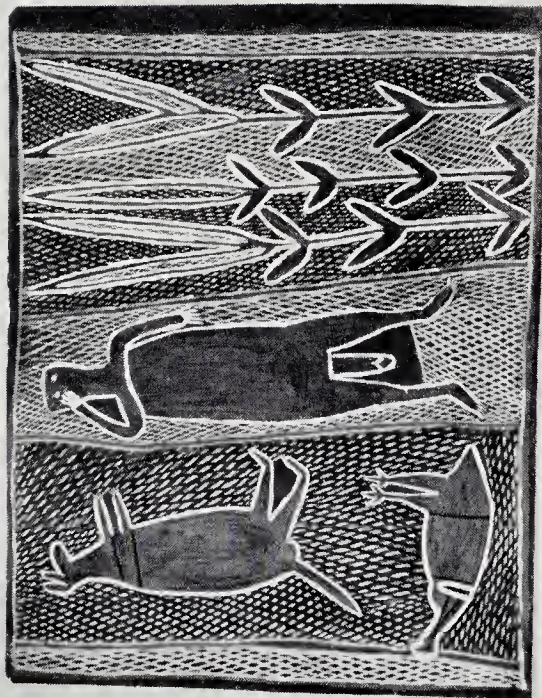
85. The method of locating the hives is to watch the direction of the flight of the bees, an exacting task, for the insects are little larger than the common house fly.

86. This is, to some degree, an increase centre. The penis of *Borolo-borolo* is also an example of the care that must be taken before attaching an erotic significance to any representation of the sex organ.

87. Interpretation by F. D. McCarthy.

88. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 41, Pl. 5A, figure and describe a wooden trumpet or drone tube associated with *Borolo-borolo* and the yams.

89. Map, Fig. 57.



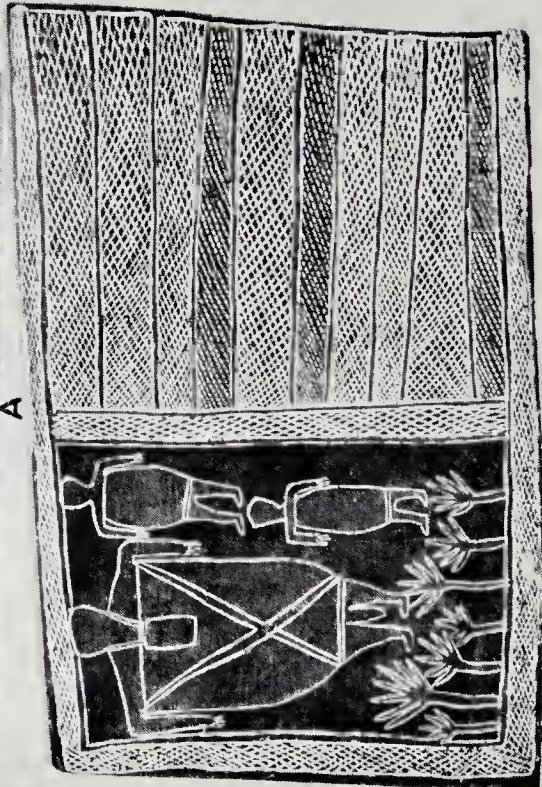
A



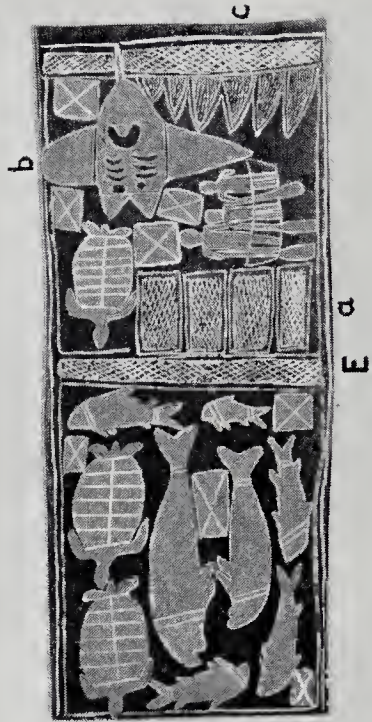
B



C



D



E

PLATE 110. Bark paintings, Yirkalla

- A The man, Borolo-borolo
- B Totemic creatures, Cape Amhem
- C The penis of Borolo-borolo
- D Borolo-borolo and his wives
- E The Mokoï and the turtle hunt

that they can help the spirits of the newly dead on their journey to Nalkunia, *Wulu-wulu* giving them the bean of the *menin* tree,⁹⁰ a passport into the *jiritja* heaven, and *Kultana* assisting to paddle them across the sea to their future home.⁹¹

The Mokoï and the Turtle Hunt

Plate 110E is the story of a turtle hunt by some of the *Mokoï* who had paddled in a wooden canoe from Nalkunia to Cape Arnhem, and the incidents connected with the hunt.

The three *Mokoï* paddled through rough water (four cross-hatched rectangles, *a*, on left of right-hand panel) to reach a group of rocks (squares with diagonal lines at *b*) so that they could spear the turtles living among those rocks. On their way the spirit-men saw a devil-ray, *b* (*Daemonata alfredi*).⁹² The large gills are shown as slits, and the fat within the body as a crescent. In the left panel are dugongs, *merinjunga*, feeding on the submarine grass, *gumata*. The fish are *tinimbu*, queen fish, and squares with diagonal lines, rocks in the sea frequented by the turtles, upper edge.

The Mokoï and the Dugong, Merinjunga

Two mythical dugongs, *merinjunga* (*Dugong australis*), which once lived in the sea at Cape Arnhem were continuously being pursued by the *Mokoï* who came from the *jiritja* heaven, Nalkunia. The *Mokoï*, however, were not always successful because, just as they were about to spear the creatures, a storm would develop and allow the dugongs to escape.⁹³ Later the canoe was transformed into a large rock on the sea coast between Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw, and the dugongs into a rock in the water near by. The place of the stingray, which also appears in the painting, is a hole in the ground. When travelling in their canoes the aborigines will not go near the totemic place of the dugong, for if they did the dugongs would send up so much smoke and fire that they would be destroyed.

On the land, near this totemic place, is a paper-bark tree, once a dugong, which resembles that creature in appearance, and near by is a termite mound also a transformed dugong. When the aborigines wish to increase the supply of dugongs at a particular locality they take a branch from the dugong tree and a piece of earth from the termite mound and throw them both into the fire. When the wood is burnt to ash the men take the heated termite earth from the fire, pound it into dust, mix it with the wood ash and throw the mixture into the sea where the dugongs feed. This dust from the totemic tree and the termite mound will create many dugongs in that locality.⁹⁴

90. Pl. 100C.

91. Myth, p. 331.

92. This huge, cumbersome but harmless sea-creature sometimes reaches a length of fifteen feet and a weight of a ton.

93. Dugongs can only be captured on windless days when the sea is calm.

94. This increase ritual is not unlike that carried out at the increase centre for parrot-fish at Winchelsea Island, p. 84.

There are two bark paintings illustrating the dugong hunt at the totemic place of the *Mokoi*, between Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw.

Plate IIIA shows two *Mokoi* in a canoe hunting four dugongs. The black line between the two lower dugongs is the long dugong spear. The white cross-hatching in this panel indicates the rough seas which allowed the dugongs to escape. The upper and lower left-hand panels, *a* and *c*, are sand-banks near the totemic place of the dugongs and *b* is a mythical stingray. By burying itself in the sand the stingray has clouded the water so much that it has the appearance of smoke, indicated by cross-hatching.

Plate IIID deals with the same totemic place as the previous painting. On the lower right are two *Mokoi* in their canoe, and below them three queen fish, *tiimbu*. In the left-hand panel the four dugongs are being hunted by the *Mokoi* and on the upper right is the upturned canoe of the hunters, now a large rock on the seashore. Cross-hatching, as before, indicates rough seas which prevented the capture of the dugongs.

The Mokoi, Delururu, Raugi-raugi and Kultana

Two brothers, *Delururu* and *Raugi-raugi*, accompanied by *Kultana*, who carry the spirits of the *jiritja* dead to their heaven, left Nalkuma in their canoe, *Lampu*, and paddled to the totemic place of the *Mokoi* at Cape Arnhem to spear dugongs. They had captured several and were resting on the beach when they saw a mortal man searching for turtle eggs. This gave the party such a fright that they hurried back to their canoe and paddled homeward as quickly as possible.⁹⁵

In the centre of Pl. 111B are three *Mokoi* in their wooden canoe, called *Lampu*,⁹⁶ who have just speared a dugong. Reading from the left, their names are *Delururu*, *Raugi-raugi* and *Kultana*. The cross-hatching around the dugong is the rough sea water and the triangular patterns, *a*, the cumulus clouds created by the serpent, *bilumbira*. Above the canoe are five queen fish, *tiimbu*.

The Mokoi, Jambula and Bulanuna

Two *Mokoi*, a father, *Jambula*, and his son, *Bulanuna*, went to sea in their canoe, called *Tamalania*,⁹⁷ and speared a hawksbill turtle. This they took to a locality at Cape Arnhem, cooked and ate it. The canoe and the turtle are now parts of the topography of the coast of Cape Arnhem.

At *a*, on the right-hand panel of Pl. 111C, is *Jambula*, left, and his son, *Bulanuna*, returning to land with the turtle they have captured lying in the bottom of the canoe. An octopus and two queen fish are in the same panel. When, in still weather, these queen fish jump out of the water they cause the

95. This is a myth similar to that of *Birikiri* depicted on the engraved paddle, Fig. 58F.

96. Wooden canoes are *jiritja* and bark canoes *dua*. This conforms to the custom of the aborigines of north-eastern Arnhem Land of placing all modern objects in the *jiritja* moiety and the ancient ones in the *dua*. The canoes of the spirit people all have special names.

97. The aborigines have personal names for themselves, their dogs and their canoes.

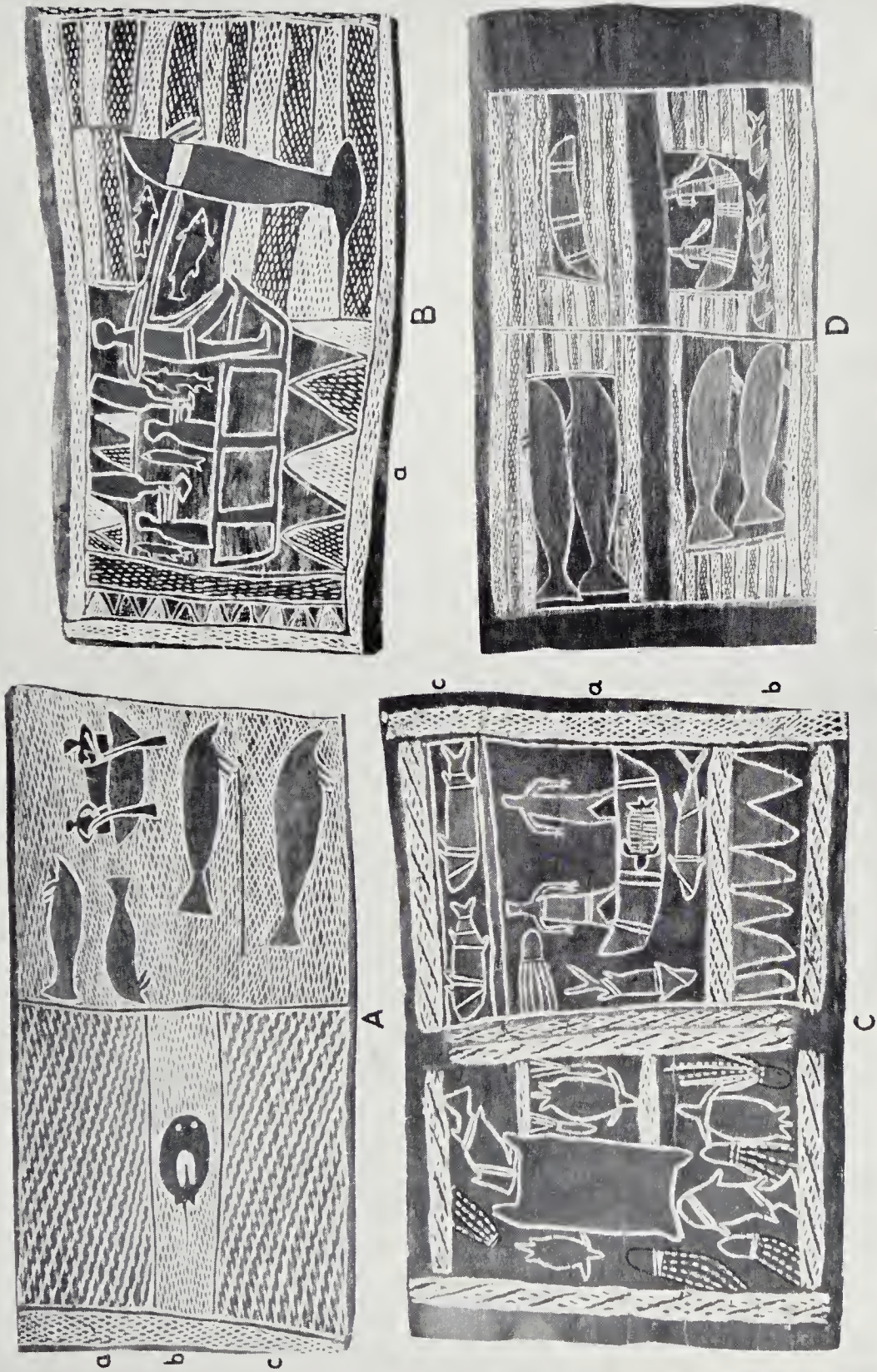


PLATE III. Bark paintings, Yirkalla
 The Mokoï and the turtle hunt

clouds to form, shown on panel *b*, and rain to fall. In panel *c* are two more queen fish. The rectangular design in the centre of the left-hand panel is an unidentified place, called Waitjundudu, situated under the water near Cape Arnhem. Near by are two queen fish, three turtles and seven octopi.

The Journey of the Mokoï, Birikiri, to Cape Arnhem

There was once a spirit man (*Mokoï*) called *Birikiri*, who left Nalkuma to capture some dugongs and paddled to the totem place of the *Mokoï* on the southern side of Cape Arnhem. On his arrival *Birikiri* felt tired, so he pulled his canoe up on the beach, lay down on the warm sand and went to sleep. When he awoke he saw, to his dismay, a mortal man, an aboriginal called *Junbulu*, coming toward him. He rushed to his canoe but in his fright became so confused that he had great difficulty in launching it. Finally he succeeded and, paddling through the rough breakers, reached Nalkuma in safety.

Figure 58F, G illustrates both the obverse and reverse sides of the engraved paddle.

In panel *b* of F is *Birikiri* who, having just arrived from Nalkuma, has pulled his canoe up on the beach, the cross-hatched panel below. Above the canoe is *Birikiri* asleep on the sand, the sand being indicated by the long rectangle beneath him. There are six octopi, called *kwidilir*, in panel *a*. Cross-hatched transverse panels, *c*, *d*, *e*, and the area *o*, represent the stormy water through which *Birikiri* paddled his canoe to escape from *Junbulu*. At *r*, the triangular designs are clouds left in the sky by the *Mokoï*.

The reverse side of the paddle, G, deals with some of the totemic creatures associated with Cape Arnhem, all of which have become natural features. In the centre of panel *d* is a devil-ray with octopi on either side. There is a queen fish above and below. The hump-backed whale, *morokundja*, is in panel *e*, surrounded by four octopi. These octopi are the friends of both the whale and the devil-ray. Transverse panels *a*, *b* and *c* refer to the stormy seas through which the *Mokoï* paddled and the short lines around the border of the paddle, reefs some distance from the shore.

Totem Creatures

Three bark paintings and three decorated paddles illustrate one or more of the totem creatures of Cape Arnhem.

The Totemic Creatures at Marawina, near Cape Arnhem

The upper cross-hatched panel of Pl. 106B⁹⁸ is the open sea. Below, at *a*, is the devil-ray, *mulara*, and his friends, the octopi, *mainda*. At *b* is the constellation of Tjirilpan, Orion and the Pleiades,⁹⁹ with a rock cod, *kouper*, on each side of the constellation. In panels *c* and *d* are six clouds. Rain is falling from the two clouds on the right. In the bottom left-hand panel, *e*, is a crocodile,

98. Interpretation by F. M. Setzler.

99. See astronomy, Pl. 157D.

baron, a stingray, *kawangalk-miri*, two hawksbill turtles, *kouwaradji*, and the turtle rocks shown in Pl. 110E. In panel *f* there are two stingrays.

*The Queen Fish, Tinimbu, the Turtle, Kouwaradji, and
the Octopus, Mainda*

The upper panel of Pl. 106C contains four octopi, *mainda*, and a turtle, *kouwaradji*, and in the bottom panel three queen fish, *tinimbu*, and a number of octopi. The figure at the lower left, to which two octopi have attached themselves, and on which one of the queen fish is resting, is an unidentified totemic rock on the bottom of the sea between Port Bradshaw and Cape Arnhem.*

*The Whales, Welerria and Morokundja, and the Stingray,
Kawangalk-miri, at Cape Arnhem*

In the early days, two mythical whales¹ lived in large caves at the bottom of the sea at Cape Arnhem. The male was called *welerria*, and the female *morokundja*. They had as a companion a stingray, *kawangalk-miri*. At the close of the creation period the whales and the stingray went into the sky and are now portions of the Milky Way near the constellation of Orion.

The first figure to the left of Pl. 106D is the female whale, *morokundja*, the next is the male, *welerria*, and the third the stingray, *kawangalk-miri*. The two dark-coloured rectangles, *a* and *b*, at the upper right and left, are caves at the bottom of the sea where the whales once lived. The white cross-hatching is sea-water and the darker-coloured cross-hatched panels, water which was clouded by the stingray when it was feeding along the bottom. The parallel lines above the heads of the whales symbolize the water parting as they swam and the white triangle on their heads, their blow-hole.

*Totem Place of the Devil-ray, Mulava, and the Whale, Morokundja,
at Nantjaka, Cape Arnhem*

On the upper left of Pl. 108B is the devil-ray, *mulava*, surrounded by panels of triangular designs representing clouds. On the upper right is a whale, *morokundja* (most likely *Megaptera australis*).² The cross-hatching surrounding the whale indicates the disturbance it creates as it swims through the water.

On the left, at *a*, are two oval rocks, the haunts of the hawksbill turtles and sailfish, *kunderunga*, shown to the right of the rocks.

The three triangular designs, *a*, and the three anvil shapes, *b*, above them are clouds. Reading from *c* at the right edge, the subjects of the panels are: sea-water, a panel of clouds, a line of octopi, sea-water and another line of octopi. Nantjaka, at Cape Arnhem, is the totem place for all the creatures represented in the painting. Interpretation by F. M. Setzler.

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XXVI.

1. Warner (1937), p. 365, describes the totemic dance of the whale in the *jivilja narra* ceremonies of the Murngin tribe.

2. This whale later went into the sky and became part of the Milky Way near the constellation of Orion, Pl. 157D.

The Hawksbill Turtle, Kouwaradji

A giant *jiritja* hawksbill turtle, called *kouwaradji*, lives at Talaoi, a totemic place at the bottom of the sea, but close to the shore of southern Cape Arnhem. This turtle is greatly feared and in general his camp is strictly avoided. Should, however, an aboriginal unwittingly paddle his canoe over *kouwaradji's* camp, the turtle becomes annoyed and either creates waves so large that they upset the canoe and drown the occupant, or blows water into the sky to create heavy thunderstorms, so that they will destroy the intruder.

Kouwaradji, however, does not always drown the offenders. Sometimes he takes them under the water for a time and then allows them to come to the surface again. Although this experience makes the aborigines 'silly' for some weeks, they finally recover.

In the centre of the painted paddle, Pl. 109A, at *a*, is Talaoi, the camp of the hawksbill turtle. The black triangles are flat rocks at the totemic place, and the light-coloured triangles, coral rocks. Above and below at *b*, *b*, is the hawksbill turtle. The groups of triangular designs at the top and bottom of the paddle blade are the thunder-clouds created by the turtle when he becomes annoyed.

The Dugong, Merinjunga

When the dugong, *merinjunga*, is disturbed by the aborigines paddling a canoe over his camp at Nangata (at the bottom of the sea, between Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw) he becomes annoyed and blows up so much smoke and fire that it destroys the intruders and causes heavy rainstorms to fall. As soon as this happens, the stingrays travel into the mangrove swamps to give birth to their young.³

Plate 109B shows the painted paddle, both sides of which are decorated similarly. The design in panel *a* is a large rain cloud created by the dugong, and the triangles on either side, smaller clouds. The dark-coloured triangle in panel *b* is a thunderstorm and the cross-hatching on either side, the rain falling from it. Similar cross-hatching in panel *c* also indicates the falling rain, which causes the stingray, centre, to go to the mangrove swamps.

The Devil-ray, Mulara, and the Hawksbill Turtle, Kouwaradji

Plate 109C, D pictures the obverse and reverse sides of the painted paddle. On panel *a* of C is the devil-ray, *mulara*, surrounded by octopi, *knndilir*. In the two panels, *b*, are queen fish, *tinimbu*, and above them again, at *c*, the clouds made by the devil-ray, *mulara*, when he becomes annoyed. The cross-hatched panels on either side are flat rocks at his totemic place near Cape Arnhem and the transverse cross-hatched panels, *f*, *f*, *f*, the waves breaking over those rocks. At *d* is the hawksbill turtle, *kouwaradji*, accompanied by his attendants, the octopi, *mainda*.

3. This myth is similar in this respect to that of the dugong and the mythical men, p. 345.

On the reverse side, *a* is the devil-ray, *mulara*, surrounded by octopi. At the top of the same panel are two queen fish. At *b* are two *jiritja* stingrays, *dulamou*, the cross-hatched panels surrounding them representing the sand-banks near their totemic place. There is a wet-season cloud, *barawal*, at *c*, created by the serpents, *bilumbira*, and at *d* the same clouds when the rain is falling.

The bottom of all *jiritja* paddles are similar in shape to this example. For the shape of the *dua* paddle, see Fig. 58A, B.

On this paddle, 58H, J, are engravings of the devil-ray, queen fish, crocodile, stone fish and the serpents, *bilumbira*.

On J, *a* is the devil-ray, the triangles at its tail picturing broken cumulus clouds after they have shed their rain. At *e* is the queen fish, *tinimbu*, and at *f* a wet-season cumulus cloud with rain falling from its lower edge. This cloud was created by the serpent, *bilumbira*, who can be seen travelling in it. The triangles on either side are small broken cumulus clouds. At *g* is a crocodile, *barou*, and a stone fish, *kaumbiriunja*. The transverse panels, *b*, *c*, *d*, picture rough seas, and the short lines surrounding the whole design, reefs in the sea at Cape Arnhem.

The designs on H refer to the *bilumbira* serpents hanging from the branches of the *menin* trees at Cape Arnhem after having caused the wet-season thunderstorms to form.⁴ In panel *a* are two *bilumbira*, shown upside down, hanging from the branches of a *menin* tree. The male is on the left. The triangles at *b* are small clouds also created by the serpents. The queen fish, *tinimbu*, in panel *c*, is associated in some unidentified way with the northerly wind, *lunguruma*.⁵ indicated by the parallel lines on either side of the fish. When the *lunguruma* wind is blowing there is a plentiful food supply.

The Serpent, Bilumbira

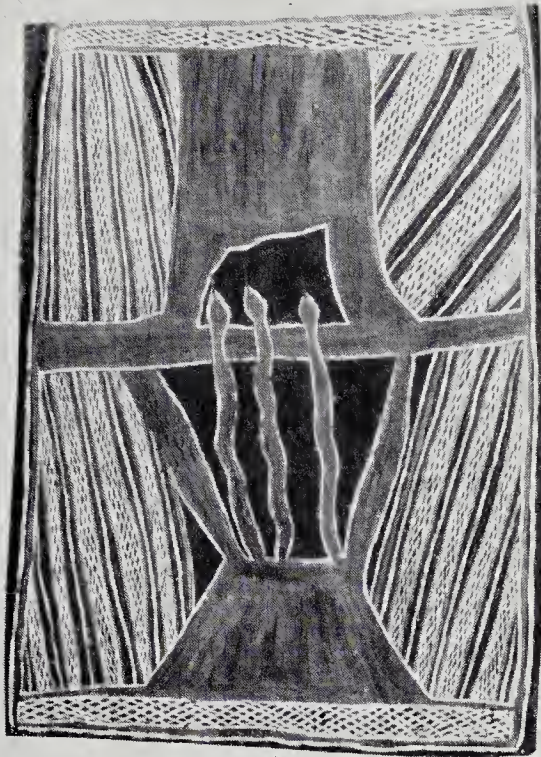
The serpents, *bilumbira*, are highly-coloured, dangerous creatures, with long projecting teeth. They are reputed to be over fifty feet in length. During the dry season the *bilumbira* live in a group of submerged rocks, called Daliwa, on the sea floor between Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw. Should anyone paddle near by, the *bilumbira* will rise to the surface and with their long teeth destroy the canoe and its occupants. Another *bilumbira* totemic place is on the north side of Cape Arnhem.

When the wet season starts, the *bilumbira* leave their home at the bottom of the sea and make the large thunder-clouds, in which they travel. The aborigines believe that the thunder is their voice and the lightning their tongues. The aborigines claim that during the wet season there are always thunder-clouds over the home of the *bilumbira* at Cape Arnhem.

Plate 112D shows a serpent travelling in a thunderstorm. On either side are young thunderstorms 'growing up', to use an aboriginal term. At the base of the 'young' thunderstorms, at *a* and *b*, the cross-hatching indicates falling rain.

4. See Pl. 112C.

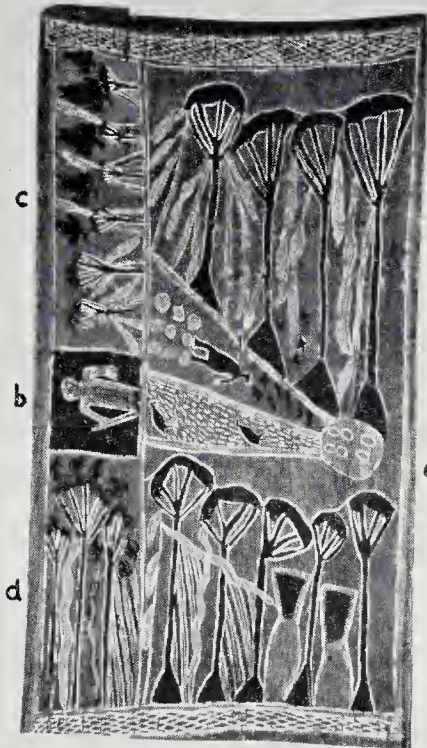
5. See Yirrkalla winds, p. 433.



A



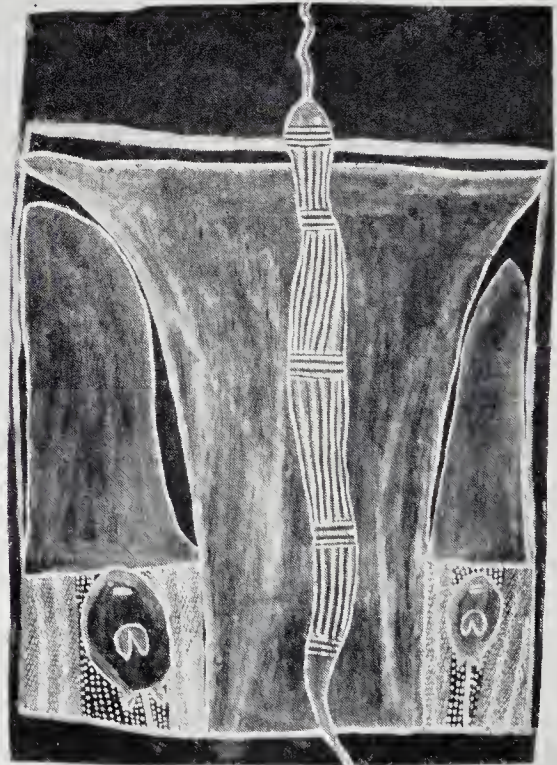
B



C

a

e



a

D

b

PLATE 112. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla
The serpent, bilumbira

The two stingrays, shown in the centre of the rain, are travelling to the mangrove swamps to give birth to their young.⁶

Plate 112A is another painting illustrating the myth of the *bilumbira*. The main features above and below the central line are two large thunderstorms in which three serpents are travelling. The parallel lines of cross-hatching in the four corners of the painting depict the falling rain.

Plate 112B deals with the totemic place of the *bilumbira* on the northern side of Cape Arnhem. In the lower panel are *menin* trees, and at their base four jungle-fowls (*Megapodius reinwardt*) scratching up their mounds.⁷ Hanging from the branches or flying through the air are a number of the *bilumbira* serpents. The human figures are *Mokoi*.⁸

The upper panel shows similar trees with jungle-fowl mounds at their base, and birds, presumably jungle-fowls, in the branches. As in the upper panel, there are serpents flying through the air or hanging from the branches.

Plate 112C is an elaboration of the previous painting, the upper and lower right-hand panels referring to the same trees and serpents as those shown on B. In the lower right, at *a*, the two square-topped designs with the serpent entering from the left indicate the submerged rocks at Daliwa, the dry-season home of the *bilumbira*. The upper and lower left-hand panels, *c* and *d*, show additional trees with mounds at their base and, presumably, jungle-fowls in their branches. On the centre left at *b* is a *Mokoi*. The triangular section in the centre of the right-hand side of the painting refers to the swamp lands on the coast adjacent to the totemic place of the *bilumbira*. In the lower section of the triangle are unidentified birds and in the upper section, a *Mokoi* lying down, and near by a group of circles representing some unidentified fruit. More fruits are shown in the circle at *e*.

(3) ANIMALS AND BIRDS

The Hawk-man, Wabula, and the Butterfly-girl, Bounba

The hawk-man, *Wabula*,⁹ was without a wife. One day when he was feeling particularly lonely he came across a camp of butterfly-people, *Bounba*,¹⁰ sitting under the trees. *Wabula* was attracted by the eldest sister, resting in a special hut on one side, and made plans to capture her for his wife. Going to a nearby beach, he caught a number of lobsters, called *maitka*, cooked them and, wrapping some of them in paper-bark, returned to the camp of the butterfly-people, and offered them to the eldest sister. As she came forward to take the food

6. Myth, p. 340.

7. The jungle-fowls, by their calls, attract the *jiritja* spirits of the dead to a forest near Port Bradshaw; from there, the spirits set out on their journey to the *jiritja* heaven. Myth, p. 329.

8. These spirit people, *Mokoi*, have a totemic place on the southern side of Cape Arnhem.

9. In another myth the hawk, *wabula*, is associated with the native cat. See p. 357.

10. According to Warner (1937), p. 424, the butterfly, *burn-ba*, is closely associated with the morning star, *barnumbir*, and lives on the top of it.

Wabula caught her by the wrist and, carrying her to his bark hut in the forest, blocked up all the openings so that she could not escape.

The girl, *Bounba*, afraid and lonely, cried all the night for her father, *Jumundik*,¹¹ to help her. He, being a skilled magician, had a spear-thrower with which he could perform many wonders. The first time he rubbed it, a heavy wind sprang up which shook the bark hut so much that cracks appeared everywhere. By rubbing his spear-thrower the second time, *Jumundik* transformed his daughter into a butterfly so small that she was able to escape through one of those cracks.

When *Wabula* awoke in the morning and found that *Bounba* had escaped, he changed himself into a hawk, so that he could live in the same element as the girl.

Plate 113A pictures the story of the hawk-man, *Wabula*, and the butterfly girl, *Bounba*. In the upper left-hand corner, at *a*, the eldest sister is resting within her hut, shown as a crescent. The five human figures immediately below are her brothers and sisters of varying ages, the upper two being infants. The designs on the left lower edge, at *b*, are the lobsters, *maitka*, which *Wabula* caught to entice the girl from her hut. Reading from the left, the first three and the sixth are complete lobsters, the fourth has its claws removed, and the fifth is the parcel of cooked lobsters which *Wabula* wrapped in paper-bark to give *Bounba*. Immediately to the right of number six is the man, *Wabula*, taking hold of the wrist of the girl, *Bounba*, as she reached for the parcel of lobsters.

Within the triangle on the upper right, at *d*, is the bark hut of *Wabula*, in which the hawk-man (upper) and the butterfly-girl (lower) are asleep. On the lower right at *c* is the girl's father, *Jumundik*, rubbing his special spear-thrower. This spear-thrower not only created the storm which caused the openings in *Wabula's* bark hut (one is shown as a dark line on the left-hand side of the hut), but also transformed his daughter into a butterfly so that she could escape.

Wabula is depicted as a hawk on the upper right of the painting and *Bounba* as a butterfly immediately below him.

The Echidna-man, Tjiramuna, and the Plovers, Tjutju

One day, a long, long time ago, a flock of plover-men, *Tjutju* (*Lobibyx miles*), were hunting in the forest a few miles south of Port Bradshaw when they saw their enemy, the echidna-man, *Tjiramuna* (*Echidna aculeata*), and his wives asleep beside their camp-fire. Taking advantage of this, the plover-men sneaked up quietly and threw so many spears into the body of the echidna-man that he died. Next morning, however, *Tjiramuna* returned to life and, seeing that the spears of the plovers had grown into his skin, he transformed himself into an echidna. When the plover-men, *Tjutju*, saw what a grotesque, clumsy creature their enemy, *Tjiramuna*, had become (see sketch of an echidna, Pl. 62C), they

11. *Jumundik* is also in charge of the *dua* heaven, Djiraia, of the Milingimbi people, p. 328. The link between *Bounba*, the morning star, *barnumbir*, and the *dua* heaven is of interest.

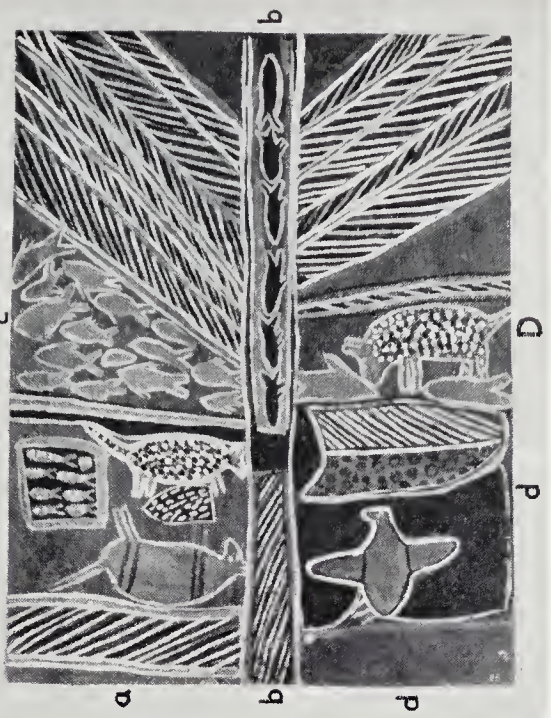
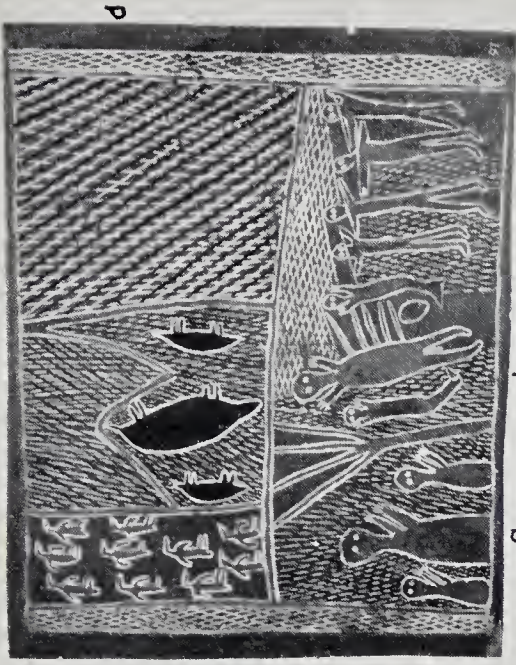
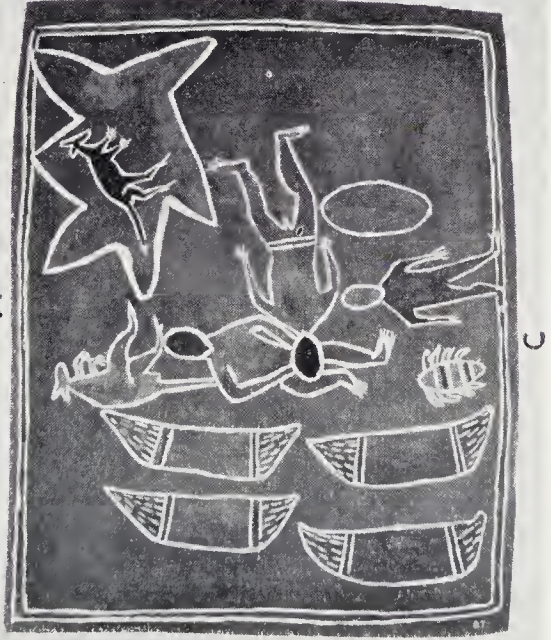


PLATE 113. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

- A The hawk-man, Wabula, and the butterfly-girl. Bounba
- B The wallaby, Moutia, and the cockroach. Borok
- C The echidna-man, Tjiannuna, and the plovers. Tju-tju
- D The native-cat man, Baracuma, and the hawk-man, Wabula

changed themselves into plovers and flew to another country so that they would not meet him again. The totemic place, Niliala, of the echidna is now a line of rocky cliffs on the sea coast, a few miles south of Port Bradshaw.

The painting, Pl. 113B, is divided into two parts. The lower relates to the mythical story of the plover and echidna-men of creation times, and the upper to the present-day creatures.

In the lower left-hand corner, at *a*, is the echidna-man, *Tjiramuna*, and his two wives. At *b*, they are asleep under a tree, shown to the left. At *c* are the plover-men, *Tjutju*, casting their spears at the unfortunate echidna-man. The small oval to the lower right of the dead echidna-man is his camp-fire. In the upper portion of the painting, the echidna and his two wives, in black, occupy the central panel, and the plovers are on the extreme left. The cross-hatched area *d* indicates the rocky cliffs of the totem place, Niliala, of the echidna-man.

The Wallaby, Moutia, and the Cockroach, Borok

This myth explains how the sea became salt, the origin of the swamps in Arnhem Land, the jungle wallaby and the cockroach.

During creation times a wallaby-man, *Moutia*, and his wife, *Borok*, lived near Melville Bay. One day the couple filled four bark dishes with water from the sea, which in those days was fresh, and placed them in the jungle to keep cool. *Moutia* then asked his wife if she would remove some of the vermin from his hair. She agreed and, with the head of *Moutia* in her lap, spent some time at the task. When she had finished she asked *Moutia* if he would do the same for her, but he refused very rudely, saying that he was too tired and wanted to sleep. This so infuriated the woman that she quarrelled violently with her husband. Then, to punish him further for his discourtesy, she waded into the sea, their only source of fresh water, and urinated to make it salt.

But, so that she would not suffer hardship from her own action, *Borok* transformed herself into a cockroach (probably a terrestrial *isopod*).¹² When the husband, *Moutia*, saw what had happened he, in turn, changed himself into a wallaby and hopped to Meleton Island in Melville Bay.

Borok, in her anger, had thought to deprive her husband, and, consequently, the rest of creation, of fresh water. But her plan for vengeance miscarried because she had forgotten the four bark dishes filled with fresh water which she and her husband had left in the jungle. That water was transformed into the extensive swamps of eastern Arnhem Land, the source of many of the rivers which flow into both the Gulf of Carpentaria and the sea on the northern coasts of Australia.

The four boat-shaped objects on the left of Pl. 113C are the bark dishes which *Moutia* and his wife filled with water and placed in the jungle. In the centre of the painting is *Moutia* with his head in the lap of his wife, and on the

12. This creature, which lives under bark or dead trees in the jungles, is able to exist on the moisture gathered from its environment.

bottom edge is his wife, *Borok*, urinating in the sea. Beside her is the cockroach into which she later transformed herself. On the upper right the leaf-shaped design symbolizes Meleton Island in Melville Bay, where the wallaby made its home. The oval near the right knee of the wallaby-man, *Moutia*, is a totemic rock associated both with him and his wife.

The Native-cat man, Baracuma, and the Hawk-man, Wabula

In the early days of the creation period, a native-cat man, *Baracuma*, who lived near Blue Mud Bay, owned the only fishing net in the world. It was so good that, whenever he cast the net into a nearby stream, he caught, in a short time, all the fish that he required.

One afternoon he decided that, instead of fishing in the river, he would go to a nearby lagoon. Again he caught many fish, and had just spread them out on green leaves, preparatory to cooking them, when his friend, *Wabula*, the hawk-man, paid him a visit. On seeing so many fish, and hearing about the excellence of the net, the hawk-man asked *Baracuma* to lend it to him. But *Baracuma* demurred, explaining that his life was so intimately associated with the net that if it were out of his hands for any length of time he would die. *Wabula*, however, assured *Baracuma* that he ran no risk whatever, because even if he, *Wabula*, were unsuccessful in his fishing, he would bring the net back in time. The native-cat man, *Baracuma*, persuaded against his will, allowed the hawk-man to take his net away.

But the fish were so numerous that *Wabula*, not realizing the truth of the story about the intimate association between *Baracuma* and his net, continued to use it, even though he could hear the distressed *Baracuma* calling out. When at last *Wabula* returned the net to its owner he was, from all appearances, dead. When *Wabula* threw the fishing net over the native-cat man, however, its contact gave him strength, and he slowly revived.

After that distressing experience the native-cat man refused to lend his net to anyone, even though *Wabula*, in particular, pestered him day after day, always promising to return it quickly. One day *Baracuma*, sorry because *Wabula* was hungry, lent him the net, but impressed upon him the urgent need for its speedy return. Remembering that his thoughtlessness had almost killed his friend, the hawk-man returned the net quickly. After that *Wabula* kept his contract so well that *Baracuma* gradually lost his fear of lending it.

Then one day, when the fishing was not good and *Wabula* was hungry, he continued in pursuit of a particularly large fish, even though he knew he was exposing his friend *Baracuma* to great danger. But when, on capturing the fish, *Wabula* returned the net he found that his greediness had killed the native-cat man, for on that occasion not even winding the net round *Baracuma's* body would bring him back to life. A kangaroo-man, who had seen the whole incident, transformed the dead *Baracuma* into the native-cat and *Wabula* into a hawk.

Before he died, however, *Baracuma*, incensed at being robbed of life by the selfishness of the hawk-man, decreed that from that time onward not only *Wabula*, the hawk-man, but the whole of creation, once dead, would never come to life again.¹³ Previous to that decree everything and everyone died but for a short while, then returned to life to continue another cycle of their existence.

The white spots on the fur of the present-day native-cat (*Dasyurus* sp.) were once, according to the myth, splashes of light-coloured mud which the fishing net had spattered over *Baracuma's* body.

Plate 113D illustrates the native-cat and hawk myth with considerable detail. In the upper left-hand panel, *a*, is the native-cat man covered with splashes of mud from his net. Between his feet is a cone-shaped figure which represents the fishing net. The square above is the oven where *Baracuma* cooked the fish. The other creature within the panel is the kangaroo-man, who later transformed *Baracuma* into a native-cat and *Wabula* into a hawk. The horizontal central design, *b*, depicts the stream in which the native-cat man netted the fish, and the diagonal lines on each side, subsidiary creeks flowing into the main stream. In the triangle *c*, on the upper edge of the painting, are some of the fish netted by *Baracuma*.

The meeting of *Baracuma* and *Wabula* at the lagoon is illustrated in the lower panel, *d*. The native-cat man, with his spotted skin, is shown again at the right of the panel. In front of him are two fish he caught in the lagoon. On the left of the panel is the hawk-man, *Wabula*. The cone-shaped design between *Wabula* and *Baracuma* is a rock where the latter rested.

Plate 114A is an example of the individualism of the aboriginal artist, for although the underlying myth is the same, this representation differs greatly from the work of the previous artist.

The central design of this painting is the fishing net; the human figure to the right is *Baracuma*, the native-cat man, and to the left *Wabula*, the hawk-man. The five fish at *a*, lower right, belong to *Baracuma*, and the five fish at *b*, lower centre, to *Wabula*. The kangaroo-man, who was responsible for transforming both *Baracuma* and *Wabula*, is shown above the net. The cross-hatched areas indicate the stream and paper-bark swamps at Blue Mud Bay.

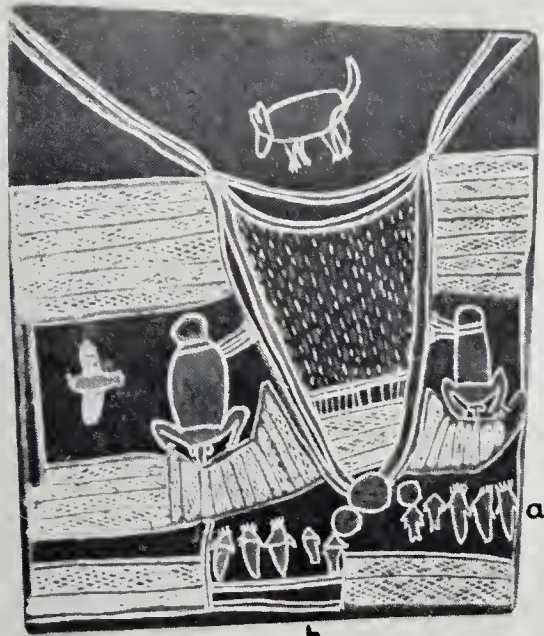
Frogs, Garakman, at Milungwira Swamp

Except that this painting, Pl. 114B, is associated with Milungwira, few other details were gathered. An examination of Pl. 121C, however, shows the cormorant, in black, resting on a rectangle, with the fish, *bilda*, above it. There are four frogs, *garakman*, in the lower, and one in the upper panel.

The lines and cross-hatched panels below the frogs indicate rain made by the creatures.¹⁴

13. This is similar to the decree laid down in the moon myths.

14. In Arnhem Land and Melville Island the frog is always associated with rain.



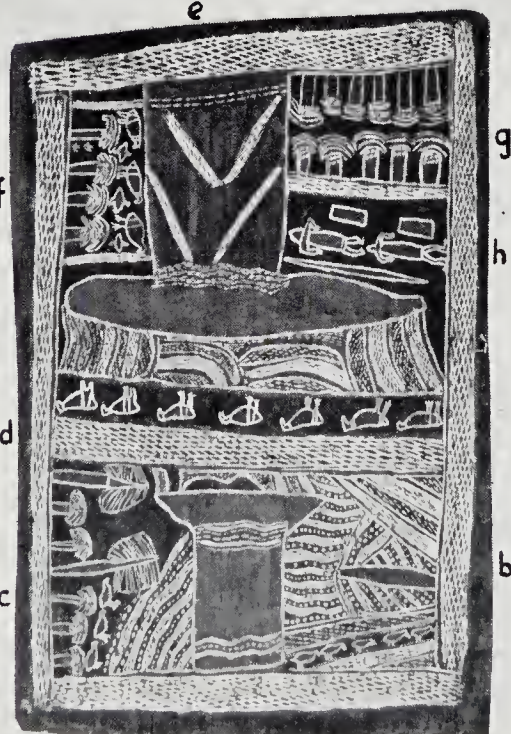
A b



B



C



D^a

PLATE 114. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

- A The native-cat man, Baracuma, and the hawk-man, Wabula
 B The frogs, garakman C A hunting scene D Creatures at Bartalumba

A Hunting Scene

This bark painting, Pl. 114C,¹⁵ illustrates the experiences of an aboriginal who went out to spear kangaroos near Biluitja, a place about four miles west of Yirrkalla. In the upper right-hand are the lines of paired footprints of men and kangaroos. Whilst chasing the kangaroos, the hunter saw an emu, *kadbarait*, standing in the grass (cross-hatching), eating the blossoms from a low shrub, called *wari*, and further along, a fresh-water goanna, *bije* (upper left), running through the grass (cross-hatching).

Creatures at Bartalumba, Groote Eylandt

Plate 114D¹⁶ pictures the country adjacent to the Bartalumba headland, western Groote Eylandt.

Reading from the bottom, the anvil-like figure in the middle of panel *a* is a large cloud over the Bartalumba hills; bottom right is a diagonal line of birds, and above them at *b*, small clouds and rain. On the lower left edge at *c* are seven casuarina trees, with three pigeons above them. Over the central transverse cross-hatched panel, *d*, is another line of birds. The main anvil-shaped design at *e*, in the upper panel, is a cumulus cloud with rain (cross-hatching) falling from its lower edge. There are four cycad palms at *f*, in the upper left, with three pigeons roosting in the branches and three grasshoppers in flight. In the upper right, *g* is another group of cycad palms, and below them at *h*, two women, *Nabililangu* and *Wurati-laku*,¹⁷ with their carrying-baskets (rectangles) and digging sticks beside them.

Kangaroos, Emus and Goannas

There is no mythological story associated with the two bark paintings, Pl. 115A, D. They depict kangaroos, emus and goannas in every-day surroundings.

In the upper panel, Pl. 115A, is a kangaroo lying in the shade of a tree, after it had eaten a meal from the leaves of a yam, depicted as torpedo-shaped designs to the right of the creature. At *a* and *b* are two similar plants. The cross-hatched vertical band between them indicates a well-worn track made by other kangaroos. The kangaroo footmarks to the left are newly made.

Plate 115D shows a number of creatures which live round a lagoon called Doraka, situated several miles west of our base camp at Yirrkalla. Doraka lagoon is the oval in the centre, and above is a number of male and female emus and their tracks. In the lower left are two red kangaroos, the paired tracks of one of them being shown in the extreme lower left. On the lower right are four fresh-water goannas, *bije*.

The Whale, Dianmeri

This myth tells about three aboriginal fishermen, a whale and the death of one of the fishermen.¹⁸

15. Interpretation by F. D. McCarthy.

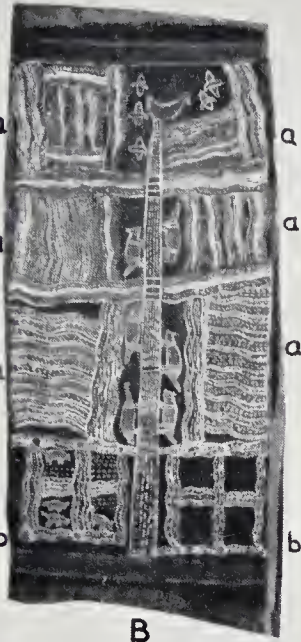
16. Interpretation by F. D. McCarthy.

17. See carved figure of *Wurati-laku*, Pl. 135C, D; myth, p. 436.

18. These men were distant relatives of *Mauwulan*, the artist who produced this bark painting.



A



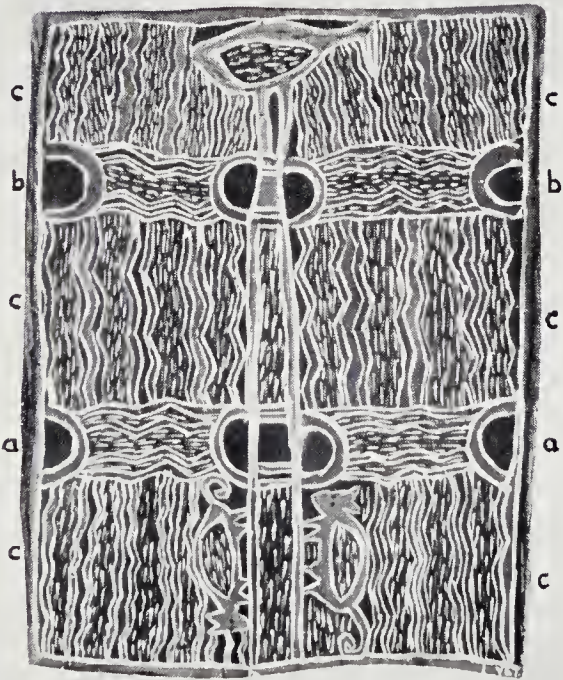
B



C



D



E

PLATE 115. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

A, D Kangaroos, emus and goannas

C The whale, dianmeri

B, E The night-bird, karawak, and the opossum, marungo

The three aborigines, having between them made a new rope and spear, set out in a canoe to capture a turtle. They speared one, and hauled it to the surface, but were unable to pull the turtle close enough to the canoe to kill it. One of the aborigines had just jumped overboard to push the turtle within reach of his companions, when two large whales surfaced, one on either side of the canoe, almost swamping it. The men in the canoe, fearful of what might happen to their companion, told him to swim under the canoe, and enter it over the stern, the usual way. But when he did so he dived into the mouth of one of the whales. As the creature surfaced, the aborigines saw the legs and buttocks of their companion protruding from its mouth.

Although the first reaction of the two fishermen was to paddle from the scene of the tragedy, they soon came back in the hope that they could retrieve the body. But they did not and had to return to camp to tell the sad news. Next morning, however, two boys, when looking for turtle eggs, found the body cast up on the beach.

The bark painting, Pl. 115C, represents what is probably the hump-backed whale, which is known to frequent the waters of the Gulf of Carpentaria. The aborigines described this whale, which they called *dianmeri*, as a large fish, considerably longer than a canoe, which floats on the surface of the sea, a characteristic of the hump-backed whale. The curving lines on either side of the head represent the water parting as the creature swims along the surface, and the ovals down the central part of the body, the light-coloured skin markings of this whale. According to my informants the whale, *dianmeri*, has two mouths in its tail, shown as ovals, with which it takes hold of a canoe to capsize it.

*The Night-bird, Karawak, and the Opossum, Marungo
at Cape Shield*

During mythical times the night-bird, *karawak* (unidentified) lived by himself at Milingimbi. One night, feeling lonely, he flew to the top of the tree in which he lived and called out to an opossum, *marungo*, whose home was in a hollow tree at Djerakoi, Cape Shield, near Blue Mud Bay, to come over and talk to him. But the opossum did not even reply. *Karawak* then flew to the Wessel Islands, then to Arnhem Bay and then to Cape Arnhem, at each place asking the opossum to pay him a visit, but the opossum made no sign of even having heard the night-bird. Finally *karawak* flew to the hollow tree at Cape Shield, the home of the opossum, and settling on the upper branches, again repeated his request. As soon as it was dark, the opossum left his nesting hollow and, climbing to the top of the tree, talked with *karawak* the whole night long. When, however, the first light of dawn came in the sky, the opossum descended the tree and went to sleep in a hollow limb. From that time until now, the night-bird, *karawak*, calls at night, the only time that the opossum will leave his home in the hollow tree and talk to him.

Two bark paintings, a ceremonial message stick¹⁹ and a staff,²⁰ used in the *karawak* totemic rituals, were made by the Yirrkalla aborigines.

The central design on Pl. 115E is the totemic hollow tree at Djerakoi, Cape Shield, with *karawak*, the night-bird, sitting on top of it. The black semicircles at *a, a*, and *b, b*, and similar designs on the trunk, are openings in the hollow tree, the home of the opossum, *marungo*. At dusk the opossum leaves the opening, *a*, climbs the tree and, entering *b*, keeps *karawak* company during the hours of darkness. At the first sign of dawn the opossum leaves *karawak* and, descending the trunk, enters the hole *a* and goes to sleep. On the right is the opossum ascending, and on the left, descending. The short white marks on the trunk of the tree are the scratches made by the claws of the opossum as he climbs up and down. The meandering lines on panels *c, c, c, c, c, c*, indicate marks in the mud at the base of the totemic tree made by the opossum, *marungo*, the ghost crabs, *gunjun*, and an unidentified lizard, *gainuerena*. In some undetermined way these three creatures are associated in the myths.

On Pl. 115B the tall vertical figure in the middle of the painting is the hollow totemic tree at Djerakoi on which *karawak* seated himself to talk to the opossum. Flying round *karawak* are five cicadas. A number of opossums are shown ascending the tree after dark and descending when dawn breaks. The short white lines indicate the scratches made on the tree by their claws. The upper six panels of wavy lines, *a, a, a, a, a, a*, represent the footmarks of the opossums as they walked round the totemic tree. The circles at the corners of the square, *b*, are the holes of the crabs, *gunjun*, which followed the opossum to the tree, and the lines joining the circles are the tracks made in the sand by the crabs as they walked from one hole to another.²¹ In the squares, *c*, on the lower left are four dingoes. The surrounding designs are the paths of the dingoes, and the dots are their tracks.

The Dugongs, Merinjuuga

Two bark paintings deal with the fragment of a myth about some mythical dugongs (*Dugong australis*) which once lived at Bartu, near Cape Wilberforce. One of the dugongs was killed by a mythical man, *Oramula*.

In Pl. 116C the large dugong, *merinjuuga*, is dead. The broken lines on his head are the maggots crawling from his body, and the cross-hatched bands, the strips of meat, as they are cut from the animals by the aborigines. There was no explanation of the cross-hatched background. Interpretation made by F. D. McCarthy.

Plate 116A shows a male and a female dugong, *merinjuuga*, at Gongora, near Cape Wilberforce. The cross-hatched panels leading from their heads represent submarine grass, the food of the dugongs. The vertical panels, *a*, symbolize the ripples on the water and the bubbles coming to the surface as the creatures feed on the sea bottom.

19. Fig. 65A, B.

20. Pl. 134E.

21. Myth, p. 298, and design of the crabs, *gunjun*, on bark painting, Pl. 115E.

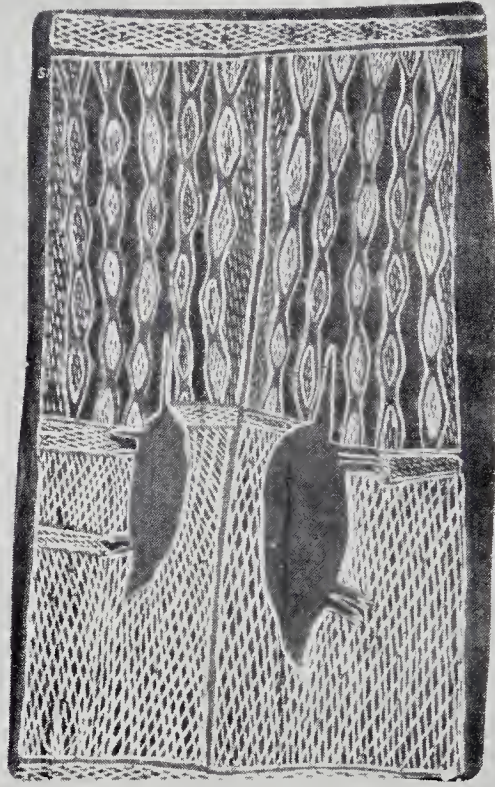
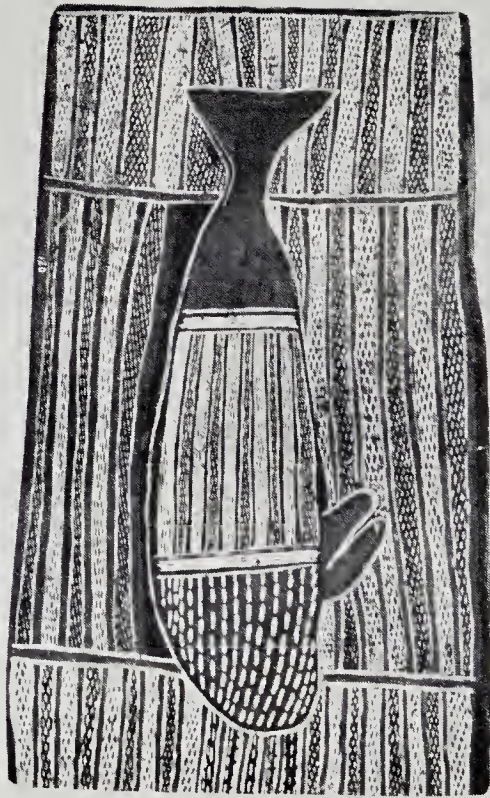
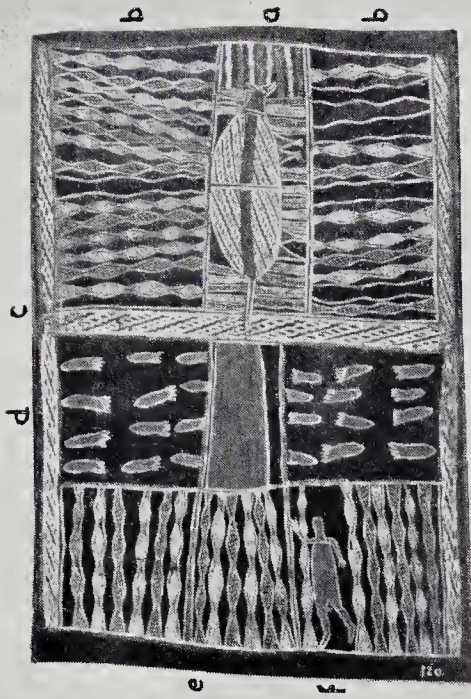
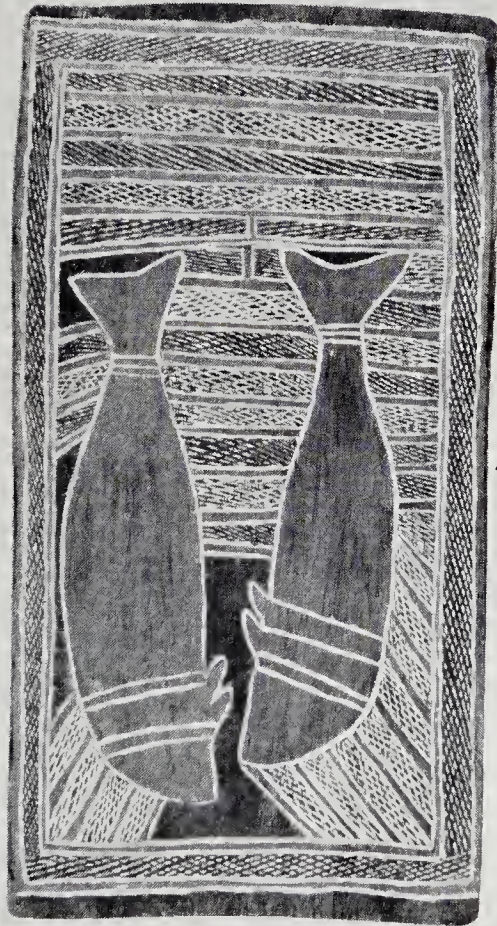


PLATE 116. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

A, C The dugongs, merinjunga B, D The bandicoot, warnt-kura, and fire

The Bandicoot-men, Warnt-kura

During mythical times the bandicoot-men, *Warnt-kura*, made a nest at Bian-bian-bui, close to the Gainmaui River where *Wirili* and his companions allowed their camp-fire to set fire to the countryside.²² Although the fire destroyed the nest of the bandicoots, the creatures themselves escaped destruction by running away. The place where the bandicoot made his nest is now an open plain, in the centre of which is a lagoon filled with large paper-bark trees. According to the myth, the fire is still burning under the water of the lagoon, although no one can see it.

Plate 116D shows two bandicoots, *warnt-kura*, in their burning nest at Bian-bian-bui. The lines of lozenges represent the bush-fire and the cross-hatched left-hand panel, smoke from the fire.

On Pl. 116B the bandicoot is on panel *a*, with panels of fire, *b, b*, on either side of him. The bands between the lozenges indicate the charcoal and ashes. The cross-hatched panel, *c*, is a dry watercourse near the totemic place of the bandicoot. At *f* is the man, *Munijoi*, who was associated with the bush-fire on the Gainmaui River; the flames of fire are indicated on the left-hand panel. The footprints are those of the men at the ceremonial ground.

The Geese, Wurumatji, at Duwalaila Swamp

During creation times large flocks of geese, *wurumatji*, once lived on the Duwalaila swamp east of Arnhem Bay. Their food was the bulbs, *rakia*, of the spike rush.

One day, when they were feeding in the middle of the swamp, *Tjambuwal*, the thunder-man, passing overhead in a cumulus cloud, called out (thundered) so loudly that the geese took fright and flew to another swamp on the mainland south of Milingimbi, where they have remained ever since.

Plate 128C is a painted ceremonial object associated with the mythical geese. The cross-hatched vertical panels, *a, a, a*, are low hills near the Duwalaila swamp, and the circles, waterholes in the bottom of which (indicated by dots) are white stones and *rakia* bulbs. The transverse lines, *b, b, b, b*, are streams of running water and the horizontal lines on both the right- and left-hand panels, aboriginal roads between the waterholes.

This design, belonging to the *jambakbinwa mata* of Arnhem Bay, was painted on the body of a *dua* initiate before initiation (see body painting, Pl. 129D).

(4) REPTILES

The mythical serpent occupies an important place in the beliefs and the ceremonial life of the aborigines of Arnhem Land, as, indeed, it does, or did, throughout the whole of aboriginal Australia.²³

The beliefs surrounding the serpent *jurlungur*, which swallowed the *Wawalik* sisters, went into the sky and caused great floods,²⁴ form the bases of the most

22. Myth, p. 293, Pl. 93B.

24. Warner (1937), ch. ix.

23. Brown (1926), p. 24; Mountford (1948), p. 145.

important ceremonial cycles in Arnhem Land. The serpent *aitja*,²⁵ the dominant ancestor in the *arawaltja* ceremony of Groote Eylandt, also created many water-holes and rivers, finally inhabiting his last creation, Jara-ua water.

Serpents in one form or another live in most of the important waterholes in Arnhem Land; others live in the thunderstorms and, travelling between the clouds, occasionally strike the earth beneath with their tongues. These serpents, under many names, are invariably associated with water, and sometimes with the rainbow.²⁶ They are usually highly coloured, like the rainbow, are of huge size, and often have a mane and a beard. In a few localities along the north coast of Arnhem Land, however, the heads of some serpents resemble a block of weathered stone. The mythical serpents of Arnhem Land are always dangerous to strangers who go near their waterholes, and even to those aborigines who do not perform the proper rituals before they approach the sacred places. In the Yirkalla area a number of mythical serpents, living in the thunder-clouds, belong to rain, lightning and thunder.

The Lightning Snake, Wununga

The lightning snakes, *wununga*,²⁷ who live in the sky during the wet season, can often be seen passing from one cloud to another in the form of lightning. During the dry season the *wununga* take on the form of one of the dangerous snakes of the jungle, who, before they bite an aboriginal, eat the leaves of the *menin* vine to make their venom more deadly. The young of the *wununga* also live in the jungle, but when adult they, like their parents, go into the sky during the rainy season.

Plate 117A shows two *wununga* snakes passing from one cloud to another. The light grey figures at the top of the painting are three thunder-clouds, from the bottom of which rain is falling (parallel cross-hatched lines). The thick black vertical band, *a*, in the lower panel represents the wet-season wind, *bara*.

Plate 117C shows three *wununga* snakes in a jungle, eating the leaves of the *menin* vine. The triangular symbols on the borders represent the clouds in which the snakes live. The three serpents have their heads in the branches of the *menin* vine (central design).

The Crocodiles, Barou, at Caledon Bay

In early times the crocodiles, *barou*, left the Roper River country and travelled northward until they reached the swamps at Blue Mud Bay. As these were extensive and well stocked with food, most of the crocodiles decided to remain there. Some of them were not satisfied with the conditions at Blue Mud Bay so, accompanied by the blanket lizard, *baltjira* (*Chamydasaurus kingii*), they

25. Myth, p. 27.

26. Warner (1937), p. 541, relates a myth about a serpent which causes floods and whose body is the rainbow.

27. See painted sacred object of the serpent, *wununga*. Pl. 134A. The serpent *wununga* is also present in the myths and ceremonies of Milingimbi, p. 447.

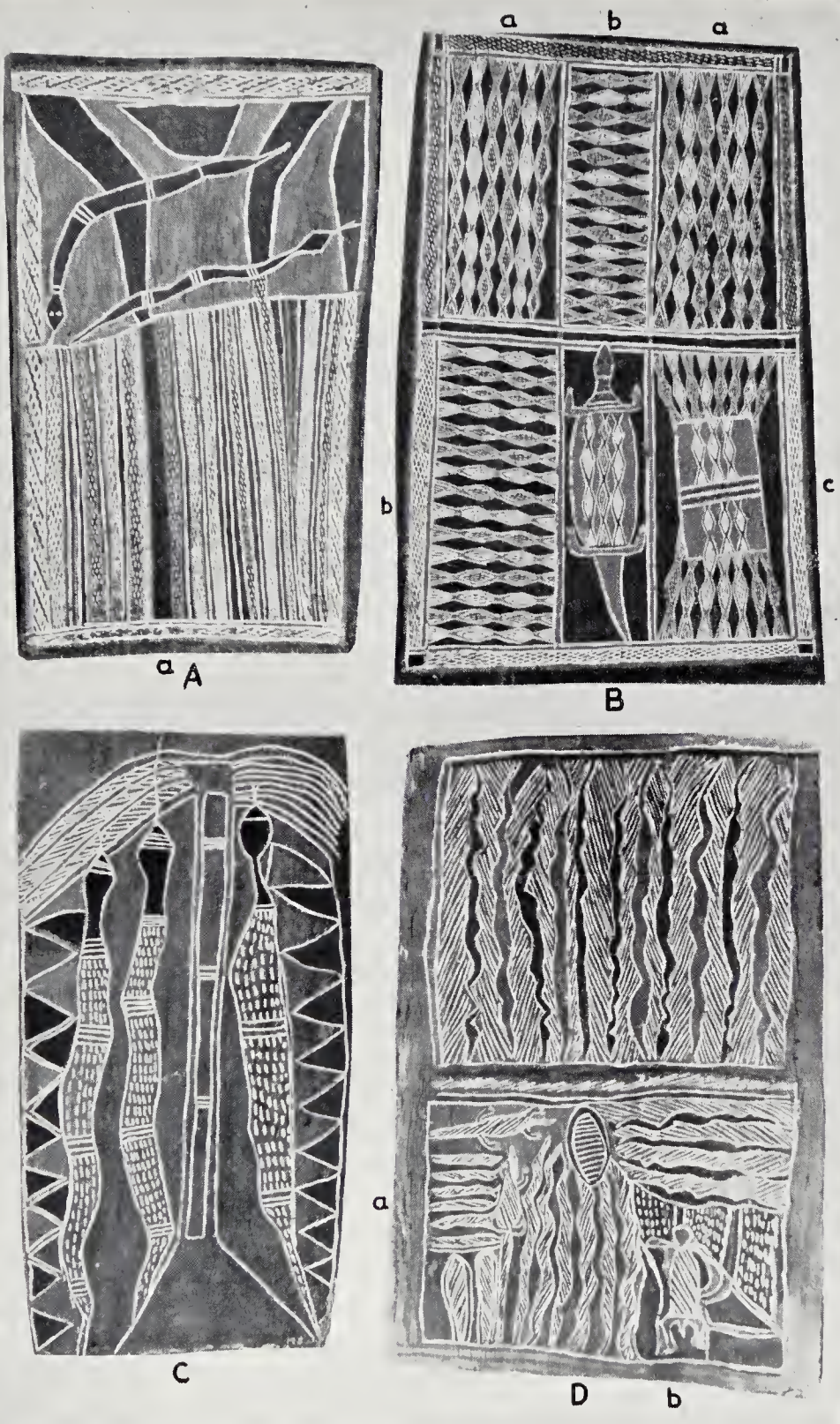


PLATE 117. Bark paintings, Yirkalla
 A, C The snakes, wununga B The crocodile, barou
 D The snakes, Tjutjulili Swamps

journeyed northward until they reached the Kariatpa swamps²⁸ at Caledon Bay. These were so full of fish that the reptiles decided to make it their permanent camp. Being cold and uncomfortable the crocodiles, with the aid of the blanket lizard, made a fire and were just sitting down to warm themselves, when a little bird, *djiriku*, came along and asked if he could join them. But he had no sooner stretched out to get warm than the fire exploded, scattering embers everywhere. This gave the creatures a great fright; the *barou* dived into the water and even today, as crocodiles, seldom come to land; *baltjira* changed himself into a lizard and ran up the trunk of a tree; and the little bird, *djiriku*, was burnt so badly that his feathers are now a reddish-brown colour.²⁹ The fire went underground but the smoke, according to the aborigines, still rises from a hole in the ground near the Kariatpa swamps.³⁰

One engraved pipe and a bark painting deal with the myth of the crocodile, *barou*. The pipe is described elsewhere.³¹

Plate 117B illustrates the crocodile and its nest at the Kariatpa swamps of Caledon Bay. The vertical lines of lozenge shapes, *a, a*,³² are leaves of the spike rush, and the horizontal lines, *b, b*, the places where the crocodile pushed the grass aside as it walked through the swamp. On the lower right, at *c*, is the crocodile's nest covered with grass. The lozenges within the nest are eggs and those at each end the grass which the crocodile pulled over the nest to hide its eggs.

The Dua Snakes of the Tjutjulili Swamps of Trial Bay

At the beginning of time, all the dangerous snakes belonging to the *dua* moiety lived in a cave situated on an open plain called Tjutjulili, near Trial Bay. They had as their leader a female snake, *dunbania*, who is now the tiger snake.

On the seashore near by there was a tribe of peaceful fish people who gained their living from the sea. One day, before they went to an adjacent mangrove creek to fish, they put some crabs to cook on the fire. When later they returned to camp, tired and hungry, they found that the *guladjuru*, called the 'dogs' of the snakes, had taken the food from the fire and eaten it. The fishers were so annoyed that they tracked the 'dogs' and killed them. When the snakes heard of this, they were most indignant and, arming themselves with spears, set out, with the tiger snake woman at their head, to punish the fish people. They, being

28. Map, Fig. 57.

29. Mountford (1948), p. 26, records a Pitjendadjara myth which states that the present markings of many of the small desert birds and reptiles are the result of burns received in a bush-fire.

30. See myth of the bandicoot and fire. There is also an Aranda myth of Central Australia which states that smoke issues from the ground at a place west of Alice Springs where there had been an extensive bush-fire during creation times. Similarly, in the northern Flinders Ranges of South Australia the myths relate how, after the snake *akaru* rose from the summit of Mt Fitten, the mountain has given out smoke ever since. As there are no active volcanoes in Australia, it may be that these myths are a tribal memory of seismic activity with which the aborigines were associated in the long distant past. Mountford (1937, 1942), field notes.

31. Engraved pipe, Fig. 59C.

32. This is a *gumaitj mata* design, Fig. 64N.

unaware of the danger that threatened them, were easily surrounded and killed. Later, however, the fish people came to life again and changed themselves into the *dua* fish that now live in the sea, the barramundi, the parrot fish, the rock cod and many others. At the same time, the home of the *dua* snakes was transformed into the Tjutjulili swamps, where many of the snakes still live and which others visit periodically to renew their venom by drinking its waters.³³

Two bark paintings deal with the snakes at the Tjutjulili swamps.

In the upper panel of Pl. 117D³⁴ are the *dua* snakes of Tjutjulili. On the upper right of the lower panel the same snakes, *dunbania*, the tiger snake, *balara*, the grey snake, *witi*, the black snake, *jangu*, the mangrove snake, *napili*, *noimerlu*, *garnunga*, *malara-korup* and *lutia*. On the left at *a* are the goannas, the *guladjuru*, the 'dogs' of the serpents. In the lower right at *b* is *Oijal*,³⁵ the boomerang-man, with his honey baskets on one arm and a boomerang in his left hand. The panels of short lines above represent the rain created by *Oijal*. His association with the *dua* snakes is not known.

On Pl. 118F, *dunbania* the tiger snake and *uwaroko* (unidentified), accompanied by the blue-tongued lizard, *bungalong*, are travelling to the Tjutjulili swamps so that they can drink its water and thus strengthen their venom before they bite the aborigines.

The upper cross-hatched chevron design is the Tjutjulili swamps. The three short snakes are the *dunbania* and the seven longer ones the *uwaroko*. The blue-tongued lizard occupies the central position.

The Jiritja Snake, Borodji, at the Koolatong River

In *bumun* (creation) times the snake, *borodji*, accompanied by his wife, left the Rose River country³⁶ and travelled northward until he reached Naiori, near the present-day Koolatong River. Until *borodji's* arrival there were no natural features at Naiori. *Borodji*, however, made rain which filled all the swamps, lagoons and fresh-water streams emptying into the Naiori swamps. After that the mythical snake created a number of the groups of men and women who now live in the vicinity of Blue Mud Bay, the *mangilili*, the *wonguri*, the *gumaitj* and the *gubabringu*. To each of these groups³⁷ he gave a special design which they must use in the ceremonies.

The central transverse panel, *a*, of Pl. 118E is a bamboo swamp at Naiori and the panels *d, d, d, d*, extensive lagoons at Naiori. A fresh-water stream flows along the lower central vertical cross-hatched panel *c*, to the bamboo swamp at *a*, and another along the upper cross-hatched vertical panel *b*, entering swamp *a*. These swamps and streams were all created by the snake, *borodji*.

33. Myths, p. 369.

34. Interpretation by F. M. Setzler.

35. Myth of *Oijal*, p. 292, and bark painting, Pl. 92D.

36. Map, Fig. I.

37. This is a parallel myth to that of *Banaitja* and *Laitjun*, p. 279, explaining the origin of some of the *jiritja* groups of Blue Mud Bay and their specific designs.

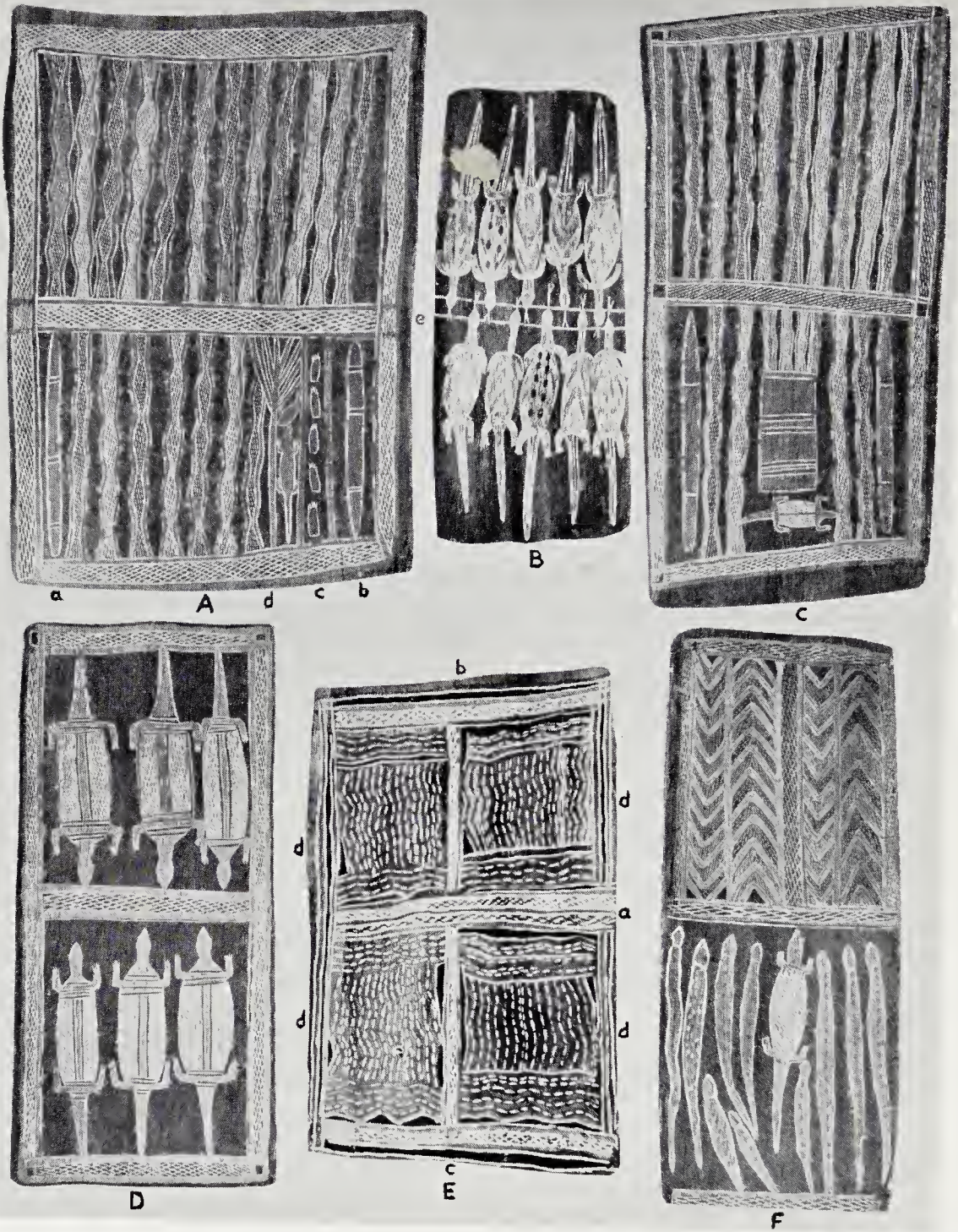


PLATE 118. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla
 A, B, C, D The goanna, bije E The swamp, Naiori
 F The snakes, Tjutjulili Swamps

The Fresh-water Goanna, Bije, and Yellow Ochre

At Gurunga, Caledon Bay, the mythical fresh-water goannas, *bije*, when digging out their nesting burrows, discovered both black and yellow ochres. During creation times a *jiritja* mythical man, *Wirili*, also excavated the ochres with a digging stick. When the men of the *jiritja* moiety go to Gurunga to collect these ochres they must approach the totemic place by crawling along the ground and, while digging out the ochre, use only a special ceremonial stick, called *kainina*.

On Pl. 118A the vertical lines of lozenge-like designs³⁸ symbolize the yellow ochre at Gurunga. At *a*, and *b*, in the lower panel, are two digging sticks, *kainina*, which in mythical times were used only by the man *Wirili* and today only by the men of the *jiritja* moiety when digging for ochre. *Wirili's* tracks are shown at *c*, on the lower right. In the next panel, *d*, is a large tree, *gainjo*, in whose branches a night-bird, *karawak*,³⁹ is eating the fruit of the tree. Beside the trunk of the tree is the fresh-water goanna, *bije*, which once dug for ochre in the same place as the man, *Wirili*. The central cross-hatched band, *e*, is a hole in the cliff where *Wirili* was unsuccessful in his search for ochre.

Plate 118C shows the goanna, *bije*, at the bottom of the painting. Above and on either side of the reptile the designs represent the black and yellow ochres. The two ceremonial digging sticks are shown on the extreme right and extreme left of the lower panel.

Plate 118D pictures six mythical fresh-water goannas, *bije*, which lived at Gurunga, Caledon Bay.

Plate 118B is a bark painting from Milingimbi which depicts ten fresh-water goannas, *bije*, at Gurunga. This painting is included to show the stability of this totemic design over a wide area.

*The Fresh-water Tortoise, Mimala, at Kulwitji Lagoon,
Koolatong River*

The *jiritja* mythical fresh-water tortoise, *mimala*, has a number of totemic places in north-eastern Arnhem Land. One myth, engraved on a smoking pipe, Fig. 59D, deals with *mimala* at Calabaibai, south of Milingimbi. Others deal with a painted coffin, Pl. 105B (*mimala* at Milingimbi); a painted bull-roarer, Pl. 144A, B (*mimala* at Diawirinja, west of Arnhem Bay); a Milingimbi bark painting, Pl. 126A (*mimala* at Jaraga, a forest area near Arnhem Bay), and the subject of this painting from the Kulwitji lagoon on the Koolatong River. The most complete myth is that associated with the engraved pipe, p. 391.

This painting, Pl. 119A, deals with the totemic lagoon of *mimala* at Kulwitji. In panel *a* is the fresh-water tortoise, the meandering lines at its tail being the wake it creates when swimming. The diamonds and dots occupying the rest of the panel are the bubbles rising to the surface of the water as the tortoise feeds

38. This is one of the designs of the *gumaitj mata*, Fig. 64M.

39. Myth of *karawak*, the night-bird, and the opossum, p. 362.

along the bottom of the lagoon. Panel *b* deals with the time when the wet-season floods submerged a hive of wild bees near the totemic place of the tortoise. Many of the bees were drowned and both they and the honey floated on the surface of the water. The dots represent the drowned bees, and the diamonds the honey from the submerged hive. The patterns on panels *c* and *d* are the leaves of the spike-rush, *norik* or *rakia*.

The parallel white lines on *e* symbolize the fish trap constructed by *Laitjun*,⁴⁰ a type of trap still employed to capture a fresh-water fish called *paipinja*.

(5) FISH

The Shark, Mana, at Blue Mud Bay

When the *dua* shark, *Mana* (tiger shark, *Galeocerdo* sp.) was a man he tried to establish a camp at Arnhem Bay, but was speared by *Borolo-borolo*⁴¹ because the latter did not want any strangers near him. *Mana* ran across country to Blue Mud Bay, transformed himself into a tiger shark and tried to live in a fresh-water swamp. But it was far too shallow for his comfort, so he travelled to the sea coast, where he met an old man tiger shark with whom he has lived ever since.

Mana's body is now a large white-barked eucalyptus tree in the swamp where he first tried to live. *Mana* the shark continues to live in the sea. This apparent contradiction is not unusual, p. 33. A carved figure, Pl. 132A, illustrates this myth.

Plate 119B pictures the totemic swamp of *Mana*, near Blue Mud Bay.* At *a* is the tiger shark, *Mana*, and at *b* his companion. The wavy lines at their tails symbolize the wake.⁴² In the upper and lower panels, the squares⁴³ on either side of the sharks indicate the fallen leaves of an unidentified palm tree floating on the surface of the water.⁴⁴ At certain times of the year the aborigines make a fish trap by blocking the entrance of a watercourse leading into the swamp with these leaves, and driving the fish into it.

Turtles and Fish

Plate 119C depicts the ocean.⁴⁵ The upper and lower left-hand panels *a* and *b* show two *dua* green turtles, *gariwa*, in the rough water indicated by the groups of curving lines. On the lower right at *c* are two seagulls, *nurula*, in flight, two dolphins, *injapana*, and two conch-shells. The cross-hatched object on the left of this panel is a trepang. Above this group at *d* is an attempt to depict a water-spout, *bojunga*. These are not uncommon in the Gulf of Carpentaria during the monsoon season. On the upper right at *e* are two fish, and two turtles eating sea-urchins. The groups of curving lines indicate rough water.

40. Engraved pipe, Fig. 60D.

41. See bark painting of *Borolo-borolo*, Pl. 110A.

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XVIII.

42. This symbol is often used in the art of north-eastern Arnhem Land, e.g. Pl. 115C.

43. These symbols are used on carved figure of the shark, *mana*, Pl. 132A, B, C.

44. The *mala* design of the *dua djapu*, language group, of Blue Mud Bay, Fig. 64A.

45. Interpretation by F. D. McCarthy.

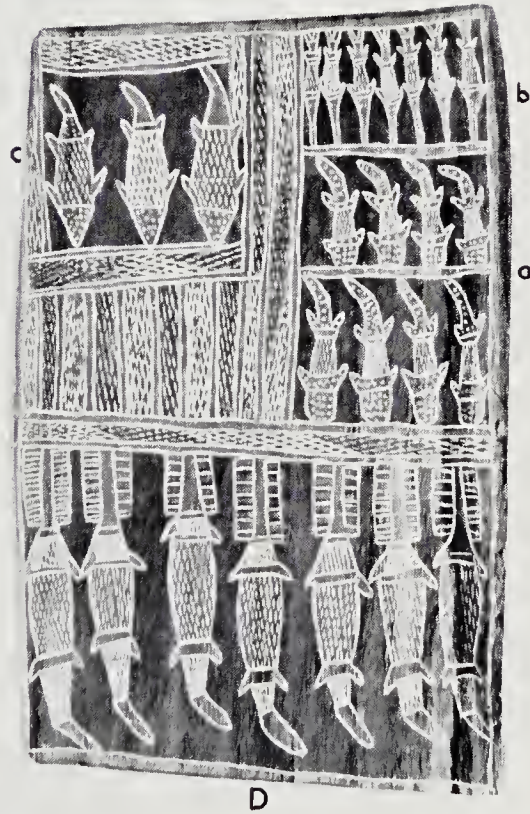
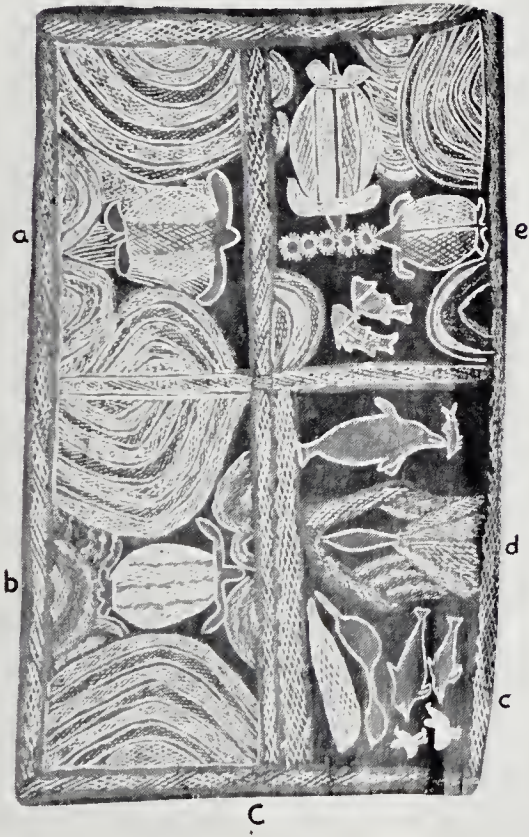
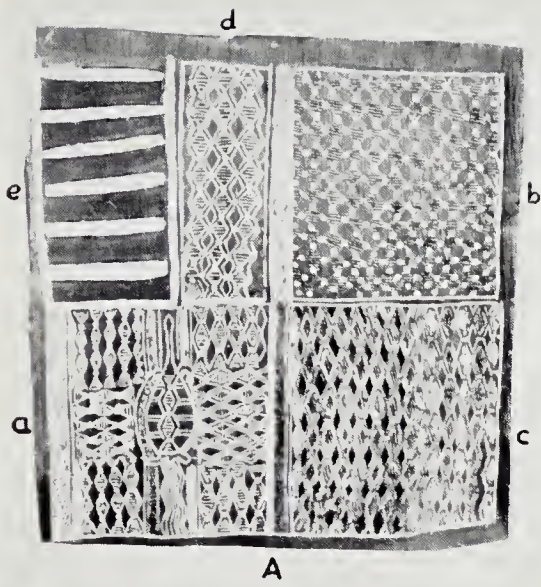


PLATE 119. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

- A The fresh-water tortoise, mimala B The shark, mana C Turtles and fish
 D Salt-water fish

Salt-water Fish

Plate 119D depicts a number of salt-water fish.⁴⁶ On the bottom is a row of seven saw-fish, *baraka* (*Pristis* sp.). On the right-hand side at *a* are two rows of four sharks, *djerun-berunai*; above them at *b*, seven gar-fish, *ma-ana* (*Tylosurus* sp.); and opposite, at *c*, three shovel-nosed rays, *bandrung* (*Rhynchobatus* sp.). The cross-hatched areas represent the sea.

(6) INSECTS

The Stingless Honey Bee, Koko

During creation times there were two *dua* groups of the wild bees, *koko* (*Trigona carbonaria aughophorie*), the male ancestor being *jarapang* and the female, *lirawar*. These male and female bee ancestors lived in a hollow tree near the edge of a large swamp at Macuti on the Koolatong River.⁴⁷

Plate 120C represents two hives, the male wild honey, *jarapang*, on the right and the female honey, *lirawar*, on the left. The significance of the divisions are the same in both hives. The dome at the top represents the bee bread (young bees and pupae); *f*, more bee bread; while panels *b* and *d* are honey and *a*, *c* and *e* beeswax. All these parts of the hive are edible. The aborigines distinguish clearly between the flavour of *jarapang* and *lirawar* honey.

Plate 120A is a representation of a group of hives of the honey bee. The black transverse lines *a*, *a*, picture the limbs of the tree in which the hive is built. The dots in the panel *b* are the bees, the cross-hatched central section, *c*, the honey and the honey-comb. Hard wax, much sought after for mounting spears and other implements, is indicated by the dotted transverse band *d*; the dotted panel *e* pictures the rubbish, dead bees and excreta from the hive. Tree roots are indicated by the lower cross-hatched band, *f*. Both the male hive, *jarapang*, and the female hive, *lirawar*, are in this group. Reading from the right, one, two and five are *jarapang*, three and four *lirawar* hives.

(7) TOPOGRAPHY

The Sea and the Sky

This bark painting depicts a wet-season seascape. It makes an interesting comparison with a painting of a similar subject by a European artist. Although the aboriginal pictured the sky in the same manner as a white man, that is, in side elevation, he has painted the sea in plan, so that he can show the creatures on the sea-floor.⁴⁸

In the upper panel of Pl. 120B are three thunderstorms drifting across the sky. The black bases of the two on the right indicate that they have not yet discharged their rain. The cross-hatching on the upper edge, however, indicates rain. On the left is a thunderstorm which has almost expended itself, although the rain is still falling. The clear space between the storms is the blue sky. The

46. Interpretation by F. M. Setzler.

47. Map, Fig. 57.

48. This characteristic is not unusual in the art of the more advanced people, e.g. Pl. 26C.

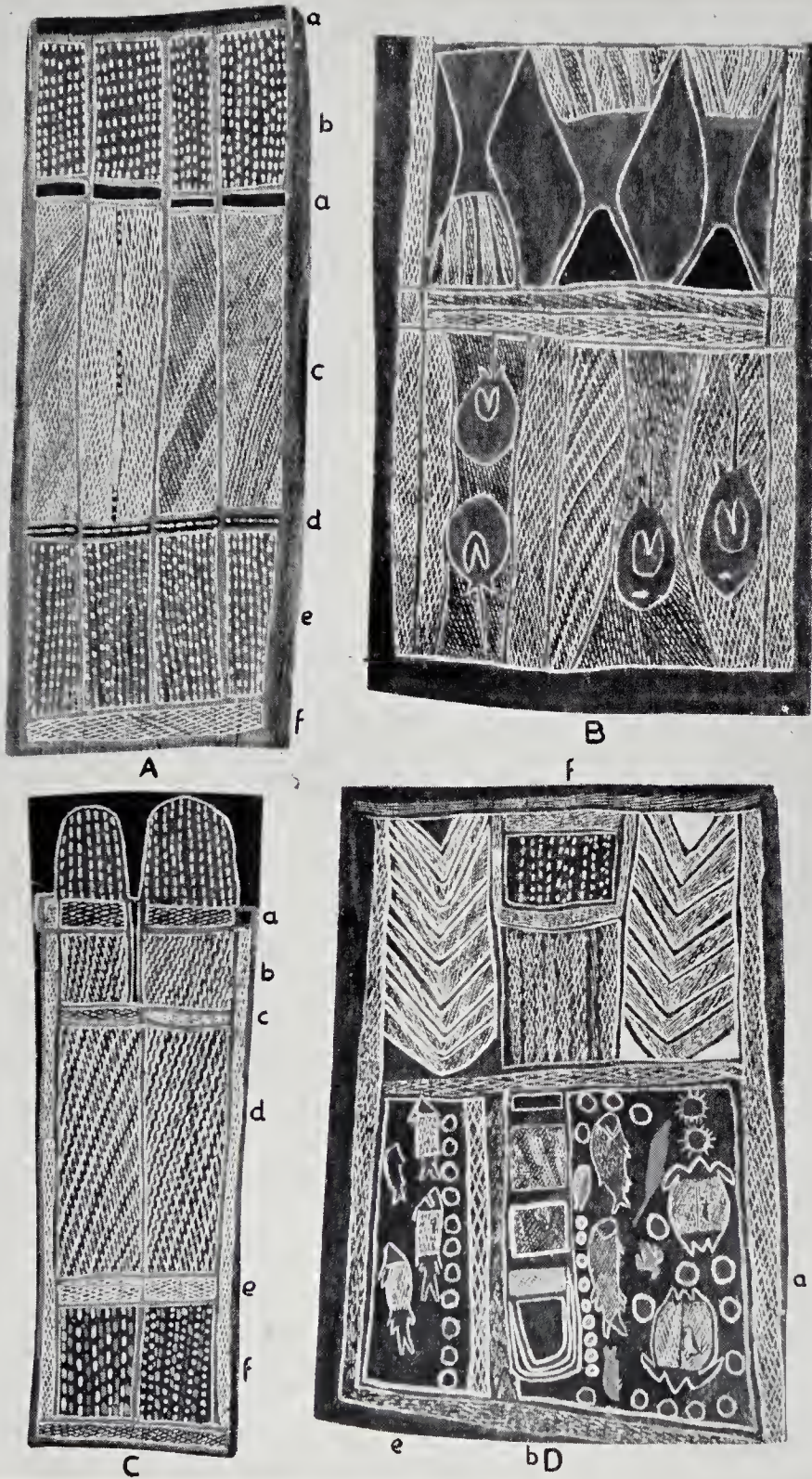


PLATE 120. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

A, C Honey-bees, Koolatong River B The sea and the sky
 D Topography, Tual Bay

lower section is the open sea, as viewed from above. The dark cross-hatched areas indicate the sandy sea bottom, and the light-coloured areas the sea. The creatures are stingrays, the crescent-shaped marks on their bodies being masses of fat which the aborigines value as food.*

Trial Bay

Plate 120D pictures the surroundings at a *dua* totemic spot near Trial Bay. At *a* on the lower right-hand panel are two green turtles, *gariwa*, and the sea-urchins (circles), on which they feed. The top turtle has a black seagull resting on its back and the one below, a white bird.⁴⁹ The next panel, *b*, shows rocks, Marin, which project above the water at Trial Bay. The vertical cross-hatched band to the left represents the waves beating against the rocks, and the black panel, *f*, another totemic rock, Nangi, the panels of chevron designs on either side of *f* symbolizing the rays of the sun. In the extreme left panel *e* are bone fish, *warawanda*, and a row of sea-urchins.

The Milungwira Swamps and the Men, Laitjun and Bourngauwili

The Milungwira swamp, situated north of Blue Mud Bay at the mouth of the River Girituwi, is an important totemic place in the *jiritja* mythology. It is associated with the mythical man *Laitjun*,⁵⁰ another man, *Bourngauwili*, a dingo, *dulairuju*, a water-snake, *gamarana*, and a rat, *nik-nik*.⁵¹

Four bark paintings are associated with Milungwira and its totemic inhabitants.

Plate 121B pictures the Milungwira swamp and the man, *Bourngauwili*, who with his dog, *dulairuju*, had set out to hunt the rat, *nik-nik*, and yellow water-snake, *gamarana*. In the lower left panel *a* is the dog, *dulairuju*, and in the upper right panel *c* the rat, *nik-nik*, swimming through a swamp covered with the leaves of water-lilies, *jouku*. The meandering lines behind *nik-nik* indicate where it has pushed the lily leaves aside. The upper left and lower right-hand panels *b* and *d* illustrate those parts of the swamp which are covered with water-lily leaves. The bulbs of the lilies are an important aboriginal food. The eight small circles, *e*, *e*, on the outer edge of the design are subsidiary swamps, Mailuju, where small bamboos, used by the aborigines for spear shafts, grow in abundance. The circle in the centre of the painting is the dry-season home of the yellow water-snake, *gamarana*, which no aboriginal will go near. During the wet season these snakes leave their waterhole, go into the sky and create the rain, the thunderstorms and the lightning.⁵² The four birds are herons, *balir*; the tracks on the right-hand

* Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XXII.

49. It is not an unusual sight in the Gulf of Carpentaria to see a bird resting on the back of a basking turtle. The resting bird indicates to the aborigines that the turtle is on the surface.

50. See myth of *Banaitja* and *Laitjun*, p. 279.

51. *Nik-nik* was the 'dog' of the woman, *Malwulwi*. See carved figure, Pl. 133D, and myth, p. 431.

52. This appears to be a parallel myth to that of the *bilumbira* of Cape Arnhem, p. 351.

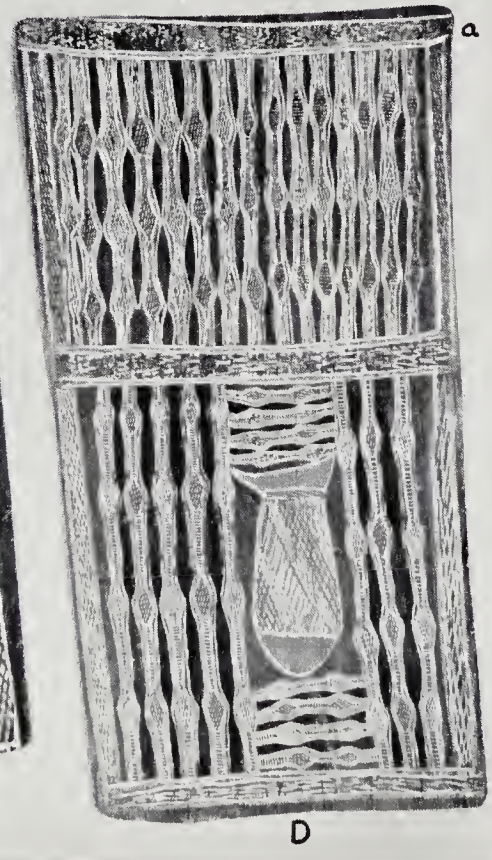
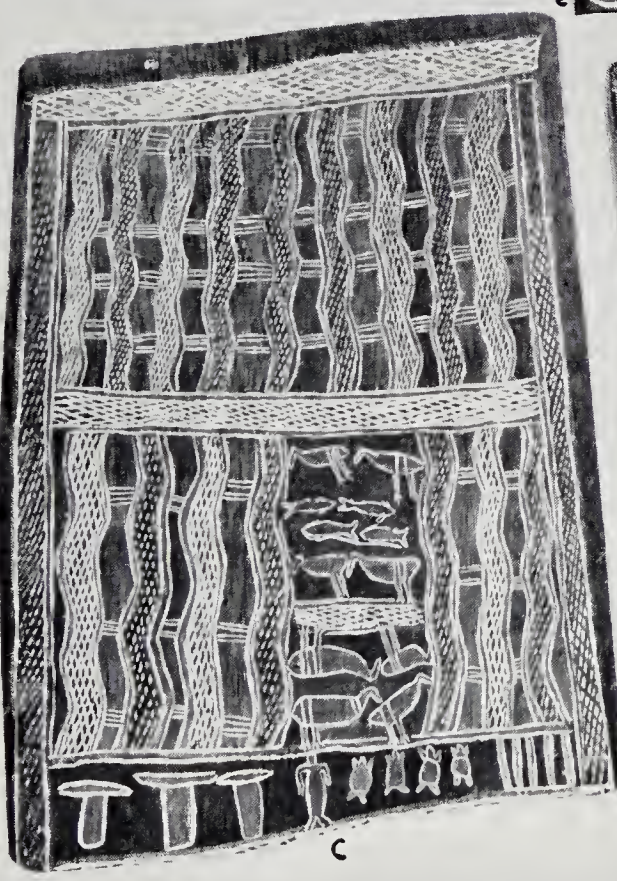
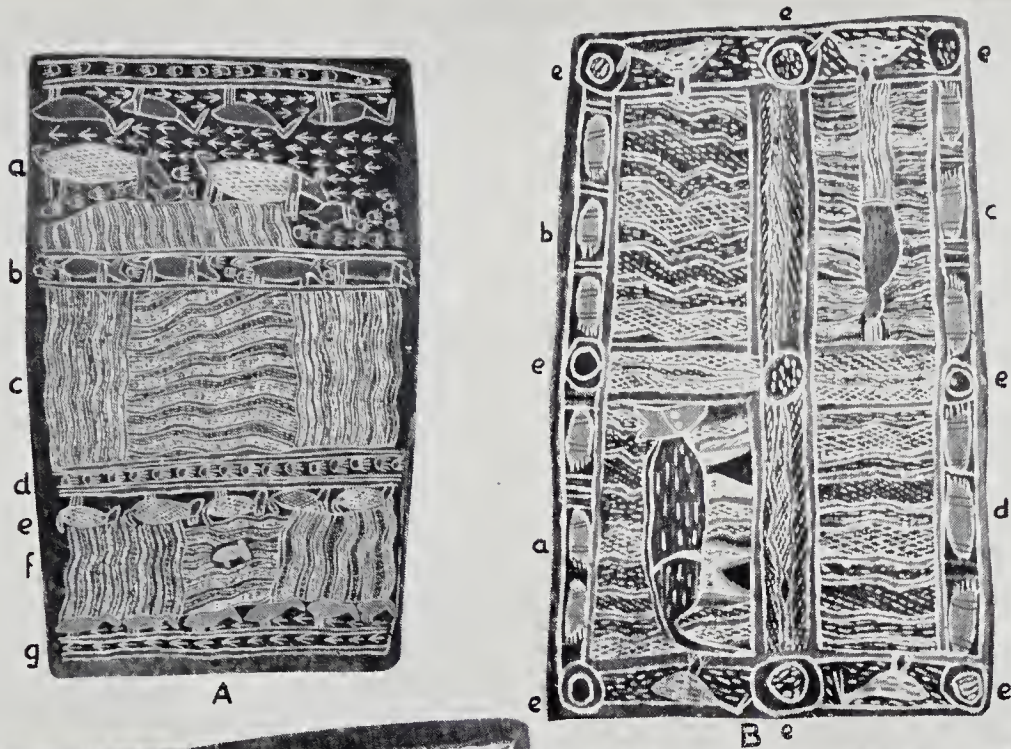


PLATE 121. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

A, B The dog, dulairuju, and the rat, nik-nik C, D The swamp, Milungwira

edge, those made by the mythical man as he walked to Milungwira, and those on the left, where he returned.

Plate 121A refers to the dog, *dulairuju*, and his pursuit of the rat, *nik-nik*, in the Milungwira swamp. On the top edge of the painting is a line of dog tracks. Below them are four white herons surrounded by their footprints. At *a* is a male and female dog, each holding a rat, *nik-nik*, in its mouth; the male dog, *dulairuju*, is on the left. Below is a transverse panel, *b*, of dingoes and their tracks. The central panel, *c*, is swamp grass, the home of *nik-nik*. At *d* is a panel of dingo tracks, and at *e* another panel of five dingoes. In the middle of panel *f* the rat, *nik-nik*, is hiding from the dog in the middle of a thicket of swamp grass; *g* is a line of five white herons, *balir*, and their tracks.

On Pl. 121C the bulk of the painting consists of sinuous bands (running water), joined by straight lines (ripples on the surface of the water). The rectangle in the middle of the lower panel is the swamp, Milungwira. In its upper section four cormorants (*Phalacrocorax* sp.) are chasing four fish, called *bilda*. In the panel below are more cormorants. The transverse bands indicate subsidiary swamps at Milungwira. Reading from the left, the figures on the bottom panel are: three clouds, *balda*, the mythical man, *Laitjun*, four frogs, and five logs lying in the water of the swamp.⁵³

Plate 121D is another bark painting associated with the topography of Milungwira. The top cross-hatched band, *a*, is the bed of the river, Girituwi, in which there are many waterfalls and rapids. The fish-shaped design in the lower panel is a totemic rock, called Tikorora, whose bottom, according to the myth, is in the mud and whose top is in the clouds. The four short transverse lines of lozenge-shaped designs above and below Tikorora indicate whirlpools which form at its base during heavy rains.

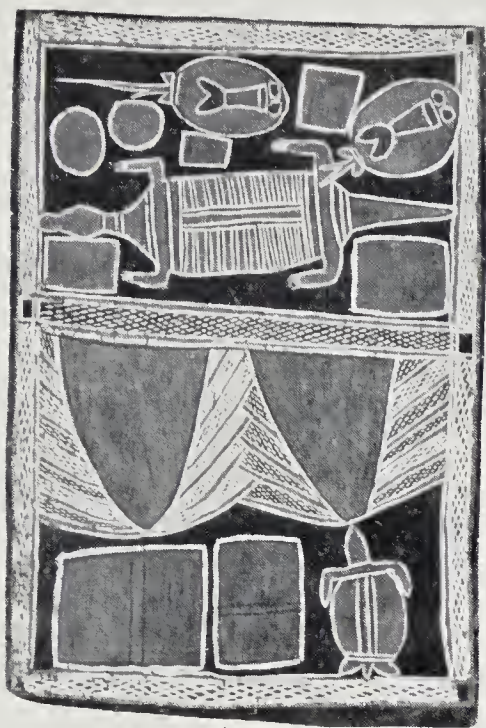
The Island, Garabi

Garabi is a string of small islands outside Caledon Bay, all belonging to the *jiritja* moiety. In creation times, when the creatures were men, the islands were the home of the hump-backed whale, *morokundja*, the stingray, *barindjinou*, the queen fish, *tinimbu*, the crocodile, *barou*, and the hawksbill turtle, *kouwaradji*. Later these mythical beings transformed themselves into creatures which still frequent Garabi and their bodies into natural features in the adjacent country. The whales are two rugged islands, part of the Garabi chain. They also went into the sky and became a section of the Milky Way,⁵⁴ near the constellation of Orion.

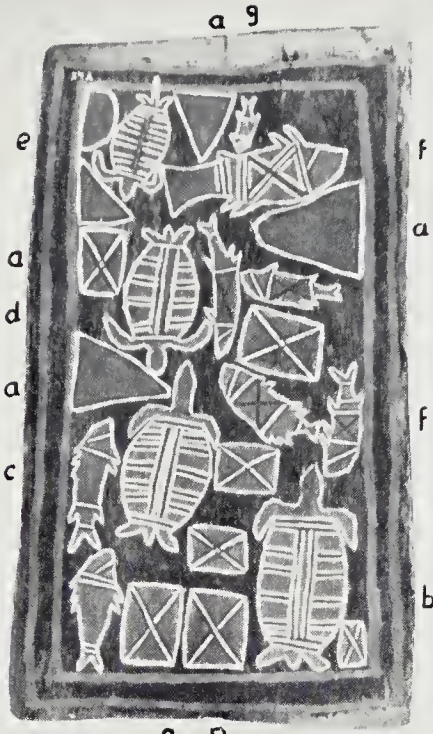
During those early times the crocodile man, *Barou*, murdered one of the stingray people. When the head man of the stingrays heard of the murder, he met and fought the crocodile, finally wounding him with the spear he now carries in his tail. This fight made everything square and established the first *makaraka*,

53. Interpretation by F. D. McCarthy.

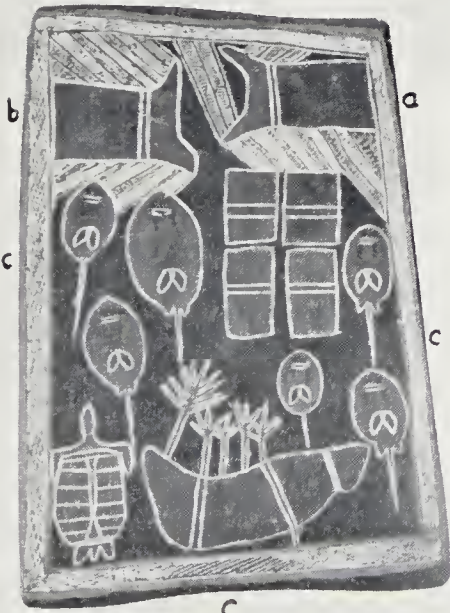
54. See astronomical myth of Orion and the Pleiades, p. 498.



A



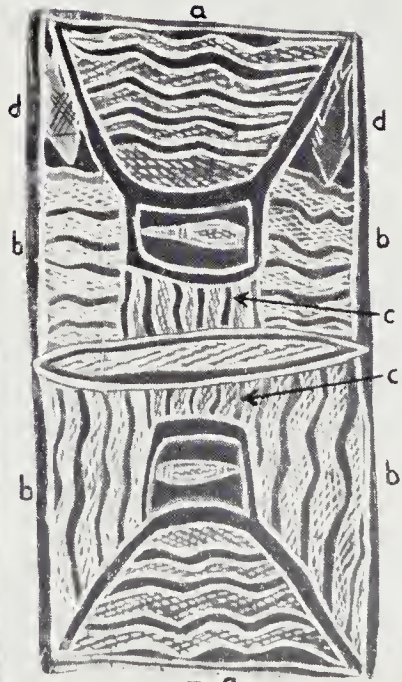
B



C



D



E

PLATE 122. Bark paintings, Yirkalla
The Garabi Islands

or ceremonial peacemaking fight, a custom which has been carried on by the aborigines ever since.⁵⁵

The aborigines made five bark paintings of Garabi and its creatures.

Plate 122A pictures Wakwala, one of the islands of the Garabi group. The two rectangles in the lower panel are the totemic places of the hawksbill turtle and the crocodile. The cone-like figures above are thunder-clouds, with rain falling from them. A hawksbill turtle is on the lower right. In the upper panel is the crocodile and several stingrays. Around them are squares and circles which indicate where the stingrays once buried themselves in the sand.⁵⁶ These are now rocks on the sea coast. On the upper right the stingray is attacking the crocodile with his spear to avenge the death of a relative.

Plate 122B illustrates the Garabi Islands and the sea-creatures which live in the surrounding waters.⁵⁷ The islands and the large rocks of the Garabi Islands are indicated by *a, a, a*, and similar designs. There are four hawksbill turtles at *b, c, d* and *e*, rock cod at *f, f*, and a small fish, *joubauk*, at *g*. On the left-hand side of the turtle at *c* are two queen fish.

Plate 122C is another representation of Garabi. At the bottom of the painting is one of the islands of the Garabi group with five unidentified palm trees growing from it. The aborigines eat the young shoots of these trees, which they call *bulmarik*. At *a* and *b*, on the top edge of the painting, are two thunder-clouds with rain falling from them (cross-hatched panels). A hawksbill turtle (lower left) lays its eggs in the sandy beaches of the island and gathers its food from among the coral rocks (four rectangles right of centre). The rain falling from the clouds, at *a, b*, has stimulated the six stingrays, *c, c*, to go to the mangrove swamps and produce their young.⁵⁸

The upper panel of Pl. 122D pictures two of the hump-backed whales. Later they went into the sky and their bodies became islands at Garabi. In the lower panel is the stingray spearing the crocodile. The cross-hatched panels on either side of the stingray, and the black rectangles below the crocodile, are holes made by the stingray when, during mythical times, it buried itself in the sand. Those holes have since been transformed into boulders projecting from the sea.

Plate 122E is a descriptive painting of a place at Garabi where swollen streams muddy with the wet-season rains pour into the ocean and mix with the clear sea-water. The semi-circles, *a, a*, represent the muddy flood-waters diffusing into the sea; the meandering lines, *c, c*, at the bottom of squares depict a mixture of muddy and clear waters, and those at *b, b, b, b*, the uncontaminated sea-water. In squares at the bases of semicircles *a, a*, are mangrove seeds which have taken root in the mud, and at *c, c*, two bone fish, *jungulu*. The long ellipse symbolizes a mangrove tree, *bandumu*, growing in the mouth of the stream.

55. Warner (1937), p. 174, gives a detailed description of the *makaraka*.

56. When stingrays are alarmed they bury themselves in the sand to escape notice.

57. Interpretation by F. D. McCarthy.

58. See myth of stingrays on painted paddle, Pl. 109E, F, p. 340.

THE ART OF YIRRKALLA

Cato River

Plate I23A pictures the surroundings on the Cato River.⁵⁹ The dark triangle in the lower part of the painting is a swamp into which flows the Cato River, the upper meandering cross-hatched band. In the upper end of the waterhole are two tortoises, *maralait*, copulating, and below, a fish, *kailaki*. On the lower right is a mythical snake; on each side of his head, and to the right of his tail, are palm trees, *guiveti* (probably *Livistona humilis*). The chevrou pattern to the left of his tail symbolizes the water running from the body of the serpent⁶⁰ as it emerges from the waterhole. Other palm trees are shown at *b, b, b*, while the diagonal lines on *c, c*, are the tributaries pouring their water into the Cato River. Water-goannas are depicted at *d, d, d*, the dots surrounding them being the bubbles rising to the surface as they gather their food from the bottom. The dots on the trunks of the palms symbolize bees searching the palm tree flowers for honey.

A Sea Scene

Plate I23B deals with a number of sea-creatures on the shore.⁶¹ In the top right-hand panel, *a*, the artist has drawn four *dua* green turtles, many sea-urchins, the food of the turtles, two sea-snakes, and in the top left, *c*, three young turtles and more sea-urchins. Immediately below them, at *d*, are three more turtles, called *buraka*. There was no explanation for the upturned canoe within the rectangle *e*. On the opposite side three mullet, *warawara*, and three logs of wood occupy panel *b*.

Fresh-water Swamps near Yirrkalla

Plate I23C is the picture of an unidentified fresh-water swamp near Yirrkalla. Panel *a* depicts water-lily bulbs,⁶² with three of them sprouting. The fresh-water fish occupy the centre of panel *b*. The anvil-like projections on each side of the fish are cumulus clouds. In the narrow transverse panel, *c*, a woman is collecting lily roots. At her feet is a dog, and to the right of her head, three fresh-water fish, their native names being *paipinga*, *magpuna* and *bilda* respectively. Panel *d* is a swamp and on its upper edge two cormorants, *gormala*, are searching for fish. The muddy areas of the swamp are cross-hatched, and the clear water is represented by parallel lines. In *e* is a stand of *rulkau* trees, which grow along the banks of fresh-water streams. The dotted areas between the five right-hand trees indicate fallen fruit. High up on the outer branch of the left-hand tree is a Torres Strait pigeon, *marikul* (*Myristicivora spilorrhoea*). The rectangle on the extreme left depicts the nest of the pigeon, with a young bird in the upper right-hand corner. The rectangle with the diagonal lines is a spider web.

59. Interpretation by F. M. Setzler.

60. This resembles the *mata* design of the *ngeimil* language group, Fig. 63E.

61. Interpretation by F. M. Setzler.

62. Probably the bulbs of the water-lily (*Nymphaea gigantea*), which provide a plentiful aboriginal food supply for many months of the year.

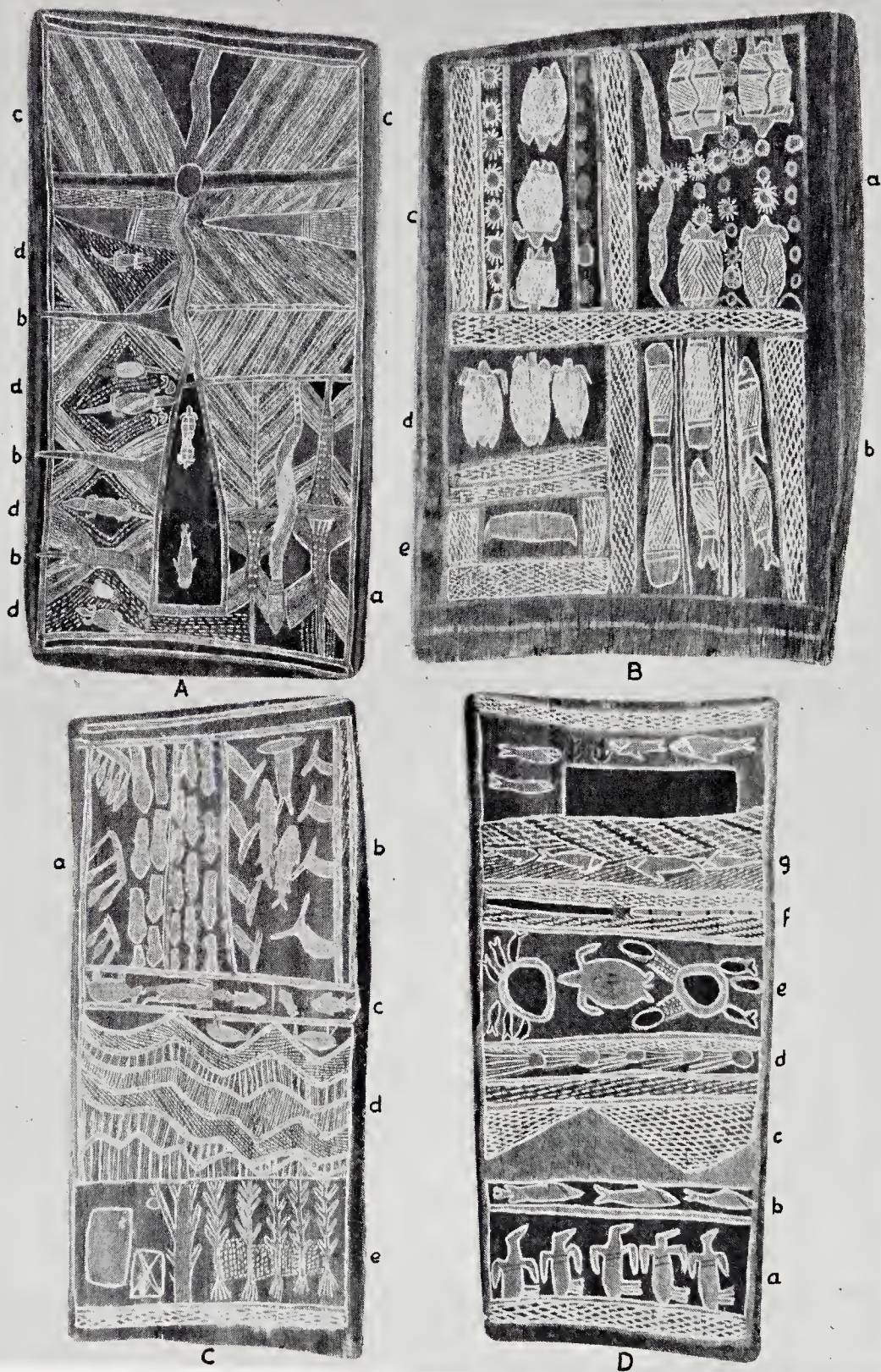


PLATE 123. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

A The Cato River B A sea scene C Swamps, Yirrkalla D A sea beach

A Sea Beach

This painting, Pl. 123D, refers to the sea beach and the *dua* creatures which live on it.⁶³ In the first panel, *a*, are five unidentified sea birds (aboriginal name *waitungu*) and above them, at *b*, is a line of thin, flat fish, called *makini*. The next panel, *c*, shows the water running up on the beach, the plain areas being the sand and the cross-hatched areas the water. Above this, at *d*, is a line of five octopi, *gunderiera*. Occupying the central position in the next panel, *e*, is a green turtle, *gariwa*, and on each side of its hind flippers are two octopi, *mainda*. On the left-hand side of the same panel are six lobsters which live in the pools of the coral reefs (light-coloured circles with black centres), and on the right-hand, three more lobsters and another coral pool. Panel *f* encloses a bamboo, right, and a log of wood, left, both of which have floated up on the tide. At *g* are four *makini* fish swimming in the sea, indicated by cross-hatching. The symbols in the top panel, *h*, were not identified.

Bartalumba Point and the Fish-man, Boriota

A mythical fish-man, *Boriota*, came from the Rose River area to Bartalumba Point, on Groote Eylandt (map, Fig. 4), where he created many watercourses, cliffs and rainstorms.

On Pl. 124A the three dark-coloured triangles in panel *a* are spire-like rocks on the cliffs at Bartalumba Point. The background of this panel symbolizes rain clouds. In panel *b* the central dark rectangle is a watercourse at Bartalumba created by *Boriota* and the panels on either side, falling rain. The dotted panels on the right and left-hand edge of *b* represent stratus clouds. The four dark-coloured panels in panel *c* are crevices in the cliffs at Bartalumba, the dotted background, more rain clouds.

A Mangrove Swamp

Plate 124C depicts a mangrove swamp. At the upper edge, *a*, are five thunderclouds, from which the rain is falling (parallel lines in panel *b*). In the third panel, *c*, are the tracks of the cormorants, *goumala*, in the mud of the mangrove swamp. Six cormorants are catching mullet, *gunbirawi*, in panel *e*, and at *d* four of them are flying to their nests.⁶⁴

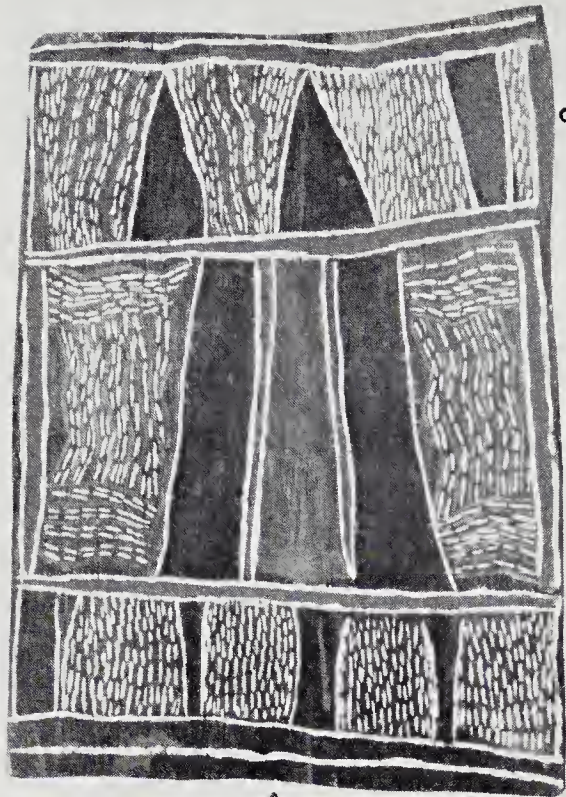
Port Bradshaw

Plate 124B represents a river running into Port Bradshaw. At the left is a woman standing on a rock (the rectangle) in the water. Opposite to her (upside down) is her husband, *Wirili*.⁶⁵ The central design is a crocodile, *barou*, and at the lower right-hand, *a*, is a large bone-fish, *jungala*. At the tail of the crocodile, in the same panel as the bone-fish, and on the left-hand side of the woman, are seven rock cod, *kouper*.

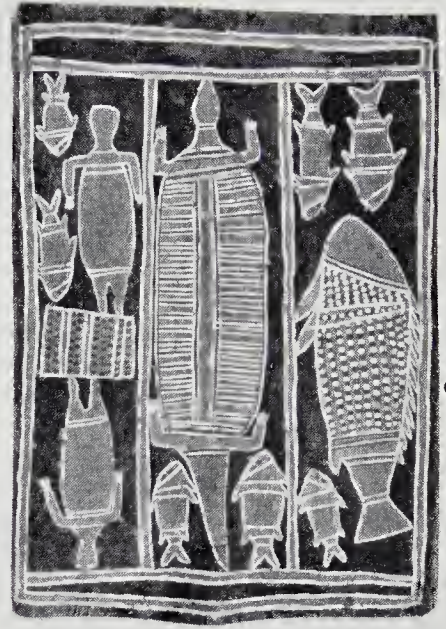
63. Interpretation by F. M. Setzler.

64. Interpretation by F. D. McCarthy.

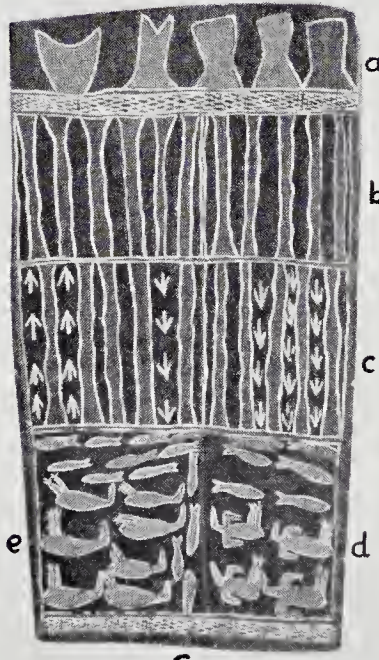
65. *Wirili* was associated with yellow ochre at Gurunga, Pl. 118A, and the bush-fire at the Gainmaui River, Pl. 93B.



A



B



C



D

PLATE 124. Bark paintings, Yirrkalla

A The man, Boriota, at Bartalumba B Port Bradshaw C A mangrove swamp
 D An aboriginal smoking a Malay pipe

(8) THE ART OF MILINGIMBI

The Rev. Arthur F. Ellemor made a small collection of Milingimbi bark paintings for the expedition, together with simple but incomplete interpretations. This collection was valuable because it shows that the art of Milingimbi, on the west of north-eastern Arnhem Land, and that of Yirrkalla on the east, are similar both in design and mythological content.

The Wild Honey, Koko

The honey of the stingless bee is one of the few sweet foods in the aborigines' menu. Many hours are spent searching for this food and a great deal of labour expended climbing the trees and cutting out the hives. Four bark paintings⁶⁶ were collected dealing with the mythical wild-honey ancestors of Milingimbi.

Plate 125C is associated with a mythical wild-honey woman, called *Birikura*, whose camp was on the mainland south of Elcho Island. This site is a totemic place of the wild honey, *koko*. The painting is a conventionalized representation of a hive of wild bees, the projection from the upper edge being the 'nose' or entrance to the hive, and the central disc, the beeswax. The cross-hatched diamond-shaped patterns covering the bulk of the painting represent the honeycomb, the white lines forming the margins of the various cells, the beeswax, and the dotted diamonds the eggs and young bees in the nursery cells.

Plate 125A is another painting of a hive of wild honey. The symbolism is similar to that in C, except that the artist has shown four entrances to the hive.

Plate 125D pictures *koko's* totemic place at Murnarambul, near Arnhem Bay. The three transverse panels, *a, a, a*, and the vertical cross-hatched one, *b*, refer to logs lying on the ground near Murnarambul, in which there are hives of wild bees. Within the design made by these four logs are hives of wild bees. These hives are pictured with the same symbols as those in A and C, the two long triangular projections at the top of the painting being entrances to the hive.

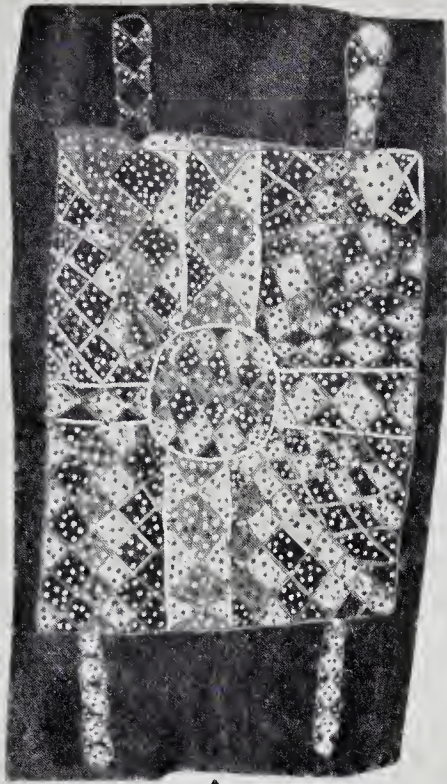
Plate 125B is another painting of a hive of wild bees, using the traditional symbolism to show the wax, honey, eggs and young bees. The long rectangular design in the middle of the bark painting is a hollow tree in which there is a hive of bees, the honey and comb. The hive is again shown at the bottom of the central panel. The entrance or nose of the hive is a long tapering design at the top. The side panels illustrate two more hives.

Mimala, the Fresh-water Tortoise

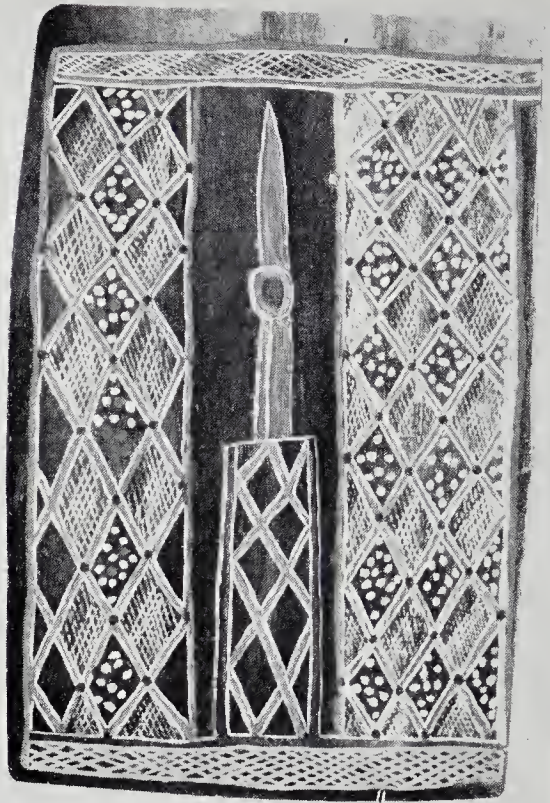
Plate 126A pictures a forest area near Arnhem Bay, called Jaraga, the totem place of the mythical fresh-water tortoise, *mimala*.⁶⁷ Three of these tortoises are shown at the top of the painting, the designs on each carapace representing the water-grass often growing on the backs of these creatures. The three dark-coloured vertical lines, *a, a, a*, are logs and the four panels of diamond-shaped

66. These designs are similar to those of the *dalwongu mata*, Fig. 64J.

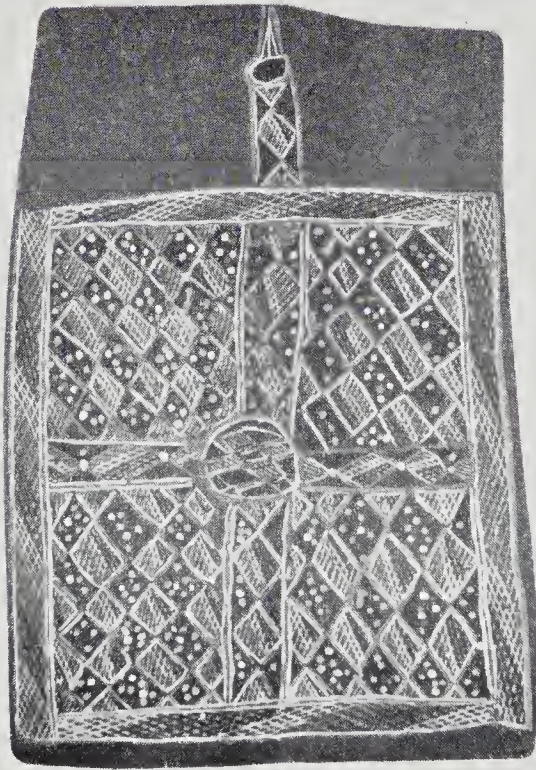
67. *Mimala*, the fresh-water tortoise, is also pictured on an engraved smoking pipe, Fig. 59D; on a painted coffin, Pl. 105B; and on another bark painting, Pl. 119A.



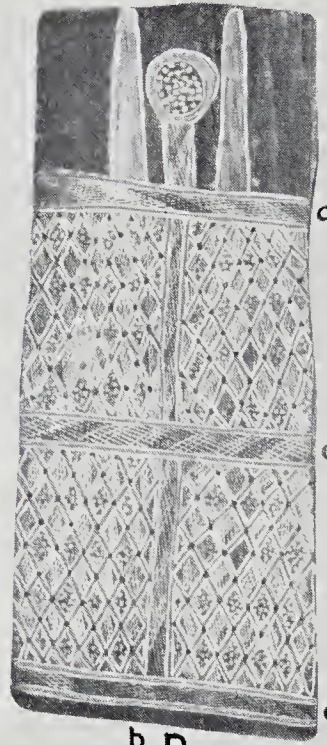
A



B



C



b D

PLATE 125. Bark paintings, Milingimbi
Hives of honey, Milingimbi

patterns, the comb of a hive of wild bees, associated in some undefined way with the tortoises.

Fish and Eggs

Plate 126B refers to the spawn and developing young of an unidentified fish which lives in the swamps south of Milingimbi. The dotted lines symbolize the developing fish, and the sloping lines between, the spawn.

The Kangaroo-man, Gardjambal

Plate 126C belongs to Nulwadjbir, situated on the southern end of Buckingham Bay, the totemic place of the kangaroo-man, *Gardjambal*, who is shown seven times in this painting. The design at the bottom of the right-hand panel is the stone axe of the kangaroo-man; the remaining ovals are his tracks.

The Serpent-men, Jurlungur and Gadjalan

Plate 126D pictures the two serpent-men, *Jurlungur* (upside down) and *Gadjalan*, creators of the country of Mirrimina,⁶⁸ Each mythical man is wearing a tall feather head-dress. To the right of both *Jurlungur* and *Gadjalan* are their spear-throwers, spears and wooden trumpets.

The Two Sisters, Miwal and Wanu-wanu

Plate 127A pictures two mythical women, *Miwal* and *Wanu-wanu*,⁶⁹ in their bark hut at Djimba, a place in a jungle near the Gardji swamp. This swamp is on the mainland south of Milingimbi. The long panel in the middle of the bark painting is the central pole supporting the bark hut. Within this pole there is a hive of wild bees, the dots representing the bees and the honeycomb. The two women, *Miwal* and *Wanu-wanu*, with their hands upraised, are at the top of the painting. The remaining designs were not explained.

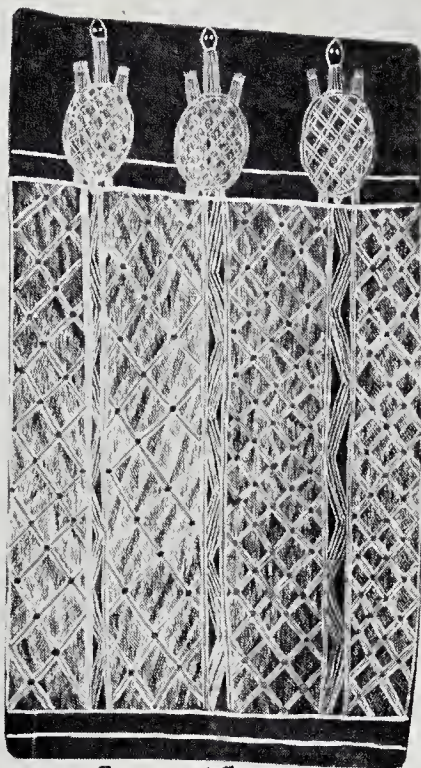
Unidentified Totem, Galdar

Plate 127B pictures a totemic place, Budjala, in eastern Arnhem Bay, which belongs to an unidentified totemic creature, called *galdar*. At some time during the creation period *galdar* struck a rock at Budjala, causing so much water to flow that it overwhelmed two men who were guarding some sacred objects. The ancestral people swam to an island, where they rested until the flood had subsided.

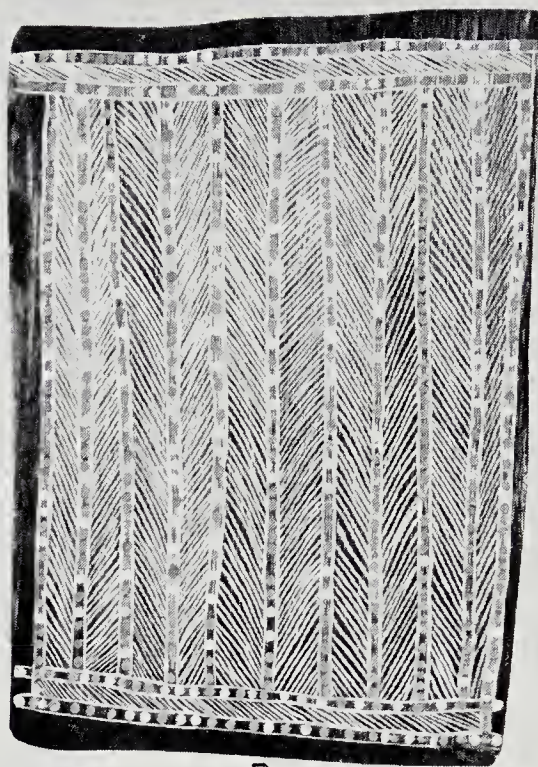
The four lines of lozenges, *a, a*, represent the running water, and the three transverse panels, *b, b, b*, the sand-banks in the stream. The four rectangles with the projections at each end are the sacred objects. There was no explanation for the fish.

68. It was the serpent, *jurlungur*, which swallowed one of the Wawalik sisters at the Mirrimina waterhole, see myth, p. 275, and Warner (1937), p. 250. Warner places this waterhole on the Clyde River. The Rev. Ellemor's informants say that Mirrimina is an extensive swamp between the Wollen and Buckingham Rivers. Both Warner and Ellemor, however, place the waterhole in the same clan area, Liaalaomir.

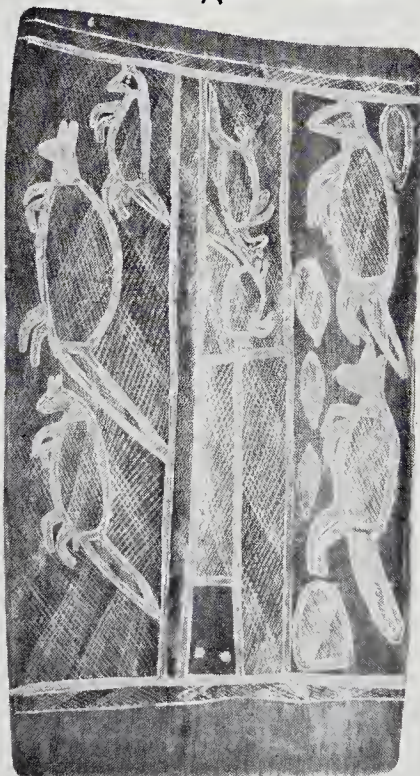
69. The Rev. Ellemor considers these two women are similar to the *Wawalik* sisters. See Warner (1937), p. 250; and myth, p. 278.



a A^a a



B



C



D

PLATE 126. Bark paintings, Milingimbi

- A The tortoise, mimala B Fish and eggs C The kangaroo-man, Gardjambal
 D The serpent-men, Jurlungur and Gadjalan

The Saw-fish, Nalgau

Plate 127C belongs to the saw-fish, *nalgau*, totem of Milingimbi. Four saw-fish are depicted, two in the upper panel at *a, a*, and two in the lower at *b, b*. In the lower panel a fresh-water tortoise is shown between the tails of the saw-fish. Scattered throughout the drawing are small star-like designs which represent the star-fish, *midjala*. These fish provide food for the tortoises. The oval designs between the star-fish represent seaweed, *djiwul*, and the dots, its fruit. The two fish on the right side of the upper panel are called by the native name of *wuugulbu*, and the three transverse cross-hatched panels, *c, c, c*, are sand-bars near the totemic place. There are three flying fish, *digar*, at the upper edge of the bark painting.

The Turtle, Wilira

The totemic place of the turtle, *wilira*, pictured in Pl. 127D, is an island called Nulgunin-nuna, situated north-west of Elcho Island. The triangular patterns occupying most of the surface of the bark painting are clouds created by the three turtles spraying water into the sky. Two king-fish are shown in the clouds, one at *a* and one at *b*.

2. SMOKING PIPES AND MYTHS

As far as I am aware the long smoking pipe, Fig. 59A, B, is used in Australia only by the aborigines of Arnhem Land and the adjacent islands.

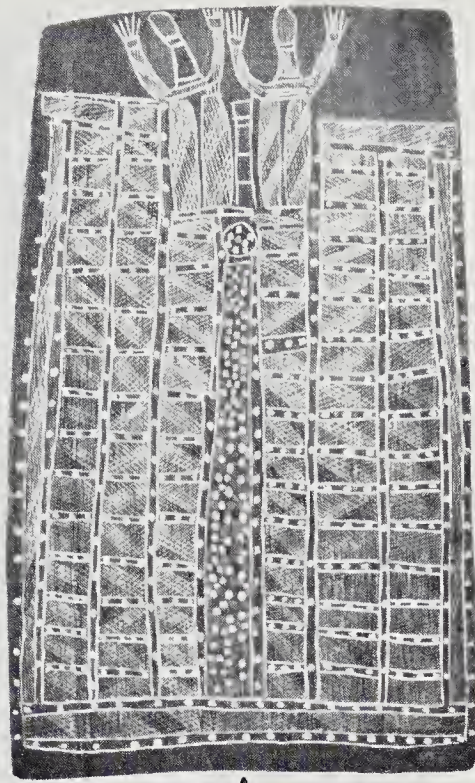
Tobacco smoking was introduced by the Malays within the last century or so when they visited Australia during their periodical journeys to collect trepang and pearl shell, though the *Baijini* myth suggests that the aborigines may have become acquainted with tobacco at an even earlier date. After the Commonwealth Government, about 1910, prohibited the Malays from coming to Australia the aborigines continued to use the Malay pipe, smoking either a substitute or European tobacco, occasionally issued by white traders and missionaries.

In general, the pipes⁷⁰ are made in a few minutes from the pithy stem of a shrub (*Guettarda speciosa*). The aboriginal removes the pith with a thin stick, plugs one end with bark, cuts a hole in the side an inch or more from the end, fits a bowl⁷¹ saved from the old pipe, and, except for the engraving, the pipe is complete.

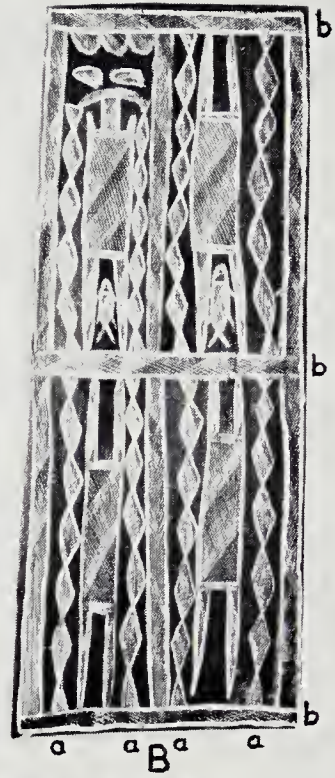
The pipes I collected are about an inch in diameter and varied in length from eight inches at Groote Eylandt to thirty inches at Yirrkalla, Fig. 59B. It was necessary to have a longer pipe stem at Yirrkalla so that there would be sufficient room for the totemic designs. In use, Pl. 124D, the aboriginal takes a

70. The bowls of the early pipes were made of tin-plate and carefully treasured. Since the last war, most pipe bowls are made from shortened cartridge cases. As mentioned earlier, the aborigines recognize the difference between the *Baijini* pipes, which are similar to those used by Europeans, and those of the Malays. The *Baijini* were a mysterious group of fair-skinned people who once camped at Port Bradshaw, myth, p. 333.

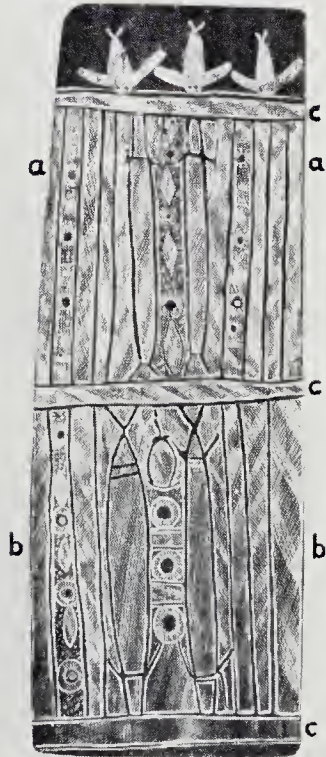
71. Warner (1937), p. 461, refers to the smoking pipes of the Murngin, near Milingimbi, and Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 102, to those at Yirrkalla.



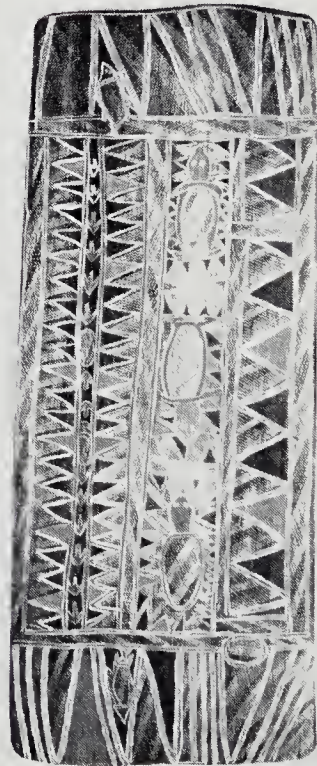
A



B



C



D

PLATE 127. Bark paintings, Milingimbi

- A The women, Miwal and Wanu-wanu B Unidentified totem, galdar
 C The saw-fish, nalgan D The turtle, wilira

pinch of tobacco, presses it tightly into the bowl, and lights it either with a coal from the camp-fire, or a burning twig. He fills his mouth and lungs with tobacco smoke, then passes the pipe to a companion, who does likewise. This usually exhausts the supply of tobacco, but if there is any left the pipe is either passed to another aboriginal or back to the first man.

Most of the smoking pipes at both Groote Eylandt and Yirrkalla are covered with engravings. Those at Groote Eylandt had herring-bone patterns which did not appear to have any specific meaning, but those at Yirrkalla and Milingimbi all bore complex designs, most of them illustrating totemic stories belonging to the sacred life of the men. Because of this, the owners kept the stems wrapped in paper-bark, Fig. 59A, so that the decorations could not be seen by the women when the pipes were used in the main camp. The bark painting of *Wanatjai*, Pl. 95B, shows him holding a Malay pipe in either hand.

As the engravings on the Yirrkalla pipes entailed considerable time and effort, the aborigines were not always willing to part with them. They allowed me, however, to make rubbings of the patterns. These are reproduced in the text figures.

The Crocodile, Barou

This pipe, Fig. 59C, is associated with a *jiritja* totem place of the crocodiles, *barou*, which is on the Kariatpa⁷² swamp, Caledon Bay.

The diamond-shaped designs in panel *c* of Fig. 59C are the swamps at Blue Mud Bay. The next panel shows the crocodiles, *b*, lying in the swamps at Kariatpa. Round the reptiles, the designs *a, a* represent swamp grass and crocodile eggs.⁷³ The two lines of lozenge-shaped designs at *d, d* are the Kariatpa swamps.

The Fresh-water Tortoise, Mimala

When the fresh-water tortoise, *Mimala*, and his wife were human beings they lived at Calabaibai, a totemic place on the banks of a fresh-water stream flowing into the sea south of Milingimbi.⁷⁴ One day the fresh-water tortoise made a carved human figure, *mimalatuna*, which he carried a long way inland and hid in a sacred place where no women could see it. Being tired after his journey, *Mimala* laid down and went to sleep. On waking up he found he was particularly warm and comfortable, for his body had sunk so deeply in the soft mud that he was almost covered. He saw, too, that the surrounding country was covered with swamp grass and rushes, interspersed with many streams of fresh water. *Mimala*, pleased with the warmth of the mud and the close proximity of so much grass and water, changed himself, and later his wife, into fresh-water tortoises.

From that time the tortoise, *mimala*, has lived either in the fresh-water streams and swamps or the grass that grows near by.

72. Myth, p. 368.

73. These are similar to the *mata* design of the *gunaitj* language group of Caledon Bay.

74. See log coffin, Pl. 105B, and bark paintings, Pl. 119A, 126A.

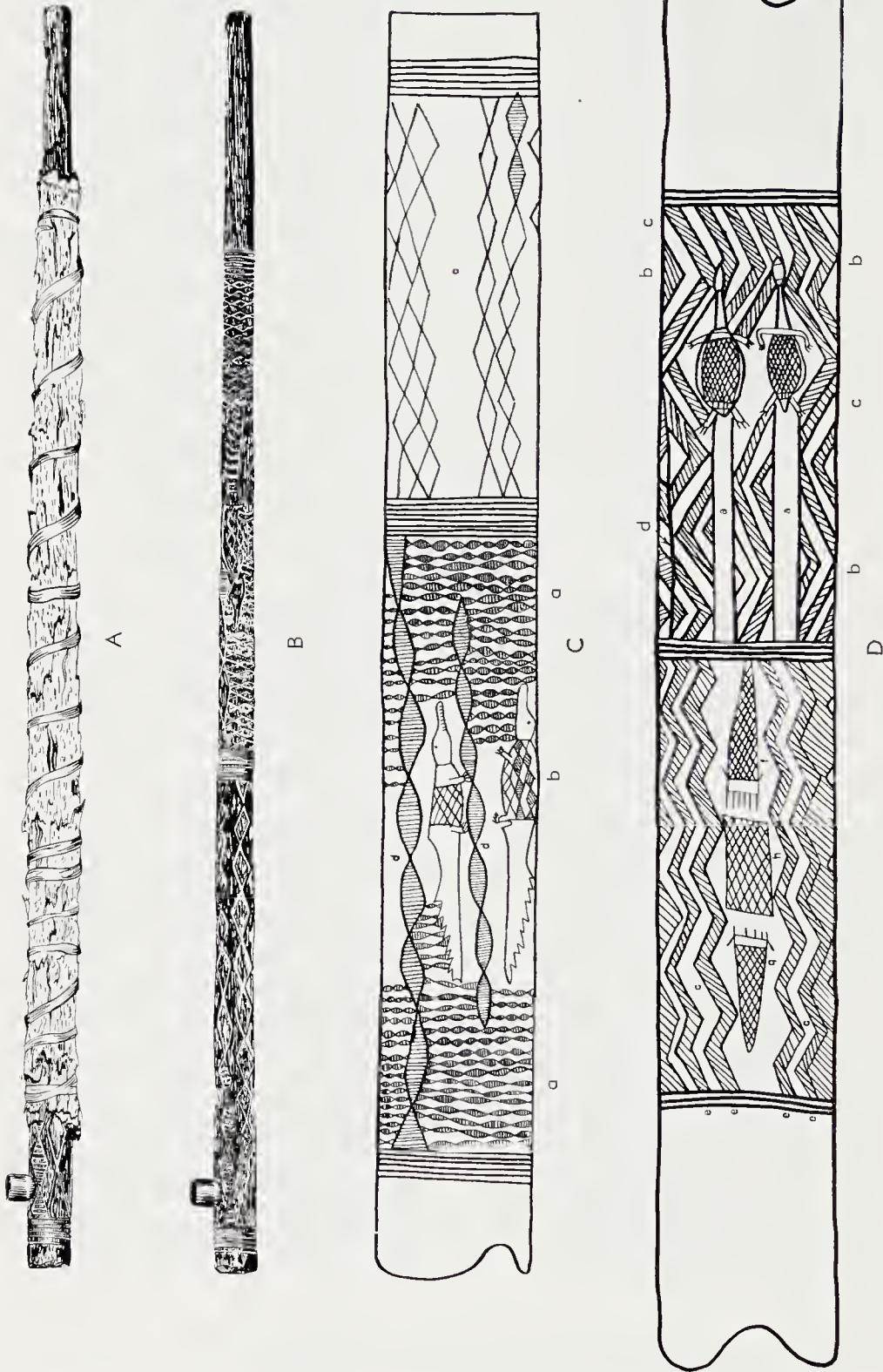


FIG. 59. Engraved smoking pipes, Yirrkalla
A, B Smoking pipes, wrapped and unwrapped C The crocodile, barou D The tortoise, mimala

The design, Fig. 59D, deals with the totemic place at Calataibi of the fresh-water tortoise, *mimala*. On the upper half of the pipe *Mimala* and his wife are resting on two sand-bars, *a, a*, in the stream. The shaded zigzag lines, *b, b*, represent the swamp grass and *c, c*, the plain spaces between, the running water. The heavy black line, *d*, indicates a tree which has fallen into the stream. On the left-hand, the upper and lower figures *f* and *g*, in the central panel, are two cat-fish, *mambira*, the fleshy tentacles from the mouth of the fish being diagrammatically represented. Between the fish at *h* is a fruit, *ualpu* (presumably that of a pandanus palm), which grows along the river bank. The shaded zigzag areas, *e, e*, on the left, indicate the swamp grass where the tortoise lays her eggs; *c, c*, are streams of running water.

Wild Honey, Koko. The Male Ancestor, Jarapang

The male ancestor, *Jarapang*, of *koko*, the wild honey totem, belongs to the *dua* moiety. His totem place is in a hollow tree at Macuti, on the Koolatong River.

The diamond-shaped figures, *a, a*, on Fig. 60A symbolize the honey in the comb and the dots, *b, b*, the pupae of the young bees. The torpedo-like figure, *c*, at the upper right, is the wild bee ancestor, *Jarapang*, resting in his hollow tree at Macuti, represented by the long rectangle, *d*.

Wild Honey, Koko. The Female Ancestress, Lirawar

The *dua* female wild honey ancestress, *Lirawar*, lived with her husband, *Jarapang*, in a hollow tree near the Macuti swamp on the Koolatong River.

Fig. 60B represents a hive of wild honey; the chevron designs, *c, c*, occupying most of the pipe stem, represent the honey in the cells. The transverse bands, *a, a*, indicate the bee bread and the pupae of young bees; the other transverse bands, *b, b*, the hard wax.⁷⁵

The Thunder-man, Bolngo

Bolngo is a mythical thunder-man who lives at Wulwulwi, near the mouth of the Koolatong River. At the beginning of the wet season, *Bolngo* climbs to the top of a high paper-bark tree and urinates. When *Bolngo's* urine splashes on the ground it goes into the sky to form clouds. The rain from these clouds makes the water flow in the stream at Wulwulwi.⁷⁶

On Fig. 60C, panel *a* represents the paper-bark tree on which *Bolngo* stands; *b* is *Bolngo* urinating; *c* is the urine splashing on the ground; and *d* is *Bolngo's* camp at Wulwulwi. The two parallel panels, *e, e*, represent the bed of the river, Wulwulwi; the sloping lines, the water pouring into the river from subsidiary

⁷⁵. This wax is used extensively for mounting stone implements, repairing utensils and moulding animal figures.

⁷⁶. *Bolngo* is a parallel myth to that of *Tjambuwal* at Yirrkalla. See bark painting, Pl. 90B and 93B, also myth, p. 287.

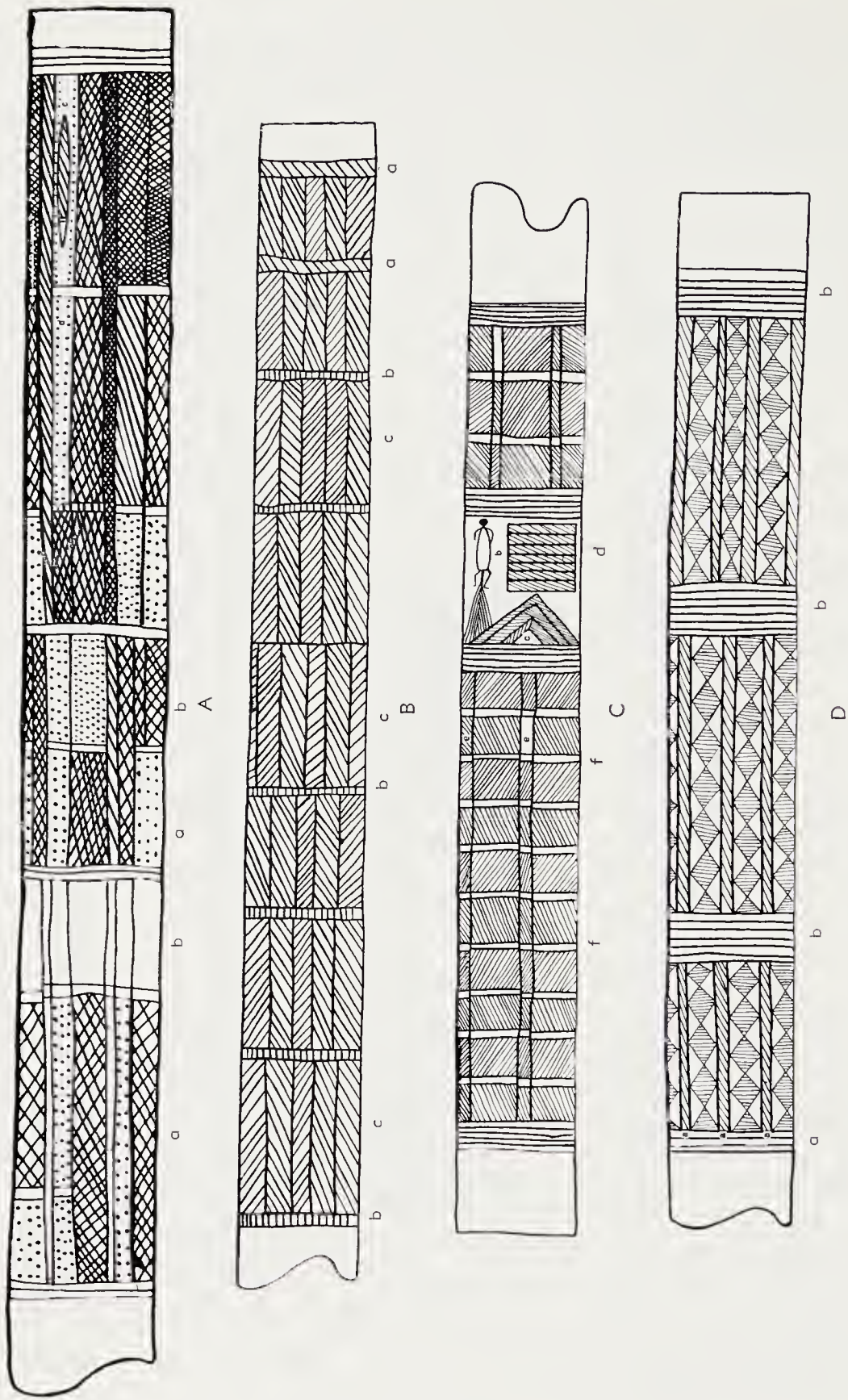


FIG. 60. Engraved smoking pipes, Yirrkalla

A Male wild honey, Jarapang

B Female wild honey, Lirawar

C The Thunder-man, Bolugo

D The man, Laitjun, and his fish-trap

streams during the heavy rain; and the parallel lines, *f, f*, rocks and sand-bars in the bed of the river.

The Man, Laitjun, and his Fish Trap

In the early days, a man called *Laitjun*⁷⁷ made a fish trap on the Koolatong River, in which to catch *paipinga*, a fresh-water fish. The aborigines still use the same kind of fish trap.

Fig. 61 shows the present construction of the trap. Across the Koolatong River the aborigines constructed a weir by driving sticks into the bed of the river, leaving an opening in the centre. The space between the sticks was filled with branches, grass and earth, and across the opening an almost submerged paper-bark raft was anchored. When fish are needed the aborigines assemble at the trap and, by running about and beating the water downstream, drive the fish toward the opening. When they reach the partly submerged raft, the fish endeavour to jump over it, but become stranded on top, where they are caught.

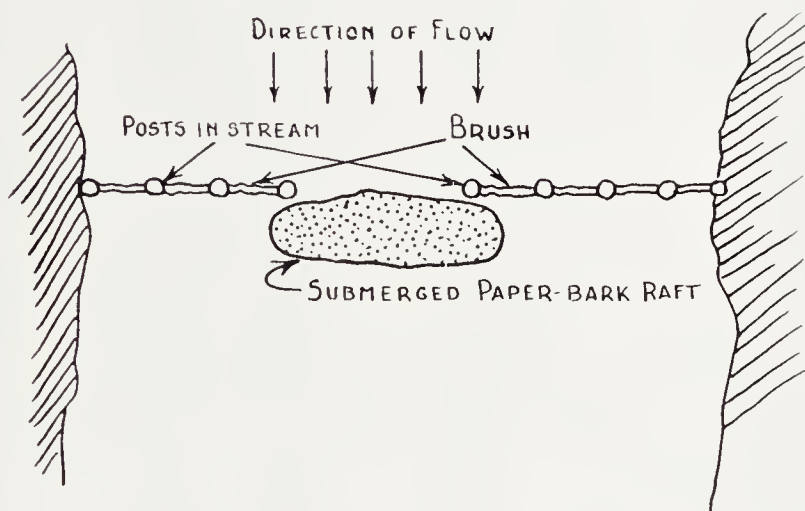


FIG. 61. Plan of fish-trap

On Fig. 60D the parallel lines, *a, a, a*, are the sticks driven into the bed of the stream and the diamond-shaped patterns the water running between them. The aborigines explained that they would have included the raft in the pipe engraving, but there was not sufficient room. The four groups of parallel lines, *b, b*, are trees fallen across the river.

The Fresh-water Goannas, Djerilka

The mythical fresh-water goannas, *djerilka*, lived in a totemic waterhole on the Cato River, near Melville Bay.

The panel *a* in Fig. 62A is the totemic waterhole of the *djerilka*, the herring-bone design symbolizing the water. In panel *b* are the male and female goannas. The female on the top is leaving the waterhole in panel *a*, and the

77. See myth of *Banaitja* and *Laitjun*, p. 279.

male, left, is entering it. The background design⁷⁸ represents the fallen leaves of an unidentified palm. The symbols in panel *c* represent the fallen leaves of the same tree. In panel *d* the male and female goannas are travelling in the one direction. The background is the same as elsewhere, fallen palm leaves.

The Man, Oijal

This myth has already been related in association with the relevant bark paintings of *Oijal* and his sister, *Neri-neri*.⁷⁹

The designs on this pipe, Fig. 62B, belong to a large hill, Tjiruru, the totemic place where *Oijal* cooked his honey. The two groups of long parallel lines, *f, f*, in the left-hand panel symbolize the river, Wandaraui, which was created when the brother and sister felled a tall tree in their search for honey. The sloping lines, *b, b*, are the subsidiary streams that run into Wandaraui River, which, in turn, empties its waters into Melville Bay. The small gutters made in the surrounding plains by the wet-season floods are shown by the marks *c, c*. Lines *e* indicate the hill, Tjiruru, the totem place of *Oijal* and *Neri-neri*. In the right-hand panel, the groups of crescent-shaped lines, *a, a*, picture the boomerangs of *Oijal*. The transverse marks on the boomerangs are lines of paint.

The Fresh-water Goanna, Bijé

The fresh-water goanna, *bijé*, found yellow ochre near a stream at Gurunga, a few miles south of Caledon Bay. Since then the men of the *jiritja* moiety have visited that place to collect their ochres.⁸⁰

In panel *c*, Fig. 62C, the fresh-water goanna is lying among the rocks and water of his totemic place. The designs with the transverse bars in panels *a, c*, and *d* symbolize the fresh water running between reefs of yellow ochre (the blank spaces). The groups of parallel lines at *b* indicate where it is possible to ford the stream. Panel *d* shows where the stream, discovered by the water-goanna, enters the ground and disappears.

The Man, Ngulamung, Blue Mud Bay

The myth of this *jiritja* pipe centres round the mythical man *Ngulamung*, who frequented the swamps in the *malarapa* clan country, at Blue Mud Bay, to collect water-lily bulbs, *jouku*. As *Ngulamung* collected the bulbs, he put them in a carrying-bag, took them to his camp and, raking back the embers, buried the bag, bulbs and all in the hot sand and ashes.⁸¹ Two other totem creatures are included in the engraved design, the toredo worm, *kaula-warak*, and the fish, *bunumba*.

Fig. 62D is the complete design of the pipe. In panel *a* are two fresh-water fish, *bunumba*, the meandering lines originating at the tail of the upper fish

78. This is similar to the *mata* design of the *ngeimil* language group of Arnhem Bay, Fig. 64E.

79. Myth, p. 292.

80. See myth, p. 371, also bark painting, Pl. 118B.

81. The aborigines claim that this method of cooking water-lily bulbs was used in times past. It has been discarded in more recent years.

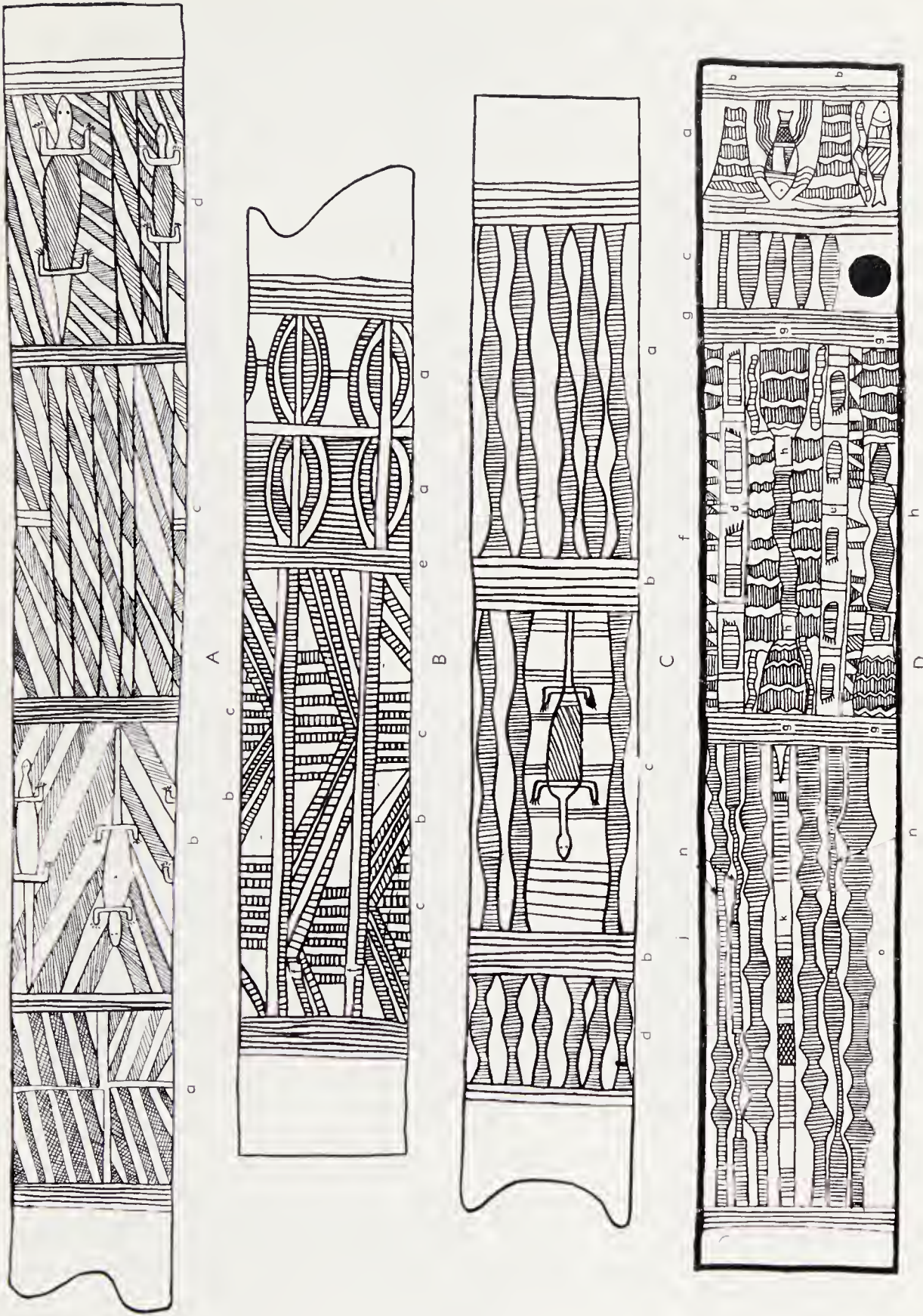


FIG. 62. Engraved smoking pipes, Yükkalla

A The fresh-water goannas, djerilka B The man, Oijal C The fresh-water goanna, bije. D The man, Ngulamung

symbolizing its wake. Designs *b*, *b* are two trees at the totemic place, the transformed bodies of the fish, *bunumba*. The four ovals in panel *c* are masses of eggs belonging to the same fish; they are now sand-banks. In panel *f*, the line of footprints at *d* are those of *Ngulamung* as he walked to the swamps to collect lily bulbs, and at *e* those he made on his return journey. At *g*, *g* are the bags in which he cooked the bulbs, and *h*, *h*, the cooked bulbs.

In the lower panel, *j*, the lozenge-shaped figures are the bulbs of the lily, *jouku*, and *n*, their roots. The triangular patterns along the upper edge of panel *f* represent a sharp-edged grass growing in the swamp which cuts the legs of the aborigines; *k* is the toredo worm, *kaula-warak*, whose totemic place is also at Blue Mud Bay.

The Man, Wanamungaria, of Blue Mud Bay

The complete design on this *jiritja* pipe refers to the fresh-water swamps, the sandy beach, the rocks near the shore, the open sea, and a mythical man, *Wanamungaria*, all belonging to the *malarapa* clan country of Blue Mud Bay. The pipe is divided into two sections, the symbols on panel *a* picturing the swamps, and on the other, *d*, the sea, its creatures and the canoe of the mythical man, *Wanamungaria*.

Panel *a* of Fig. 63A is a fresh-water swamp covered with water-lilies, *jouku* (unidentified). The designs, *c*, are the leaves, and *b* the bulbs. The parallel lines, *d*, indicate the beach which separates the swamp from the sea. The lower panel, *k*, pictures the coast and the open sea. At *e* is an engraving of the canoe of *Wanamungaria*, with the four paddles lying in the bottom. The canoe has since been transformed into a large rock, *j*, on the sea coast. The lines *f* represent the open sea, *g* a dugong, and *h* a queen fish.

The Wrecked Canoe at Port Bradshaw

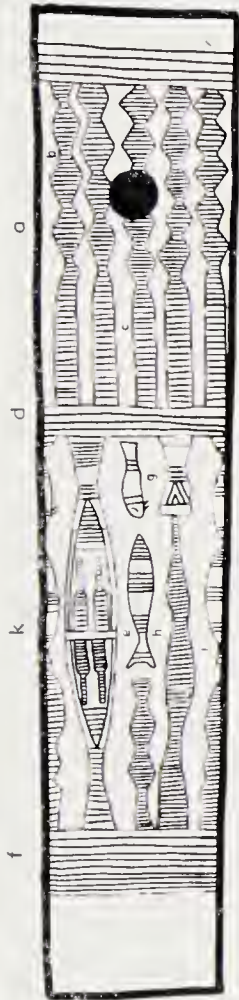
In recent years, during a heavy storm, a large outrigger canoe, possibly from Papua, was cast up on the shore between Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw.⁸² The designs on the canoe inspired one of the *jiritja* men to engrave this pipe.

Fig. 63B was covered, for most of its length, with triangles resembling the cloud symbols used on the *jiritja* paintings of the Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw aborigines. Both these and the meandering designs at the end of the pipe are supposed to be a copy of those the artist saw on the canoe. This is the only example in my collection of Arnhem Land art about which the artist was unable to explain the meanings of the symbols he used.

The Yam, Trial Bay

I did not gather any other details about the mythological story associated with this pipe, Fig. 63C, except that it belonged to the yam totem of Trial Bay.

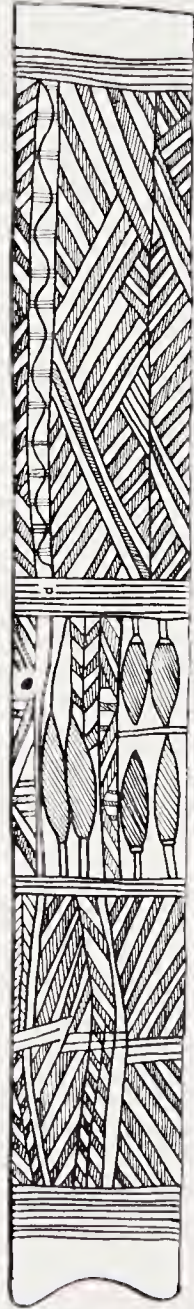
82. The aborigines believe that these canoes are sent to them by the inhabitants of the *jiritja* 'heaven', Nalkuma. *Myth*, p. 331.



A



B



C

FIG. 63. Engraved smoking pipes, Yirkalla
 A The man, Wanamungaria B The wecked canoe at Port Bradshaw C The man, Tualpa

The yams are engraved in panel *a*, and their foliage indicated by the decorative chevron-like designs at *b* and *c*. The pattern *d* on the upper right, with a meandering line down the centre, is a small fresh-water stream near the totemic place.

The Man, Tualpa, and the Sacred Tree of Blue Mud Bay

This painted pipe represents a sacred tree which once grew on the shores of Blue Mud Bay. One day a man (unnamed), not knowing that the tree was sacred, cut it down to make a special spear, called *bunungara*. *Tualpa*, the owner of the tree, was so angry over the vandalism that he speared the culprit. The dead tree now lies at the mouth of a lagoon emptying into Blue Mud Bay. During the wet season it is submerged by the fresh water flowing from the swamps into the sea. When the swamps are dry, the log is sometimes covered by the high tide.

The transverse bands, *e, e*, on Pl. 128B represent the tide marks on the tree; the cross-hatched panel, *a*, the fresh water; and *b, c* and *d*, the sea-water, which during the dry season alternately covers and uncovers the tree-trunk.

The Four Jiritja Men of Melville Bay

During *bumun* (creation times) four *jiritja* men,⁸³ *Djamburi*, *Wanatjai*, *Dandarunga* and *Kainoltja*, created a number of natural features at each of their camps along the shores of Melville Bay.

Plate 128A is the complete design of the painted pipe; *a* is *Djamburi*, *b* is *Wanatjai*,⁸⁴ *c* *Dandarunga*, and *e* *Kainoltja*. Each of these men is smoking a pipe. The four squares at *f* are four wells, each man having his own. Their footprints are in panel *e*.

3. BODY PAINTINGS

In north-eastern Australia the art of body painting is most important, for it is by means of the designs painted on the novices during the various age-grading ceremonies, and on the fully initiated men whilst engaged in their totemic rituals, that the totem, the clan group, *mala*, and the linguistic group, *mata*, of each individual can be recognized. As far as the present evidence goes (the investigation is far from complete) it seems that each *mata*, which may include several *mala*, has its own specific design, which is the personal property of that group and cannot be used by any other.⁸⁵ During the circumcision ceremonies⁸⁶

83. It is the mythical men of the *jiritja* moiety only who smoke. It is of interest to notice that the four men depicted on this pipe are not smoking the long Malay pipe, but one which resembles those used by our own party, called by the aborigines *Baijini* pipes. Nowadays all aborigines smoke, but a member of one moiety will not use a pipe decorated with the designs of the opposite moiety without the owner's permission. If he did so, the spirit of the pipe would make him ill.

84. See bark painting of *Wanatjai*, Pl. 95B.

85. See myth of the origin of the design of the crabs, *gunjun*, p. 298.

86. In north-eastern Arnhem Land the boys are circumcised when they are from six to eight years of age.

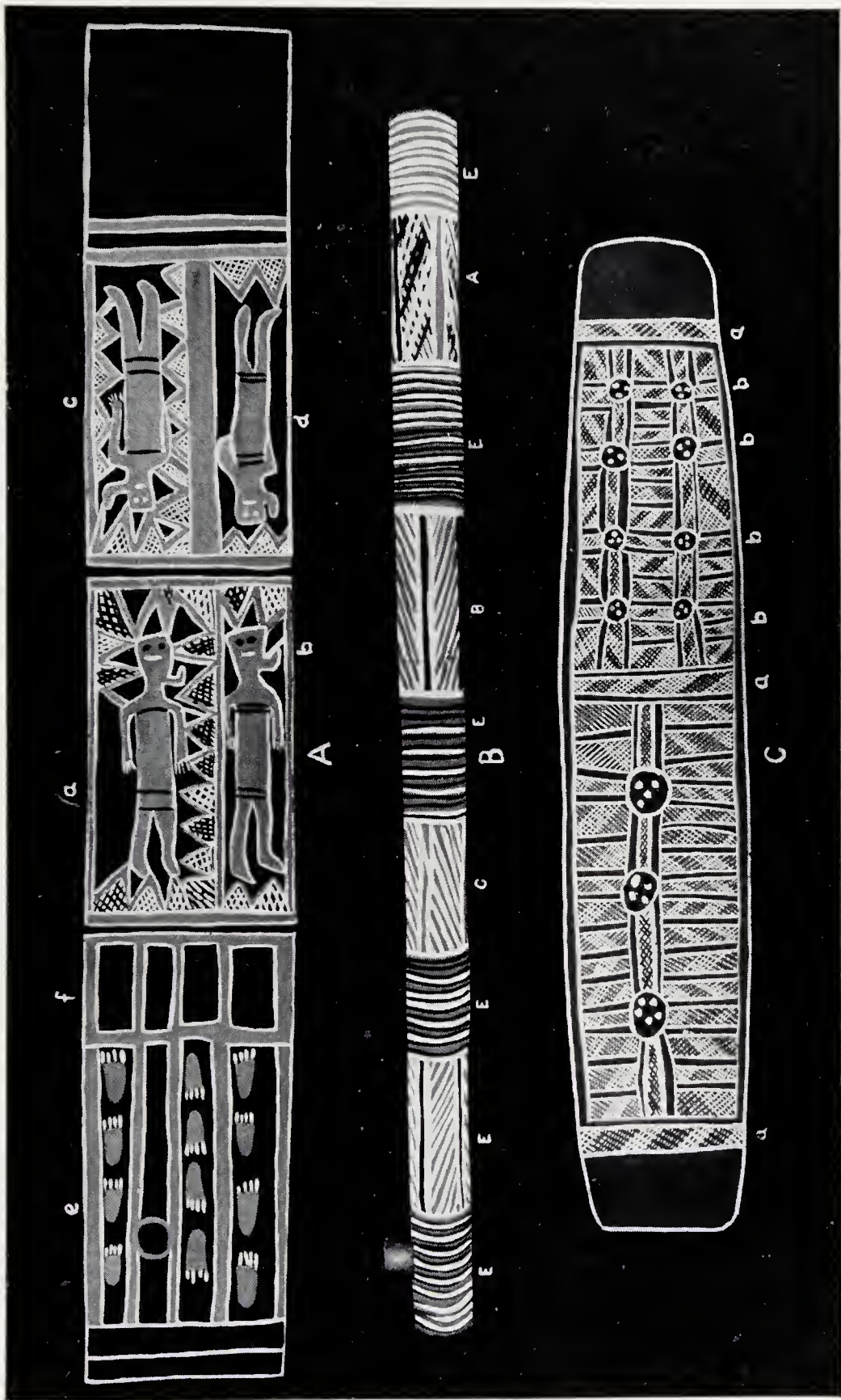


PLATE 128. Painted pipes and ceremonial object, Yirkalla

A The four jiritja men of Melville Bay B The man, Tualpa, and the sacred tree C The geese, wurmatji

I witnessed at Yirrkalla each of the four boys was painted with the *mata* design of the particular language group to which he belonged.* The design would be his throughout life and even at death would be painted on his body. I found out the *mata* of each body painting, its meaning and its associated myth.

*The Water-lily, Jouku, and the Wild Bees, Kamou, of
Blue Mud Bay*

The myth of an unidentified totemic water-lily, *jouku*, belonging to the *jiritja* moiety of the Matamataui swamps is associated with several other totemic beings, the man *Wanamungaria*,⁸⁷ the man *Ngulamung*,⁸⁸ the toredo worm, *kaula-warak*, the queen fish, *tiwimbu*,⁸⁹ the opossum, *marungo*, and the night-bird, *karawak*.⁹⁰ The wild bees, *kamou*, are also associated with the Matamataui swamps. These totemic bees, when disturbed by a bush-fire, flew to Milingimbi to escape destruction.⁹¹

Plate 129A illustrates the body painting of a *jiritja* boy of the *mangilili-dalwongu matas* of the Blue Mud Bay areas, the designs on the torso belonging to the *mangilili mata* (Fig. 64K) and those on the legs to the *dalwongu* (Fig. 64J). The central vertical panel represents a river at the totemic place of the water-lily, *jouku*, the U-shaped figure at the top being a large rock in the bed of that river. On the right-hand side of the abdomen is a fresh-water fish, *biltu*. The remainder of the paintings on the body are symbolical of either the blossoms or the leaves of the water-lily, *jouku*. The diamonds on the upper legs refer to hives of wild bees at the Matamataui swamps.⁹²

The Man, Djungkao, and his Sister, Madalait

The body designs⁹³ shown on Pl. 129B were painted on a *dua* boy of the *riredjingu mata* of Port Bradshaw (Fig. 64D). The three horizontal cross-hatched bands under the left armpit symbolize the waves of the sea which attracted *Djungkao's* attention when he was beaching his canoe at Bilapinja Island.⁹⁴ The vertical panels immediately below are coastal sand-hills at Jelangbara, north of Port Bradshaw, and the long vertical panels on the right-hand side of the body are further parallel sand-hills which *Djungkao* and his sister admired.⁹⁵ The horizontal bands across the left hip are the lines of sand which ran down the sides of a drifting sand-hill at Jelangbara, where the lizard, *tjunda*, walked along the crest.⁹⁶ The designs on the upper legs also indicate the sand running down the side of the same sand-hill.

*Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land, 1954, p. 13.

87. Engraved pipe, Fig. 63A.

88. Engraved pipe, Fig. 62D.

89. Bark painting, Pl. 106C.

90. Bark painting, Pl. 115E.

91. Bark painting, Pl. 93B.

92. Bark painting, Pl. 93B.

93. These and similar designs are used extensively in picturing the myth of *Djungkao* and *Madalait* at Port Bradshaw.

94. Pl. 85E.

95. Pl. 86D.

96. Pl. 86B.



PLATE 129. Body designs of initiates, Yirkalla

A The water-lilies, jouku, and the fish, biltu
 C The bush-fire and the eucalyptus trees

B Djungkao and Madalait
 D The geese, wurumatji

*The Bush-fire and the Eucalyptus Trees of the Gainmaui Swamp,
Caledon Bay*

During creation times some men, whilst performing a ceremony at the Gainmaui swamp, south of Caledon Bay, left a camp-fire unattended. The fire spread, burning the whole countryside, including the men themselves.⁹⁷ They are now white-barked eucalyptus trees, *guriri*, which, at certain times in the year, shed small flakes of bark from their trunks, exposing the whiter bark underneath.

Plate I29C pictures the body painting of a *jiritja* boy of the *gumaitj mata* of Caledon Bay. The vertical cross-hatched panels on the body are three totemic eucalyptus trees at the Gainmaui swamp and the three transverse panels across the shoulders, abdomen and hips, their branches. The vertical lines of lozenge-shaped designs⁹⁸ on the body and the legs have two meanings, the bush-fire caused by the careless men, and the white patches on the trunks of the totemic eucalyptus trees.

The Geese, Wurumatji, of Duwalaila Swamp, Arnhem Bay

During creation times a flock of geese, *wurumatji*,⁹⁹ lived on the Duwalaila swamp, situated to the west of Arnhem Bay. Their food was *rakia*, the bulbs of the spike rush. One day the thunder-man, *Tjambuwal*,¹ when travelling over the Duwalaila swamp of Arnhem Bay in a storm, called out (thundered) so loudly that the geese took fright and flew westward to the swamps south of Milingimbi, where they have remained ever since.

Plate I29D pictures the body painting of a *dua* boy of the *jambakbinwa mata* of western Arnhem Bay. The black squares throughout the design are the fresh-water swamps at Duwalaila, the one-time home of the *wurumatji*. The white dots within the squares are either the bulbs of *rakia* or white stones on the bottom of the swamp. The vertical bands joining the black squares indicate the paths made by the geese, *wurumatji*, as they walked from one swamp to the other in search of food, and the horizontal cross-hatched bands which link the squares, fresh-water streams flowing between the swamps. The bands across the shoulders and the hips are low ranges of hills near by. Goose tracks entering and leaving the swamp are indicated on the white bands passing over the shoulders. Cross-hatching throughout the painting is symbolical of the muddy water stirred up by the geese as they searched in the bottom of the swamp for the bulbs of the spike rush.

4. SAND FIGURES

Whilst at Yirkalla we often watched the aboriginal children moulding figures of various creatures in the sand, or scratching them on the wet surface of the

97. For more complete myth, see p. 293.

98. The same design is used on a number of bark paintings, Pl. 93D, Pl. 98B, C. It is a *mata* design of the *gumaitj* language group, Fig. 64N.

99. See sacred object, Pl. I28C.

1. For myth of *Tjambuwal* at Arnhem Bay, see p. 289.

seashore, usually with the points of their fingers. Some of the children were particularly dexterous. Plate 91C is a sand drawing of a goanna and Pl. 91D a moulded figure of a fish.

In Central Australia, I often saw the aboriginal children drawing simple figures on the sides of the drifting sand-hills. Barrett and Croll² illustrate figures of dugongs, sharks, crocodiles and even a lugger in sail, which the aborigines of the Wessel Islands had scooped in the sand.

5. THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN SOCIAL ORGANIZATION AND DESIGN

The social organization of the aborigines of north-eastern Arnhem Land dominates every aspect of their social, ceremonial, philosophical and cultural life.

Warner³ published a list of the clans (which we now call *mala*), the high and low totems of each clan, the language groups (*mata*) and the names of the totemic waterholes. This list is by far the most valuable information we have on the subject. Warner,⁴ however, although obviously puzzled about the matter, made the mistake of grouping the aborigines of north-eastern Arnhem Land into tribes instead of clans, failing to recognize that the clan was the most powerful unit.

Thomson,⁵ when referring to the same social organization, pointed out Warner's mistake, and at the same time defined the word *malla* (my *mala*) as referring to a strong patrilineal group linked together by the same totemic ancestors. Elkin and the Berndts⁶ list some of the *dua* and *jiritja* clans (*mala*) and language groups (*mata*). I also was able to obtain additional data on the subject. Nevertheless, our knowledge of the *malas* and *matas* is still very incomplete.

As my research on the art of the aborigines of north-eastern Arnhem Land developed, however, it became evident that the effects of this social organization was as powerful in the realms of pictorial art as it is in other aspects of their culture. I found that aborigines who had totemic ancestors in common were using designs on their bark paintings and other art objects which were unlike those employed by men of different clan affiliations. Inquiries also revealed that many, perhaps all, of these designs, the property of any particular language group or *mata*, had been handed down to them by one or another of their mythical totemic ancestors.⁷

2. Barrett and Croll (1943), Pl. 71, facing p. 76. 3. Warner (1937), pp. 39-51.

4. Warner (1937), p. 35, writes: "The tribes of northeastern Arnhem Land . . . are very weak social units, and when measured by the ordinary definitions of what constitutes a tribe fail almost completely."

5. Thomson (1949), p. 11.

6. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 23.

7. For origin of designs see myths of *Nguru-gujameri* and the *gunjun* crab design, p. 298; *Banaitja* and the *jiritja* designs, p. 281; *borodji* the snake, and other *jiritja* designs, p. 369; *Djungkao* and the light on the waves, the rising sun and the parallel lines of sand-hills, p. 273.

It would seem, from the lists of the clan and language groups recorded by Warner, Elkin and the Berndts, and those of my own research, that the language groups, *matas*, spread over the boundaries of the clans, *malas*. It is with the language groups, *matas*, that the specific designs, the subject of this investigation, appear to belong.

During the limited period I was at Yirrkalla, the aborigines identified a sufficient number of designs, and the *matas* to which they belong, to reveal their relationships to each other. The designs identified, however, are but a small number of those in use. It would be necessary to spend a lengthy period among the aborigines and to travel extensively over their country before one could gather all the information relating to the *matas*, their localities and associated designs.

(1) THE JIRITJA MATA DESIGNS

As mentioned in the myths,⁸ it was the man *Laitjun* and the snake *borodji* who gave individual designs to all the *jiritja matas* throughout north-eastern Arnhem Land, so that each could recognize the other in the ceremonies. Eleven of these *mata* designs were painted on the wooden carved figure of *Laitjun*, 135A, B. Out of these the aborigines identified four on the various bark paintings, engraved pipes and wooden figures in my collection.

Figure 64J, painted on the left breast of the *Laitjun* figure, Pl. 135A, belongs to the *dalwongu mata* of Blue Mud Bay. The design refers to the hive of wild bees which once lived at the Matamataui swamp (Pl. 93B, g, myth, p. 293), but, when threatened by a bush-fire, escaped to Milingimbi. Similar designs, used on the bark paintings of the Milingimbi area, pictured hives of wild bees, Pl. 125D.

Figure 64K, painted on the left thigh of the *Laitjun* figure, belongs to the *mangalili mata* of Blue Mud Bay. It represents an unidentified water-lily, *jouku*. The same design was present on two engraved pipes, Fig. 59C, 62C, and on a body painting, Pl. 128A. All have the same meaning. On the bark painting, Pl. 89C, this design refers to the body paintings on *Laitjun* and others.

Berndt⁹ states that the *mangalili* design refers to a log at Blue Mud Bay. This may be so, because the toredo worm is associated with both the water-lily and the log mentioned by Berndt. It is almost certain that a *mata* design would refer to more than one myth.

Figure 64M and Fig. 64N are two of the designs belonging to the *gumaitj mata*.

Figure 64M, painted on the right leg of the *Laitjun* figure, pictures reefs of yellow ochre at Gurunga, near Caledon Bay. This design was present on a number of bark paintings (Pl. 118A being typical) and on an engraved pipe, Fig. 62C.

Figure 64N, the other *gumaitj* design, refers mainly to the bush-fire at Matamataui swamps near Caledon Bay and the events that followed. On Pl. 93B, e, the

8. Myth of *Laitjun*, p. 279; myth of the snake, *borodji*, p. 369.

9. Berndt (1948), p. 318.

design represents paper-bark and white-barked eucalyptus trees damaged by the bush-fire; on Pl. 93B, *f*, swamp paper-bark trees; on Pl. 116D, the bandicoot and the fire which destroyed his home; on Pl. 117B, crocodiles and lily leaves; and on Pl. 129C (on the body painting of an initiate), a bush-fire and eucalyptus trees. Berndt¹⁰ states that one of the *gumaitj* designs refer to bark being stripped from a tree.

Figure 64H is an unidentified design commonly used by members of the *gumaitj mata* of Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw.¹¹ It is present on almost all the bark paintings relating to the *Baijini* (Pl. 107D being typical); on many others associated with the totemic creatures of Cape Arnhem (Pl. 108B, for example); on the painted paddles (Pl. 109B); on an engraved pipe (Fig. 63B); and on the carved and painted figures of the *Baijini* (Pl. 139F, G). In general, this design is a symbol for clouds. As only *gumaitj jiritja* artists from Port Bradshaw and Cape Arnhem used this design, it is almost certainly associated with that *mata*.

(2) THE DUA MATA DESIGNS

Although not able to obtain a myth explaining the origin of the *dua mata* designs, I gathered the specific names and details of six of them.

Figure 64A is a *djapu mata* design from the Caledon Bay area. It appears to have several meanings. On the bark painting, Pl. 119B, associated with the totemic shark, *mana*, the design illustrates fallen palm leaves lying on the surface of the swamp. On the bark painting, Pl. 89B, and on the engraved pipe, Fig. 60C, both of which belong to the thunder-man, *Bobigo*, at Wulwulwi, it refers to running water, and on the painted coffin of a man of the water totem, Pl. 104B, the same design pictures sea-water.

Figure 64B belongs to the *duvalili mata* of Arnhem Bay. It was drawn by an old *dua* aboriginal to show me the *mata* design of his people. It is not present on any of the art objects in the collection.

Figure 64C is the design of the *nainmeri mata* of Arnhem Bay. This, like Fig. 64B, was drawn by a *dua* aboriginal to show me his *mata*. On Pl. 87C it pictures plain and swamp country near Arnhem Bay, associated with *Djunkgao* and his sister.

Figure 64D, the design of the *rivedjiugu mata* of Port Bradshaw, belongs, in its various forms, to the myth of *Djunkgao* and his sister, *Madalait*. The central panel refers to the lizard, *tjunda*, and the running sand and the cross-hatched panels on either side, to parallel sand-hills and light reflected from the waves at Port Bradshaw. Pl. 86A is typical. The long cross-hatched panels are commonly used on bark paintings depicting other incidents in the journey of *Djunkgao* and his sister (Pl. 85C); on the carved and painted figures of these two ancestors (Pl. 131A, B); and on the body painting of an initiate (Pl. 129D).

On Fig. 64E, the *ngeimil mata* design of Arnhem Bay, the running sand

10. Berndt (1948), p. 318.

11. Map, Fig. 57.

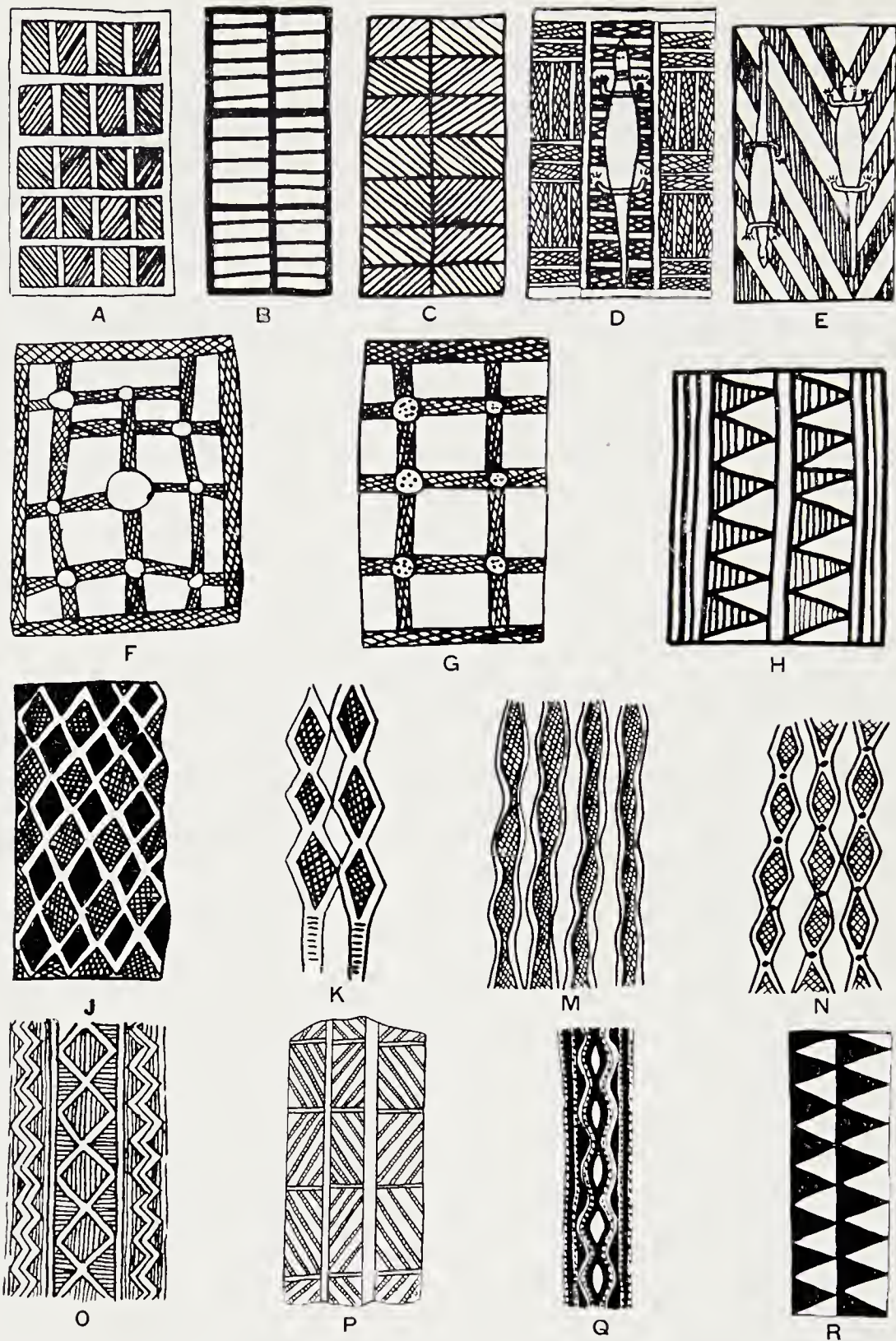


FIG. 64. Clan designs, Yirkalla

- | | | | | |
|----------------|--------------------------------|----------------------------|--------------|-----------|
| A Djapu | B Duralili | C Nainmeri | D Riredjingu | E Ngeimil |
| F Unidentified | G Djambarpingu | H, M, N Gumaitj | J Dalwongu | |
| K Mangilili | O, Q, R Cloth designs, Celebes | P Smoking pipe, New Guinea | | |

design of the *viredjingu mata* of Port Bradshaw changes to sloping lines which symbolize fallen palm leaves. This *ngeimil* design is used on a bark painting, Pl. 123A, and an engraved pipe, Fig. 64A.

Figure 64F is an unidentified design associated with the *Djungkao* sisters west of Arnhem Bay. Although it is not certain that this is a *mata* design, the fact that it is used on two bark paintings, Pl. 87A, B, associated with waterholes belonging to the *Djungkao* sisters, suggests that it might be so.

Figure 64G is the *djambarpingu mata* design. It represents the geese, *wurumatji*, and their tracks at the Duwalaila swamps east of Arnhem Bay. This design was painted on a sacred object, Pl. 128C, and on the body of an initiate, Pl. 129D. The *djambarpingu mata* is an excellent example of how a *mata* (language group) spreads over a number of *mala* (clan groups). According to Warner,¹² the *djambarpingu* language group includes the following adjacent clans or *malas*: *liagaomir*, *djirin*, *gwiyuula*, *djapu*, *naladaer* and *djawark*. Further research will, no doubt, reveal that this characteristic applies to a number of the language groups.

THE POSSIBLE ORIGIN OF THE MATA DESIGNS

An examination of Indonesian art revealed that many of the *jiritja mata* designs from north-eastern Arnhem Land are present in the art of the Central Celebes. As the Celebes and other Indonesian islands are north-west, and the natives from those islands sailed to Australia on the north-west wet-season wind, returning to their homes on the dry-season south-easterly, it is not surprising that their art motifs should have diffused among the aborigines of north-eastern Arnhem Land, particularly among those of the *jiritja* moiety, who have adopted all the later innovations of the Asiatic trepangers and the white man—for example tobacco, wooden canoes, the Malay smoking pipe and so on. As mentioned previously (p. 325), the *dua* moiety possesses the older things, bark canoes, spear-throwers and stone spears. Nevertheless, one of the *dua mata* designs, the *djapu*, Fig. 64A, was found on an engraved smoking pipe from southern New Guinea.

Figure 64O, a cloth design from the Central Celebes,¹³ somewhat resembles the *mangalili jiritja mata* design painted on the left thigh of *Laitjun*, Pl. 135A.

Figure 64Q, another cloth design from the same area,¹⁴ resembles the *gumaitj mata* design (Fig. 64N).

Figure 64R, also a cloth design from the Central Celebes,¹⁵ is similar to the triangular *jiritja* cloud symbol from Cape Arnhem.¹⁶ This design, which is common in Central Celebian art, was also found on a wooden drum from the Tugeri tribe, Dutch New Guinea.¹⁷ According to the aboriginal who engraved

12. Warner (1937), pp. 43-6.

14. Kaudern (1944), 2, Pl. LXIII.

16. Pl. 107D.

13. Kaudern (1944), A, Fig. 166.

15. Kaudern (1944), 3, Pl. XXIV.

17. Collection of South Australian Museum, No. A9266.

the smoking pipe illustrated in Fig. 63B, this triangular pattern was engraved on a canoe which had been cast up on the beach near Port Bradshaw.

Figure 64P, a rubbing from a smoking pipe from southern New Guinea,¹⁸ is almost a duplicate of the *dua djapu mata* design, Fig. 64A.

CONCLUSIONS

The art of the north-east coast differs from the art of the rest of Arnhem Land in several important respects: (a) it is more complicated and colourful; (b) there are a number of alien symbols which indicate that it has been influenced by sources outside Australia, but that this influence is of comparatively recent origin; and (c) certain designs are the exclusive property of specified groups of aborigines.

(a) Whereas the basic art of Arnhem Land consists of single or multiple figures on a plain ground, that on the north-eastern coasts has a wide range of designs, skilfully and interestingly arranged within the painting area. There are few open spaces, as in the basic art, the background of almost all of the paintings being filled in with attractive arrangements of cross-hatching in red, yellow, black and white. The designs, their pleasing arrangement and the colourful textures of the cross-hatching, make the art of north-eastern Arnhem Land the most decorative that we know of in Australia. In contrast with the Oenpelli art, however, that of the north-east has no unusual designs such as X-ray and 'hocker' figures, 'joint marks', men with hook-shaped faces. Nor does it, like the *Mimi* art of Oenpelli, depict human beings in action.

The art of the north-east is essentially a static art with all the subjects at rest. The north-eastern art also has a number of abstract designs which cannot be interpreted without the aid of the artist who produced them.

(b) All evidence suggests that many of the elements in the decorative north-eastern art are of recent origin. It is known that the aborigines, about two generations ago, adopted the practice of carving human figures in the round from their Indonesian visitors and it is likely that they have copied, from the same source, many of the complicated art forms, cross-hatched designs, and at least some of the symbols used by the clan and language groups.

Pobassoo, the Macassan chief, told Flinders, when they met in the Malay Roads during 1803,¹⁹ that twenty years previously he was the first Indonesian to visit the north-eastern coast of Arnhem Land. If Pobassoo's statement was correct, and we have no evidence as yet to the contrary, then we can assume that the aborigines of those parts had not been subject to foreign influences before that date. This hypothesis is further supported by the fact that the art of the north-eastern Arnhem Land has not spread far inland. It is confined to a limited area near the coast, even though the myths and ceremonies depicted on the bark

18. Collection of South Australian Museum, No. A18261.

19. Flinders (1814), vol. 2, p. 229.

paintings and other art objects are performed, with little variation, over most of Arnhem Land (Fig. 2).

(c) Another characteristic of the art of north-eastern Arnhem Land is that certain designs, or arrangements of designs, are the exclusive property of individual clan or language groups. Some of these, according to the myths, were first produced by a mythical forbear, the ancestor of the totemic group which owns that particular design. The fact that many of these are present in the art of the Celebes suggests a link between the two areas and is worthy of more investigation.

PART FIVE
CARVED AND PAINTED FIGURES

5

CARVED AND PAINTED FIGURES

THE DECORATED FIGURES and objects collected in Arnhem Land can be grouped in four classes: Human and animal figures, carved in wood, moulded in wax or made from bark, belonging to both north-eastern Arnhem Land and Groote Eylandt; the human penis; carved and painted ceremonial objects associated with ancestral beings and totemic groups of western Arnhem Land; and decorated implements and weapons.

Human and Animal Figures. It has been known for many years that the aborigines of Australia, and especially of Arnhem Land, produced carved representations of men and women in wood. Warner,¹ during 1926-9, saw at Milingimbi mortuary posts four to five feet long, erected over the graves of the dead, on which 'a series of incisions may be made at the top . . . to give it the appearance of a carved "head" with one or more necks.' Worms,² in 1942, records carved human figures used in the Goranara ceremony of the Kimberley regions of north-western Australia. In 1948,³ and again in 1949,⁴ the Berndts described wooden figures from Yirrkalla in north-eastern Arnhem Land, and in 1953 Mountford⁵ records a wooden figure from the Durack Ranges of north-western Australia.* The aborigines of Yirrkalla also make human figures in bark and wax. Worms⁶ illustrates similar bark figures used in the Goranara ceremony, and McConnel⁷ a figure in wax from Cape York, Queensland. During the expedition's stay at Yirrkalla, I collected a number of human figures made in wood, wax and bark.

Animal figures carved in the round have been found over a much wider area than have the human figures. Spencer⁸ illustrates a carved turtle and a fish from Oenpelli. There is also in the South Australian Museum collection a carved crocodile from Cape York, a dugong from Melville Island, fish from both Elcho and Goulburn Islands, and carved reptiles and animals from the Nullarbor Plains of South Australia. Further research will, no doubt, show a much more extensive distribution of this type of handicraft than the present evidence indicates.

The Human Penis. A number of specimens of the human penis, in stone and wood, have been collected both in central and north-western Australia and in Arnhem Land. Campbell⁹ illustrates two penes carved in stone and one in wood from north-western Australia; Mountford¹⁰ figures two stone sub-incised penes from the same area, as well as a stone circumcised penis and a ceremonial knife

1. Warner (1937), p. 504.

3. Berndts (1948), Pls. 1-2.

5. Mountford (1954), Pl. 1, Figs. C, D.

*Since going to press, Mountford has seen the aborigines of Melville Island carving human figures in the round.

7. McConnel (1953), Pl. XVII, Fig. F.

9. Campbell (1921), p. 145.

2. Worms (1942), Pls. 4, 7.

4. Berndts (1949), Pls. 1-3.

6. Worms (1942), Pl. 6.

8. Spencer (1928), Pl. XVI.

10. Mountford (1939c), Pl. S, Figs. A, B, E, G, J.

from Central Australia. Balfour¹¹ also figures a stone penis which is linked with the myth of the rain-man from Korporilja, near Hermannsburg, Central Australia.¹²

W. E. Harney, whilst with the expedition, found a carved wooden penis associated with a mythical man, *Borolo-borolo*, set up in the middle of a saline flat.¹³

The examples of the human penis, particularly those carved in stone, exhibit a remarkable skill in the shaping of this hard material. They constitute an ethnological problem in a continent where the working of stone has not reached a high level.

Carved and Painted Ceremonial Objects. Whilst the expedition was at Oenpelli the aborigines brought in a number of sacred objects, most of them from the Liverpool River area, belonging to mythical creatures and their increase ceremonies. Spencer¹⁴ illustrates a number of these objects.

Decorated Implements and Weapons. Although the shield and the boomerang (two objects which aborigines in other parts of Australia spend much time decorating) are not used in Arnhem Land, many of the paddles and spear-throwers are painted with designs which, almost without exception, refer to some myth. The aborigines also engrave designs on their long smoking pipes.

1. HUMAN FIGURES IN WOOD AND THEIR CEREMONIAL OBJECTS, YIRRKALLA

Human Figures carved in wood. At Yirrkalla I collected nine full-length wooden human figures and eight heads, all of which represented either mythological or spirit people.

Origin. Inquiries about the carved human figures of north-eastern Arnhem Land proved that they are of comparatively recent origin.

Mauwulan,¹⁵ an aboriginal about fifty years of age, remembers, when he was a small boy, seeing an old Macassan trepanger, *Bopalindi*, show his father, *Duankin*, how to carve a human head on the top of a burial post. This post *Bopalindi* later placed as a memorial on the grave of a dead Macassan.¹⁶ *Duankin* spent much time carving a similar post, which he took to the Macassan for criticism. *Bopalindi*, when congratulating the old man on his effort, suggested that the aborigines, like the people of his own country, should place similar posts on the graves of their dead so that they would not be forgotten so quickly.

Duankin taught his son, *Mauwulan*, the art of carving the mortuary posts,¹⁷ he in turn passing the knowledge to others. As the aboriginal craftsmen became

11. Balfour (1951), p. 246.

12. I have not personally examined this specimen but from the illustration it appears to be a natural stone, bearing a remarkable resemblance to a penis. Mountford (1939c), Pl. S, Fig. C, illustrates a similar example.

13. Pl. 110C; myth, p. 341.

14. Spencer (1928), Figs. 542, 543, Pl. XVI.

15. *Mauwulan*, one of my best informants (Pl. 4A) carved many of these wooden figures for me. He did the same for Mr and Mrs Berndt.

16. Berndts (1949) describe a Macassan burial.

17. See example, Pl. 136C.

more expert they experimented with the carved figures until at the present time they are able to produce a creditable representation of the human form (see Pl. 135A, B).

From that time until comparatively recently the *jiritja*¹⁸ men adopted the Macassan custom of using carved grave posts, but only when the body was buried instead of being placed on a platform. When a *jiritja* man died, his moiety asked a *dua* man to carve a mortuary post to place on the grave.¹⁹ Later, when the body was disinterred and the burial dances were being performed a *jiritja* man, taking the mortuary post with him, went from camp to camp collecting food for the participants in the burial rituals.²⁰ At the completion of the meal the post was replaced on the empty grave.

The chief interest of the carved human figures lies in the fact that in a little over two generations the aborigines, without the help and for most of the time without even the knowledge of the white man, have taken a simple post figure of foreign origin and through improvement of techniques can now carve in wood heads and full-length human figures of considerable merit.

The Rev. F. W. Chaseling, when a missionary at Yirrkalla, was the first to discover that the aborigines of that locality were carving the human figure in the round. This discovery came about in a curious manner. When King George V died, Chaseling, in one of his sermons, expressed grief at the great loss the nation had suffered. This sermon and the concern of the missionary over the loss of his king so impressed *Mauwulan* that he carved a mortuary post,²¹ similar to those used on the *jiritja* graves, but which was supposed to resemble the King. This post *Mauwulan* presented to the missionary so that he would be reminded of his dead monarch. Chaseling, in 1938, realizing the importance of his discovery, presented the mortuary post to the Australian Museum, Sydney. Unfortunately the Museum authorities, unaware that the post was a unique example of aboriginal handicraft, did not describe it in a scientific journal.

I was able to examine this figure early in 1949. It was the head of a bearded man (Pl. 138C, D) cut on the end of a hardwood post about four feet long and five inches in diameter. The face, about five inches long, consisted of eyes, a nose, lips and ears; the ears, however, being somewhat out of position.²² The body of the pole is decorated with ceremonial string.

I also collected at Yirrkalla a number of human heads carved in wood, most of them representing spirit people or *Mokoi* who live in the surrounding jungles and eucalyptus forests.

18. This was because the aborigines made *Bopalindi* a member of the *jiritja* moiety.

19. According to Warner (1937), p. 434, at Milingimbi burial posts are placed on the graves.

20. Warner (1937), p. 433, describes this food-collecting ritual at Milingimbi, and the Berndts (1949), p. 216, at Yirrkalla.

21. Warner (1937), p. 504, refers to a burial post being erected on the aboriginal graves at Milingimbi. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 48, record the finding of a burial post figure at the same locality.

22. I am indebted to the Australian Museum, Sydney, for the photograph of this specimen, E.46535, and the relevant details.

The aborigines told me that, prior to the visit of Mr and Mrs Berndt to Yirrkalla during 1947, they had not carved these small heads. But when they made one and showed it to Mr and Mrs Berndt, the interest shown stimulated them to make more.²³ These little examples of aboriginal craftsmanship, many showing evidence of considerable skill, prove the ability of the aboriginal craftsmen to adapt themselves to changing conditions.

Function. Elkin and the Berndts²⁴ state that the carved figures they illustrate of 'the Elder Wauwelak Sister, the Great Laintjung, and Laintjung's son Banaitja' are shown only to initiated men. They write: 'The original artist who has made the figure enters the hut; outside, the postulants are sitting or standing with faces turned away, but when the songman begins to clap his sticks, they are led up to look upon the sacred object. Finally, when the singing is completed, the designs on the figure are explained and discussed. At times, during the showing of the object, the figure may be held ritually by an actor who writhes on the ground like the python who swallowed the Wauwelak sisters.'

During my last visit to Yirrkalla (1952) I questioned the aborigines about these statements. The men of both moieties were emphatic that they were incorrect and that the carved figures they had produced for Mr Berndt and me are purely secular and would not be used in any of the secret rituals.²⁵

They explained, however, that pole figures (similar to the Chaseling figure) representing *Djungkao* and his sister *Madalait* are kept in special huts near the ceremonial grounds where the *Djungkao* ceremonies are being performed. The figure of *Djungkao* is shown to all the initiated men, but that of *Madalait* to only a few of the older tribal leaders.

The pole figures of *Djungkao* and *Madalait* are carved in hard wood, painted with the appropriate designs and decorated with *dua* ceremonial string. At the completion of the rituals the string is removed for future use and the posts, with other sacred objects, buried in the mud of a sacred waterhole.²⁶ The following year the same figures are taken out, re-painted and re-decorated. They usually last about three years.

The carved figures in my collection, *Tjambuwal*, *Laitjun*, or even the carved figures of *Djungkao* and *Madalait*, would not have been used in any sacred ceremonies. They were produced because the native men enjoyed making them and because we were interested.

Methods of Manufacture. During the last war there was a large Air Force camp near Yirrkalla where, at one time or another, most of the able-bodied aborigines were employed. During that time the aborigines not only learned the

23. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), Pl. 9, illustrate a number of the carved heads collected by Mr and Mrs Berndt.

24. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 50.

25. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 58, state that the carved heads 'are shown to novices at initiation, and to postulants at ceremonies of revelation'.

26. Warner (1937), p. 356, describes how the sacred objects of the *dua narra* ceremonies (analogous to those of *Djungkao* at Yirrkalla) are buried in the mud of the sacred totemic waterhole.

use of steel tools, but acquired for themselves a stock of jungle knives, tomahawks, wood rasps and files. With these tools the aborigines cut and filed the wooden figures into shape with much dexterity.

In sharp contrast to these facts is the account given by Elkin and the Berndts.²⁷ When describing the manufacture of the carved figures at Yirrkalla, these authors wrote: 'The artist chips it [the figure] skilfully with a knife or a broad "shovel-nosed" spear-point. . . . The artist spends several days²⁸ carving in the details and scraping the surface smooth with a knife blade, rough stone or piece of shark's skin "sand paper".'

As Mr and Mrs Berndt were at Yirrkalla less than a year previous to our arrival (the Air Force camp at that time had not long been disbanded) the aborigines would then have had as many, if not more, steel tools than at the time of our visit. It is not reasonable therefore to expect that the aborigines would have been using the primitive tools reported by Elkin and the Berndts.

Tjambuwal, the Thunder-man, and his Ceremonial Objects

Two figures of the mythical thunder-man, *Tjambuwal*, were collected, Pl. 130A, B, and Pl. 130E, F; myth, p. 282.

Associated with these carved figures are five ceremonial objects used in the *dua* ceremonies of the thunder-man. They are: the club, *burungunda* (Pl. 130D), with which *Tjambuwal* strikes the cliff; the spear, *larapan* (Pl. 130J), with which he spears the rock cod, *akurata*; the club, *barlait* (Pl. 130C), with which he kills the fish; the ceremonial object, *munan* (Pl. 130G, H), symbolizing the loops of clouds, *wulmu*, belonging to the thunder-man; and the yam, *bualku* or *bawal* (Pl. 131E) created from the fragments of the club, *burungunda*.

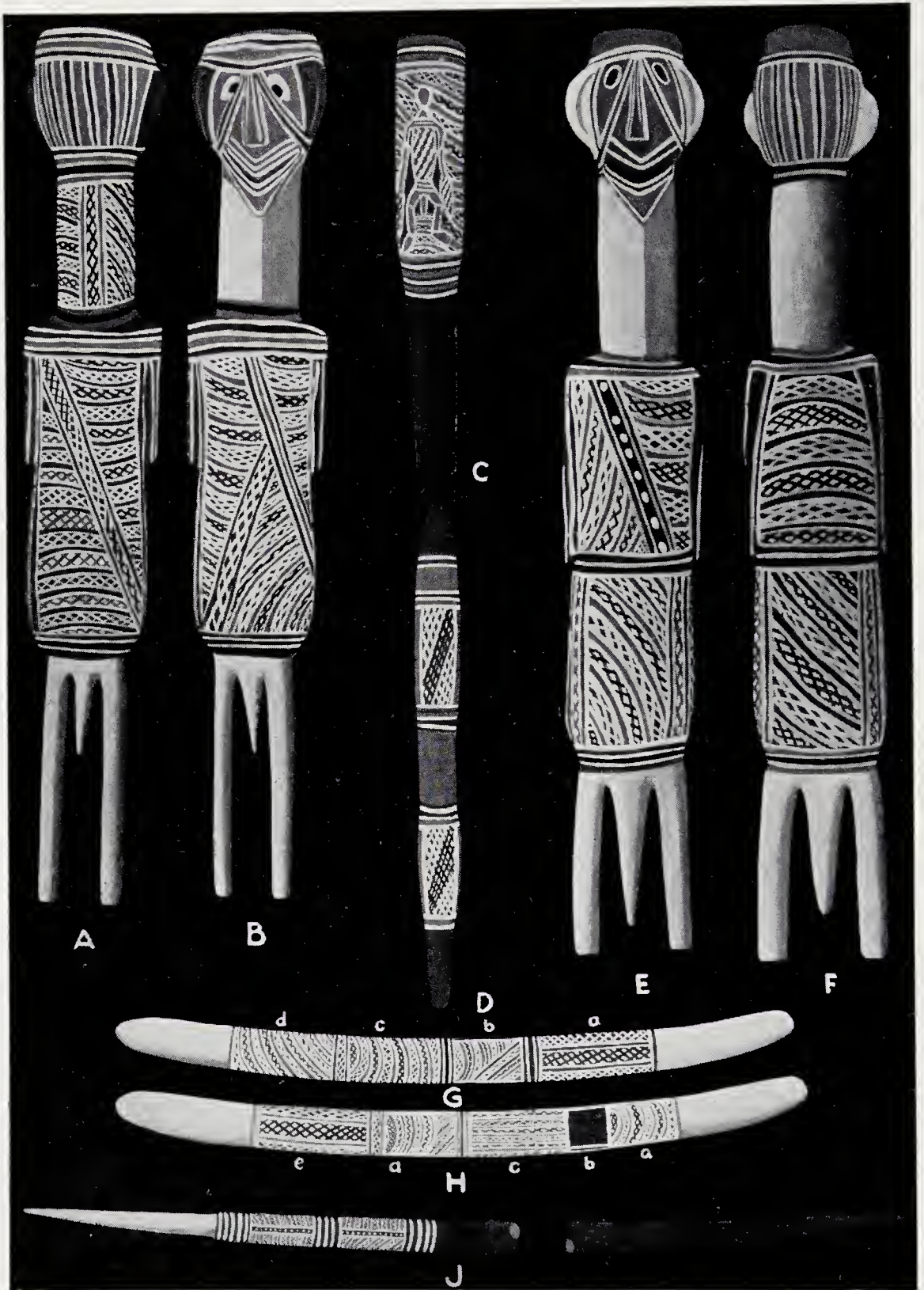
The symbolism of the designs on the *Tjambuwal* figure, Pl. 130A, B, refers to the time when, at the beginning of the wet season, he strikes the cliffs at Jalboa headland (Pl. 91E) with his club and throws the white stones, *milarik* (Pl. 91F) into the sky. These stones quickly increase in size until they become large cumulus clouds, in which *Tjambuwal* travels from place to place.

The two lines meeting at an angle across the front of the figure (Pl. 130B), and the diagonal lines across the back, symbolize crevices which *Tjambuwal* made in Jalboa headland when he struck it with his club, *burungunda* (Pl. 130D). The vertical lines on the back of the head (Pl. 130A) symbolize falling rain, and the arc-shaped panels on both the back and the front of the figure, the gutters in the distorted rock strata of the cliffs at Jalboa, which were supposedly formed when *Tjambuwal* urinated on the cliff.

The symbolism of the designs on the second figure of *Tjambuwal*, illustrated on Pl. 130E, F, is somewhat different. The spots on the diagonal band across the chest of the figure (Pl. 130E) picture the white stones, *milarik*, at Jalboa headland (Pl. 91F). The curving lines to the right of this band are cumulus clouds,

27. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 49.

28. The more expert of the aboriginal craftsmen I saw in 1948 were able to complete and paint a human figure in about seven hours, and a carved head in four.



Betty Hunter

PLATE 130. Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla

- A, B, E, F Tjambuwal C The club, barlait D The club, burungunda
 G, H The ceremonial object, munan J The spear, larapan

and those to the left, dark-coloured nimbus clouds. The curving lines across the back of the figure (Pl. 130F) represent the thin black stratus clouds, *taioutbut*, which often form in the sky after a thunderstorm has expended itself. The curved panels across the abdomen of the figure are waves made by *Tjambuwal* as he wades through the water in pursuit of the rock cod, *akurata*. The long penis on both figures represents the long curving banners of rain that fall from the base of the thunderstorms.

The Club, Burungunda. Plate 130D is the double-ended club,²⁹ *burungunda*, with which *Tjambuwal* strikes the cliff at Jalboa headland at the beginning of the wet season. The impact shatters the club into many fragments; these fragments enter the ground and later become the edible yam, *bualku*, which is called *bawal* in the Arnhem Bay area (Pl. 131E).

The Spear, Larapan. Plate 130J is the spear, *larapan*. With this spear *Tjambuwal* transfixes the rock cod, *akurata*, before he leaves his cloud and enters the sea to kill it.³⁰

When the aborigines see a meteor speed across the sky they believe its fiery path is created by *Tjambuwal's* spear, *larapan*. The white head of the spear is the meteor itself, and the dots on its head, the white hailstones, *milarik*, at the Jalboa headland (Pl. 91E). The shaft of the spear is curved to represent the path of the meteor.

The Club, Barlait. Plate 130C illustrates the club, *barlait*, used by *Tjambuwal* to kill the rock cod, *akurata*, after he has speared it. On both sides of the club is a painting of the thunder-man with a club in each hand.³¹ The curving groups of cross-hatching represent the clouds, *wulmu*.

The Ceremonial Object, Munan. The aborigines believe the curved clouds, *wulmu*, always rest on the head of *Tjambuwal*, the thunder-man (Pl. 90D). These clouds are represented in the *dua* ceremonies by a boomerang-shaped piece of wood called the *munan*.

Plate 130G illustrates the obverse side of the *munan*. Reading from the right, panel *a* indicates new clouds forming after a thunderstorm, and panels *b*, *c* and *d*, clouds which are heavy with rain.

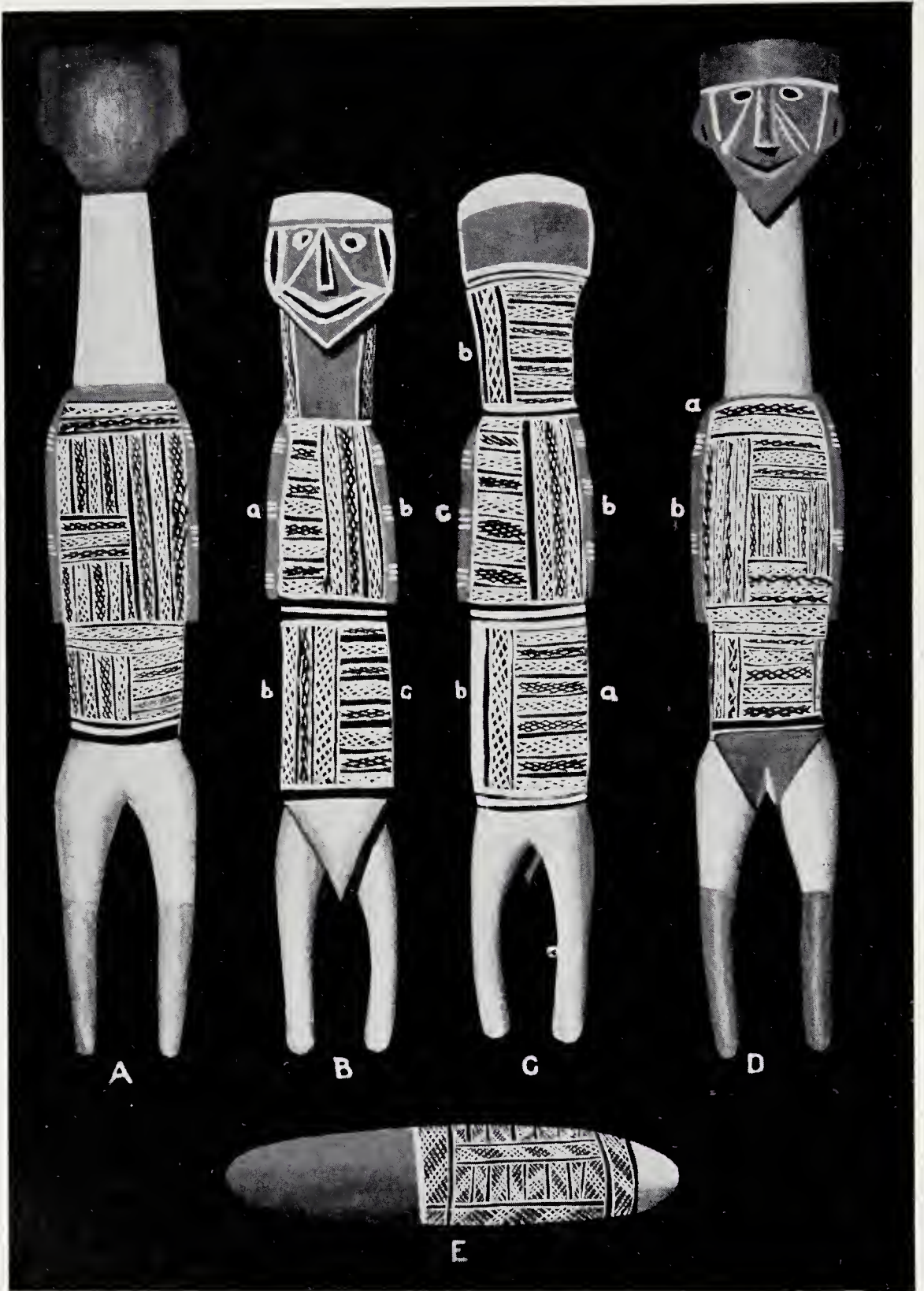
On the reverse side, Pl. 130H, reading from the right, the curving cross-hatched lines, *a*, symbolize the white tops of clouds, and the black rectangle, *b*, a dark-coloured nimbus cloud about to discharge its rain. On the next panel, *c*, the parallel longitudinal lines picture falling rain; the curving lines on the next panel, *d*, more clouds; and the parallel lines, *e*, spent thunder-clouds developing afresh.

The Yam, Bualku or Bawal. In the Yirrkalla myth, the fragments of the *burungunda* club, on entering the ground, are changed into a yam called *bualku*. In the *Tjambuwal* myth of Arnhem Bay (p. 289) the same yam is called *bawal*.

29. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), Pl. 6A and p. 44, figure and describe this club as a yam.

30. The myth, p. 284, relates that the stench of the decaying fish, ascending into the sky, creates more thunder-clouds.

31. See also bark painting, Pl. 90B.



Jean Truran

PLATE 131. Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla

A, D The woman, Madalait B, C The man, Djungkao E The yam, bualko

Plate 131E illustrates the edible yam, *bualku* or *bawal*.³² The cross-hatched panels, according to my informants, refer to the marks on the skin of the yam. It is likely, however, that they have a deeper meaning.

*The Man, Djunggao, the Woman, Madalait, and their Ceremonial
Objects*

I collected two carved and painted figures, one of *Djunggao* and one of his sister, *Madalait*.³³ In addition, the aborigines made a number of objects belonging to the ceremonies of *Djunggao* and *Madalait*. They were: the music stick of *Djunggao*; the music stick of *Madalait*; the digging stick of *Madalait*; a ceremonial object associated with the lizard, *tjunda*; the carved figure of the lizard, *tjunda*.

The Carved Figure of Djunggao. Plate 131B, C illustrates the obverse and reverse sides of the figure of *Djunggao*.³⁴

On Pl. 131B the bands of cross-hatching at *a* represent *Djunggao's* camp among the sand-hills at Jelangbara, a locality north of the entrance to Port Bradshaw, and those at *c*, the camp of his sister *Madalait*.³⁵ The parallel panels at *b* represent the soft sand which ran from under the feet of the brother and sister as they walked about among the drifting sand-hills.

On the reverse side of the figure (Pl. 131C) the meanings of the decorations are similar to those on the obverse. *Djunggao's* camp is at *a*, and *Madalait's* at *c*. The designs at *b, b, b*, symbolize both the familiar running sand design and the parallel sand-hills at Jelangbara.

The Carved Figure of Madalait. Plate 131A, D illustrates the obverse and reverse side of the carved figure of *Madalait*.³⁶ The cross-hatched panels on the shoulders at *a*, Pl. 131D, have two meanings, the lighter coloured panels being the waves breaking on the shore at Bilapinja Island, and the darker panels, lines of seaweed in the water. Both the waves and the seaweed were the subject of a song by *Djunggao*. The designs on the body at *b* represent the light on the crests of the waves which attracted the attention of *Djunggao* at Bilapinja Island. The remainder of the painted decorations picture the marks of the dried salt-water on the body of *Madalait*.

The Music Stick of Djunggao. Plate 132E, F illustrates the music stick³⁷ used by *Djunggao* when, in the creation period, he performed a ceremony at Jelangbara, near Port Bradshaw.

32. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), Pl. 6B, p. 43, describe a ceremonial object illustrating the *kanei* yam. This is possibly another representation of the *bualku* or *bawal* yam.

33. Berndt (1952), p. 25, illustrates sketches which, he says, are copies of aboriginal drawings (not reproduced) showing Djanggawul (my *Djunggao*) with a particularly long penis, and Miralaidj (my *Madalait*) with a greatly elongated clitoris. My carved figures of *Djunggao* and *Madalait*, Pl. 131A, B, C, D, do not show these characteristics.

34. See p. 273 for complete myth.

35. The aborigines pointed out that both on this figure and on the bark painting (Pl. 85E) the camps of the brother and sister were always some distance apart. In other words, they did not sleep together.

36. See p. 273 for complete myth.

37. These music sticks were made and used in pairs. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), Pl. 4B, p. 46, describe and figure one relating to the goanna (probably the same as my lizard, *tjunda*).

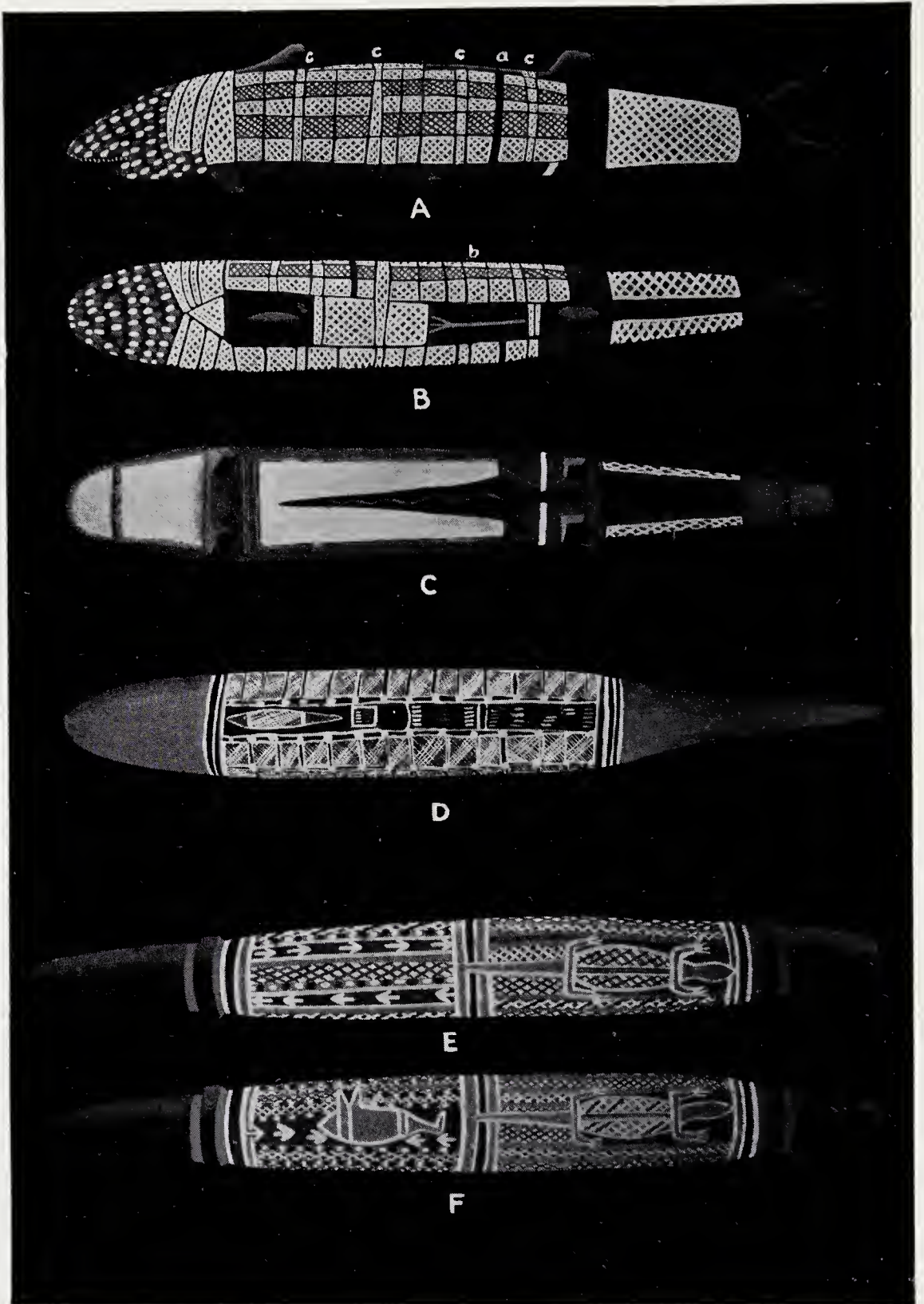


PLATE 132. Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla
 A, B, C The shark, mana D The mosquito—Milingimbi
 E, F The music stick of Djungkao

Jean Truan

On the obverse side the lizard, *tjunda* (Pl. 132F), is pictured in the right-hand panel. In the left is a water-fowl, *buorta*, with its tracks. When *Djungkao* and *Madalait* saw the water-bird feeding on the seeds of the swamp grass, they said: 'We will "sing" the bird, *buorta*, and the tracks that it makes in the mud, so that they will be our mark forever.' Since that day the bird and its tracks have belonged to the *Djungkao* sacred objects.

The dots on either side of the bird are the grass-seeds it eats, and the cross-hatching, the leaves of that food plant.

The lizard occupies the right-hand panel on the reverse side of the music stick (Pl. 132E). In the left-hand panel, the dots are the seeds and the cross-hatched area, the leaves of the food plant of the bird, *buorta*. The tracks are those of the same bird.

The Music Stick of Madalait. Plate 133E, F pictures the music stick of the woman, *Madalait*.

On the obverse side (Pl. 133E) *tjuuda*, the lizard, occupies the left-hand panel and his tracks, with the traditional pattern of the soft sand running down the hill, the right-hand panel.

On the reverse side (Pl. 133F) the lizard is in the right-hand panel, and in the left the mark in the sand made by *Djungkao's* canoe when he pulled it up on the beach at Jelangbara. The short vertical lines indicate the breaking waves at the same place.

The Walking or Digging Stick of Djungkao and his Sister. Plate 134C, D represents one of the walking or digging sticks of *Djungkao* and his sister, *Madalait*, with which they made the sacred wells.³⁸

In the centre of the obverse side (Pl. 134D) is the now familiar design of the lizard and the running sand. The long vertical line on the upper panel, *a*, symbolizes the mark made in the sand by *Djungkao's* canoe as he pulled it up on the beach at Jelangbara.³⁹ The short transverse lines on either side of *a* are the waves breaking on the beach. The herring-bone designs on the lower panels on both sides of the digging stick are the leaves and branches of *muringi* trees (probably *Casuarina equisetifolia*) which now grow in the sand-hills at Port Bradshaw where *Djungkao* and his sister pushed their digging sticks into the ground.⁴⁰

The Ceremonial Object. Figure 68A, B illustrates both sides of a *dua* engraved ceremonial object belonging to the mythical man, *Djungkao*, and the lizard, *tjunda*.

The design on the panel *a* of A pictures the tracks of the lizard on the side of the sand-hill, and the parallel lines on panel *b*, the series of sand-hills which *Djungkao* 'sang' at Port Bradshaw.⁴¹

38. Berndt (1952), p. 1, states that the walking stick of *Djungkao* is a symbolic penis. When describing the walking stick (Pl. 134C, D) to me, the aborigines did not state that it was associated in any way with the male sex organ.

39. Myth, p. 273.

40. This is possibly the same as the stick, *mauwulan*, carried by the sun-woman during her journey across the sky, p. 273.

41. Myth, p. 273.

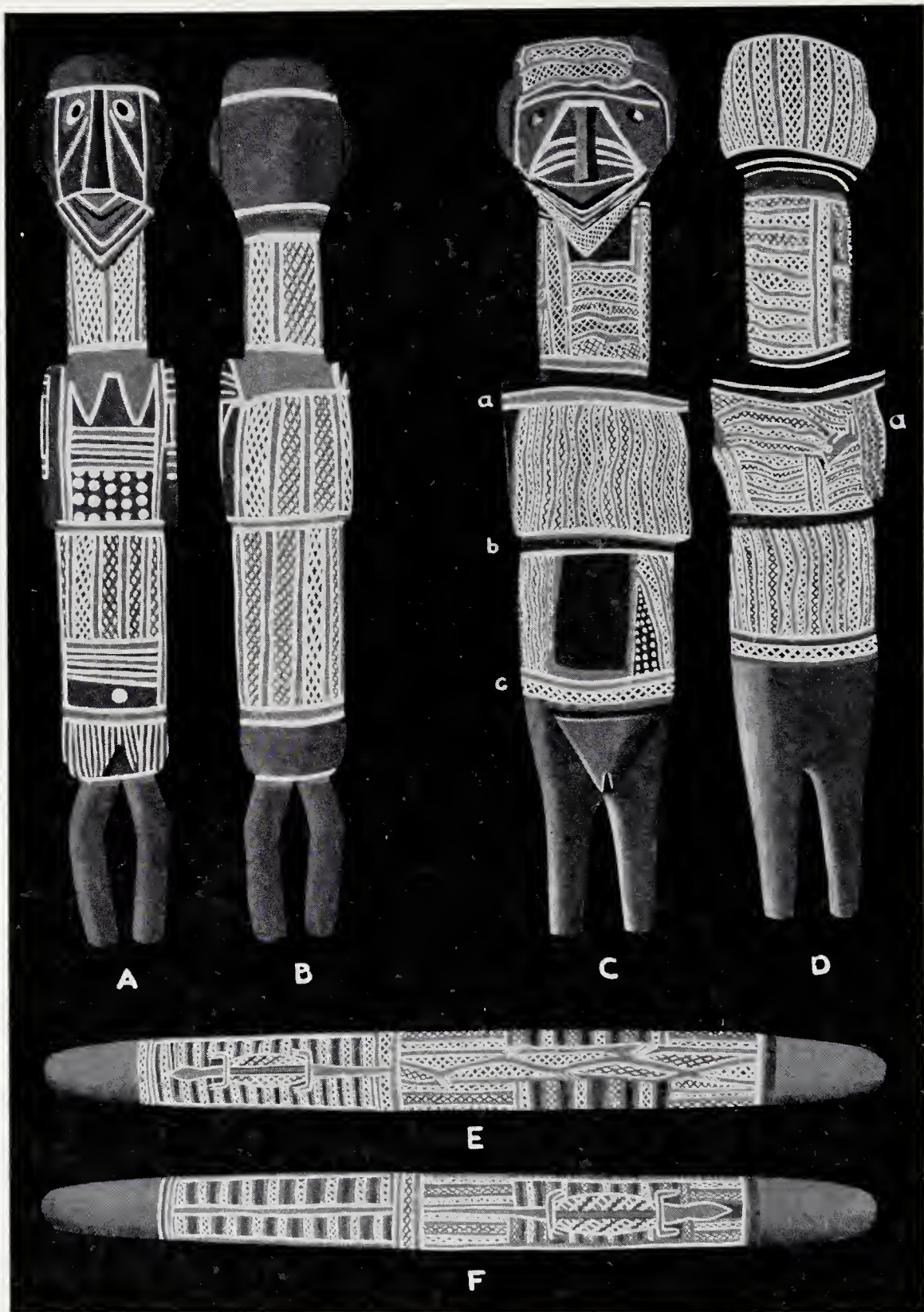


PLATE 133. Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla
 A, B The woman, Bunbulama C, D The woman, Malwulwi
 E, F The music stick of Madalait

On the reverse side, B, the designs *c* and *d* symbolize the lines of light on the crest of the waves and the mark made in the wet sand by the bottom of the canoe as *Djungkao* pulled it up on the beach at Jelangbara.

The Lizard, Tjunda. Plate 134B is a *dua* carved figure of the lizard, *tjunda*, seen by *Djungkao* and his sister, *Madalait*, at Jelangbara, north of Port Bradshaw.⁴² The cross-hatched parallel panels on the neck and the shoulders are the parallel sand-hills 'sung' by *Djungkao* at Jelangbara; the zigzag line, the track of the lizard; and the groups of transverse lines on either side, the loose sand running from under its feet as it walked along the crest of a sand-hill.

The Man, Banaitja, or Laitjun

While *Banaitja* was resting on the bottom of the Duluruwaltjalapa swamp, after he had been speared by the aborigines of Blue Mud Bay, he painted designs on every part of his body.⁴³ Later, when he rose from the water in the form of *Laitjun*, he decreed that these designs should belong to the individual *jiritja matas* (language groups) of north-eastern Arnhem Land.⁴⁴ Some of these *mata* designs are painted on the carved figure of *Laitjun*.

Plate 135A, B illustrates the carved and painted figure of *Laitjun*, the transformed *Banaitja*, whose body is covered with the *jiritja mata* designs mentioned in the myth. He is wearing feather ornaments on his beard and arms, and is carrying, in his right hand, the bark bundle⁴⁵ (later called *laitjun* or *banaitja*) with which he beat the ground to call the aborigines together. *Laitjun* is shown with a sub-incised penis.⁴⁶ Although the decorations on the head and face of the carved figure of *Laitjun* have no ceremonial meaning, those on the front, back and legs represent some, but not all, of the various *jiritja matas* (language groups) of north-eastern Arnhem Land.

a, belonging to the *dalwongu mata* of Blue Mud Bay, refers to hives of wild bees which flew from the Matamataui swamps, at Blue Mud Bay, to Milingimbi, so that they would not be destroyed by a bush-fire.⁴⁷

b, a design similar to that of the *dalwongu*, belongs to the *manaitja mata* of Blue Mud Bay.⁴⁸ It refers to totemic honey and honeycomb in unidentified swamps at Blue Mud Bay.

42. Myth, p. 273.

43. For complete myth, see p. 279.

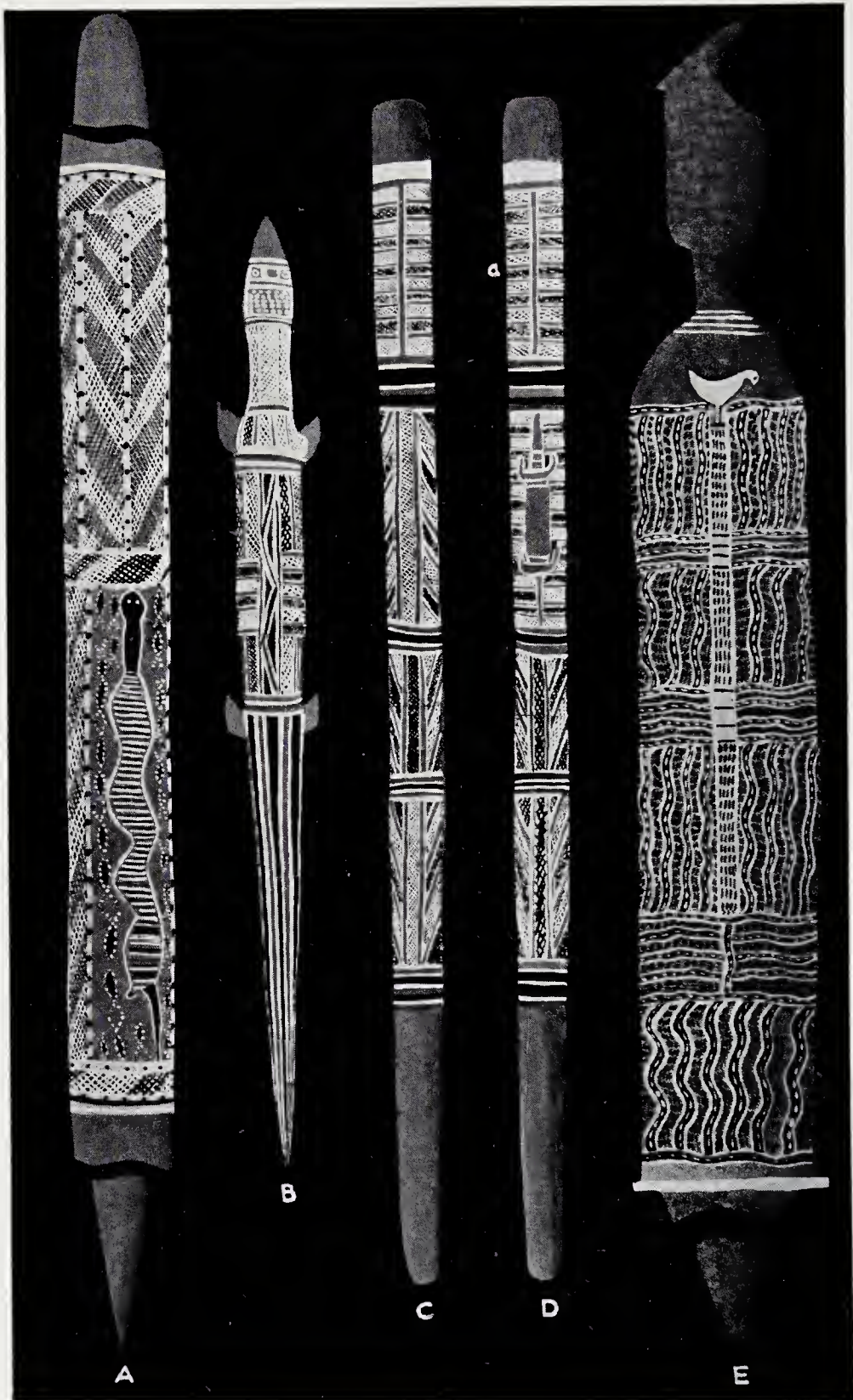
44. For description of language groups, *matas*, and clan groups, *malas*, see p. 406.

45. This is similar to the *alukwira* bark bundle used in the *arawaltja* ceremonies of Groote Eylandt, Pl. 16C. Warner (1937), p. 502, calls similar bark bundles *banitja*.

46. As mentioned previously, p. 279, this would suggest that the myth of *Banaitja* or *Laitjun* originated in an area where sub-incision was practised.

47. Bark painting, Pl. 93B. Warner (1937), p. 43, lists wild bees, among other totems, as belonging to the *dalwongu* language group. Berndt (1948), p. 318, states that the design refers to a fresh-water weed. Later, Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 23, correct this and refer to the *dalwongu* as a *mata* associated with the *wanba* bird.

48. Bark painting, Pl. 121D; also a painted *jiritja* skull, Pl. 101B, C. Berndt (1948), p. 318, gives as its meaning, bees and honeycomb. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 23, list *manaitja* as a *mala* (clan) group instead of a *mata* (language) group. This may be correct, for when asking the aborigines to which *mata* they belonged, they sometimes gave the name of their *mala*. Our knowledge of the *mata* and the *mala* is incomplete and confused.



Jean Truran

PLATE 134. Carved and painted figures, Yirrkalla and Milingimbi

- A The serpent, wununga B The lizard, tjunda
 C, D The walking stick of Djunggao and Madalait E The night-bird, karawak

The fact that designs *a* and *b* are similar in appearance and linked in the myths suggests that the two *matas* are closely associated.

c, a cross-hatched panel of the *lamuriri mata* of Cape Arnhem, represents a reef in the sea.

d, a cross-hatched panel between *c* and *e*, represents the open sea (locality unknown). It belongs to the *maku-unulmer mata*.

e, a cross-hatched panel belonging to the *malaknu mata*, represents the salt-water side of a totemic place at Blue Mud Bay.

Designs *c*, *d* and *e* are not listed by any previous investigator, nor are they present on any of the bark paintings. This, coupled with the fact that the artist could not provide additional data about them, would suggest that the information is incomplete and should be accepted with reserve.

f, a series of lozenge-shaped designs, belongs to the *mangalili mata* of Blue Mud Bay.⁴⁹ It represents the flower, leaf and bulb of an unidentified water-lily, *jouku*.

g, almost identical to the *mangalili* design, belongs to the *wonguri mata* of Blue Mud Bay. It also represents the water-lily bulb, *jouku*.⁵⁰

h, a line of lozenge-shaped designs on the left leg, belonging to the *madarlpa mata* of Blue Mud Bay, pictures the toredo worm, *milka*, at Blue Mud Bay.⁵¹ The design of the *madarlpa mata* is similar to that used in the fire symbols in the bark painting of the bandicoot, Pl. 116B.

j, on the right leg, belongs to the *gumaitj mata* of Caledon Bay and is associated with the myth of the crocodile, *barou*, the bird, *djiriku*, fire and paper-bark trees.⁵²

k, the upper design on the back of *Laitjun*, belongs to an unidentified *mata*, *baijaijur*, near Milingimbi. It represents a hive of wild honey.

m, the lower design, belongs to *jerkurunga* (Warner's Yaernungo) *mata* of the Wessel Islands.⁵³

49. This design, bearing the same meaning, was used on the body painting of a *jiritja* youth who underwent circumcision at Yirrkalla (Pl. 129C). It is also engraved on a smoking pipe, Fig. 59C. Berndt (1948), p. 318, lists the design as *mangalilji*, meaning a log under water. Later, Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 23, correct this statement and list the *mangalilji* as a *mata* associated with the *laitjlaitj* parrot. Warner does not mention this language group.

50. Warner (1937), p. 42, lists the *wangurri* language group, *mata*, as north of Caledon Bay, but his totems do not include the water-lily. Berndt (1948), p. 318, records that the *wonguri* design refers to the toredo worm, while later, with Elkin (1950), p. 23, they list *wonguri* as a *mata* design referring to a *laitjlaitj* parrot.

51. Warner (1937), p. 49, lists the *mardarpa* as a clan in the Blue Mud Bay area, not a language group. Its important high totems are crocodile and fire. Berndt (1948), p. 318, records that the *madarlpa* design refers to fire or ashes inside seaweed and mud. Later, in collaboration with Elkin (1950), p. 23, however, he lists it as the *mararlpa mata* which, they say, refers to the *wanba* bird.

52. This *gumaitj* design is used on a bark painting of the crocodile, Pl. 119B; of the bush-fire and paper-bark trees, Pl. 93B; on the engraved pipe of the crocodile, Fig. 59C; and on a body painting, Pl. 129C. Warner (1937), p. 42, lists the *komaitj* (*gumaitj*) *mata* of Port Bradshaw and Cape Arnhem. This is no doubt a section of the Caledon Bay *mata*. Berndt (1948), p. 318, records *gumaitj* designs, some of which relate to fire and honey, and the others to paper-bark. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), p. 23, alter this and state that the *gumaitj mata* means the east wind.

53. Warner (1937), p. 47, records the totems of the *yaernungo mata*. I did not gather any information on the subject.

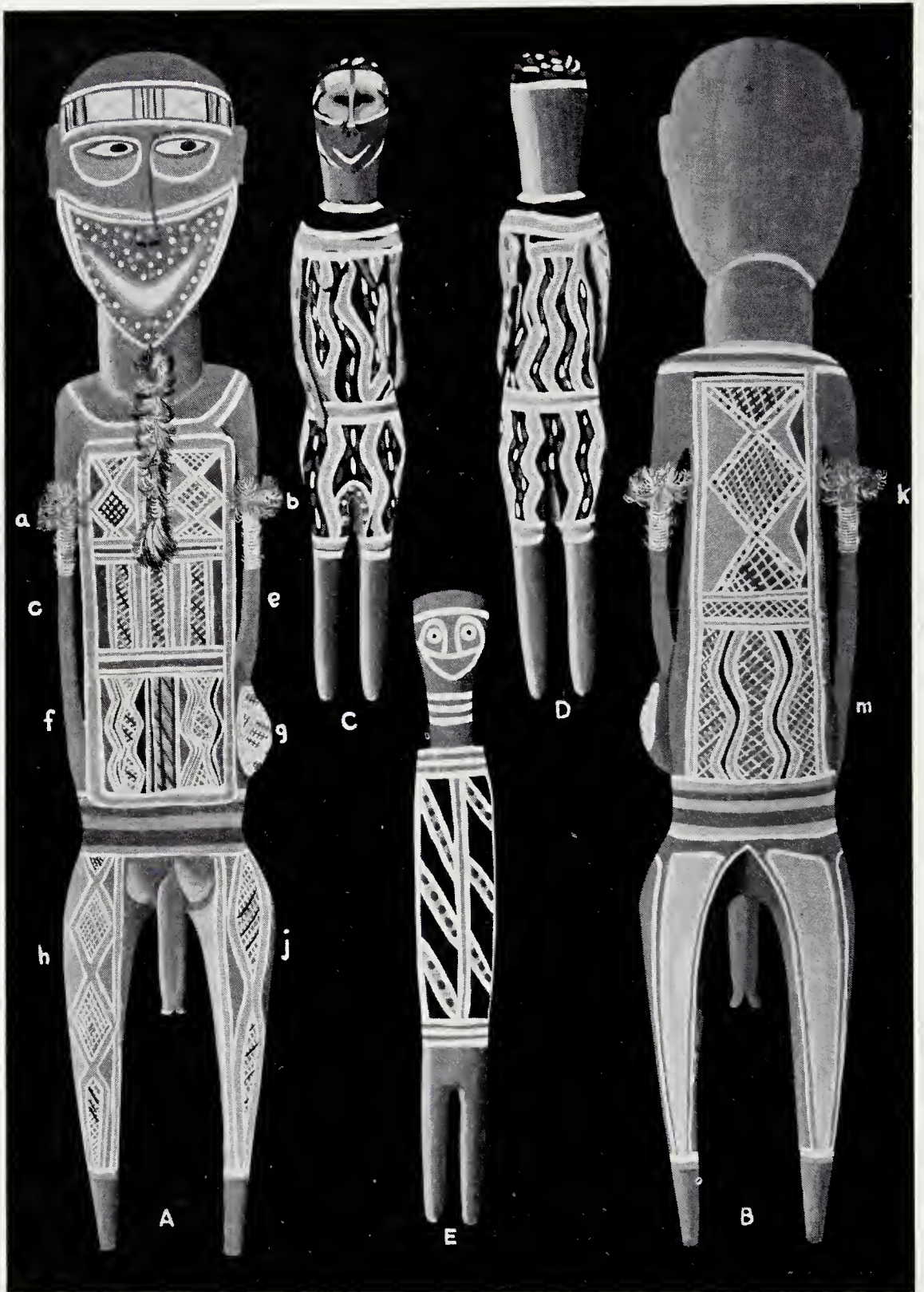


PLATE 135. Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla *Rosemary Dunnell*

A, B The man, Laitjun or Banaitja C, D The woman, Wurati-laku
 E The Mokoï, Wulu-wulu

Staff Associated with the Laitjun and Banaitja Ceremonies. This (Pl. 136A, G) is used in some unidentified manner in the *Laitjun-Banaitja* ceremonies belonging to a totemic stream, Duluru-apwa, near Blue Mud Bay. The designs on both sides of the staff have a similar meaning.

At *a*, Pl. 136A, is a *jiritja tinimbu* fish. Above its head is a rain-cloud created by the fish, and to the left, a totemic rock also associated with the same creature.

The central line in panel *b* is a watercourse at Duluru-apwa, and the transverse cross-hatched panels, the grass growing along its banks.

Panel *c* refers to water-lilies, *jouku*, which grow in the swamp at *d*. In panel *e* are more water-lilies.⁵⁴

The Woman, Bunbulama

Plate 133A, B depicts the obverse and reverse sides of a carved figure of a mythical woman, *Bunbulama*,⁵⁵ who, with her brother, *Wuluwait*, is associated with rain-making.⁵⁶

The cap on the head of the figure, Pl. 133A, represents the swamp-grass which, in place of hair, grows on the scalp of *Bunbulama*. The double triangles below the shoulders are the breasts, and the transverse parallel lines below them the body scars used as decoration by both men and women. The series of white dots across the upper part of the abdomen symbolize storm-clouds and the vertical cross-hatched panels, below, rain falling from them. The navel is shown as a white dot and the pubic hairs as a series of vertical parallel lines immediately below. The vertical panels on the reverse side, Pl. 133B, symbolize falling rain.

The Woman, Malwulwi

Plate 133C, D represents the ancestral woman, *Malwulwi*, who during creation times was drowned near Blue Mud Bay.⁵⁷ The wavy cross-hatched panels over her body and neck symbolize the high tide that overcame her, and the bands across the shoulders, abdomen and hips, the marks made by the water on the totemic tree (the transformed body of *Malwulwi*) at different seasons of the year. Her distended abdomen, due to pregnancy, is indicated by the black rectangle in the front. *Malwulwi's* dog, the little rat, *nik-nik*, is shown at *a*, near the right shoulder blade on the back of the figure, Pl. 121A.

The Woman, Muralunangau, of Bremer Island

The *dua* woman, *Muralunangau*, was expert in finding the edible yam, *maulka*. One day, feeling lonely, she picked some of the *maulka* flowers, placed them in her hair, painted her face white and, visiting another woman, *Bunbulama* (Pl. 133A, B), who lived near by, asked her to join in a dance. To this *Bunbulama* readily agreed, she in turn decorating herself with the blossoms of

54. This design is the same as that of the *mangalili mata* of Blue Mud Bay, Fig. 64K.

55. See also bark painting, Pl. 94C, and bark figure, Pl. 65C, D.

56. Warner (1937), p. 218, describes a method of rain-making which resembles that used by the aborigines of Yirkalla.

57. Myth, p. 431.

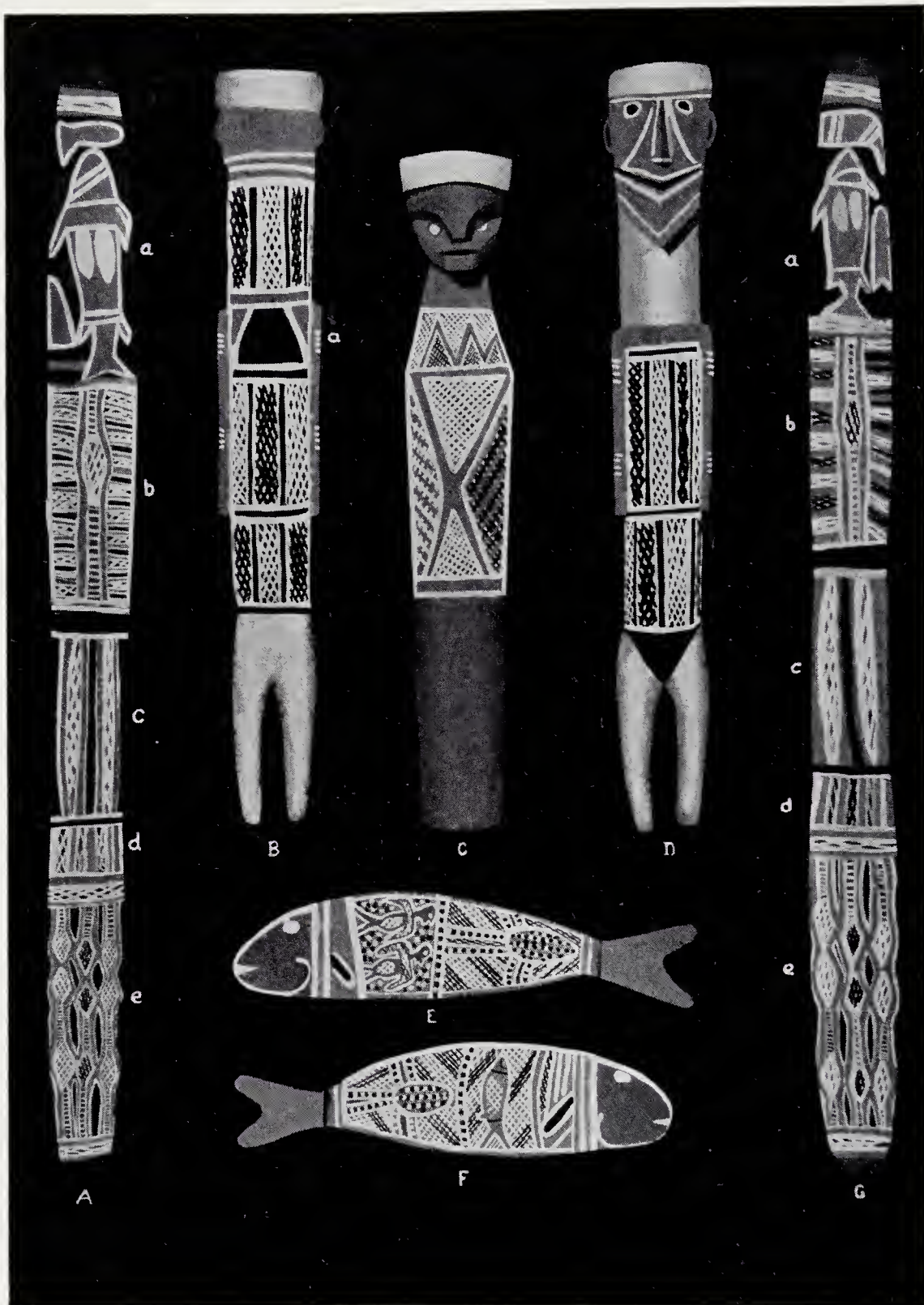


PLATE 136. Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla

A, G A staff, Banaitja ceremonies B, D The woman, Muralunangau
 C The man, Wurumu E, F, The fish, naruwilja

another yam, *banumin*. But each woman became so engrossed in her own dance that she forgot about the other, and travelled in a different direction from that of her companion. *Bunbulama* finished her dance at Melville Bay where, in company with her husband, *Wuluwait*,⁵⁸ they now entertain the spirits of *dua* dead whilst they are on their way to Purelko.⁵⁹ *Muralunangau*, on the other hand, danced her way to Bremer Island. But when *Muralunangau* was making camp she noticed the flowers with which she had decorated herself had all wilted. She became so sad and wept so violently that the sound of her grief caused the *timaru* wind to blow.⁶⁰

At the present time, when the rainy season is nearing its end the women in the camp wail in unison, believing that the sound of their grief, like that of *Muralunangau*, will cause the wet-season wind, *bara*, to stop and the *timaru* wind to blow.⁶¹

The white cap on the head of *Muralunangau*, Pl. 136B, D, indicates the paint used when she decorated herself in readiness for her dance with *Bunbulama*. The yellow face on Pl. 136D is symbolic of the colour of the totemic clay-pan of the woman at Bremer Island. The black rectangle at *a*, Pl. 136B, is *Muralunangau's* carrying-bag. The cross-hatched panels on *Muralunangau's* body indicate falling rain.⁶²

The Winds of Yirrkalla. *Bara* is a north-westerly *dua* wind which continues throughout the rainy season, extending from November to March. This is a time of scarcity for the aborigines, because the continuous rains, high humidity and heavy storms not only spoil most of the food, but prevent fishing.

Timaru, another *dua* wind, blows from the east-south-east and immediately succeeds the *bara*. The plants start to bear fruit and the underground tubers to mature during the period of this wind. The mythical woman, *Muralunangau*, of Bremer Island was responsible for the first *timaru* wind.⁶³ As mentioned previously, the aboriginal women endeavour to start the *timaru* wind by means of concerted wailing.

The *jiritja* wind, *lunguruma*, which blows from a northerly direction, is sent to the aborigines of Yirrkalla by the spirits of the *jiritja* 'heaven', Nalkuma. *Lunguruma* brings many coco-nuts, lengths of bamboo and sometimes even Melanesian canoes;⁶⁴ all of these are looked upon by the Yirrkalla aborigines as gifts from the spirits of Nalkuma.⁶⁵ Food is plentiful during the period of this wind.

58. See myth associated with bark figure of *Bunbulama*, Pl. 65C, D.

59. See myth, journey of *dua* dead, p. 325. 60. See details of Groote Eylandt winds, p. 94.

61. The *timaru* is the wind following the wet season, a time of scarcity. It ushers in a period when the fruits start to ripen and the underground tubers mature.

62. As there is no mention of rain in the myth of *Muralunangau* it is not clear why these designs are painted on her body.

63. See myth of woman, *Muralunangau*, p. 433. 64. See carved pipe, p. 308.

65. Berndt (1948), p. 94, mentions that 'at the time of the north-east winds [no doubt *lunguruma*], just after the wet monsoonal season, coco-nuts, cones, long pods, bread fruit and timber, with an occasional canoe (including some of the outrigger variety) are washed up on the mainland beaches and are said to have been sent by the spirits that inhabit Badu.' Berndt's Badu is my Nalkuma.

*Mamarika*⁶⁶ (*jiritja*), from the south-east, the major wind of the dry season, is not, during its early stages, a time of plenty. Towards its close, however, the cycad fruit, *natu*, ripens and provides the aborigines with ample food.

Following the *mamarika* is the *tjeleton*, a *jiritja* wind of short duration which blows first from the north-east, changing to the north-westerly *bara*. The cycad fruit is plentiful during this period.

Several other winds of short duration are recognized by the men of Yirkalla—*djala* (southerly), *jauara* (south-west), and *ritain* (south-south-west). It is surprising that many of these winds were not mentioned by the Groote Eylandters.

Female Figure, Unidentified

Plate 137C, D is a carved wooden figure similar in form to that of the pregnant woman, *Malwulwi* (Pl. 133C, D). I did not collect either the symbolism of the designs or the associated myth.

The Man, Naruwilja

During *bumun* (creation) times there lived at Biobajini, on the Wessel Islands, a fair-skinned *jiritja* man, *Naruwilja*. Not being satisfied with this human existence, he transformed himself into a fish, still bearing the name of *naruwilja*. But as that did not please him he tried the life of an octopus, *mainda*, only to find as little satisfaction in that condition. Finally he changed himself into a flying fox, *matur*, and has remained in that form ever since.

The locality in which the flying foxes live at the Wessel Islands is forbidden to all. Should anyone trespass on their nesting place, and in particular kill a flying fox, the spirit of the creature will change itself into an octopus, enter the body of the miscreant, wrap its tentacles around his heart and kill him.⁶⁷

Plate 136E, F is the carved and painted figure of the transformed man *Naruwilja*. In the right-hand panel of Pl. 136E is the octopus, *mainda*, and in the left, two flying foxes, *matur*. The fish, *naruwilja*, occupies the right-hand panel of Pl. 136F and the octopus, *mainda*, the left-hand panel.

The Macassan Woman, Jubara

Plate 137A, B is the wooden figure of a woman, *Jubara*, who, many years ago, befriended an old aboriginal, *Amalatja*, when he was taken by trepangers to a Macassan village called Jumaina.⁶⁸ This figure is the work of *Mungerau*, the son of *Amalatja*.

66. See Groote Eylandt myths of *bara* (north-west) and *mamariga* (south-east) winds, p. 94.

67. Although I did not obtain the specific information, it is likely that this myth is told to the younger men so that they will not eat the flesh of the flying fox which, in many parts of the Northern Territory, is regarded by the aborigines as 'old man tucker'. There are numerous references to the food prohibitions of the young men in the myths of the Liverpool River area.

68. See description of a Yirkalla painting of Macassan women weaving, by the same artist, Pl. 93A. The Berndts (1949), p. 213, describe a number of non-sacred carved figures of Macassan and *Baijini* people, most of which had been carved by *Mungerau*. Their figure on Pl. 2, Fig. 3, is wearing a similar decoration to *Jubara*.

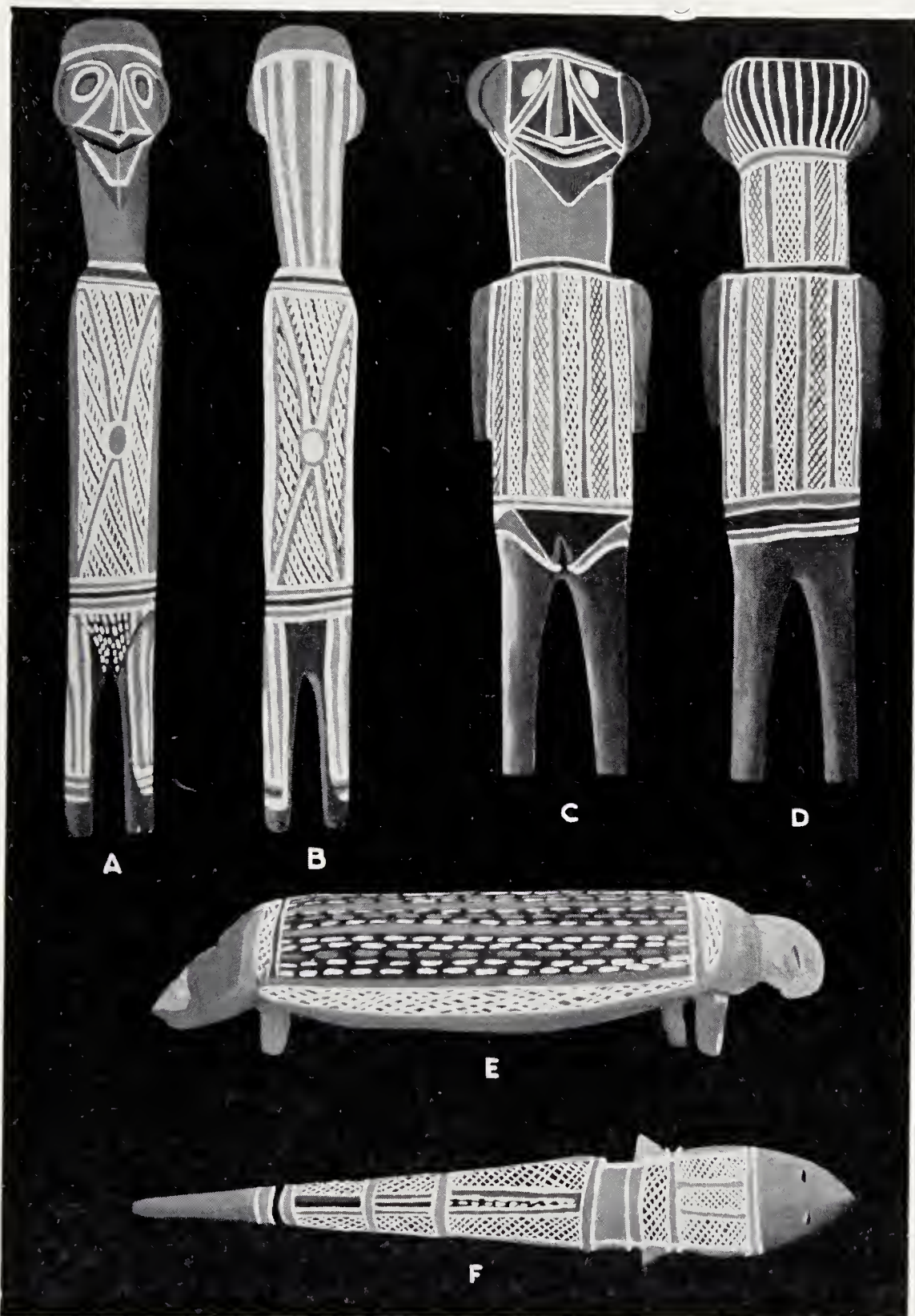


PLATE 137. Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla

Betty Hunter

A, B The Macassan woman

C, D Woman, unidentified

E The ehidna, tjiramuna

F Shark, unidentified

The cross-hatching on the back and front of the figure indicates the tunic worn by the woman and the pattern on the legs, the stripes on her short trousers. The central disc is a money bag, held in place by the diagonal strings. The artist has indicated *Jubara's* long hair by a series of vertical lines.

The Wuruma Man

Plate 136C illustrates a mortuary post, called *wuruma*, which, according to my informants, is similar to those the visiting Macassan trepangers placed on the graves of their dead.⁶⁹ Until recently men of the *jiritja* moiety placed similar posts on the graves of their dead. Both Warner and the Berndts⁷⁰ describe some of the customs associated with their use.

The Woman, Wurati-laku

A mythical woman, *Wurati-laku*, who once lived on the Amakula River, Groote Eylandt,⁷¹ became dissatisfied with her surroundings and started on a journey round the island. She camped at many places, at the Angoroko River, at Amalipa, at north-western Groote Eylandt, at Wangu-garipa, near Umbakumba, at Algirita, Lake Hubert, making her final camp at Natira, near Central Hill. Each of her camps became extensive outcrops of rocky boulders. *Wurati-laku*, afraid lest men other than her husband might see her, always ran away on their approach, covering herself with a sheet of bark. Until recently the women of Groote Eylandt copied the actions of the mythical woman, *Wurati-laku*. Whenever a strange man approached the camp they ran away, holding around their bodies sheets of hinged bark, called *inukumba*.⁷²

Plate 135C, D illustrates the carved figure of *Wurati-laku*, the designs on the body representing those painted on the hinged sheet of bark, *inukumba*, which she always carried. The dots on her head represent the flower, *latulat*, she placed in her hair.

The Spirit Woman, Wulu-wulu

A number of these spirit women, or *Mokoi*, *Wulu-wulu*, live with a male *Mokoi*, *Kultana*, in the Gurila jungle, near Port Bradshaw. The *Wulu-wulu* assist the spirits of the *jiritja* dead on their journey to the *jiritja* 'heaven', Nalkuma,⁷³ by giving them as a passport the bean of a *menin* vine.

The central line on the carved figure of *Wulu-wulu*, Pl. 135E, is the trunk of the *menin* vine, the diagonals, the branches, and the ovals within the diagonals, the bean, *gurung-guru*,⁷⁴ which *Wulu-wulu* gives to the travelling spirits of the dead.

69. See origin of carved figures, p. 416.

70. Warner (1937), p. 434; Berndts (1949), p. 216. 71. See map, Fig. 4.

72. Tindale (1925), p. 71, mentions the strict seclusion of the aboriginal women at Groote Eylandt.

73. Bark painting, Pl. 100D.

74. Pl. 100A.

The Wawalik Sisters

In the fragment of the *wawalik* ceremonies⁷⁵ which we witnessed at Yirrkalla the aborigines used two ceremonial poles. One, Pl. 138B, represents the elder sister whose blood, after she had given birth to a child, offended the serpent, *jurlungur*, which lived in the well, Mirrimina; the other, Pl. 138A, represents the younger sister.⁷⁶

The Ceremonial Poles. Plate 138B is the complete design on the sacred pole belonging to the elder *Wawalik* sister. The strip of frayed bark on top is her hair and the curving designs, the blood caused by the birth of her child.

Plate 138A belongs to the younger *Wawalik* sister. The lower triangular designs picture the water in the sacred well of *jurlungur*, the serpent. The parallel vertical lines in the upper portion indicate the water flowing into the well.

2. CEREMONIAL OBJECTS FROM NORTH-EASTERN ARNHAM LAND

The Fresh-water Tortoise, Mimala

This bull-roarer, shaped like a paddle, belongs to Diawirinja, west of Arnhem Bay, the totem place of the fresh-water tortoise, *Mimala*. The bull-roarer is so sacred that even its sound must not be heard by the women.

During a burial ceremony at Diawirinja in creation time the fresh-water tortoise, *Mimala*, then a man, made four bull-roarers, similar to the one illustrated, and buried them in those parts of the ceremonial ground over which everyone would dance. Though the women were assisting in the burial rituals, they, of course, were unaware of the sacred objects under their feet. At the conclusion of the rituals *Mimala* hunted the women away, dug the bull-roarers out of the sand and threw them into a nearby waterhole, where they have since been transformed into four large trees. Similar bull-roarers, after they have been used in the present-day *mimala* ceremonies of Diawirinja, are thrown into a sacred waterhole forbidden to the women. Being made of hard, durable wood, it is only necessary, the following year, to take the bull-roarers from the water and re-decorate them.⁷⁷

Plate 144A, B is the obverse and reverse sides of the bull-roarer. The tortoise is shown in panel *a* on B, surrounded by dots indicating the bamboos growing in his totemic swamp. In panel *c* is *Mimala* again, accompanied by an unidentified diving bird with which he is linked in the myth.

Panel *b* on B, and *d*, *e* and *f* on A all picture hives of wild honey, the dots being the bees and the cross-hatched diamonds the honey. The transverse bars, *x*, *x*, *x*, on A and B symbolize the sacred waterhole into which the bull-roarers are thrown at the completion of the *mimala* ceremonies.

75. For more complete myth, see p. 275.

76. Bark painting, Pl. 88A.

77. These and similar sacred objects last for several years under water. If buried in the ground, they would soon be destroyed by termites.



PLATE 138. Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla *Jean Truran*
 A The younger Wawalik sister B The elder Wawalik sister
 C Head of the Chaseling figure D The Chaseling figure

CARVED AND PAINTED FIGURES

The Mosquito Sacred Object

Plate 132D is a sacred object of the mosquito totem of Milingimbi. It belongs to the *dua narra* ceremonies. Collected by F. M. Setzler.

3. CARVED AND PAINTED HUMAN HEADS

The Two Brothers, Bauaramin and Wururunga

The two brothers, *Bauaramin*⁷⁸ and *Wururunga*, set out to kill their enemy, *Djunmundia*, who had previously murdered their father.⁷⁹

Plate 139D, E, A, H illustrates the carved heads of the two brothers, *Bauaramin* and *Wururunga*.

The designs on the face of *Bauaramin*, Pl. 139D, E, and the white line down the nose, which represents the deadly tiger-snake, *dunbania*, are always painted on the face of the aborigines when they are setting out on an avenging expedition. They are known as the 'death-marks'.⁸⁰ The darker cross-hatched panels on the side of the head, Pl. 139D, indicate the base of the thunder-clouds, and the lighter coloured ones, their white tops.

The white dots on the face of *Wururunga*, Pl. 139H, are hail-stones, *milarik*, and the hole at the base of the nose, an attempt to represent a skull, for *Wururunga* has long since been dead.

On the side of the head of *Wururunga*, Pl. 139A, the darker cross-hatched panel represents falling rain, and the lighter coloured ones a hail-storm. The white dots on the side of the head also indicate hail-stones. When these hail-stones fall to the ground in *dua* territory they are sometimes transformed into white stones, *milarik*.⁸¹ The dots on the neck are falling rain, and the white cap, the tops of cumulus clouds.

The Spirit Man, Duwuliana

This *dua Mokoi*, *Duwuliana*, lives in a forest at Arnhem Bay. As his only food is the honey of the wild bees, he carries only a honey basket.⁸²

At the beginning of the dry season the basket is clean, having been well washed by the heavy storms of the wet season. As the dry season advances the basket becomes progressively darker in colour, due to the accumulated honey and dirt, for *Duwuliana* is a careless fellow who never washes his honey basket, knowing that the next wet season will save him the trouble. At the beginning of the dry season the honey in the hives in the trees is a golden-yellow in colour, but it gradually darkens and becomes less pleasant to eat as the season advances. The aborigines blame *Duwuliana* for this change, claiming that if he were more cleanly and washed his basket regularly they would always have clear golden honey.

78. In the myth of the bark painting, Pl. 98A, *Bauaramin* is called *Tjuna-tjuna*.

79. See myth of *Tjuna-tjuna* and *Wururunga*, p. 303.

80. See myth, p. 305.

81. See the white stones, *milarik*, at the totem place of the thunder-man at Jalboa, Pl. 91F.

82. A tightly woven basket which will hold honey.

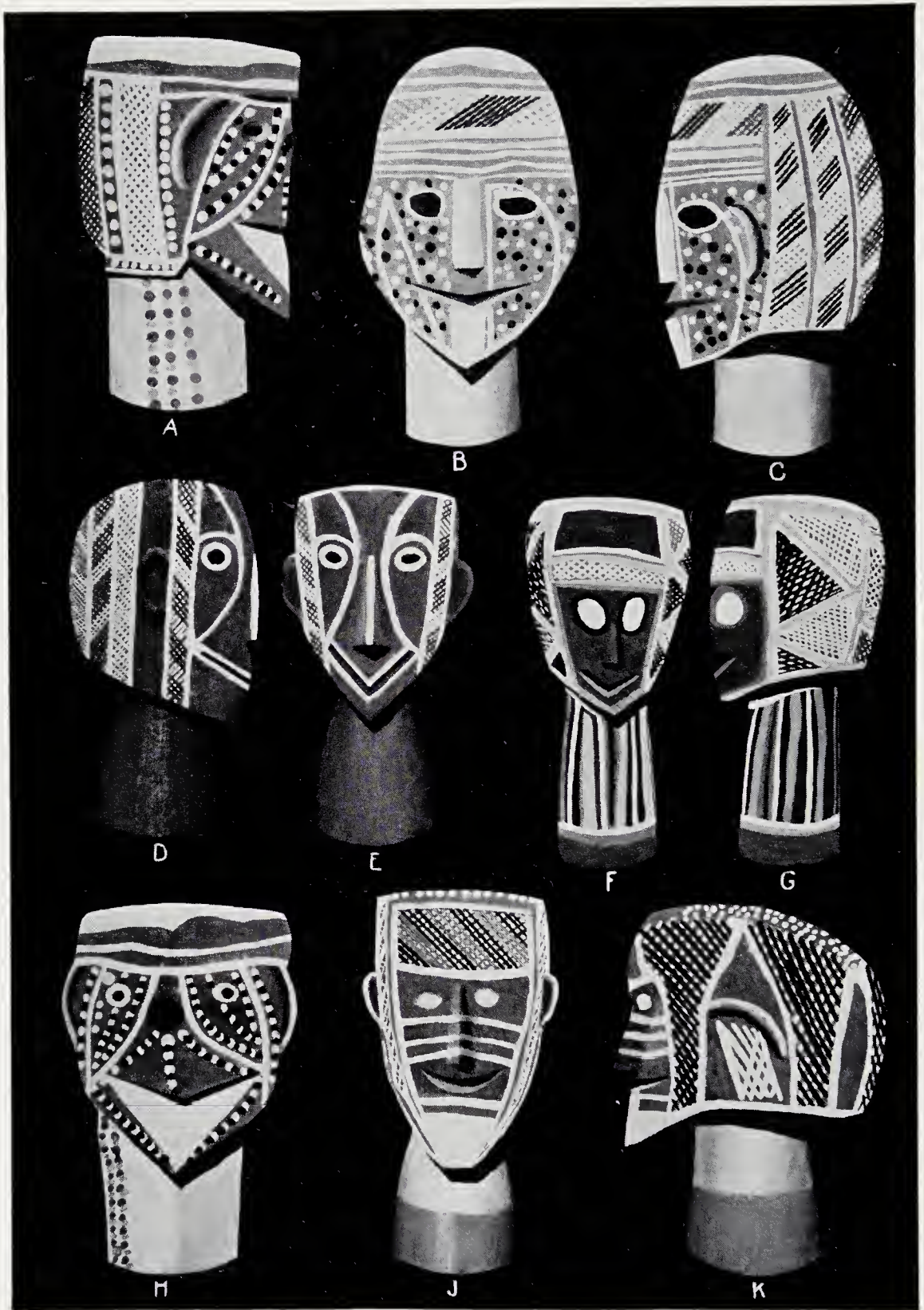


PLATE 139. Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla

A, H The man, Wururunga B, C The man, Duwuliana D, E The man, Bauaramin
 F, G The Baijini, Tankupou J, K The Mokoi, Jindjarai

The designs on the head of *Duwuliana*, Pl. 139B, C, all refer to rain, hail and thunder-clouds. The dots on the face of B are hail-stones, and the cross-hatched panel across the forehead, small clouds. On the side of the head, Pl. 139C, the cross-hatched panels indicate falling rain, and the white crown, the tops of cumulus clouds.

The Baijini Man, Tankupou

Plate 139F, G pictures the carved head of a *Baijini* man, *Tankupou*, who once lived at Port Bradshaw.⁸³ The black rectangle on the forehead, Pl. 139F, is the pillow of *Tankupou*, and the cross-hatched panel beneath, the pillow-slip. The designs on Pl. 139G all refer to the cotton goods owned by the *Baijini*, and the vertical lines on the neck to the posts of the *Baijini* house.

The Baijini Man, Gurumuluna

Gurumuluna was the head man of the *Baijini* visitors to Port Bradshaw. He is now included in the pantheon of mythical beings who created the topography of Port Bradshaw.

Plate 140A, B, C pictures the carved head of *Gurumuluna*. The designs on the forehead, Pl. 140B, indicate a distinguishing badge which, according to my informants, is similar to that worn by a ship's captain. The two triangles in front of the ear, Pl. 140C, are the cotton sheets for *Gurumuluna's* bed, and the cross-hatched rectangle in the same position on Pl. 140A, his pillow. The cross-hatched triangles on the top of the head and behind the ears represent the roof of the house of the *Baijini*, which was constructed of bamboo rafters and palm-tree thatch. The parallel vertical lines on the neck refer to the upright posts of the house.

The Spirit Man, Jindjarai

The spirit man, *Jindjarai*, lives on the shores of a swamp west of Arnhem Bay. This *Mokoi* carries a long steel knife in his hair which, when he strikes it, gives off a clear bell-like note. This sound guides the *jiritja* spirits of the dead belonging to the Arnhem Bay area to *Jindjarai's* camp, one of the *jiritja* 'heavens'.⁸⁴

Plate 139J, K illustrates the carved head of the *Mokoi*, *Jindjarai*. The dark-coloured triangle above the ear on Pl. 139K is the blade of the steel knife the *Mokoi* carries in his hair and the cross-hatched rectangle below, its handle. The cross-hatching on either side of the knife indicates clouds and the dots on the top

83. For more complete details of the *Baijini* myth, see p. 333.

84. Berndt (1948), p. 94, claims that the spirits of the *jiritja* dead from Yirrkalla go to Badu (Mulgrave Island) in the Torres Straits. He, however, refers to fifteen other names for the *jiritja* heaven. Although my *jiritja* informants from Yirrkalla stated emphatically that their spirits went to Nalkuma (p. 331), not to Badu, and I did not obtain such a large number of designations for the *jiritja* home of the dead as did Berndt, the myth associated with *Jindjarai* indicates that there is more than one *jiritja* heaven. The *dua* moiety at Yirrkalla, on the other hand, refer to only one heaven, i.e. Purelko (myth, p. 325), although the *dua* moiety of Milingimbi call their land of the dead Djirai.

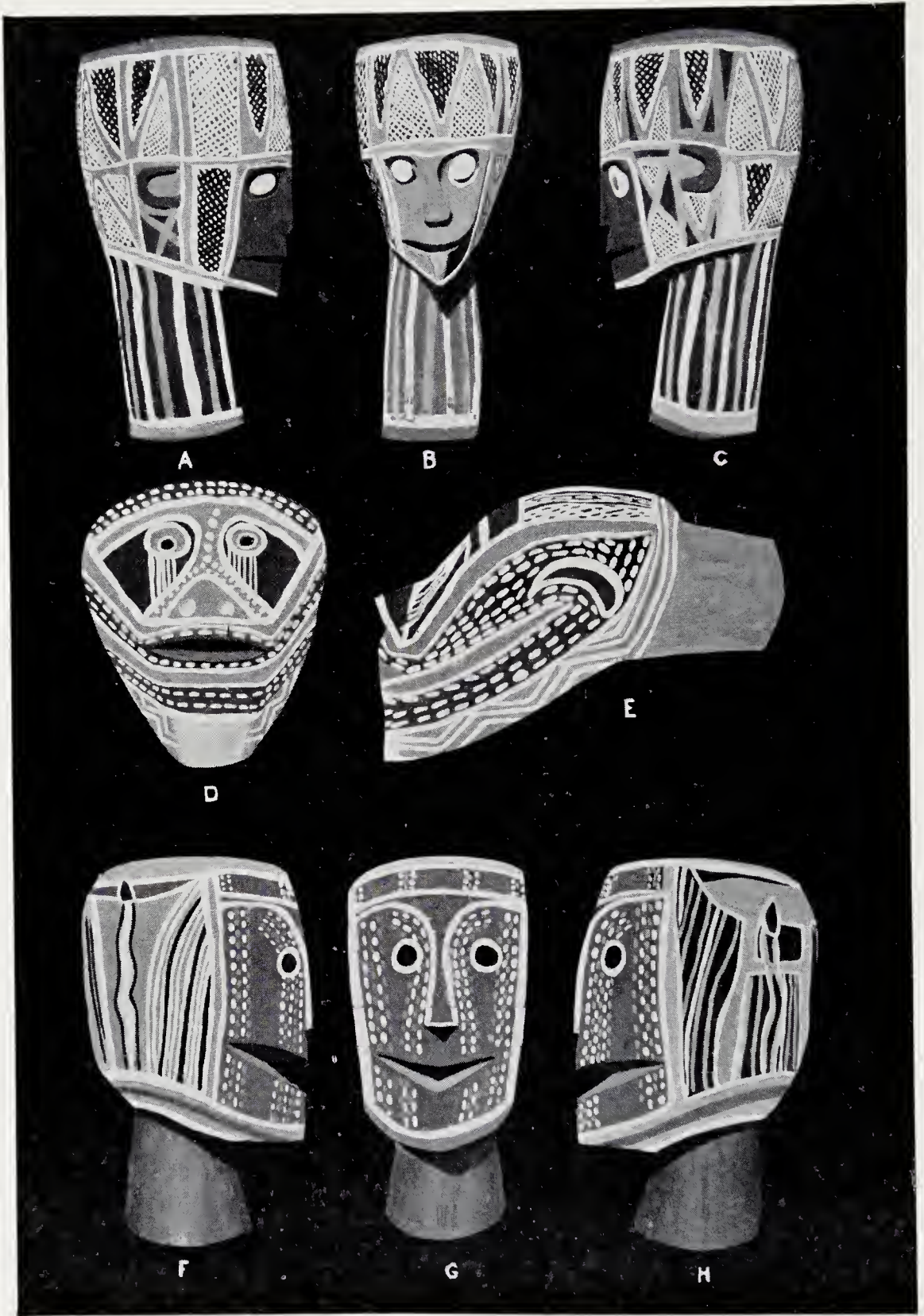


PLATE 140. Carved and painted figures, Yirrkalla
 A, B C The Baijini, Gurumuluna D, E The woman, Urapali
 F, G, H The Mokoï, Wulu-wulu

of the head, falling rain. The cross-hatched band across the forehead on Pl. 139J depicts the falling rain running down the face of the *Mokoi*.

The Spirit Womau, Urapali

There is a spirit woman, or *Mokoi*, called *Urapali*, at Blue Mud Bay who, when she took part in a burial ceremony, stabbed herself on the face and head with a sharpened bone in the same manner as do aboriginal women today on the death of one of their near relatives. *Urapali* still carries the marks both of the wounds and the blood which flowed from them.

Plate 140D, E illustrates the carved head of *Urapali*. On Pl. 140D the two groups of parallel lines under the eyes are tears she shed in her grief and the dots across the forehead and on the face, the self-inflicted wounds.

On Pl. 140E the white dots on the top of the head and along the side of the face indicate the places where *Urapali* wounded herself, and the meandering line along the lower jaw, the blood which flowed from those wounds.

The Spirit Man, Wulu-wulu

The spirit man, *Wulu-wulu*,⁸⁵ a *Mokoi* with a particularly dark skin, is associated in some undetermined manner with the *bilumbira* serpent of Cape Arnhem.

Plate 140F, G, H illustrates the carved head of *Wulu-wulu*.

On Pl. 140G the white dots on the dark face of the *Mokoi* represent falling rain. The serpent, *bilumbira*, occupies the central position on Pl. 140F. The dark crescent at *bilumbira's* head indicates cirrus clouds; the light ground behind, the cumulus cloud in which the serpent travels; and the curving parallel lines on either side, falling rain.

On the opposite side of the head, Pl. 140H, is the serpent with its head in a cirrus cloud. The dark-coloured square immediately below the cloud is the totemic place at Cape Arnhem, where *bilumbira* lives in the trees.⁸⁶ The curving parallel lines in this panel indicate falling rain.

4. HUMAN FIGURES IN BARK

The aborigines at Yirrkalla make simple human figures by binding the soft bark of the paper-bark tree with string.⁸⁷ These bark figures are exhibited in some non-secret ceremonies, such as those of the *dna* spirit people (*Mokoi*),

85. It is possible that a fuller investigation would reveal the existence of *Wulu-wulu* men and women in a number of *jiritja* localities around Cape Arnhem and Port Bradshaw. See myth of *Wulu-wulu* women, p. 343, also bark painting, Pl. 100A.

86. Myth, p. 351.

87. Kandern (1944), p. 300, records similar bark figures made by the natives of the Celebes to represent themselves and thus confuse the evil spirits. Worms (1942), Fig. 6, illustrates a similar bark figure associated with the Goranara ceremonies of north-western Australia.

Bunbulama and her brother, *Wuluwait*. Bark figures are also used in the burial ceremonies, where they are used to represent children. They are placed beside the corpse so that it will not be lonely.

The figures of *Bunbulama* and *Wuluwait* have leaves and rushes stuck in the head for hair. In the bark painting, Pl. 94C, these represent the swamp grass in the rain-making bundles. Except for this, all the bark figures in my collection were similar in appearance. For that reason the figures of *Bunbulama* and *Wuluwait* only are illustrated.

The myths associated with the bark painting, Pl. 94C, the carved figure, Pl. 133A, B, and the bark figures, Fig. 65C, D, suggest that the myth of the *Mokoi*, *Bunbulama* and her brother *Wuluwait* covers two different activities. In the myth of the bark painting and the carved figure, the activities of the two *Mokoi* centre on rain-making. In the myth of the bark figure their chief function is to entertain the *dua* spirits of the dead on their journey from earth to their heaven, *Purelko*.

The *Mokoi*, *Bunbulama* and her brother *Wuluwait*, live in a jungle called *Mumubara*, on the western shores of Melville Bay. In the early days *Wuluwait* was a good hunter of turtles. One day, when out in his canoe, he sighted a particularly large *dua* turtle floating on the water, but in spite of all his care he could not get close enough to spear it. Disappointed, *Wuluwait* returned and told *Bunbulama* about his bad luck. She persuaded him not to be worried about the loss of the turtle because, as there was always plenty of food on the sea coast and in the surrounding jungle, she would be able to collect sufficient food for them both. From then until now the woman, *Bunbulama*, has provided the food.

At the present time, however, it is the duty of these two *Mokoi* to entertain the *dua* spirits of the dead during the first evening of their journey to the *dua* heaven, *Purelko*. When it becomes dark the woman, *Bunbulama*, returning from the jungle with a bundle of red blossoms called *banamin*,⁸⁸ asks her brother to blow his drone tube, so that the travelling spirits will find *Bunbulama's* camp. When they arrive, everyone spends the hours of darkness in dance and ceremony, carrying in their hands the flowers gathered by *Bunbulama*.⁸⁹ As daylight approaches, the *dua* spirits of the dead depart on the next stage of their journey to *Purelko*, via *Dambalia* (*Bremer Island*), and the brother and sister go back into the dense jungle so that none of the aborigines can see them.

Figure 65C illustrates the bark figure of the woman, *Bunbulama*; Fig. 65D, her brother *Wuluwait*. Both figures have grass stuck in their head and a projection from the chin which represents a beard.⁹⁰

88. In another myth, this flower is called *wakoro-nani*, p. 327.

89. See myth of journey of the *dua* dead, p. 325.

90. My informants stated that the woman, *Bunbulama*, wore a beard, similar to that of her brother. This beard, however, is not shown on the bark painting of these two people, Pl. 94C.

CARVED AND PAINTED FIGURES

5. FIGURES MOULDED IN WAX

(1) HUMAN FIGURES

Among the wax figures collected at Yirrkalla was one of the boomerang-man, *Oijal*, and one of his wife, *Neri-neri*. McConnel⁹¹ records a waxen human figure used in the increase ceremonies of Cape York, and Elkin and the Berndts⁹² several at Yirrkalla which, they claim, were used in imitative love magic and to cause the death of an enemy.

Plate 104E is *Oijal* with boomerang-shaped designs painted on both the front and the back of the figure. Around his neck the lines of dots have the same meaning as in the bark painting, Pl. 29A, i.e. body decorations. Pl. 104F is *Neri-neri*, whose body is also decorated with lines of paint.

(2) CREATURES

The aborigines of north-eastern Arnhem Land are expert in the modelling of small animal and human figures, called *kamou korugi*, from the wax of the wild bees. This wax, much more plastic than that of the European bee, is warmed slightly over the fire and moulded into shape by the fingers. When the craftsman is satisfied with his modelling, he paints the figures with designs. These sometimes indicate the moiety and *mata* (language group) of the totemic creature. McCarthy⁹³ figures a kangaroo, a turtle and a crocodile from a Yirrkalla collection presented to the Australian Museum by Rev. F. W. Chaseling.

Plate 143: A is the *dua* emu, *marluwai*. B is the green turtle, *gariwa*. The totemic place of this *dua* creature is on the sea floor between Yirrkalla and Bremer Island.⁹⁴ C is the *jiritja* night-bird, *karawak*, which was associated with the opossum, *marungo*, at Cape Shield.⁹⁵ D is the queen fish, *tinimbu*, belonging to the *jiritja* myths of Cape Arnhem.⁹⁶ E is the bandicoot, *warnt-kura*, whose nest was destroyed by a bush-fire. The *gumaitj mata* design for fire is painted on the side of its body.⁹⁷ F is a fresh-water fish, *paipinga*, which the mythical man *Laitjun* used to catch in his fish trap at the mouth of the Koolatong River.⁹⁸ G is the dugong, *balwakmeri*. This creature is one of the main foods of the inhabitants of the *jiritja* heaven, Nalkuma.⁹⁹ H is the *dua* kangaroo, *karitjambal*.

6. CREATURES CARVED IN WOOD

The aborigines of Yirrkalla, and to a lesser extent those of Groote Eylandt, carve simple wooden figures of various creatures. The fact that in the collection of the South Australian Museum there are examples of similar wooden figures from Melville, Goulburn and Elcho Islands suggests that this craft is carried out over most, if not all, of Arnhem Land.

91. McConnel (1953), Pl. XVII, Fig. F.

93. McCarthy (1938), Fig. 40.

95. Carved message stick, Fig. 65A, B.

97. Bark painting, Pl. 116B.

99. Bark painting, Pl. 116A.

92. Elkin and the Berndts (1950), Pl. 19A, p. 106.

94. Painted coffin, Pl. 102C, D.

96. Bark painting, Pl. 110B.

98. Engraved pipe, Fig. 60D.

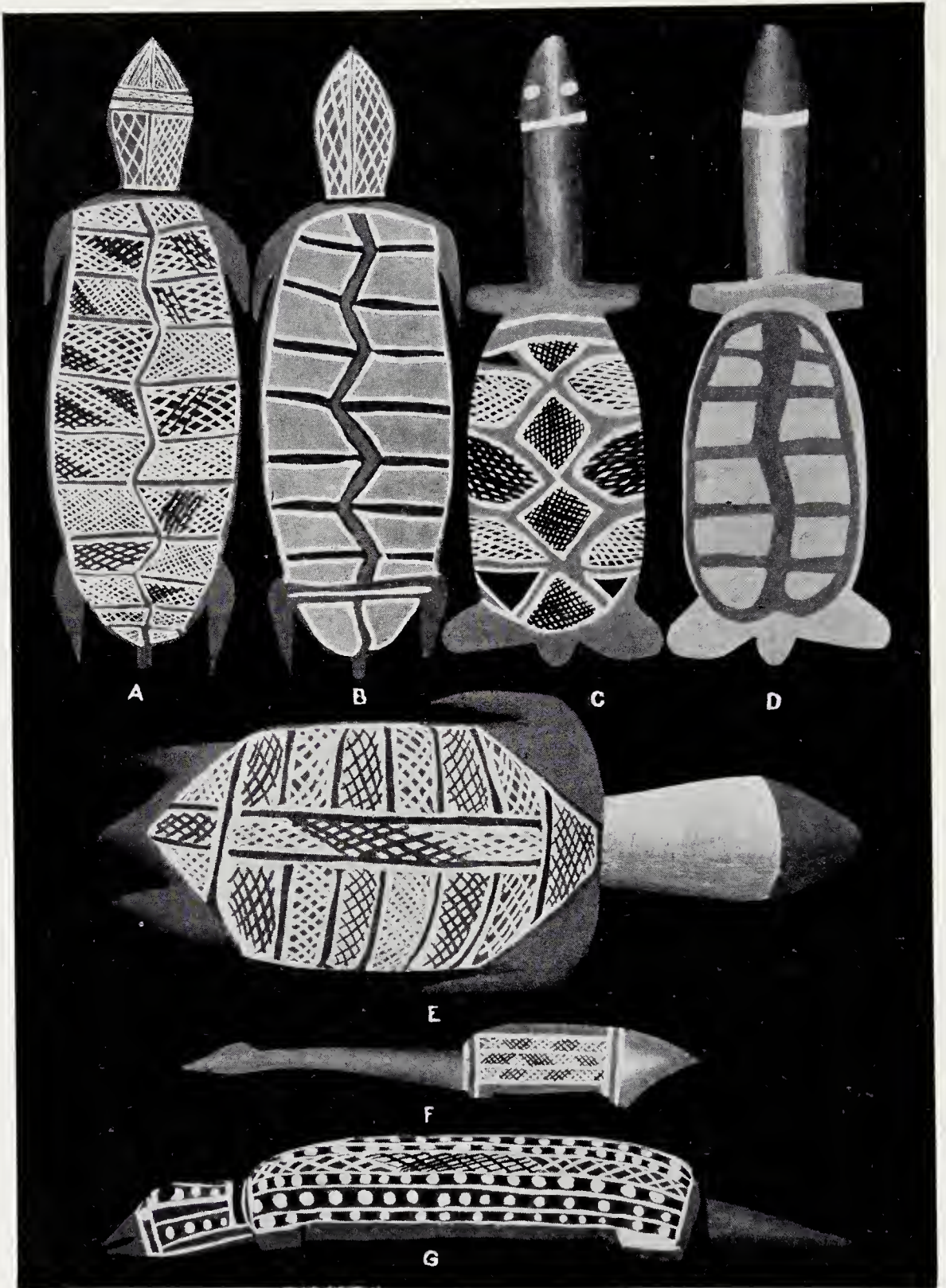


PLATE 141. Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla

A, B, E The green turtle C, D The tortoise F The snake-bird G The bandicoot

CARVED AND PAINTED FIGURES

(1) YIRKALLA

The Green Turtle, Gariwa

In creation times, when the *dua* green turtle, *gariwa*, and the *jiritja* hawksbill turtle, *kouwaradji*, were men, they lived together on the beach at Yirkalla. One day, when the two men were discussing some trivial matter, the hawksbill man lost his temper and speared the green-turtle man. The wounded man was so enraged over this unjustified attack that he changed himself into the green turtle. His totemic place is now at the bottom of the sea, between Yirkalla and Bremer Island.¹

Plate 141A, B, E is two carved figures, in the round, of the present-day green turtle, *gariwa*. The designs on the back represent the shell pattern of the carapace.

The Serpent, Wununga

This staff, from Milingimbi, represents *wununga*, the mythical serpent, whose voice is the sound of the log gong, *uwar*.² This serpent, also called *muit*,³ lives in a large waterhole at Milingimbi. The staff is used in the *narra* rituals.

The main design on Pl. 134A is the mythical serpent, *wununga*; the smaller designs are young snakes, the progeny of *wununga*. No explanation was obtained for the chevron designs on the upper part of the staff. Interpretation by F. D. McCarthy.

The Night-bird, Karawak, and the Opossum, Marungo

The night-bird, *karawak*, is associated in some undetermined way with the *Mokoi* of the dead.⁴ In another mythological story⁵ *karawak* (probably one of the owls) was friends with the opossum, *marungo*.

The Ceremonial Staff. This staff, Pl. 134E, is used in the totemic ceremonies of the night-bird, *karawak*. It represents a totemic tree near Cape Shields, on which *karawak* sat to talk to the opossum. The carved figure on the top is the night-bird. The same design is repeated lower down. The wavy lines have the same meaning as those on the bark painting of *marungo* and *karawak*,⁶ i.e. the marks made by the opossum as it wandered round the base of the totemic tree where *karawak* was perched.

The Shark, Mana, at Blue Mud Bay

For myth, see p. 372.

The Carved Figure. On Pl. 132A the series of rectangles means the same as those on the bark painting of the shark, *mana*,⁷ i.e. dead palm leaves floating

1. See painted coffin of turtle-man, *Gariwa*, Pl. 102C, D.

2. See log gong, Pl. 147A, C; also Warner (1937), p. 314.

3. The serpent *muit* which, in the myth of the *gunabibi* ceremony at Milingimbi, swallowed the *Wawalik* sister, although considered by some to be more powerful than *jurlungur*, is really the same mythical creature (see Warner, 1937, p. 372).

4. Myth, p. 312.

5. Bark paintings, Pl. 115E; also engraved ceremonial message sticks, Fig. 65A, B.

6. Myth, p. 362.

7. This is the symbolism employed on the bark painting of *mana*, Pl. 119B.

on the surface of the swamp. The four vertical panels, *c, c, c, c*, are posts used in the fish trap,⁸ the dark line *a* being a larger and much stronger post than the others. The curving lines at the head of the shark are the leaves and the white dots the bulbs of the spike rush, *rakia*.

Looking at the top, Pl. 132B, the rectangles and the intersecting lines still represent the palm leaves and the posts. In the black rectangle, *b* is the fish spear with which *Borolo-borolo* wounded *mana* at Cape Arnhem.⁹

The designs on the bottom of the carved figure, Pl. 132C, are a simple form of X-ray art. The meandering line within the long black diamond indicates the intestines of the fish, and the long oval toward the tail, the vent.

Miscellaneous Creatures

Plate 137E is a simple wooden figure of the echidna,¹⁰ *tjiramuna*, which was speared by the plover-man, *Tjutju* (see myth, p. 354).

Plate 137F is the carving in the round of an unidentified shark.

Plate 141C, D illustrates the obverse and reverse sides of a fresh-water tortoise.

Plate 141F and Pl. 142D are carved wooden figures of a snake-bird, or darter (*Anhinga novæ-hollandiæ*). On Pl. 142D both the wings and the curiously jointed neck are indicated.

Plate 141G is the wooden figure of the bandicoot, *warnt-kura*. During creation times some careless men, while performing a ceremony on the Gainmaui River, near Caledon Bay, started a bush-fire which burnt out the nest of the bandicoot.¹¹

Plate 144J is an unidentified fish.

Plate 144K is the *jiritja* goanna, *bije*, which is associated with the yellow ochre deposit at Gurunga.

(2) GROOTE EYLANDT

Plate 142A is a piece of painted bark cut into the shape of a stingray, *imadoija*. The men of Groote Eylandt make these simple bark figures as play-things for their children. The kidney-shaped design is the edible fat within the body of the stingray.

Plate 142B, C shows the obverse and reverse sides of a sheet of painted bark from Groote Eylandt which represents the green turtle, *imoraka*.

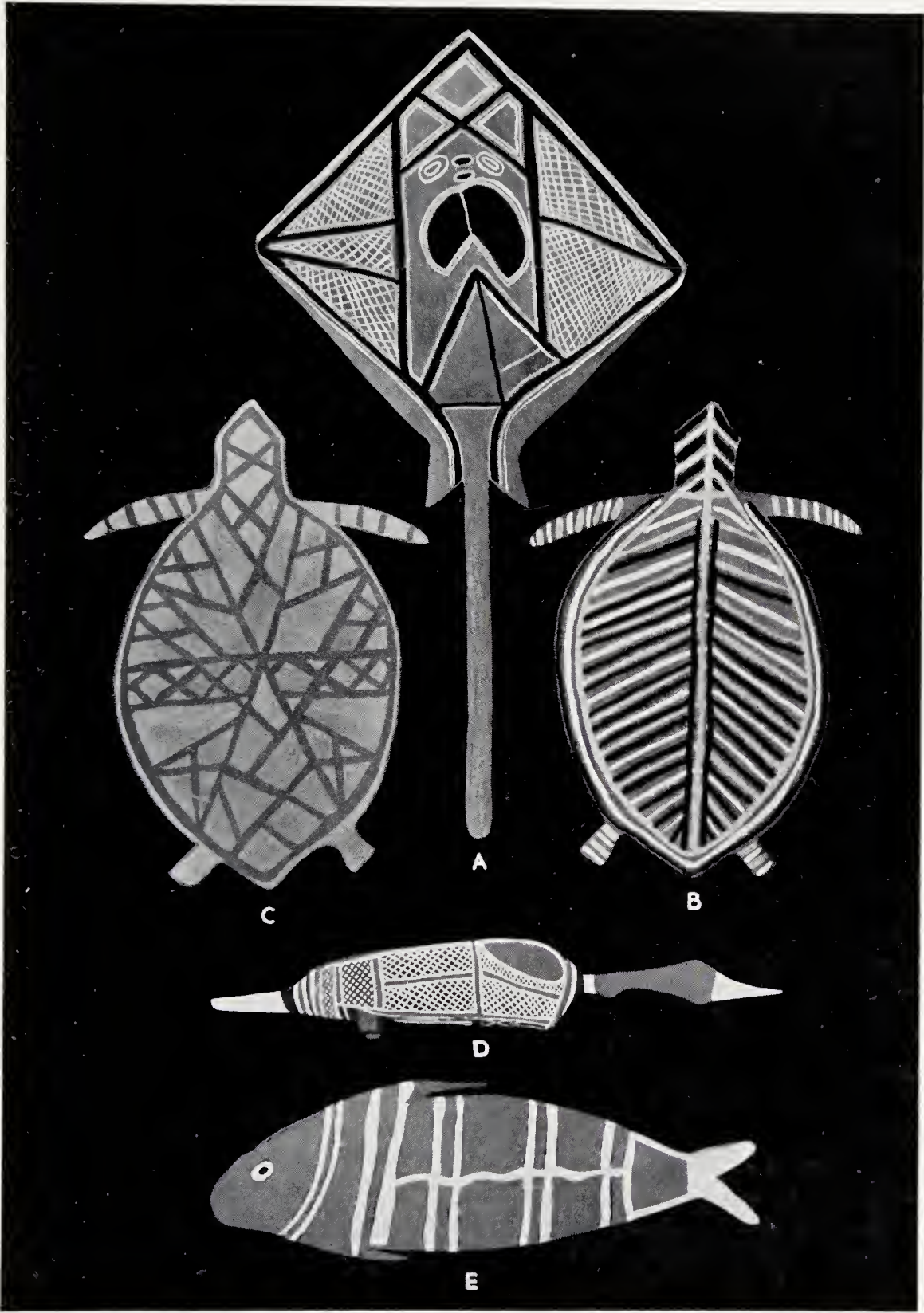
Plate 142E is a carved figure of a fish (possibly a leather-jacket). Although this is the only example of carving in the round I collected when at Groote Eylandt, its presence indicates that the Groote Eylandters practise this form of art. The aborigines of Groote Eylandt also carved simple faces, with eyes, nose and mouth, on the sacred poles of the *arawaltja* ceremony (Pl. 12A).

8. Bark painting, Pl. 119B.

9. It is of interest to note that although in the myth *mana* was a man whilst at Cape Arnhem, he was wounded by *Borolo-borolo* with a multi-pronged fish-spear.

10. Bark painting, Pl. 113B.

11. Bark painting, Pl. 116D.



Jean Truran

PLATE 142. Carved and painted figures, Yirkalla and Groote Eylandt

A Stingray B, C Turtle D Snake-bird E Fish

7. DECORATED IMPLEMENTS AND WEAPONS

The aborigines of Australia gain much pleasure from the painting of their implements and weapons. The painted shields of Queensland¹² and the engraved boomerangs of northern New South Wales¹³ are typical examples.

In Arnhem Land, where neither the shield nor the boomerang is used, it is the paddles and the spear-throwers which receive the attention of the artists. Warner¹⁴ records that among the aborigines of Mililingimbi, 'although the paints dissolve immediately in water, the natives often paint their paddles for the mere pleasure of decorating them and seeing their beauty.' The natives of Groote Eylandt and Yirkalla paint both their spear-throwers and their paddles. At the latter place the blades of many of the paddles are covered with engraved or painted designs of totemic significance.

(1) PADDLES FROM YIRRKALLA

The Spirit Men, Maranatuér and Bunjinkum

Two brothers, *Maranatuér* and *Bunjinkum*, noted fishermen and hunters, once lived at Jumbara-pinja, a locality on the Pali-pali River which runs into Arnhem Bay.¹⁵ One day the two *Mokoi* speared a particularly large *dua* turtle called *talibo* (possibly a logger-head),¹⁶ which was so powerful that it towed them far out to sea before they were able to haul the turtle close enough to the canoe to kill it. This accomplished, they paddled back to their camp at Jumbara-pinja, disembowelled the creature and put it on the fire to cook.

Whilst they were waiting, *Maranatuér* looked toward the south and saw the dry-season wind, *timaru*, coming toward them. They were just congratulating each other about this, for the period of the *timaru* wind is the season of maturing fruits and underground tubers, when *Bunjinkum*, looking in the opposite direction, saw *Tjambuwal*, of the wet-season wind, *bara*, approaching. Not wishing to be caught between the two winds the brothers hastily ate the turtle, embarked in their canoe and paddled to Jarkala, an island midway between Elcho and the Wessels. Then, hearing that two other *Mokoi*, *Gunbiri* and *Kaiamburo*, friends of theirs, were living on an adjacent island, the brothers left Jarkala and went to stay with them. The four *Mokoi* still live on that island, although no aborigines have ever seen them.

Plate 144C, D is the obverse and reverse sides of the paddle.

The central vertical panel on Pl. 144C is the River Pali-pali, at Arnhem Bay, along which the brothers paddled their canoe when they were setting out to catch a turtle. The cross-hatched transverse bands on either side of the river indicate the rocks and sand-banks in its bed.

In the middle of Pl. 144D is the canoe and its occupants, *Maranatuér* being at the top and *Bunjinkum* at the bottom. The dark-coloured bands in panel a

12. McConnel (1935), pp. 49-68.

14. Warner (1937), p. 492.

16. The logger-head turtle (*Caretta caretta*) is known to have reached the weight of two tons.

13. Davidson (1937), p. 23.

15. Map, Fig. 57.

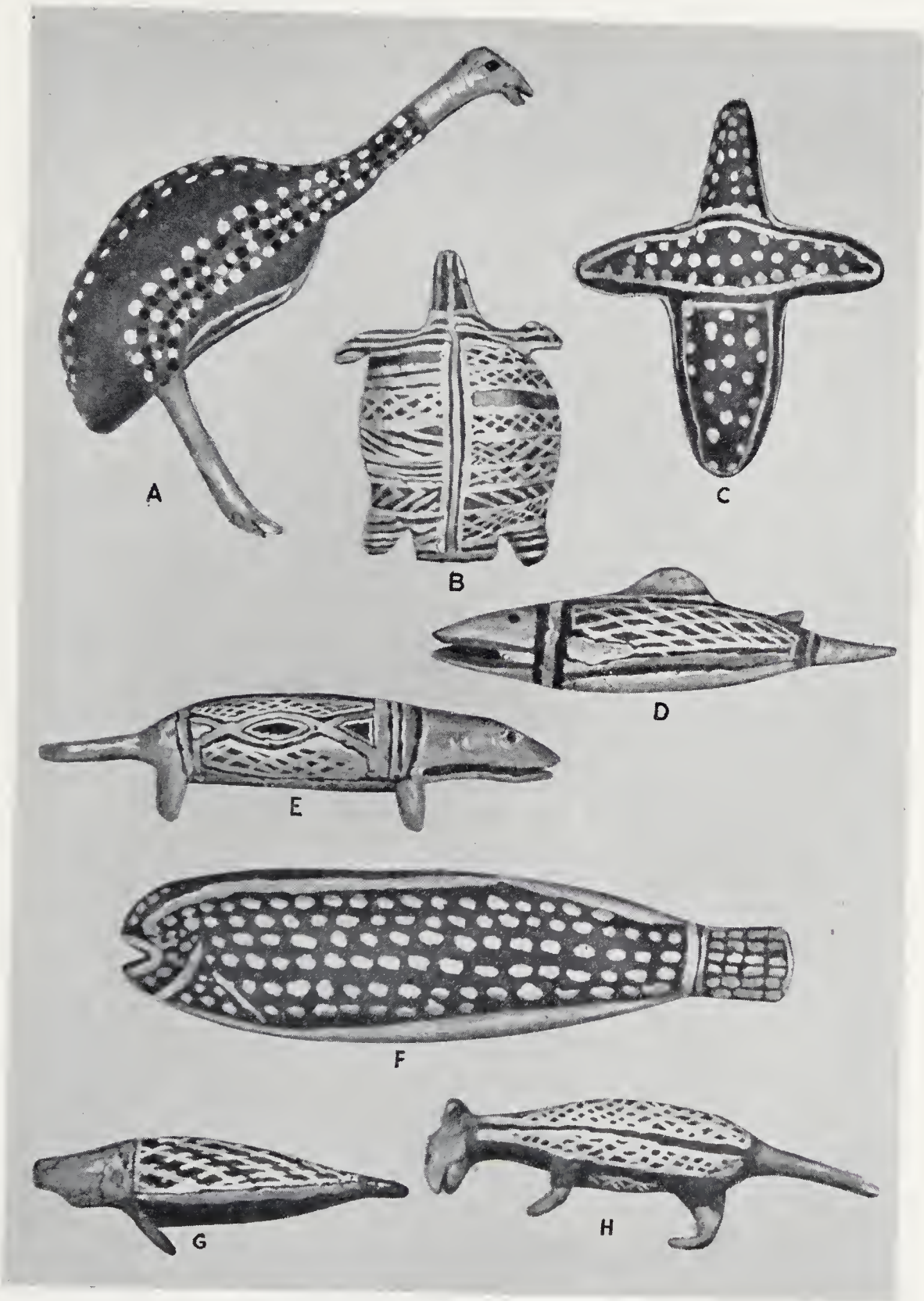


PLATE 143. Waxen figures, Yirkalla

- | | | |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------|---------------------------|
| A The emu, marluwai | B The turtle, gariwa | C The night-bird, karawak |
| D The queen-fish, tinimbu | E The bandicoot, warnt-kura | F The fish, paipinga |
| G The dugong, balwakmeri | H The kangaroo, karitjambal | |

represent rocks, the light ones the sea breaking over them. In panel *b* the bands have a similar meaning, the darker being large rocks under which the turtles shelter, and the lighter ones the breaking waves.

The Spirit People, Balu-balu

Two *dua* spirit people, or *Mokoi*, a man and his sister, called the *Balu-balu*, once lived on Bungara Island, which is situated between Woodah Island and the shores of Blue Mud Bay.¹⁷ One day, when the man was out in his canoe, called *Baratja*,¹⁸ he saw a particularly large fish but, being over-anxious, did not take sufficient care and the fish escaped. He returned to camp and told his sister about his misfortunes. She sympathized with him and suggested that, perhaps, if next time they both went out in the canoe they might have better luck, and so it happened, for they caught a *dua* green turtle, *gariwa*. Putting the turtle into their canoe, they took it with them to Purlko, the *dua* home of the dead, where they cooked and ate it in the company of other *Mokoi*.

As their turtle rope was becoming rotten the *Balu-balu* decided to make a new one.¹⁹ The woman collected and shredded a large quantity of bark which the man twisted into a rope. When finished it was so long that when one end was at Purlko the other reached Bungara Island. Since that time the brother and sister set out every morning for Bungara Island to catch a *dua* turtle and take it back to Purlko to be cooked and shared with the other *Mokoi*.

Although the aborigines claim they have often seen the marks of the *Balu-balu's* canoe on the shore at Bungara Island, none has ever seen these spirit people.

Plate 144E, F shows the obverse and reverse side of the paddle.

On panel *a* of E is a group of sea-urchins, *jatin*, the food of the green turtles, *gariwa*. The spirit canoe, *Baratja*, of the *Balu-balu*, is in panel *b*. Within the canoe is the green turtle the *Mokoi* are taking to Purlko. Below the canoe is another turtle and, on either side, two harmless *dua* sea snakes, called *jalu*.

The reverse side, F, panel *b*, is occupied by a green turtle and two *jalu* snakes. In panel *a* is another *dua* turtle, two sea snakes and some sea-urchins.

The Dua Totem Creatures of Melville Bay

When the dolphins *injipana* and *bulanbir* were men, they shifted their camp from Arnhem Bay to Waupili, at Melville Bay, to be present at a ceremony in which all the green-turtle and dolphin men took part. Whilst this was going on a *Mokoi*, on his way to Purlko, speared one of the participants, called *Madapang*. This attack gave everyone such a fright that both the dolphin and the turtle men went into the water and became sea creatures. The body of the

17. Map, Fig. 4.

18. The spirits of the *jiritja* 'heaven' also have a special name for the canoe in which they catch dugong at Cape Arnhem, p. 346.

19. Turtle rope is made from twisted strands of bark; Tindale (1926), p. 115, describes the method of manufacture.

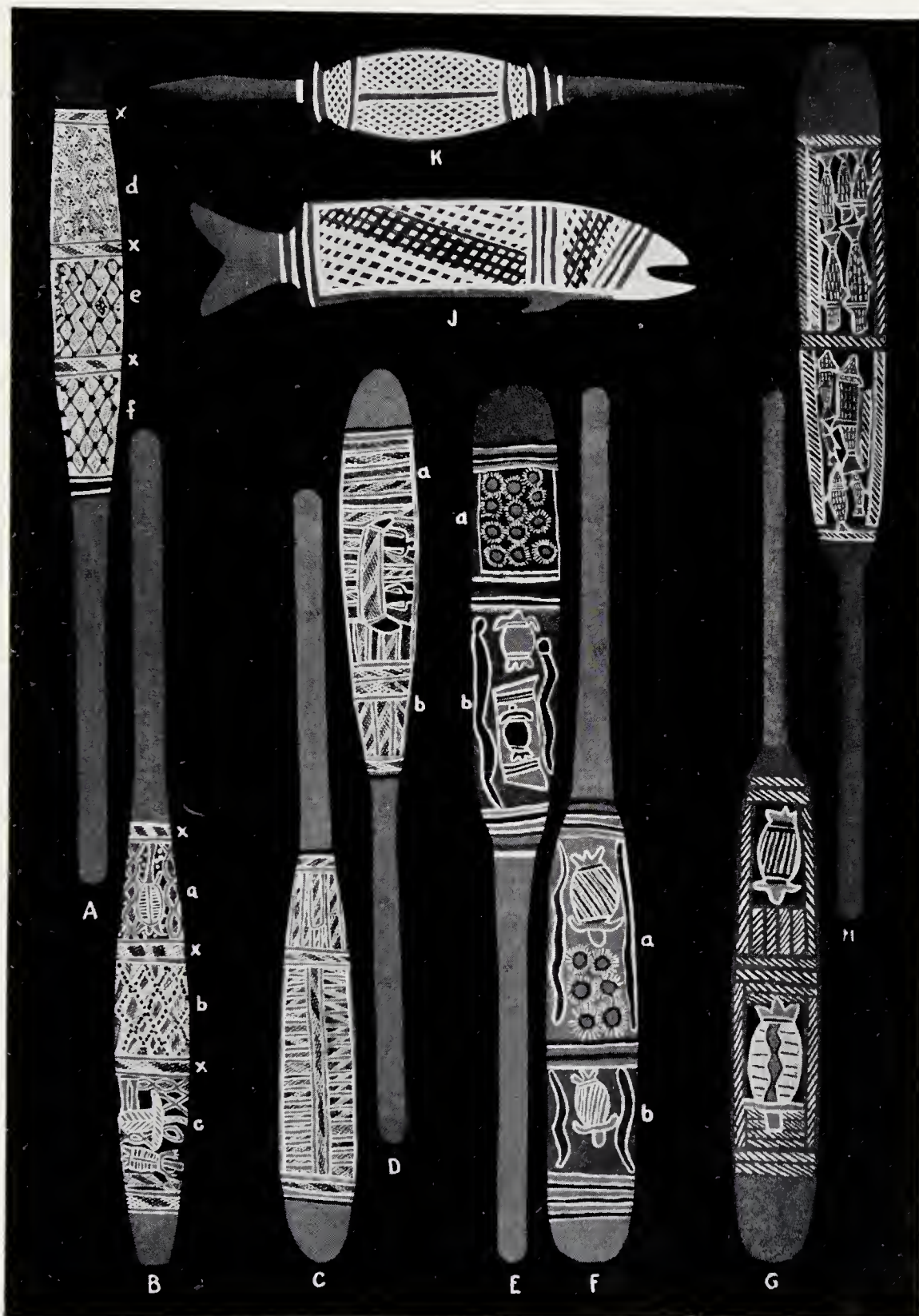


PLATE 144. Carved figures, painted paddles and ceremonial objects

A, B. The tortoise, mimala
 E, F. The Mokoi, Balu-balu
 J. Fish, unidentified

C, D. The Mokoi, Maranatuer and Bunjinkum
 G, H. Dua creatures of Melville Bay
 K. The goanna, bije

murdered turtle man, *Madapang*, is now a large rock on the mainland opposite Bremer Island.

Plate 144G, H shows the obverse and reverse sides of the paddle.

The upper panel on the reverse side, G, is occupied by the *dua* green turtle, *gariwa*, and the lower by a similar but larger turtle, *madapang*. The latter is the turtle who, when a man, was killed by the *Mokoi* at Melville Bay. The short transverse panels of cross-hatching near the head and tail of the turtle, *madapang*, indicate seaweed, the food of the creature, and the long panels on either side, the sea.

In the upper panel of the obverse side, H, are five dolphins, called *injišana*, and in the lower, five dolphins of a different species, called *bulanbir*. The cross-hatched panels indicate smooth sea water at the totemic place.

The panels at the head of the upper turtle indicate where the reptile dug in the sand to lay its eggs; the long panels on either side represent sea-water. The rounded end of the paddle indicates that it belongs to a man of the *dua* moiety.²⁰

(2) PAINTED PADDLES AND SPEAR-THROWERS FROM GROOTE EYLANDT

On Pl. 145 are four paddles from Groote Eylandt, A, B, C, D and E.

No interpretations were gathered of the various designs painted on the paddles. In the upper panel of Pl. 145A is the figure of a man associated with what appears to be a wind symbol,²¹ on Pl. 145D a dugong and a turtle, and on Pl. 145E another dugong. Collected by F. D. McCarthy.

On Pl. 146 are four spear-throwers from Groote Eylandt, A, B and C, D and E, and F. Although, as with the paddles, no interpretations were gathered, it is possible to distinguish a dolphin on D, and a turtle and possibly a bandicoot on E. Collected by F. M. Setzler.

(3) THE LOG GONGS

Two log gongs were collected in Arnhem Land, one (Pl. 147A, C) called *uvar*, by F. M. Setzler and F. D. McCarthy, whilst engaged on archaeological research at Milingimbi, and one (Pl. 147D) called *ubara*, by myself, at Oenpelli.

Warner, when carrying out research among the aborigines of Milingimbi during 1927-8, saw the log gong in use and gives a full description of its function.²² According to him, the gong, which is beaten with a frayed section of pandanus root, is used only in the *ulmark* cycle of ceremonies. When the women hear the sound of the gong, which they believe is the voice of the serpent *muit*,²³ they assemble in the camp and continuously repeat the call, *kait-bo*. This call protects the women from harm, it being the same as that used by the

20. For shape of a *jiritja* paddle, Fig. 58A, B.

21. Bark painting of south-east wind, Pl. 24D.

22. Warner (1937), pp. 315-16.

23. Another name for *jurlungur*, the mythical serpent, who swallowed the *Wawalik* sisters (see myth, p. 278, and Warner (1937), p. 372).

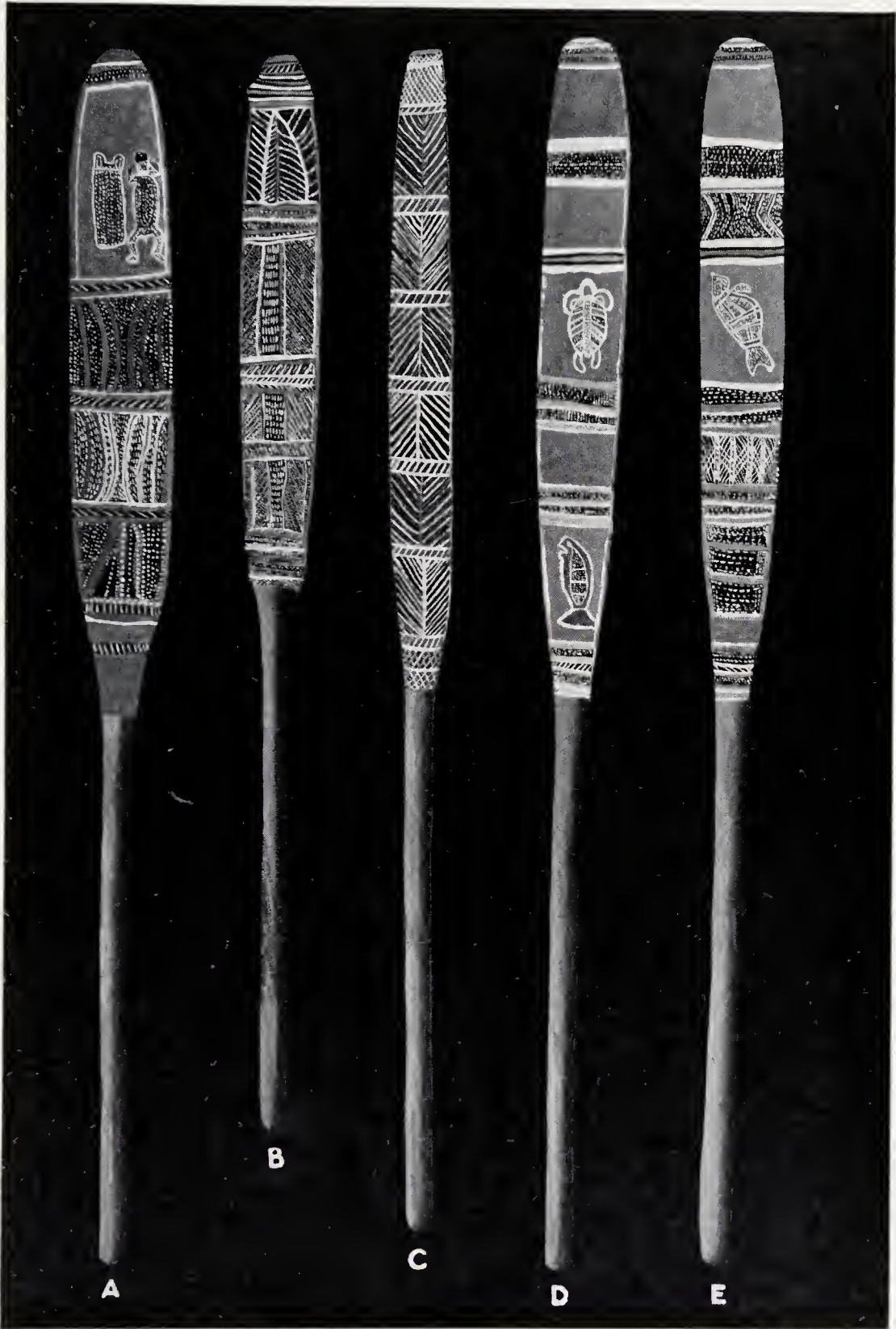


PLATE 145. Painted paddles, Groote Eylandt

Jean Truran

Wawalik sisters in their attempt to drive the serpent, *jurlungur*, or *muit*, back into the Mirrimina waterhole (myth, p. 279).

THE MILINGIMBI LOG GONG

This incomplete myth, associated with the Milinginbi gong, *uvar* (Pl. 147A, C), and the designs painted on it, deals with a man, *Julpaipai*, his wife, *Gutjabau*, and their daughter.

During creation times, *Julpaipai* and his wife travelled from Nilipidji (the famous aboriginal flint quarry, the source of the best flint knives) to the country belonging to the Liagolommira (Warner's Liaalaomir) clan on the Goyder River, where they created a sacred waterhole, Miaramina (Warner's Mirrimina). Whilst camped beside this waterhole *Gutjabau* gave birth to a daughter. Later *Julpaipai* sent his wife to Miaramina to collect food, and whilst there she was raped by a mythical rock python that lived in the waterhole.²⁴ As *Julpaipai* was making a fire to cook the food collected by his wife, he saw a dog chase a goanna up a tree used only in the women's ceremonies. Later, the goanna was followed by many spiders and a rat.

The central figure of Pl. 147A, C, is the man, *Julpaipai*, carrying a feather plume in his left hand. The lines radiating from his head indicate his hair. To the left of his head is a boomerang.²⁵ To the left of *Julpaipai* is his daughter, wearing a feather plume on her head and carrying another in her hand. To the left of her again is a wooden spear, resting on a boomerang. The animal near by is the rat, *marawata*, which the dog chased up the sacred tree, *warguritja*, shown immediately above. On the extreme left of the design is a digging stick belonging to *Julpaipai's* daughter.

Reading from the right of the central figure, the small beetle-like designs are the spiders, *dipala*, which followed the rat and the goanna up the tree. Near the right hand of the mythical man is his spear-thrower and two wooden spears. The figure to the extreme right is the woman, *Gutjabau*, holding a spear-thrower in one hand a digging stick in the other. The design to the left of her head is a yam she has dug out of the ground.²⁶ Associated with the log is a ceremonial object, Pl. 147B, perhaps a beater, its painted designs symbolizing green ants, *tapalang*, and their nest. Myth and interpretation by F. M. Setzler and F. D. McCarthy.

THE LOG GONG, UBARA, OENPELLI

The log gong, Pl. 147D, was used in the *ubara* ceremonies witnessed during our stay at Oenpelli. According to my informants, the designs had no specific

24. This myth has many points of resemblance with that of the *Wawalik* sisters (Warner, 1937, p. 250). Both the clan and the sacred well have similar names, and the woman, *Gutjabau*, gave birth to a child near the sacred well. Later the woman was raped, instead of being swallowed, by a mythical rock python which lived in the sacred well of Miaramina.

25. Although boomerangs are not made by the men of Arnhem Land, they reach Milinginbi from the south through the medium of a remarkable trade cycle. This trade cycle is described by Thomson (1949).

26. Warner (1937), p. 313, mentions that the log gong is 'painted with snake figures, emus and other animals as well as plants'.



Jean Truran

PLATE 146. Painted spear-throwers, Groote Eylandt

meaning. There is, however, a myth which explains how the log drum, *ubara*, and the beater, *labait*, were first made.

At one time, a mythical man cut down a hollow tree and left it lying on the ground. Next morning his dog, *Balnuknuk*, went out hunting and, seeing a bandicoot enter the hollow log, ran across and started to pull it out. As he did so the bandicoot transformed itself into a beating stick, *labait*, a frayed stump of pandanus root, which today is used to beat the sacred log at the *ubara* ceremonies. Just as the dog (which at the same time changed itself into a man) had taken the drum stick, *labait*, in his hand, he heard the drumming call of the emu. *Balnuknuk* listened intently, then, striking the hollow log with the drum stick, found that he could make the same sound as the emu. He was so pleased with the sound made by the hollow log that he gave it his own name (*balnuknuk* is the sacred name, *ubara* the common name).

After hiding the log gong, which today is sacred, and the beating stick, *labait*, *Balnuknuk* visited a camp of aborigines, telling the fully initiated men about his new find and inviting them to come and see and hear it. The men, pleased with the appearance and sound of the wooden gong, asked *Balnuknuk* about his plans. *Balnuknuk* then explained that he intended to show the initiated men how to perform the *ubara* ceremony, in which the hollow log would take a central part, but only on the understanding that no women or uninitiated youths must be allowed to see the gong, or even hear its note. When all had agreed, *Balnuknuk* taught the men the songs and dances of the *ubara* ceremony²⁷ and then disappeared into the ground, leaving behind, for the use of future generations, his ceremony with its special songs and dances, his wooden gong, *balnuknuk*, and the beater, *labait*. See bark painting, Pl. 64D.

I was able to see this log gong in all stages of manufacture. When the old men had agreed to perform the *ubara* ceremony, two men went to a locality where there were many hollow trees and, tapping their trunks with a stone, picked out one whose sound indicated that it would make a good gong. They felled the tree, cut out a five-foot section, removed the bark from the outside and the termite nest inside it, and putting the hollow log on their shoulders, brought it back to camp. For a considerable time, several aborigines sat around the log, beating it in different places with the frayed stump of a pandanus root until they decided the best spot to strike so that the log would give the loudest and most resonant note. Once this spot was determined, the position was marked with a rectangle of yellow (on the left of Pl. 147D). The gong was then painted with bands of colour, and covered with red, yellow and black dots.²⁸

In use, the gong was either carried under the arm, as described by Warner,²⁹ or rested on the knees (Pl. 147E).

When Spencer visited Oenpelli he saw, and described in some detail, a ceremony which he called the Ober³⁰ (almost certainly the same as my *ubara*).

27. Mountford (1949), p. 770.

29. Warner (1937), p. 314.

28. Mountford (1949), p. 773.

30. Spencer (1914), p. 133.

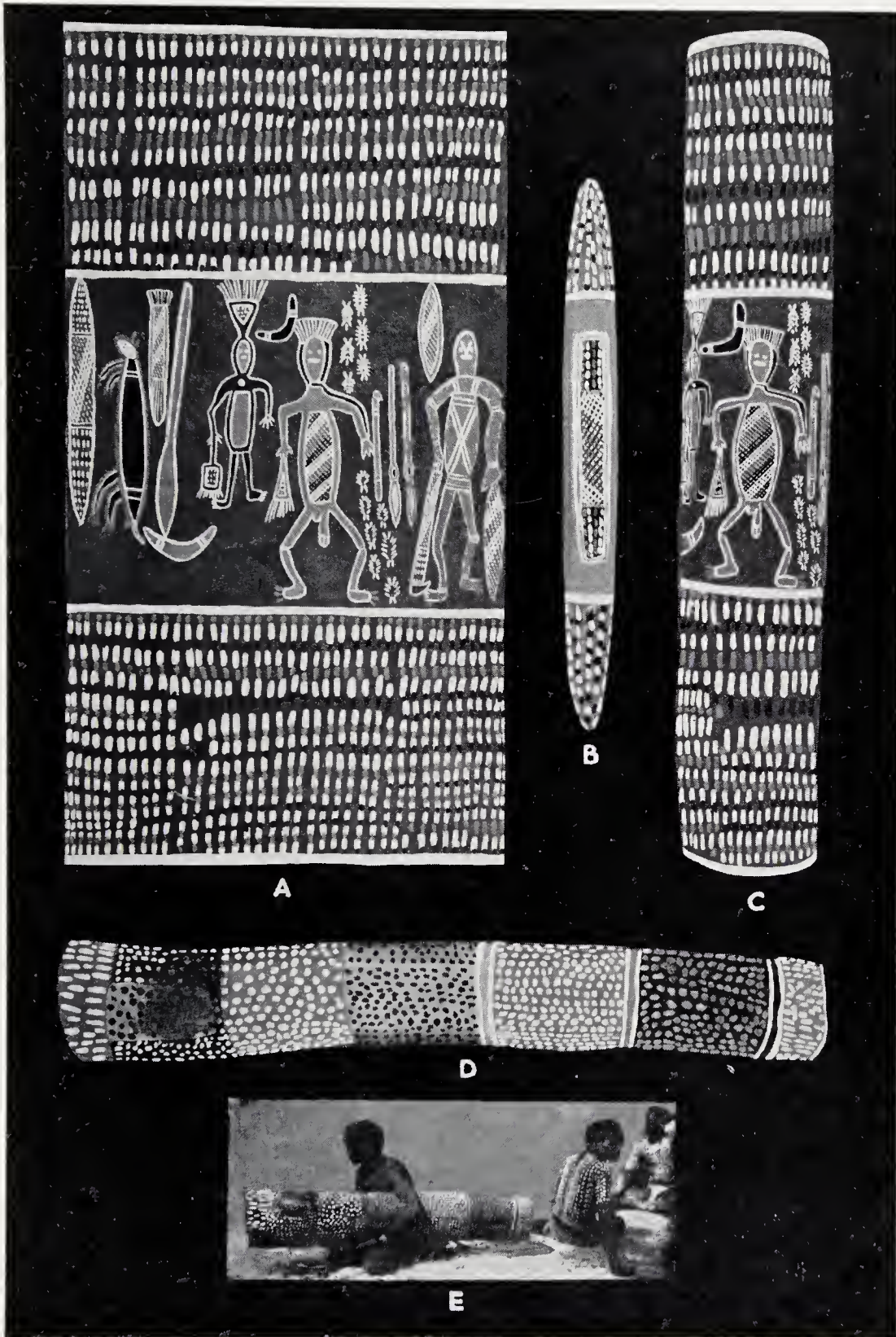


PLATE 147. Log gongs, Milingimbi and Oenpelli

Jean Truran

A, C Log gong, Milingimbi
D Log gong, Oenpelli

B Ceremonial object, Milingimbi
E Method of holding log gong, Oenpelli

In his description, however, he makes no reference to the log gong, which he could not have missed, as it takes so central a part in the present-day rituals. This indicates that the log gong, without doubt a recent importation into Australia, had not reached Oenpelli at the time of Spencer's visit. If this surmise is correct, then the myth associated with the gong³¹ is also a recent introduction to explain the origin of a new cultural trait.

8. CEREMONIAL OBJECTS OF WESTERN ARNHEM LAND

Spencer gathered much information about the carved and painted objects of western Arnhem Land known under the general name of *muraian*. He figured a number of them, some being similar in appearance to those I collected.³²

Spencer also described a *muraian* ceremony he saw in 1912,³³ during which a number of these sacred objects were displayed. The function of that ceremony was to magically increase the supply of living creatures which each *muraian* represented. Further, Spencer found that these *muraian*, or their duplicates, are inherited from father to son. He writes³⁴: 'The history of every stick and stone and the names of all individuals who have possessed them in succession is perfectly well known.' These *muraian*, being particularly sacred, were either brought to my tent at night or, if in the daytime, heavily wrapped in paper-bark. They were only exhibited when the tent door was closed.

The *muraian* of western Arnhem Land might be compared—and indeed they appear to perform a similar function—to the *tjurunga* of the Aranda tribe of Central Australia. They are stored in secret caves; they are associated with, and possibly the repository of, the spirit of the respective totemic food ancestor; each carries a mythical story about its creator, some of the details of which are painted on the particular *muraian*; and they, like the *tjurunga* of the Aranda, are employed to increase the supply of the particular creature or plant.

The Jungle Birds, Caujut and Iunga-iunga

Plate 148A is associated with an unlocalized totemic place, once the camp of two mythical jungle-bird men, *Caujut* and *Iunga-iunga*. The longitudinal parallel lines at the top and bottom represent the road along which *Caujut* and *Iunga-iunga* travelled to their camp; the central design is one of the bird-men sitting within that camp.

The Man, Mandelwilpa

This *muraian*, Pl. 148C, belongs to the mythical man *Mandelwilpa*, whose totemic place is on Koepang Creek.³⁵ The sacred object is also associated with the *ubara* (log gong) ceremony.³⁶

When the aborigines decide to perform the *ubara* ceremony the messengers, taking the *muraian* of *Mandelwilpa* with them, visit the various camps and

31. Myth, p. 458.

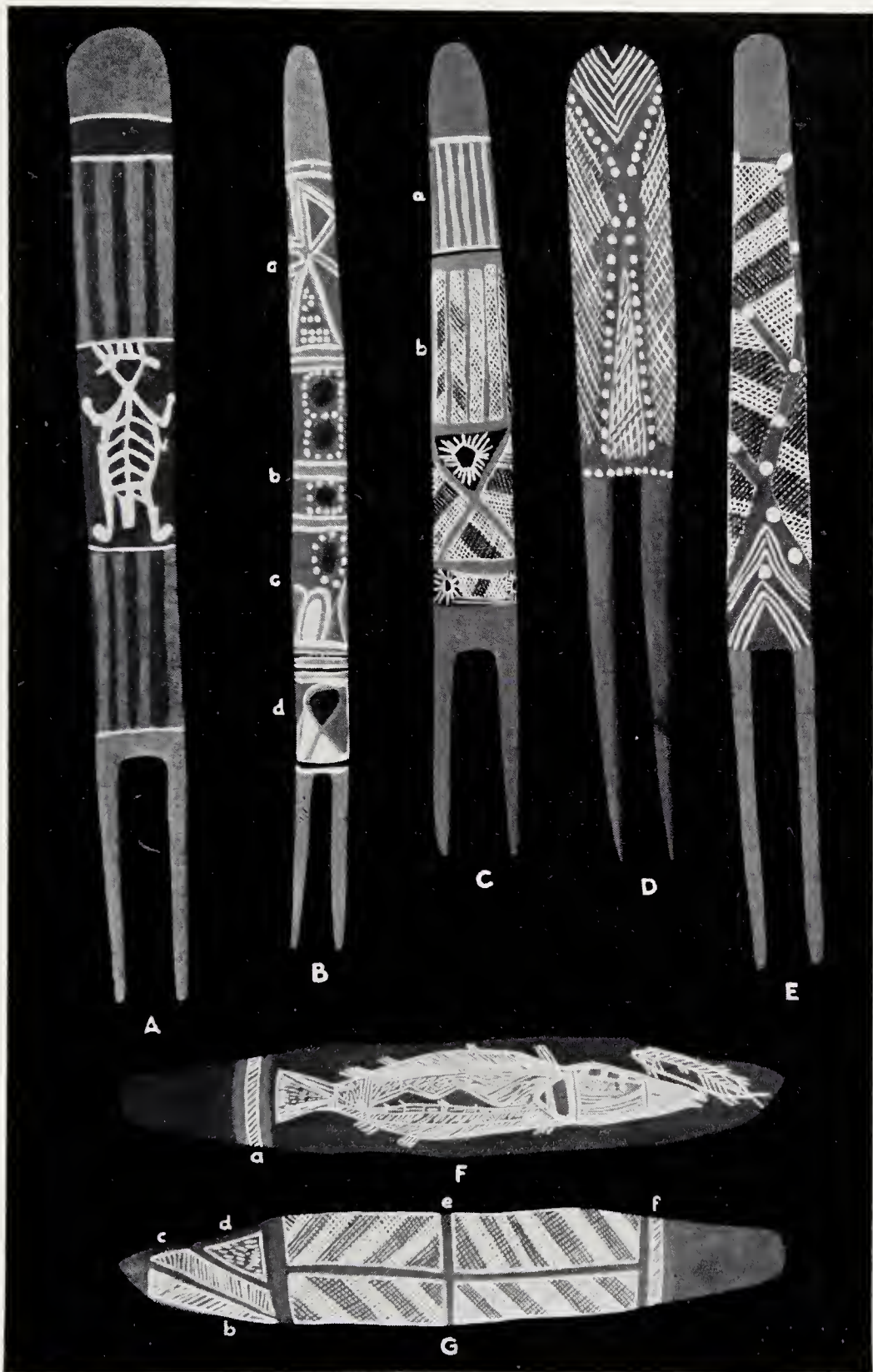
33. Spencer (1928), p. 832.

35. Map, Fig. 10.

32. Spencer (1928), Fig. 542, 543, Pl. XVI.

34. Spencer (1928), p. 837.

36. Mountford (1949), pp. 770-3.



Jean Truan

PLATE 148. Ceremonial objects, western Arnhem Land

A The jungle-birds, caujut and iunga-iunga
 C The man, Mandelwilpa
 E The rainbow-serpent, unjaut

B The diver-duck, jinia-laitja
 D The snake-bird, kulu-baii-baii
 F, G The barramundi, kimbarikara

arrange for the fully initiated men to assemble at a certain locality. Whilst some of the men find a hollow tree, from which to cut a section for the log drum, others erect four bush houses in the jungle, two for the *jiritja* and two for the *dua* moiety. The ceremony lasts from new moon to new moon. The first three weeks are spent in the performance of the rituals, and the last week in giving instructions about the meaning of the myths and rituals to those who have not previously taken part in the ceremony. While this is going on, the women are busily engaged gathering and preparing large quantities of food for a ceremonial meal. After the newcomers are fully instructed, the participants eat the special meal, bathe ceremonially in a nearby waterhole, and the rituals, for that year, are complete.³⁷

On Pl. 148C the parallel longitudinal lines in the upper panel, *a*, and the parallel cross-hatched panels, *b*, represent the roads leading to the ceremonial house of the man *Mandelwilpa*. The lower panel with the crossed diagonal lines indicates the house. *Mandelwilpa* is the star-like design in the upper triangle of his house. The two stars at the bottom are the 'eyes' of the sacred object.

The Darter, or Snake-bird, Kulu-baii-baii

The totem place of the darter or snake-bird, *Kulu-baii-baii*, is situated not far from a large swamp called Nundjaika-djun, near the source of the Liverpool River.³⁸ The ancestral bird decreed that his design must be painted on the bodies of every man who takes part in his ceremonies and that no one without a beard, i.e. a youth, a child or a woman, can kill or eat a darter. If anyone did so, the spirit of the darter would make him so ill he would die.

The diagonal lines on Pl. 148D represent the tracks of the darter or snake-bird³⁹ as it walked from one place to another. The designs within the upper and lower triangles are the feather patterns on the bird's back, and the cross-hatching within the outer triangles, the feathers on other parts of its body.

The Rainbow-serpent, Unjaut

The rainbow-serpent, *unjaut*, lives, during the dry season, in a large swamp, Kajabet, at the source of the Liverpool River. During the monsoon season it is seen among the clouds in the form of a rainbow. Should anyone be so foolhardy as to drink the water of the Kajabet swamp, bathe in it, or even so much as visit the locality, the serpent will first kill the intruder by consuming his spirit, and then create thunderstorms so large that they will flood the land and drown the people. For that reason *unjaut*, the serpent, is greatly feared and its totemic swamp shunned by all.

37. This is a fragmentary account of a ceremony which almost certainly is a variant of the *dua* and *jiritja narra* rituals recorded by Warner (1937), ch. x, and of the *arawaltja* ceremony of Groote Eylandt, p. 24.

38. Map, Fig. 1.

39. Called the snake-bird because of the reptilian appearance of its head and neck whilst fishing.

This object, Pl. 148E, is the *muraian* of the rainbow-serpent, *unjaut*. The lines of dots represent marks on the skin of the serpent, and the strings with feathers attached, its 'beard'.⁴⁰ The pointed projections symbolize the jaws, and the two groups of three triangular lines at the base, called *gunma-nari-nari*, the mouth and the tongue of the serpent. The cross-hatching indicates the scales.

The Barramundi, Kimbarikara

The totemic place of the barramundi-man, *Kimbarikara*, is adjacent to the swamp, Koaba-ropera, on the upper reaches of Koepang Creek.⁴¹

The sacred object is somewhat the shape of a fish. On one side, Pl. 148F, is the design of the barramundi, in which the vertebrae and the internal organs are portrayed. At the head of the barramundi is the mullet, *guandara*, which, according to the myth, was eaten, during creation times, by the barramundi (*Scleropoges* sp.). The band of sloping lines, *a*, near the tail symbolizes the totemic swamp, Koaba-ropera.

On the reverse side, Pl. 148G, the design is more conventionalized. The band of diagonal lines at *f*, near the tail, again represents the totemic swamp, and the cross-shaped design, *e*, streams which run into it. The four large cross-hatched panels symbolize the hair of the barramundi-man, and the two designs, *b* and *c*, his whiskers. The triangular design, *d*, is a small swamp near Koaba-ropera.

The Diver-duck, Jinia-laitja

The *muraian* of the diver-duck ancestors are the first a young initiate is allowed to see or handle. It is his duty to carry them, heavily wrapped in paper-bark, from one group of initiated men to another.

Plate 148B is the sacred staff of the diver-duck ancestors, father and son, *Jinia-laitja*, which belongs to a totemic waterhole, Gaba-balnara, near the Liverpool River. The intersecting lines at *a* indicate the roads by which the bird-men travelled to their totemic waterhole. The four dotted rectangles at *b* are the waterholes, Gaba-balnara; the white dots indicate paper-bark trees growing along the banks. The loops, *c*, toward the bottom of the staff, refer to markings on the back of the *Jinia-laitja*. The linked circles, *d*, are the eyes of the mythical bird-men.

Plate 149C belongs to the same two ancestral diver-duck men who were associated with a watercourse, Junatnada, near the Liverpool River. The three bands, *a*, toward the top represent the camps of the father and son; the transverse band, *b*, below it, the totemic creek, Junatnada; and the curving lines, the tracks made by the mythical people.

Another sacred object, Pl. 149A, belongs to the *Jinia-laitja*, another of whose totemic places, Namarounala, is situated on the beach near the mouth of the

40. Most mythical serpents associated with the rainbow are highly coloured and have both mane and beard. Mountford (1948), p. 136.

41. Map, Fig. 10.

Liverpool River. The white lines meeting at an angle on the top, in panel *a*, are the wings of one of the diver-duck men, the *Jinia-laitja*, and the two short longitudinal lines in panel *b*, the paths by which the father and son travelled. The white dots on panels *a* and *b* are the feather patterns on the back of the birds. The three star-like figures at *c* symbolize waterholes created by the ancestors; the two lines of white dots immediately below, the camps of the father and son. The crossed diagonal lines on panel *d* are the paths made by the two people as they walked from one camp to the other. The white dots on the lower panel, *e*, are eggs, and the star-like designs on either side of the *muraian*, the eyes of the mythical men.

The Black Diver-duck, Bon-bon

A mythical diver-duck man, *Bon-bon*, whose totemic site is at an unlocalized place, Mandikadjan, painted designs on his body so that he could attend a ceremony. After he had transformed himself into a diver-duck, *Bon-bon* decreed that no woman, child, or man without a beard should kill or eat him. If they disobeyed, he would cause them to suffer severe pains in the legs, and perhaps to die. *Bon-bon* also decreed that the designs on the performers of the *bon-bon* totemic ceremonies should be the same as those he had painted on his own body.

The main design on the bark painting, Pl. 149B, is the body of the diver-duck, *bon-bon*. The projection at the top is the beak, the two small projections on each side, the legs, and the sharp point at the bottom, the tail of the bird. The designs on the body symbolize the feather patterns.

The Mackerel, Maidba

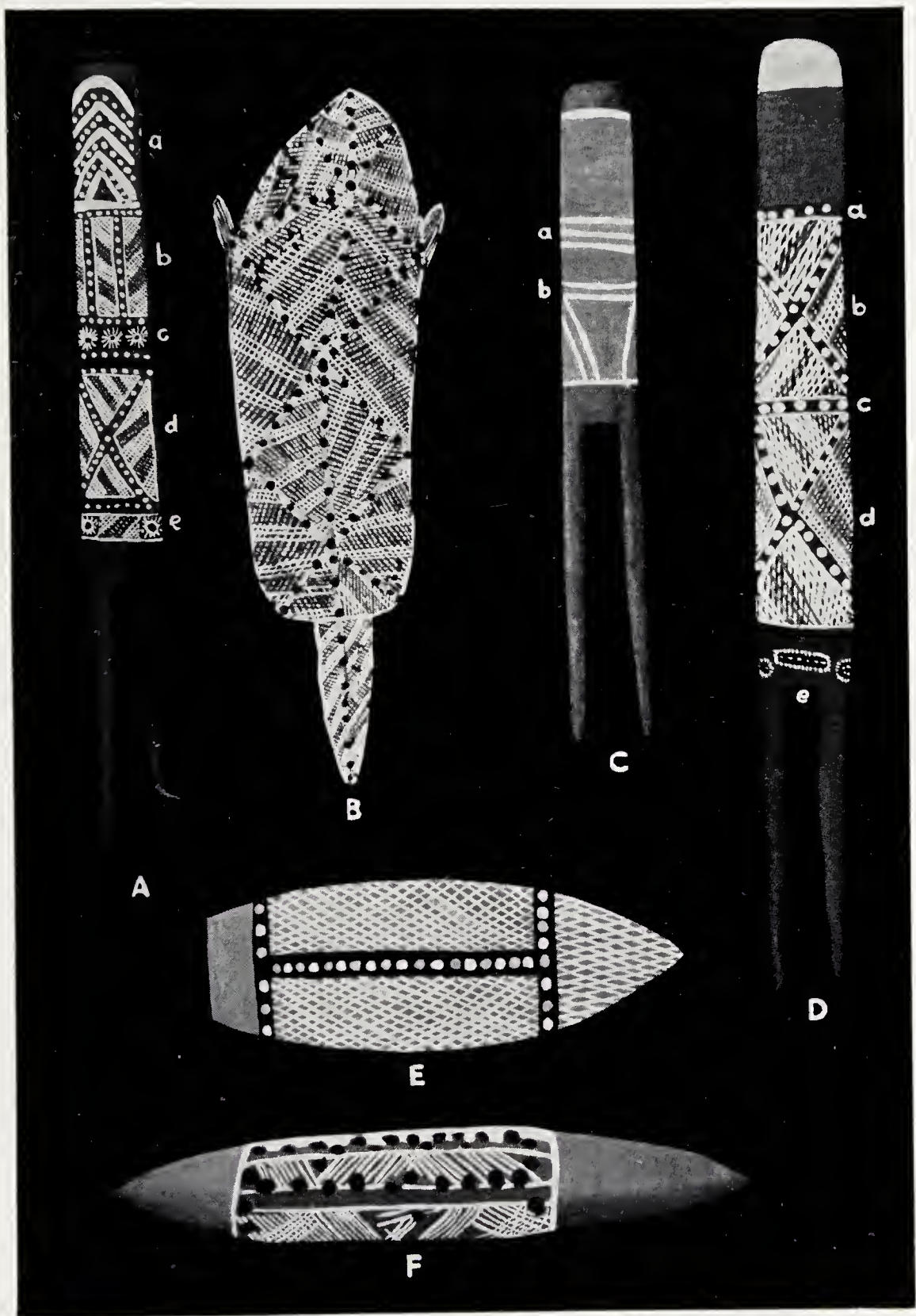
Plate 149D, a painted *muraian*, once belonged to a mythical fish-man, *Maidba*, whose totemic place, Balabanua, is at Rolling Bay,⁴² near the Liverpool River.

The upper and middle transverse dotted lines, *a* and *c*, represent the fins of the fish, and the upper crossed diagonal lines, *b*, the bones. The lower crossed lines, *d*, are the roads along which the mythical fish-man travelled. His faeces are indicated by the white dots on the black lines and the oval figure, *e*, on the bottom of the stick. The two star-like figures near by are the eyes of the fish-man, *Maidba*.

The Water-lily Man, Magau

In early times a mythical water-lily man, *Magau*, who lived at a swamp called Munlarak-batmau, on the upper reaches of the Liverpool River, painted designs on a *muraian* similar to Pl. 149E. He was so pleased with the result that he decreed that ever afterwards those designs should be painted on both the sacred objects of his totem and on the bodies of all the men who took part in his ceremonies.

42. Map, Fig. 1.



Jean Truran

PLATE 149. Carved and painted objects, western Arnhem Land

- A, C The diver-duck, jinia-laitja B The black diver-duck man, Bon-Bon
 D The mackerel-man, Maidba E The water-lily, magau F The man, Marouwil

Plate 149E shows the painted *muraian* of the water-lily totem. The lines of dots represent the blossoms; the parallel lines, the stalks—or their pithy centre—which the aborigines eat.

The Man, Marouwil

Plate 149F illustrates a *muraian* associated with a mythical man, *Marouwil*, whose totemic place, Anawouja, is near the Liverpool River.

The longitudinal lines represent the stomach of *Marouwil*; the dots, his faeces; and the cross-hatching, his fat.

9. MESSAGE STICKS

The scattered records of message sticks in the anthropological literature of the last seventy-five years indicate that, in one form or another, they have been, or still are being, used over most of aboriginal Australia. Spencer and Gillen,⁴³ however, found no evidence that sticks of the type recorded elsewhere were used by the Aranda tribe of Central Australia. Nor did I find any evidence of the use of message sticks among the aborigines of the western deserts of Central Australia, whose tribal lands are immediately west of the Aranda. Message sticks, however, are used by the aborigines of the Nullarbor Plain, which is on the southern fringe of the western deserts of Central Australia.⁴⁴ Roth,⁴⁵ in 1897, recorded fourteen message sticks from northern Queensland, and Howitt,⁴⁶ in 1904, twenty-one examples from south-eastern Australia. Both authors explained the meanings and the manner in which the sticks were used. Up to date, Roth and Howitt have made the major contributions to our knowledge of message sticks, although many other writers have referred to them.

According to both Howitt and Roth, message sticks were used for several purposes, namely, to call the participants of a ceremony together, to invite fellow-tribesmen to a hunt or a fight, and to convey a personal request from one aboriginal, through a messenger, to another, asking him for food or goods. Both Roth and Howitt, and in fact most of the other writers on the subject, are definite that the message sticks serve only as a memory aid, or perhaps a passport, the designs themselves having no recognizable meaning, nor could they be read without the aid of someone who had been told their meaning by the sender of the stick. On a number of the message sticks figured from Queensland by Roth, and from south-eastern Australia by Howitt, many of the designs referred to topographical features which the messenger would have to pass before he reached his destination. Sometimes there were notches, the length of the journey in days. Topographical details also were present on the message sticks I recorded from the southern edge of the Nullarbor Plain.⁴⁷

There were, however, no such topographical details engraved on any of the examples collected at either Yirrkalla or Oenpelli. With the exception of the

43. Spencer and Gillen (1899), p. 142.

45. Roth (1897), p. 137, Fig. 326-38.

47. Mountford (1938), p. 122.

44. Mountford (1938), p. 122.

46. Howitt (1904), pp. 691-70, Figs. 42-5.

ceremonial message sticks, they were all personal requests for food, tobacco and other goods used by the white man. I feel sure, however, that fuller research would reveal many more examples of the ceremonial type.

Whilst at Yirrkalla and Oenpelli I had to fly to Darwin several times on expedition matters. Each time I went one or more aborigines gave me message sticks to deliver to their friends at Darwin. My procedure (after I had made a record of the message stick either by a sketch or a rubbing) was to write the meanings of the various symbols on a sheet of paper, wrap the paper round the message stick and enclose it in an envelope, on the outside of which I wrote the name of the recipient as a guide to my memory. When I delivered the message stick, which I did on all but two occasions, I was able to explain to the recipient the significance of the marks on the message stick by referring to my notes.

(I) YIRRKALLA

While the expedition party was at Yirrkalla we received a visit from a white man who, according to the aborigines, had bought their seed pearls and tortoise-shell, but had not paid for them. A number of aborigines carved message sticks, which they delivered to the visitor by hand to remind him of his debt. At the same time, the aborigines added a request for a number of items of clothing and luxuries in the forlorn hope that some day he might send them along. Before the message sticks were delivered, I was able to make rubbings of two, one from *Bununga*, Fig. 66C, and another from *Mungarai*, Fig. 67C, E.

(a) SECULAR MESSAGE STICKS

On Fig. 66C, which is *Bununga's* message stick, the upper three lines, *a*, represent three boxes of matches, *b*, two blankets, and *c*, singlets. Triangle *e* refers to the nineteen shillings debt owing to *Bununga* for some time; *d* is a request for shirts, *m* for two fishing lines, *n* for calico, and *o* for tobacco.

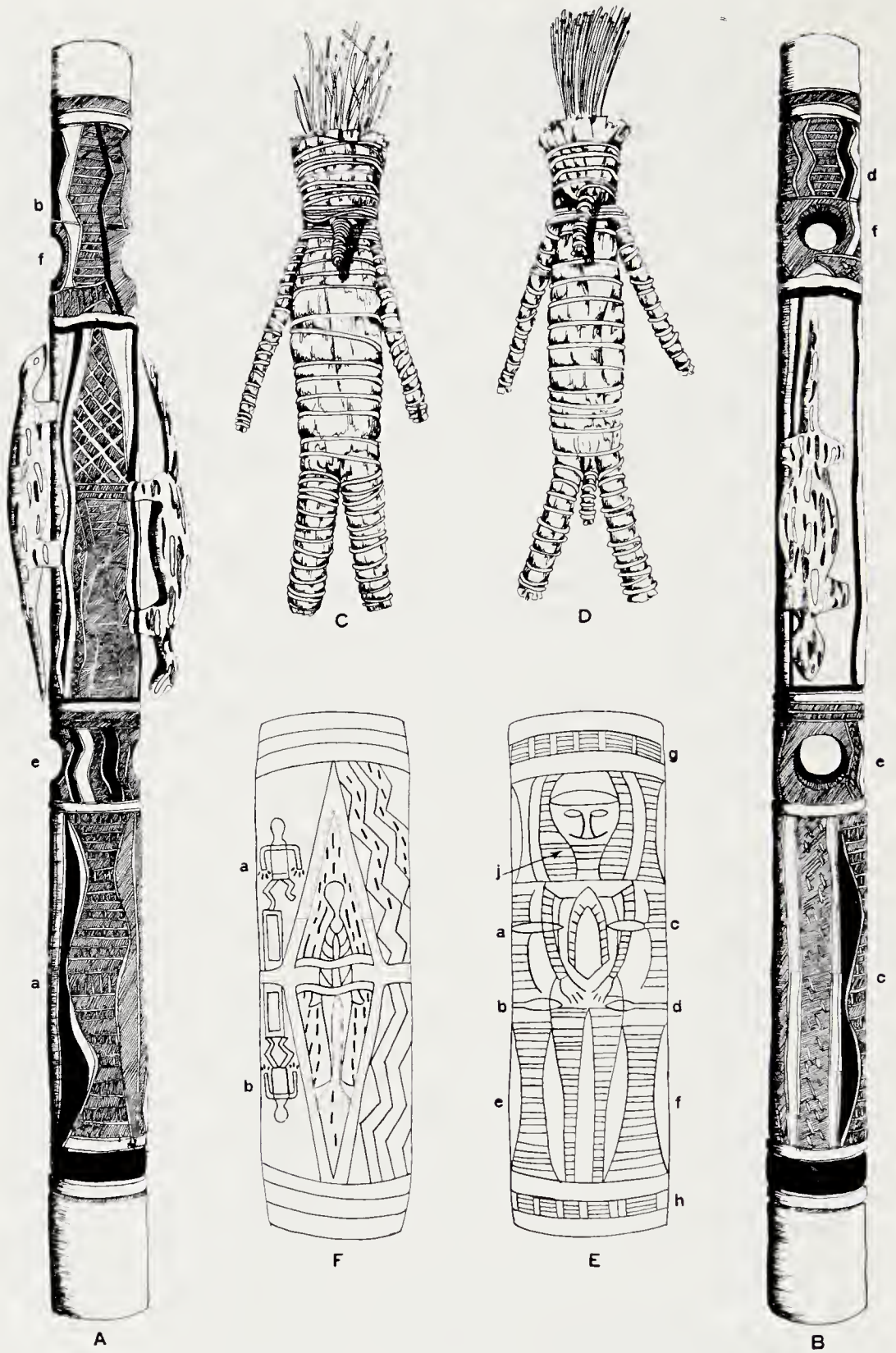
Fig. 67E is *Mungarai's* message stick to the same white man. The central dot, *a*, is the white man, the recipient of the message stick. The triangle *b* is a request for a towel, *c, c, c* for loin cloths, *d* a new belt, *e* a knife, *f* a mirror, *g* razor blades, *h* two fishing lines, *j* trousers, *k* shirt, *l* hair comb, and *m* hair oil.

On the reverse side, Fig. 67C, the upper cross-hatched carving is pure decoration. The line *n* is the sender, *Mungarai*. The triangles, *o*, refer to the money owing to him for seed pearls and tortoise-shell; *p* is a request for a bag of flour, *q* for sugar, *r* for sticks of tobacco. *Mungarai* referred to *s* as the 'asking' line.⁴⁸

Figure 66E, F illustrates a message stick sent by *Wondjuk* at Yirrkalla to his partner, *Baramala*, in the ceremonial exchange cycle of Arnhem Land.⁴⁹

48. This 'asking' symbol is also engraved on Fig. 67G, *s, t, u, w, x, z*.

49. Donald Thomson (1949) has given us a full description of the economic structure and ceremonial exchange system of Arnhem Land. The stone-headed spears, *nambi*, asked for by *Wondjuk* travel only in a northerly direction, while the articles from Yirrkalla, i.e. stone axes, ceremonial bags and feather ornaments, move in the opposite direction. The types of articles and their direction of travel are indicated in Fig. 2 of Thomson's book.



Rosemary Dunnett

FIG. 65. Ceremonial message sticks and bark figures, Yirrkalla
 A, B The night-bird, karawak, and the opossum, marungo C, D Bunbulama and Wuluwait
 E, F The man, Buma-buma

Wondjuk is asking his trade partner, *Baramala* (who lives near the famous flint quarries of Nilipidji, west of Blue Mud Bay) to send him a number of articles, including several bundles of stone-headed spears. This bundle of spears will be repaid, in turn, by articles which *Wondjuk* will collect in the Yirrkalla area.

The elongated designs, *a*, on the bottom of the obverse and the reverse side of Fig. 66E, F is a request to *Baramala* to send two bundles of stone-headed spears to *Wondjuk*; *c* refers to a ceremonial string, *purukuku*, of the *dna* moiety, in which white eagle down is twisted during manufacture, and *d*, a carrying-basket for *Wondjuk's* wife. The short parallel lines on either side are decorations only.

Figure 66D is a message stick which *Mauwulan*, one of my informants, asked a member of the expedition to deliver to a white man who had visited Yirrkalla previously. The message stick was a reminder to the recipient about a number of articles he had promised to send to *Mauwulan* and his wife.

The upper part of the message stick dealt largely with the requirements of *Mauwulan's* wife. The lines *a* are a request for two skirts, *b* two singlets, *c* a hair comb, *d* a mirror, and *e* a bottle of hair oil; *f* is *Mauwulan's* request for a turtle rope, and *p* for many fish-hooks.

On the lower panel, *Mauwulan* is asking at *g* for much tobacco, at *h* for a mirror, *o* a hair comb, *r* a knife, *j* a pair of trousers, *m* two short trousers, and *n* a belt. The four crescent shapes indicate the many moons since the articles were promised.

Figure 66G, H is a message stick I carried from *Wondjuk* at Yirrkalla to *Buramin* in Darwin.

One side of the message stick, Fig. 66H, dealt with goods required by *Wondjuk*; the other, Fig. 66G, those required by his wife. On Fig. 66H, *a* is a request for a mirror, *b* for hair oil, *c* long trousers, *d* a shirt, the multiple lines, *e*, on the left, many sticks of tobacco, and *f*, a number of blankets.

On Fig. 66G, *m* is a request for a skirt for *Wondjuk's* wife, *n* for calico, and *o* for a belt.

Fig. 67D, G illustrates a message stick *Matarman*, at Yirrkalla, asked me to deliver to his brother, *Malarapan*, in Darwin.

On Fig. 67D is the figure of *Malarapan*, the recipient. The meanings of the various lines are: *a*, two white shirts; *b*, two khaki shirts; *c*, one blue coat; *d*, two belts; *e*, two knives; *f*, two khaki shorts; *g*, two long white trousers; and *h*, a hat. The border of short lines is decoration.

The symbols on Fig. 67G (on which the figure of *Matarman*, the sender, is engraved) indicate the goods required by *Matarman's* wife: *j*, two bottles of hair oil; *k*, two combs; *l*, a looking-glass; *m*, two small belts; *n*, two dresses; *o*, a singlet; *p*, two belts, white; *q*, two more small belts; *r*, a pair of scissors. The zigzag lines, *s*, *t*, *u*, *w*, *x*, *z*, are 'asking' marks.

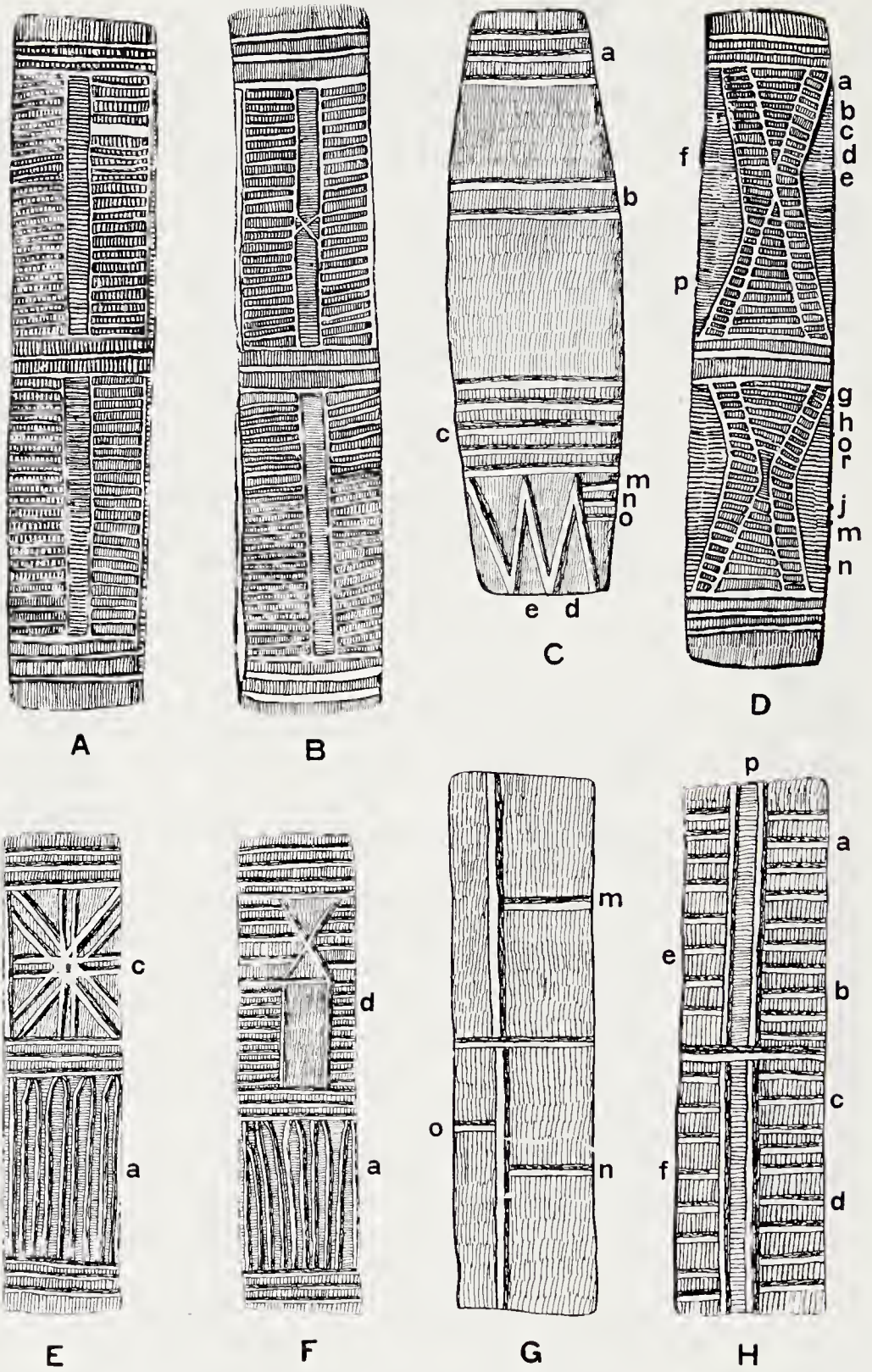


FIG. 66. Secular message sticks, Yirkalla
 A, B Unidentified C Bununga D Mauwulan E, F, G, H Wondjuk

Jean Truran

Three of the message sticks from Yirrkalla were unidentified, Fig. 68C, D, Fig. 66A, B, and Fig. 67A, F. They are included to indicate additional designs employed on the message sticks of that locality.

(b) CEREMONIAL MESSAGE STICKS

The Man, Buma-buma, of Trial Bay

At Wialpa, Trial Bay,⁵⁰ during mythical times, an old *dua* man, *Bouka-baluwuru*, instructed his son, *Buma-buma*, to go to an adjacent group of aborigines and bring back with him two boys who were due to be circumcised. When *Buma-buma* reached the distant camp he demanded, in the name of his father, two girls instead of two boys. Though the old men agreed to the demand, they were somewhat suspicious of the unusual request. On nearing Wialpa, *Buma-buma*, hiding the girls in the jungle, told his father that the old men of the distant people wanted at least another year before their youths were ready for circumcision. The father, who did not believe that story, demanded more and further more details, until *Buma-buma* was forced to admit he had brought girls instead of boys. The men, and especially the father, were so enraged over *Buma-buma's* disobedience and its consequent disgrace that they speared the young man to death. After the burial rituals of *Buma-buma*, the men at Wialpa were so ashamed of his actions that they changed themselves into water-birds, which still live in the nearby fresh-water swamps.

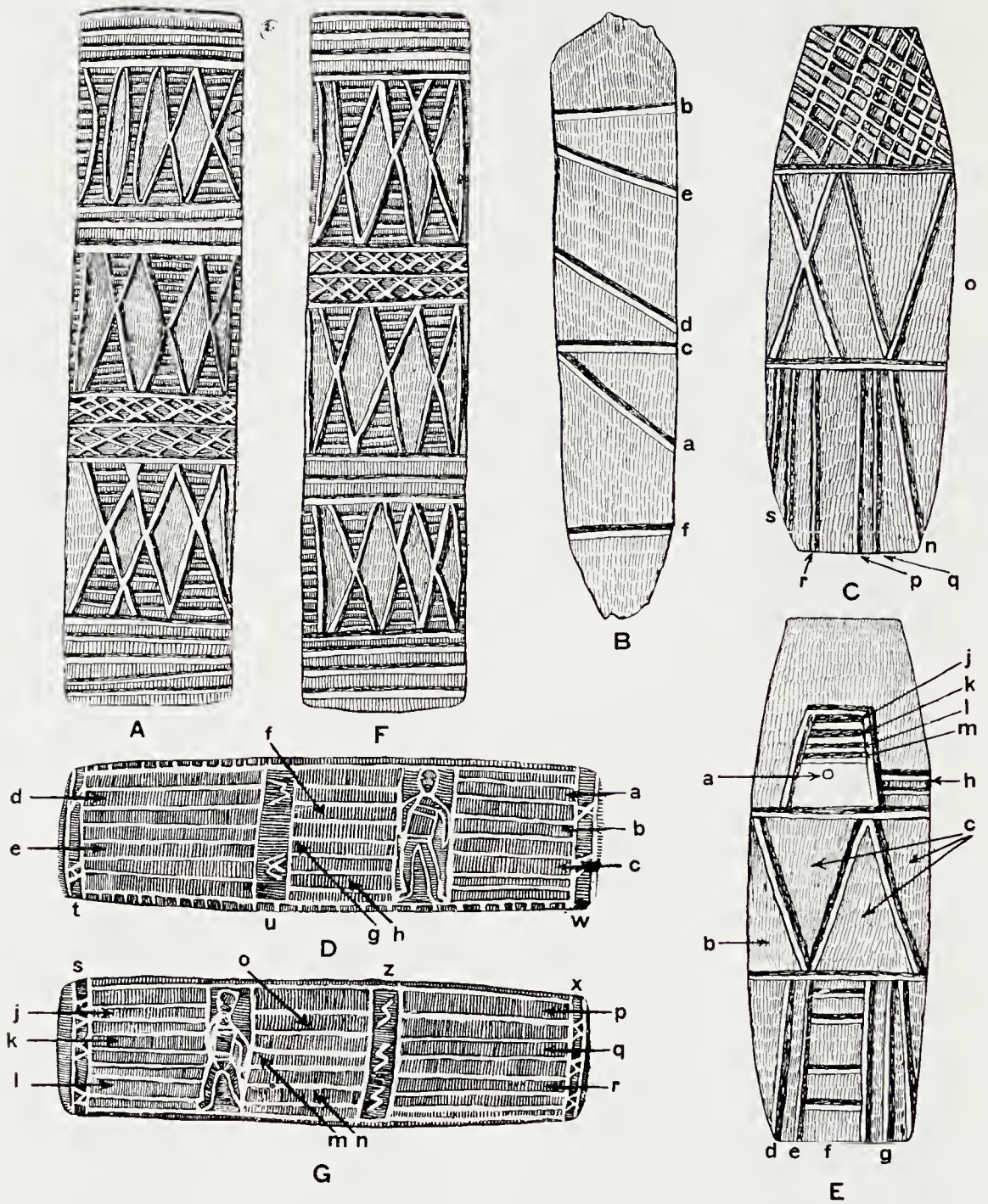
At the present time the ceremonial message stick, on which the figure of *Buma-buma* is engraved, is sent to a group of aborigines who have a boy ready for circumcision.⁵¹ Although the designs on the stick refer specifically to the death and burial of *Buma-buma*, and not to circumcision, the myth of *Buma-buma's* disobedience and punishment is so well known that the significance of the message stick is understood.

Figure 65E is the obverse side and Fig. 65F the reverse. On Fig. 65E the dead body of *Buma-buma*, wrapped for burial, occupies the central position. The spears, which had been thrust into his side, are at *a, b, c, d*. The group of lines, *e*, are *dua* men and *f*, *jiritja* men, who are taking part in the burial rituals. The short lines, *g*, at the top of the message stick are the *jiritja* and *h*, at the bottom, the *dua* men, who are chanting the songs of burial. All these men have since been changed into water-birds. The designs on panel *j* refer to the paper-bark wrapping of the corpse.

The reverse side, Fig. 65F, shows *Buma-buma* when the decomposition is complete and the people have assembled to transfer his bones to the temporary bark coffin. The main lozenge-shaped design is the paper-bark wrapping round the corpse, which is now a skeleton. On the left at *a* is a *dua* man, *Biribirit*, with a bark coffin at his feet, and at *b* a *jiritja* man, also standing on a bark

50. Map, Fig. 57.

51. In north-eastern Arnhem Land the boys are circumcised when they are about eight years of age.



Jean Truran

FIG. 67. Secular message sticks, Yirkalla
 A, F Unidentified B Miljirina C, E Mungarai D, G Matarnian

coffin. The short lines around the skeleton are the maggots deserting the body and burying themselves in the ground to pupate. The two men are now water-birds; the coffins, the paper-bark wrappings of the corpse and the body of *Buma-buma* are natural features at Wialpa.

The Night-bird, Karawak, and the Opossum, Marungo

During creation times the night-bird, *karawak*, flew from Milingimbi to a hollow tree at Cape Shield, Blue Mud Bay, so that he could talk to the opossum, *marungo*, who lived in it.⁵²

At specified times, the aborigines associated with the night-bird and opossum totems carve a stick, similar to that illustrated on Fig. 65A, B, and send it to the clan and language groups on whose territory *karawak* rested on his way to Cape Shield. The presentation of this stick is an invitation to attend the ceremonies at a specified time and place.⁵³

Figure 65A, B represents the hollow tree at Cape Shield on the top of which, every night, the night-bird and the opossum talk to each other. The day-time camp of the opossum is represented at *e, e*, and the night camp at *f, f*.

On Fig. 65A, the opossum on the left is ascending the tree at nightfall to keep his companion company, and on the right he is descending to sleep through the hours of daylight. The designs at *a, b, c* and *d* symbolize water-lilies which grow in the swamps near the totemic tree, and the short lines at the bottom of Fig. 65B, the scratches made by the opossum in the bark of the totemic tree as he climbs up and down.⁵⁴

(2) OENPELLI

Figure 67B is a message stick an aboriginal, *Miljirina*, at Oenpelli asked me to deliver to his friend, *Jakinuramilja*, in Darwin.

The line *a* is *Miljirina*, the sender of the stick, and the line *b* the recipient, *Jakinuramilja*; *c* is *Tundara*, one of *Miljirina's* wives, and *d*, another wife, called *Marinja*. The lines *e* and *f* each represent a bottle of tobacco. *Miljirina* wanted his friend, *Jakinuramilja*, to induce his two wives, *Tuudara* and *Mariuja*, to come back to him at Oenpelli; he also wanted two bottles of tobacco.⁵⁵

Figure 68E is the message stick I carried from an aboriginal, *Kainarani*, at Oenpelli to his son, *Pultadi*, in Darwin. The sender was distressed because his son had been drinking heavily, and was urging him to return to his father and

52. For the complete myth, see p. 362.

53. Warner (1937), p. 362, mentions that at Milingimbi similar *garrawak* message sticks are carried to both *dua* and *jiritja* groups notifying them that the *narra* rituals are about to start.

54. The symbolism employed on the bark painting of the night-bird and the opossum, Pl. 115E, is similar to that used on the message stick.

55. Tobacco was traded in small bottles. When we were at Yirrkalla the mission authorities at southern Groote Eylandt discontinued the issue of tobacco. After that prohibition, there was a regular trade in bottles of tobacco between the expedition camp and the Groote Eylandt Mission. The tobacco followed the same lines as in the ceremonial trade cycle described by Thomson (1949).

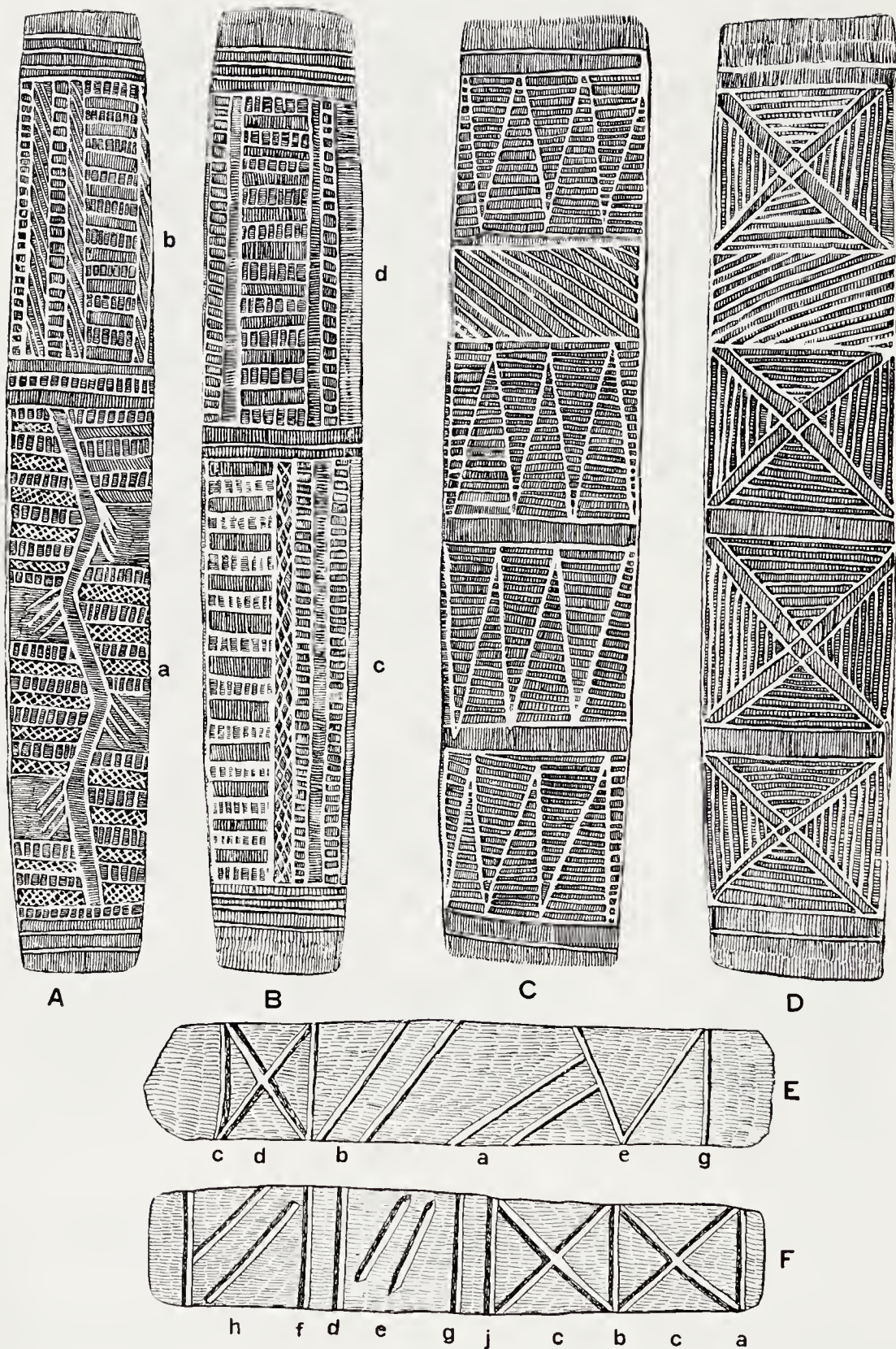


FIG. 68. Message sticks, Yirkalla and Oenpelli Jean Truan
 A, B Ceremonial, Djungkao C, D Unidentified E Kainarui F Miljirina

mother. The two marks, *a*, referred to the somewhat tragic message I was asked to deliver, and the two marks, *b*, to the sorrowing mother and father. The son was also asked to send, or bring, other supplies, *c* being a request for tobacco, the crossed diagonal lines, *d*, for two blankets, the triangle *e* for sugar, and *g* for a mosquito net.

Figure 68F is a message stick I carried from *Miljirina* at Oenpelli to a number of aborigines at Darwin, chief among them being *Tjakulima*. Line *a* is a request from *Miljirina* to *Tjakulima* to send out food because he wished to go to Goulburn Island; *b* is a member of the staff of Native Affairs in Darwin, and *c, c* (the crosses) requests to that officer to send *Miljirina's* wife, *Tundara*, back to Oenpelli; *d* is *Wiang*, *e* two sticks of tobacco, *f* an aboriginal, *Nantjin*, *g* another aboriginal, *Miauri*, and *h*, more sticks of tobacco which *Miljirina* wanted the men to send to him at Oenpelli.

PART SIX
ASTRONOMY

6

ASTRONOMY

THE AUSTRALIAN ABORIGINES, whose knowledge of the night sky is far greater than that of most white men, have surrounded the heavenly bodies with a maze of stories.

Although the writers of the last century, Smyth,¹ Squires,² Ridley³ and others, gathered much information about aboriginal astronomy, few later writers have done so. Maegraith⁴ has published a detailed and valuable description of the astronomy of the Aranda and Luritja tribes of Central Australia; Mountford⁵ has recorded a myth of Orion and the Pleiades from the Adnjamatana tribe of South Australia, and later,⁶ more detailed information on the astronomy of the Pitjendadjara tribe of western Central Australia.

In Arnhem Land the aboriginal men appeared to have an extensive knowledge of the major stars, the planets and some of the inconspicuous star groups.⁷ They have depicted, on sheets of bark, many of the myths relating to these heavenly bodies. Although there are some resemblances between the myths of Milingimbi and Yirrkalla, those of Oenpelli, Groote Eylandt and Yirrkalla show wide differences.

1. GROOTE EYLANDT

The Constellation of the Crab, Unwala

The aboriginal constellation of the crab, *Unwala*, an unmarried sky-man living by himself, is a group of small stars at the head of Hydra. This constellation is an example of how small, inconspicuous star groups form part of the aboriginal astronomy, while adjacent first and second magnitude stars, like Procyon and Regulus, are apparently disregarded.

Plate 150A is the painting of the mud crab, *Unwala*. It is, in fact, almost a duplicate of the design on Pl. 9B, which deals with the ancestral crabs at Bickerton Island.

The Milky Way

The Groote Eylandt aborigines look upon the Milky Way, *ataluma*, as a sky river in whose waters are many large fish and a multitude of water-lily bulbs. It is from this river that the star-people gather their food. All the stars in the section of the Milky Way west of a line drawn between the Southern Cross and

1. Smyth (1878), pp. 431-4.

3. Ridley (1875), pp. 141-2.

5. Mountford (1939), pp. 103-4.

7. Maegraith (1932), p. 20, noticed the same characteristics among the aborigines of Central Australia.

2. Squires (n.d.), pp. 44-61.

4. Maegraith (1932), pp. 19-26.

6. Mountford (1948), pp. 154-7.

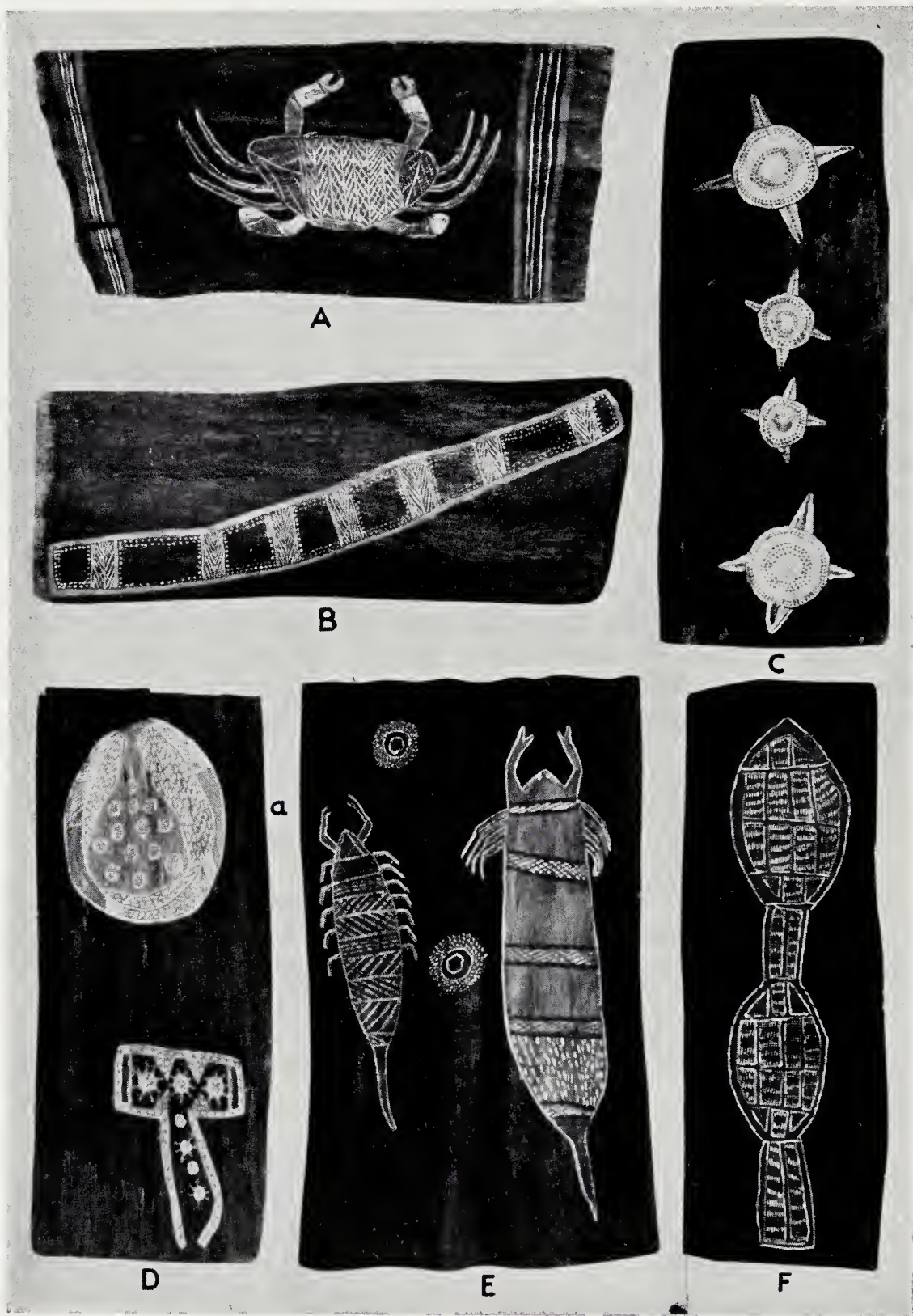


PLATE 150. Bark paintings, astronomical, Groote Eylandt

- A The Crab B The Milky Way C Venus, Jupiter and their children
 D Orion and the Pleiades E The Scorpions F The Sun-woman

the Great Bear, Ursa Major, belong to the *wirinikapara* moiety⁸ and those to the east to the *oranikapara* moiety. This observation was made at Groote Eylandt on 15 May 1948.

Plate 150B is a simple painting of the Milky Way. The transverse chevron patterns indicate breaks in the galaxy, and the dots, the myriads of stars that make up this heavenly spectacle. The aborigines believe the small stars of the Milky Way are the water-lily bulbs.

Venus and Jupiter, with Their Two Children

Venus, *Barnimbida*,⁹ the man, and Jupiter, *Duwarawara*, the woman, have two children, *Dugina-nutjana*, who are stars in the 'sting' of Scorpio, Lambda and Upsilon. The two children, *Dugina-nutjana*, are considered to be 'friends' of the south-east wind, *mamariga*, for when these two stars of Scorpio appear in the evening sky toward the end of April the *mamariga* is blowing at its full strength. The children are not associated with the other prevailing winds, the north-west, *bara*, or the north-east, *timbura*.

Plate 150C is a simple painting of the star family of *Barnimbida*. The star on the top is the man, *Barnimbida*, and that on the bottom the woman, *Duwarawara*. The two stars in between are the children, *Dugina-uutjana*.

The Scorpions, Miaipra-pria

The constellation of the scorpions, *Miaipra-pria*, is made up of a number of small stars of the northern sky in the constellation of the Lynx. The *Miaipra-pria* are old childless star-people, who hunt over the sky or fish in the Milky Way for food, bringing it back to cook over their own fires, the two large stars in the constellation.

In Pl. 150E the figure on the right is the man, and that on the left, the woman. The two circles between them are the fires (unidentified bright stars) at which they cook their food.

The Sun-woman, Mamoura

The sun, being a woman, occupies a minor place in the myths of the Australian aborigines. *Mamoura*, the sun-woman, and *Wanum-gurupa*, her husband, both of whom were old and feeble, once lived at Mamoura-madja (sun-place), in south-eastern Groote Eylandt. When these ancestral people died, their bodies were transformed into two low rocks on the seashore.

Several points suggest that the sun-woman, *Mamoura*, and the female turtle, *Imoraka*, are identical. The totemic rocks of the sun-man and sun-woman at Mamoura-madja are also the ancestral bodies of the male and female green

8. It is interesting to note that even the heavenly bodies are grouped according to the moiety laws.

9. Warner (1937), p. 524, who calls the evening star *barnumbir*, relates a myth about this star and the *dua* aborigines' 'heaven'. Most likely the Groote Eylandt *barnimbida* is associated with the same myth. See also Milingimbi and Yirkalla myths relating to *barnumbir*, p. 327, p. 328.

turtles, *Imoraka*, p. 77. Both the song associated with the sun-woman and that belonging to the turtle (p. 79) deal with the activities of the turtle, the first describing the turtle entering and leaving the water, the second, the female turtle coming on shore and laying her eggs in the sand. The sun is looked upon as a female turtle.

My informants stated that the following song belonged to the sun-woman, *Mamoura*. Nevertheless, it describes the turtle leaving and entering the water. On account of the close association between the sun and the turtle it is possible that the song also refers to the rising and setting of the sun over the sea.

THE SONG

<i>Imoraka</i>	<i>ibirika</i>	<i>nitaninda</i>	<i>nabu-tjuna</i>
turtle	goes along	shore	goes under water
	<i>nanbi-tjuna</i>	<i>manbi-rinka</i>	
	comes out of water	re-enters water	

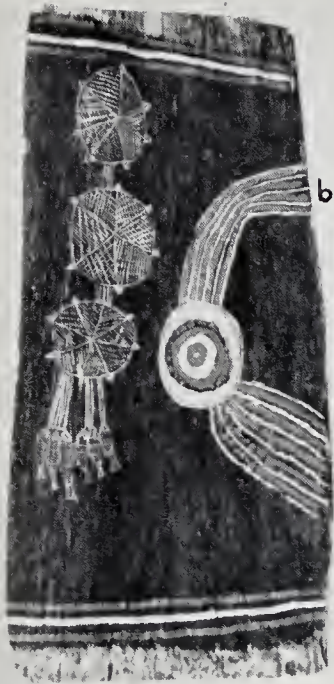
In Pl. 150F the upper turtle-like figure is the elderly sun-woman, *Mamoura*, and the lower one, her husband, *Wanum-gurupa*. The rectangles in the design were described as the 'roads' by which the sun enters the water.

The Constellation of Orion and the Pleiades

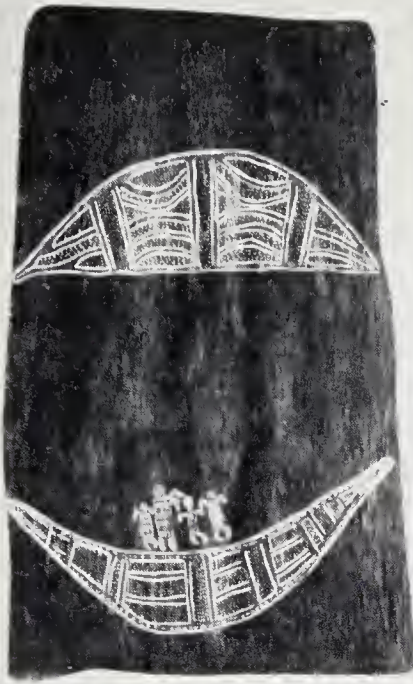
Orion and the Pleiades are linked in the astronomical myths. More often than not, Orion is a man or group of men, and the Pleiades their wives. This is the belief of the aborigines of Groote Eylandt. The major stars in the constellation of Orion are three fishermen, the *Burum-burum-runja*, and the Pleiades, their wives, the *Wutarinja*. Three of the bark paintings illustrate this myth.

In Pl. 151E the fishermen, *Burum-burum-runja*, are the three stars (Orion's belt) in the rectangle, and the smaller dots, their children. The extension (Orion's sword) in the lower left-hand corner symbolizes the line of fish the celestial fishermen caught in the creek, *ataluma* (Milky Way). The dots within the circle on the lower right are the wives, *Wutarinja* (the Pleiades).

The myth of the three fishermen, *Burum-burum-runja*, is shown differently in Pl. 151A. Here the fishermen are the three large circles with projections on their periphery. Each man has caught two fish. These are hanging from the lower edge of the bottom circle. As in the other bark paintings of Orion, the three stars representing the men are the belt of Orion, and the fish, the three stars of the sword of Orion. To the right of the constellation is the fire, *tatala-naitjuna*, at which the men cook the fish. The circular design to the right is the fire (Bellatrix), the short, more or less straight lines, *a*, leading towards the lower right-hand edge, the flames of the fire and the longer curving lines, *b*, the smoke. The flames and the smoke are nearby parts of the Milky Way. The wives of the men, i.e. the Pleiades, are not shown in this painting.



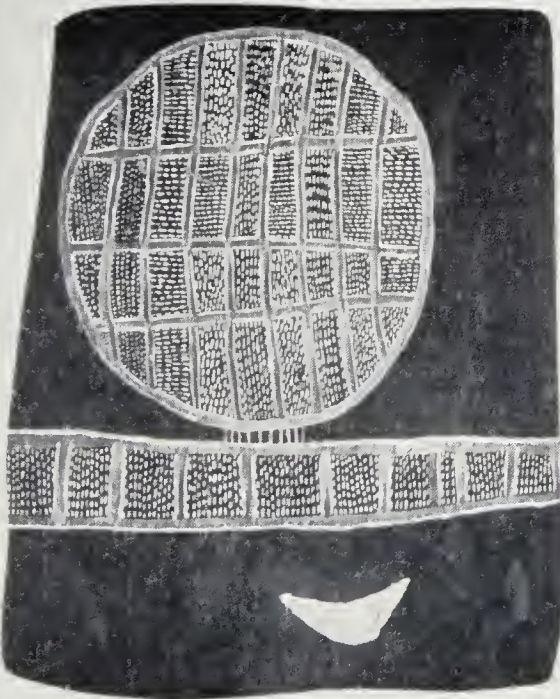
A



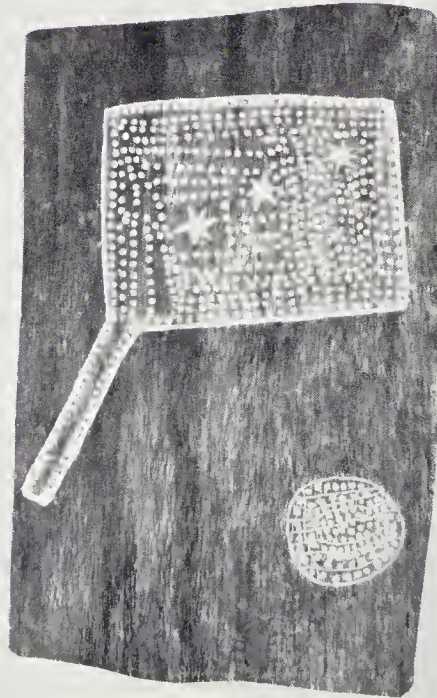
B



C



D



E

PLATE 151. Bark paintings, astronomical, Grootte Eylandt

A, E Orion and the Pleiades

B, D The Moon-man

C The Magellan Clouds

Plate 150D depicts the three fishermen, *Burum-burum-runja*, and their wives, *Wutarinja*, in another form. The three stars (Orion's belt) in the upper part of the T-shaped design are the fishermen. The first upper star in the vertical limb of the T (the sword of Orion) is the fire at which the men cook their fish. The second and fourth stars are parrot-fish and the third a skate. Above, at *a*, are the wives of the celestial fishermen seated within their circular grass hut.¹⁰

The Moon, Jumauria

In the early days of the world the moon, *Jumauria*, had no wife, and so was lonely. As he was travelling across the sky one night he heard a pounding noise and looking down saw the woman, *Dunani-admina*, seated with her family by their camp-fire, preparing food for the evening meal. Quickly *Jumauria* came to earth and, capturing the woman and her family, took them with him into the moon. They have remained there ever since and can be seen on the face of the moon any clear night, the mother, her three children and the moon trees, *tjamba*, under which they shelter.

The aborigines have established a relationship between the tides and the moon. They believe that when the tides are high, the water runs into the moon and fills it up. Then the moon becomes fat and round. When the tides are low the water runs out of the moon, leaving it thin and small. When I asked my informants why, although the tides were high at the new moon, the moon itself was still thin they explained that this was not so. Although only a small part of the moon was shining (like pearl shell), the dark body of the moon could be seen, made fat by the water which flowed into it from the high tide.

Plate 151B pictures *Jumauria*, the moon-man, with his wife and family. The upper design is the full moon, although only half the disc is shown. The lower is the new moon with *Dunani-admina*, the moon-man's wife, and her two children standing on its upper edge. The moon trees, *tjamba*, are not shown.

In Pl. 151D is the circular disc of the moon with a series of lines on the lower edge indicating the water running into the moon from the sea, the transverse band across the bark sheet. The new moon is shown on the lower edge as a crescent.

The Magellan Clouds

The Magellan Clouds are the camps of an old man and woman, known as the *Jukara*, who are so feeble that they cannot gather their own food. The other star-people spear the fish in the waters of the sky river, *ataluma*, gather the water-lily bulbs from its shallow reaches and take them to the *Jukara*, who cook the food at their own fire.

The lower design in Pl. 151C, the greater Magellan Cloud, is the camp of the old man, *Jukara*. The upper design, the lesser Cloud, is the camp of the woman. The oval between the camps is the fire at which the *Jukara* cook their food. This is a star called *Angnura*, probably Achernar. The details of the fire

10. Reproduced in *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land*, 1954, Pl. XXX.

are of some interest. The central oval is the fire and the lines to the right, the burning logs. The outer oval with the curving lines right and left, which my informants said was a circle of small stars, is the smoke of the camp-fire.

The Southern Cross, the Pointers and the Coal Sack

The Southern Cross, the Pointers and the Coal Sack form an aboriginal constellation. The Coal Sack was once a large fish, *alakitja*, which, while swimming in the waters of the celestial stream, the Milky Way, was speared by the two brothers, *Wanamoumitja* (Alpha and Beta Crucis), and dragged to the bank. The brothers divided the fish and cooked it, each at his own fire. Those fires are the remaining two stars of the Southern Cross, Delta and Gamma Crucis.

Near the brothers are two of their friends, the *Meirindilja*, who, at the time the fish was captured, had just returned from a hunt. The *Meirindilja* are sitting at their own camp-fire, chanting a song and beating their boomerangs together to mark the time. These men are the Pointers, Alpha and Beta Centauri.

Plate I52E shows the two brothers, the *Wanamoumitja*, spearing the fish, *alakitja*. The fires at which the fish was cooked are two white discs near the tail. This painting represents the four stars of the Cross and the Coal Sack.

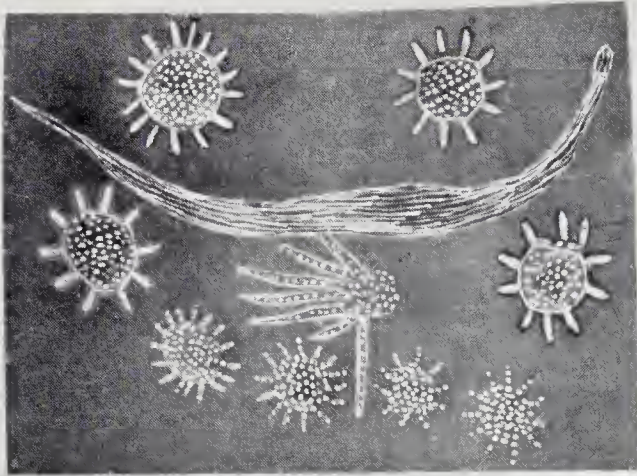
Plate I52B pictures the two men, *Meirindilja*. The two groups of three boomerangs, one group on either side of the *Meirindilja*, were made by them before they went hunting. The transverse lines on the chests of the men are body scars and those across their hips the belt from which hangs their pubic tassel.

In Pl. I52C the whole constellation is painted diagrammatically. On the left-hand side the men, *Meirindilja*, indicated as stars, are shown with their boomerangs between them. The discs in the middle of the painting are the two cooking fires. On the right is the fish, *alakitja*, with the stars above and below representing the brothers *Wanamoumitja*.

W. E. Harney, who collected the terrestrial story of the rock cod and the men of the Southern Cross some years previous to our visit, has provided me with the following particulars.

A rock cod once lived under a projecting boulder in a lagoon some miles south of Windana (Cape Barrow), Fig. 4. Two brothers who lived in the country often reached down when they were passing to feel how large the fish had grown, planning one day to kill and eat it.

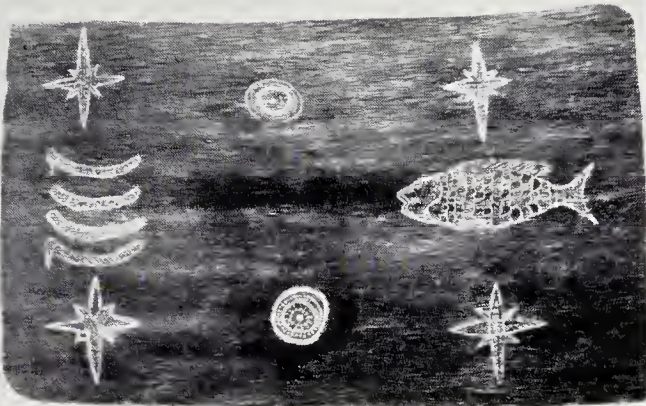
There came a time, however, when the rock cod, which by then had grown into a very large fish, on feeling the hands of the men, caught hold of them, pulled the men under the water, drowned and swallowed them. Then, moving from the lagoon to the sea, thereby creating the Minnie Creek, the fish swam southward until it reached Weakaba, which is at the mouth of the present-day Roper River. After a short stay at Weakaba, the rock cod travelled in a westerly direction, creating the lower reaches of the Roper River on the way, until he met two rainbow-serpents who had just completed the upper part. The work



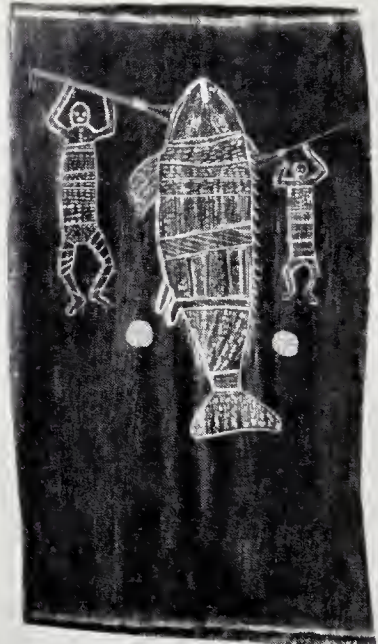
A



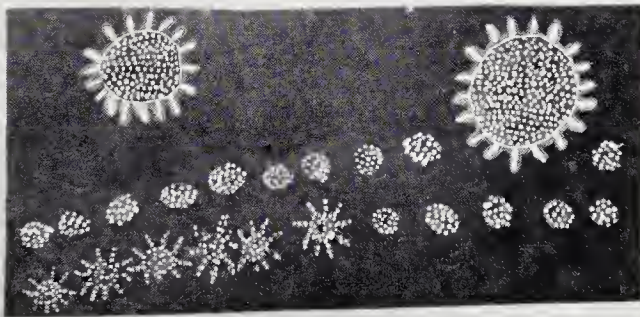
B



C



E



D

PLATE 152. Bark paintings, astronomical, Groote Eylandt and Oenpelli

A The Southern Cross, Oenpelli B The Pointers
 C, E The Southern Cross, Groote Eylandt D Stars

of the cod being finished, he lived quietly in the river until two brothers of the dead men, called the *Wanamoumitja*, speared the rock cod and he died.

The body of the fish was transformed into a large boulder on the banks of the river, but his spirit went into the sky, swam along the Milky Way and came to rest at a place in the firmament known to the white men as the Coal Sack. The two brothers, *Wanamoumitja*, who killed the fish are now large stars near by.

2. OENPELLI

The Milky Way, Mungabou, and the Coal Sack, Munguiban

According to the aborigines of Oenpelli the Milky Way is a stream, *mungabou*, which flows across the sky. No fish live in its waters, or birds float on its surface. There is, however, a multitude of water-lily bulbs, the small stars, which are food for the sky-dwellers. The Coal Sack, *munguiban*, is looked upon as a large plum tree which, during the early 'rain-time', about late December, provides the celestial inhabitants with much fruit. These sky-dwellers are friendly people and often visit each other.

In Pl. 153B the diagonal line is the 'creek' of the sky, *mungabou*, and the adjacent stars, the sky-dwellers who live along its bank. In the upper right-hand corner is the great tree, *munguiban*, the Coal Sack.

The Morning Stars, Garakma

These unidentified morning stars are a celestial family, known as the *Garakma*, which can be seen in the morning sky during October. Like many other sky-dwellers, they live on the water-lily bulbs which grow in the water-course of the sky, *mungabou*, the Milky Way, and fruit from the tree *munguiban*, the Coal Sack.

On Pl. 152D the large star on the right is the man, *Garakma*, and the one on the left, his wife. The circles with enclosed dots are the girls, and the star designs on the lower left, the boys of the family. The children are called the *gingin*.

The Southern Cross

In the early days of the world a group of star-men, the *Nangurgal*, accompanied by their sons, went hunting and caught a large non-venomous snake. This they cooked and ate. After the *Nangurgal* had finished their meal their eyes became so bright that even people on earth could see them. They are now the stars of the Southern Cross.

In Pl. 152A the eyes of the *Nangurgal*, the Southern Cross, are the four larger stars, and those of their sons, the smaller stars. The crescent, once the snake, is the Coal Sack. Immediately below the crescent is the fire, *gunark*, an unidentified star, on which the *Nangurgal* cooked the snake. The projections are the logs on the fire.

The Walagugu and the Tjirupun

The Southern Cross, the Pointers and a number of adjacent small stars within that part of the Milky Way make up the aboriginal constellation of *Tjirupun*¹¹ and the *Walagugu*, with the respective families. *Tjirupun* lives with his numerous wives and children in a round grass hut, and the *Walagugu* camp in the open. These star-people live exclusively on the water-lily bulbs they collect in the nearby Milky Way.

The man, *Tjirupun*, is the large white circle in the centre of Pl. 155C, the remainder of the circles being his family, the larger his wives and the smaller his children. The four outer stars are the *Walagugu*, *a, a*, being the men and *b, b*, their wives. The parallel lines joining these stars to the main design are tracks made by the *Walagugu* as they travelled to and from the Milky Way in search of food.

None of the individual stars in this painting was specifically identified, but it seems likely that the *Walagugu* are the four stars of the Southern Cross and *Tjirupun* and his family the many stars in the nearby Milky Way.

3. MILINGIMBI

The Moon-man, Alinda

At the time of creation the moon-man, *Alinda*, who lived at Tutula at the mouth of the Liverpool River,¹² had two wives, each of whom had borne him a son. One day when the wives were out gathering food, *Alinda* sent the boys to catch some fish while he stayed in camp to complete a large carrying-bag he was making.

The youths did not catch any fish but, on a nearby lagoon, speared a whistling duck which, instead of taking back to their father as they should have done, they cooked and ate on the spot. On their return they told their father they had not caught any fish, but said nothing about the duck they had eaten. However, the moon-man was a shrewd old fellow and knew from the grease on the boys' hands that they had recently eaten flesh of some sort, so he said:

'If you haven't caught any food, how did you get that grease on your fingers?'

Although the lads denied having eaten anything, they could not explain their dirty hands.

After *Alinda* had berated them for both their greed and deceitfulness, the boys lay down in their camp and went to sleep. *Alinda*, seeing this and still angry over the behaviour of his sons, lifted them carefully and pushed them into his carrying-bag. Finding themselves imprisoned, the lads first screamed and kicked frantically, then confessed their misdeeds, promising that, if only their

11. This name is similar to that used by the aborigines of north-eastern Arnhem Land for the constellation of Orion, p. 498.

12. Map, Fig. 1.

father would release them, they would always bring back any food they had caught. But the moon-man was adamant, and tying up the end of his carrying-bag and putting it on his shoulder, loaded it into his canoe and, paddling until almost out of sight of land, threw the bag overboard.

While all this was going on the wives of *Alinda* were digging yams in the jungle. On reaching camp in the late afternoon they saw *Alinda* sitting in his bark hut, but there was no sign of their sons. They asked *Alinda* where they had gone and he replied gruffly that they were out hunting and would not be back that evening. When further questioning brought only evasive answers the wives became suspicious.

Waiting until their husband was asleep, the women, by following the tracks of both their sons and *Alinda*, soon found out what had happened; they learned that the boys, unsuccessful in their fishing, had caught and eaten a whistling duck, carefully hiding the bones in the grass; then they had returned to camp but, as far as the women could see, had not left it again. They also saw the deep tracks of *Alinda*, indicating he was carrying a heavy load, marks where he had launched his canoe and others where he had beached it again, returning with light tracks to his hut. From this evidence the women deduced that *Alinda* had taken their sons out in his canoe and drowned them.

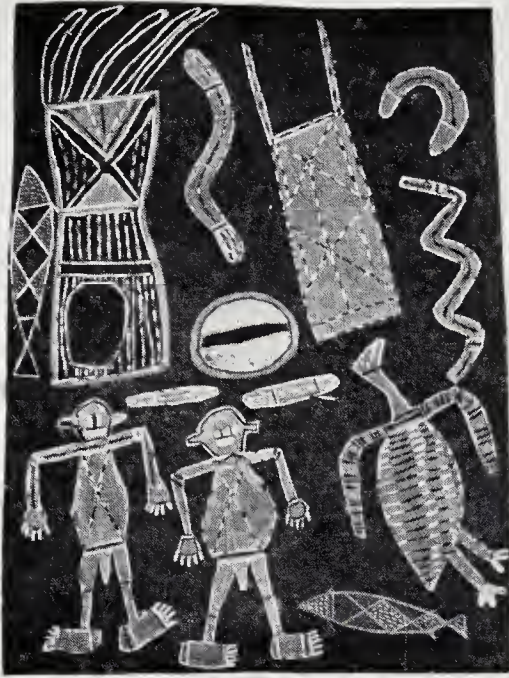
In their anger the wives of *Alinda* set fire to the hut in which their husband was sleeping, rejoicing as they saw him die in great pain amid the burning logs and bark. But even as they watched, the women saw the dead body of *Alinda* come to life, change into a thin crescent, grow into a large silvery sphere, like the moon of today, and climb to the top of a high tree. From that lofty position the moon-man spoke to everyone, to the fish, the birds, the animals and to man.

'I have decreed,' said he, 'that from this time onward the whole of creation will die, and once dead, will never live again. I and I alone, except for three days each month, will live forever.'

Birima, of the fish-people, objected strongly to this decree, but after much argument was finally silenced.

Since that time it has been as the moon decreed. *Alinda* dies every month for three days, comes to life, grows progressively larger for a fortnight, then sickens and dies again. But the rest of creation, once dead, remain dead forever. At full moon, the aborigines will point out a mark across his middle, the scar from the burn which he received so long ago at the hands of his wives.

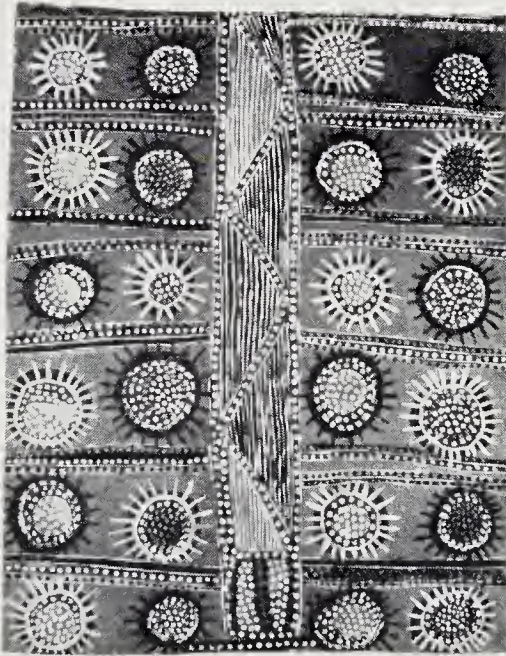
In Pl. 153A is the pictorial representation of the moon myth. The two human figures on the lower left are the sons of *Alinda* whom he had drowned for their misdeeds. The rectangular design toward the upper right is the grass carrying-bag in which the moon-man imprisoned his sons. The rectangle (upper left) represents the bark hut where *Alinda* was burned to death. The black circle is the moon, the parallel lines in the middle section, the flames of the fire, and the curving lines at the top of the hut, the smoke. The snake-like figures on



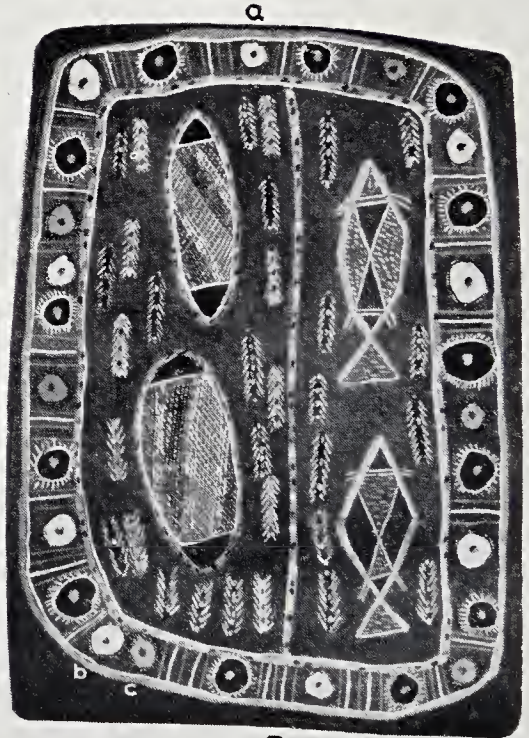
A



B



C



D

PLATE 153. Bark paintings, astronomical, Yirrkalla and Oenpelli

- A The Moon-man B The Milky Way and Coal Sack, Oenpelli
 C The Milky Way, Milingimbi D The opossum-man, Kapali

ASTRONOMY

either side of the carrying-bag of *Alinda* are yams the women collected. On the lower right is the whistling duck which the boys caught and ate. One of the two fish-brothers, *Birima*, is on the lower right and the other to the left of the burning hut. *Alinda* is shown on the upper right as a crescent, the new moon, and in the centre, the full moon, as a white circle with a black mark across it, symbolic of the burn he received.

The Milky Way

The aborigines of Milingimbi, as elsewhere in Arnhem Land, look upon the Milky Way as a celestial stream from which the sky people gather their food.

Plate 153C is a much conventionalized picture of the Milky Way. The central transverse design, with the zigzag line passing from end to end, is the main portion of the Milky Way, while the rectangles on each side are either isolated portions of the galaxy or branches of it. The circles with radiating lines are some of the bright stars within the Milky Way. The artist explained that the transverse design also represented the main stream of the heavens; the rectangles, branches and backwaters of that stream; and the stars, large fish and turtles living in it.



PLATE 154. The pearly nautilus

The Opossum-man, Kapali

During the early days of the world an old opossum-man, *Kapali*, his wives, two crow-women, *Tjakara* and *Wapanpri*, with their brother, *Inua*, lived on the sea coast south of Elcho Island.¹³

At the time the story opens old *Kapali*, having had a quarrel with his wives, paddled to Elcho Island, leaving the women and their brother behind in the

13. Map, Fig. 1.

camp. As food was getting scarce in the jungle, the three crow-people built a fish-trap at the mouth of a nearby stream, which one of them visited every morning, returning with their baskets full of a fish called *laimor*. These they would cook and eat, littering the ground around them with discarded vertebrae.

When the old opossum-man returned from Elcho Island, tired from his long journey in the canoe, he asked his wives for something to eat, but they refused, saying rudely that if he wanted food he had better get some for himself. *Kapali*, after abusing the women for their rudeness, sat down beside his fire to warm himself and went to sleep. On seeing this the women, scooping up the hot coals and burning wood from the camp-fire, threw them over old *Kapali*. Screaming, the old man rushed into the sea to ease the pain, while the women, realizing that vengeance awaited them, hid themselves in the jungle.

Inua was at the fish-trap when he heard the commotion and cries of pain. Guessing what was wrong and not wishing to be involved in a domestic quarrel, he ran back to camp, joined the discarded fish vertebrae end on end to make a long ladder and climbed into the sky, pulling the ladder up after him so that no one could follow.

The opossum-man, having recovered somewhat from his wounds, went to his relatives, the fish-people, and told them about the injuries he had received at the hands of his wives, the crow-women. The mullet, the barramundi and the cat-fish men were so angry over the ill-treatment of their relative that they formed themselves into an avenging party, surrounded the camp of the women, speared them to death and buried them in the jungle. Next day, when the crow-people called on a visit, they could not find the women until a closer search revealed evidence of the avenging party and the bodies of the murdered women.

When *Inua* first heard about the death of his sisters, he would not believe that *Kapali* would have allowed an avenging party to kill his wives when a good beating would have been quite as effective. But after the crow-people had told *Inua* what they had seen—the broken spears, the blood-stained ground and the dead bodies—he was convinced. So, descending to earth on his ladder of fish-bones, he brought his sisters to life, carried them into the sky and changed them to stars.

From that day so long ago the brother and the two sisters have remained in the sky, living happily on the banks of the Milky Way. Every day they go out collecting water-lily bulbs and catching fish, and every night sit quietly among the stars, safe from the vengeance of *Kapali*, the old opossum-man.

The whole design of Pl. 153D represents the stars in the southern portion of the Milky Way adjacent to the constellations of Lupus and Scorpio, those in the outer border being the larger ones. The fish on the lower right is the barramundi, and the one above, the mullet, both of whom assisted in the killing of the two women. The oval designs on the left are baskets used by the women to carry

fish from the trap to the camp. These are now isolated parts of the Milky Way, near the constellation of Argo. Fish-bones scattered within the design, once thrown away by *Inua* and his sisters, are small stars in the Milky Way, and the vertical dotted line across the middle, the track between the camp and fish-trap. The white star at *a* is the brother, *Inua*, and those at *b* and *c* the two wives of *Kapali*. These three stars form the aboriginal constellation of *Kainju*.

Orion and the Pleiades

All the stars of Orion, the Hyades, the Pleiades, those between these constellations and many others stretching far into the northern and southern sky are included in the aboriginal constellation of *Tjilulpuna*. This constellation, known also as the 'canoe stars', covers a large area of the evening sky during the wet season, from December until March. Every night during that time the men, *Tjilulpuna*, paddle their canoe along the 'river' (Milky Way), fishing as they go.

In this attractive painting, Pl. 155A, the main design is the canoe, the projections at the bow and stern being the small platforms on which the aborigines stand to spear fish. The paddles are the long lines of stars stretching far out to the north and the south. They include, on one side, some of the stars of the Gemini, and on the other side, of Eridinus. The three stars at the left-hand end of the canoe (the belt of Orion) are the three men, *Tjilulpuna*; those at the other end of the canoe (the Pleiades) are their wives. The fish within the canoe is the constellation of the Hyades. The star groups representing the fish in the sea were not identified, but are most likely part of the Milky Way.

4. YIRRKALLA

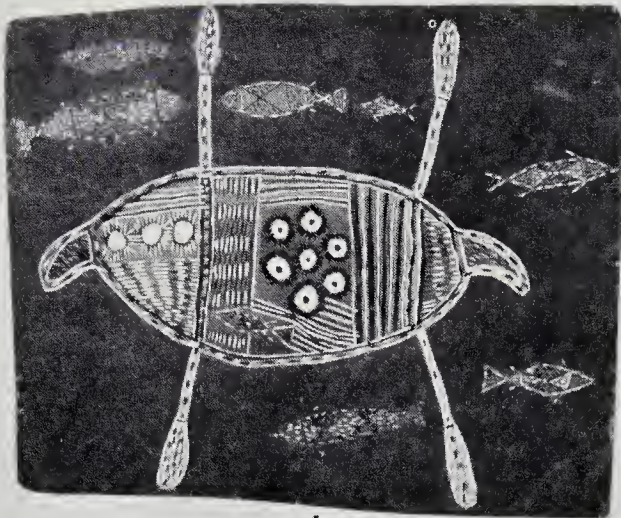
The Moon-man, Alinda

In creation times the moon-man, *Alinda*, and the parrot-fish man, *Dirima*, were always disagreeing over some trivial matter. During one unusually violent quarrel, each picked up his clubs and belaboured the other so badly that both died. Then the spirit of the moon-man, *Alinda*, said to the spirit of the parrot-fish, *Dirima*:

'You are to become a parrot-fish and live in the sea, and when you die, you'll never come to life again, but I am going to be the moon in the sky, and although I'll die like the rest of you, I'll only be dead for three days, then I'll live again.'

So, from that time onwards, the parrot-fish and the whole of creation, once dead, never again came to life. But although, each month, the moon becomes thinner and thinner until he finally dies, after three days he again shows as a silver streak which grows progressively larger until it reaches its full size.

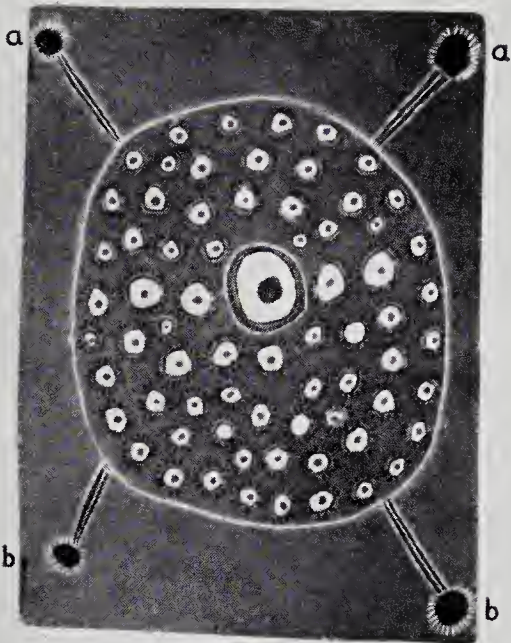
The aborigines brought me the empty shell of the pearly nautilus (*Nautilus pompilius*) which they said was the skeleton of the dead moon, Pl. 154.



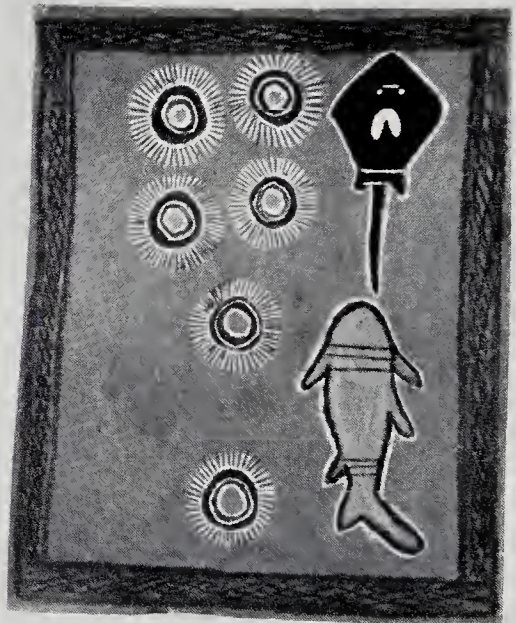
A



B



C



D

PLATE 155. Bark paintings, astronomical, Yirkalla and Oenpelli
 A Orion and the Pleiades B The Moon-man
 C Walagugu and the Tjirupun D The Southern Cross and the Pointers

Warner¹⁴ has a variant of this myth, in which it is the parrot-fish who decides that, when he dies, he will remain dead. The aborigines contend that the parrot-fish was a 'silly fool'.

Plate 155B illustrates the legend of the moon-man, *Alinda*, and the parrot-fish man, *Dirima*. In the centre are the two opponents belabouring each other with clubs; on the lower left is the dead parrot-fish with his weapon lying beside him, and on the lower right, the dead moon. The parrot-fish is depicted on the lower left, and the moon, in its various phases, near the upper edge.

The Moon, Nalimba

The aborigines believe that in the early days of the world the moon, *Nalimba*, was a man who spent much of his time collecting a yam-like plant, *waralki*. His sister, a dugong-woman, *Balwokman*, who lived in and around the swamps near by, collected *rakia*, the spike-rush, for food. One day the dugong-woman was searching for *rakia* when she inadvertently walked through some itch weed which, once her skin became dry, set up an intense irritation. She tried many remedies, but without success, until in sheer desperation she dived into the sea. Finding that water stopped the itching, she said to the moon-man:

'I'm going to change myself into a dugong, and stay in the sea forever.'

'If you do,' said the moon, 'I'll live always in the sky.'

So, true to his word, *Nalimba* left the earth, taking the yams, *waralki*, with him.

One day, as the dugong was sleeping on the surface of the water, two pandanus-tree men, *Gurun-gurun*, decided to kill her for food. But just as they were about to do so a large wave breaking on the beach frightened the dugong away. The *Gurun-gurun*, in disgust, transformed themselves into pandanus trees.

Since then the moon has lived in the sky, the dugong in the ocean, and the pandanus tree on the edge of the sea and the watercourses.

At the same time, associated in some way not ascertained with the moon and the dugong, there was a man, *Guripuu*, who with his young wife was collecting *rakia*. They were tying it up in bundles when the string broke, scattering the *rakia* everywhere. That *rakia* now grows in many of the swamps of Arnhem Land. Disgusted by their misfortune, the couple went into the sky and became the stars Arcturus (Alpha Bootes) and Saak (Eta Bootes). When the star Arcturus appears in the eastern sky the aborigines know that the *rakia* is mature and ready to collect.

Connected with the myth of the moon, *Nalimba*, is a belief, similar to that held by the Groote Eylandters,¹⁵ of an association between the moon and the tides. When the moon is new or full, and sets respectively at sunset or sunrise,

14. Warner (1937), p. 523. There are several other myths of Arnhem Land that explain the origin of death: the moon-man, *Alinda*, p. 493; the native-cat, *Baracuma*, p. 357; and the myth recorded by Berndt (1948a), pp. 16-50, which bears some resemblance to that of *Nalimba*, the moon-man, p. 495. In the Berndt version, belonging to the *jiritja* moiety, however, it is the dugong which brings death to the world.

15. See Groote Eylandt myth, p. 484.

the tides are high. When the moon is in the zenith at sunrise or sunset, the tides are low. The aborigines, noting these facts, believe that the high tides running into the full and new moon make it fat and round. When the tides are low the water pours into the sea beneath and the moon becomes thin.

Plate 156D illustrates the myth of the moon, the dugong, the man, *Guripan*, and his wife. The moon, *Nalimba*, is the central semicircle. Above, the three torpedo-shaped figures are the yams, *waralki*, which he took into the sky with him. The stars on either side of the moon represent the man *Guripan* and his wife, whose misfortune was responsible for the plentiful supply of *rakia*.

On the right of the lower panel is the dugong-woman, *Balwokman*, and on the left the footmarks of the pandanus-tree men, *Gurun-gurun*. The cross-hatching in the lower panel symbolizes the large wave breaking on the beach, frightening the dugong just as the pandanus-tree men were about to spear it.

Plate 156C deals with the same myth, but with less detail. Again the torpedo-like designs are the yams, *waralki*, taken into the sky by *Nalimba*. The moon, as a crescent in the first quarter, is called *moilbouï*, and as a disc, lower left, is *bauwik*. The cross-hatched ring, which is regarded as the wet-weather camp of the moon, represents the halo commonly seen round the moon during misty weather.

The Southern Cross and Pointers, Balung

The Southern Cross and Pointers are looked upon as a stingray (the Cross) being eternally pursued round the southern sky by a shark (the Pointers). The myth is associated with Caledon Bay.

In Pl. 155D the four upper stars in the painting (the Southern Cross) represent a stingray, and the two lower stars (the Pointers) a shark, which is chasing the stingray. These creatures are shown to the right. The wide difference between the myths of the Southern Cross at Yirrkalla and Groote Eylandt¹⁶—less than one hundred and twenty miles apart—indicates a minimum of social contacts between the two tribes.

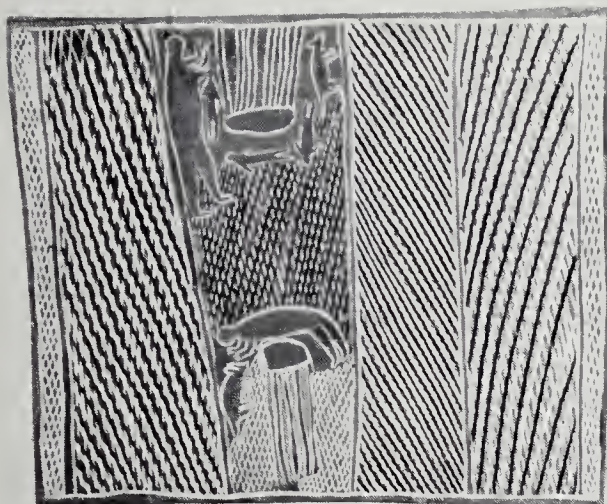
The Milky Way, Milinwia

In creation times the Milky Way, *milinwia*, was a watercourse near Blue Mud Bay.

At that time two brothers, *Nungumiri*, the elder, and *Jikawana*, the younger, went fishing in a bark canoe. When near Woodah Island¹⁷ they caught a rock cod, *guruka*, and were on their long homeward journey when a heavy storm sprang up. A large wave fell aboard, badly straining the frail bark canoe and filling it with water. The next wave, breaking the canoe in halves, left the brothers struggling in the sea. For many hours the two brothers swam towards the distant mainland. Then the arms of the younger brother became so swollen—he had forgotten to remove his arm-bands—that he finally collapsed and was

16. Groote Eylandt myth, p. 485.

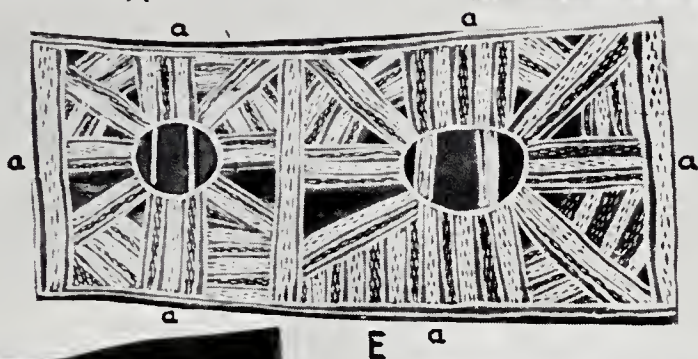
17. Map, Fig. 4.



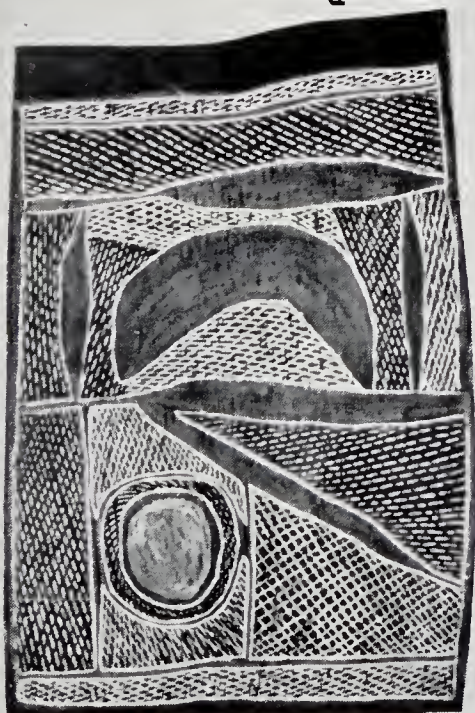
A



B



E



C



D

PLATE 156. Bark paintings, astronomical, Yirrkalla
 A The Magellan Clouds B The crocodile, the opossum and the ibis-men
 C, D The Moon-man E The Sun-woman

drowned. The elder brother kept swimming until he reached a low rock near the shore of the northern end of Blue Mud Bay. But his limbs were so stiff and he was so exhausted by his long swim that he could not reach the shore. Later, their bodies were found on a pebbly beach at the northern end of Blue Mud Bay. When the ants saw what had happened they travelled in long lines to the bodies and bit them all over, hoping to bring them to life,¹⁸ but were unsuccessful. The record of this mishap, which formed the basis for two aboriginal bark paintings, can be seen in and around the Milky Way.

Plate 157C deals with the terrestrial story of the two brothers, and 157A with the celestial.

In Pl. 157C the two brothers, in their canoe, are shown in the upper left-hand panel, with the rock cod they captured immediately below them. At *a* is the elder brother, *Nungumiri*; at *b*, the younger brother, *Jikawana*; and panel *c*, the pebbly beach on which the dead men were found. The central panel, *d*, represents the watercourse at Blue Mud Bay, now the Milky Way. The parallel and the wavy lines, *e*, indicate the wake of the fish, and *f*, that of the canoe. The parallel transverse lines to the right of the elder brother, *a*, and to the left of the younger, *b*, are the ants travelling to the dead bodies to try and bring them to life. Other vertical lines of black and white dots are ants travelling to the right armpit of the younger brother, *b*, and the left hand of the elder, *a*, respectively. The younger brother is wearing the arm-bands which caused his death.

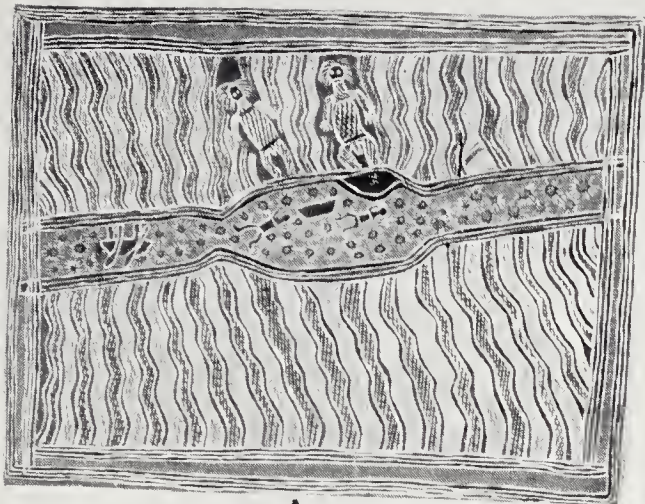
The two brothers, the fish and the canoe are dark starless spaces in the Milky Way, in the region of Scorpio. The wake of the fish, the canoe, the pebbly beach and the ants are either small stars or nebulae in or adjacent to the Milky Way.

Plate 157A, the celestial story, shows the brothers in the sky, the younger on the left. The rock on which the elder brother landed is the black mark immediately below him. The central panel tells the story of the tragic canoe journey. To the left are the brothers in the canoe, and in the centre the swamped canoe with the brothers struggling in the water. The men and the canoe have all become celestial features. The two men are dark patches in the Milky Way, the younger within the constellation of Serpens, the elder near Sagittarius. The rock on which the elder brother landed is a portion of the Milky Way, near Theta Serpens, and the canoe, a line of four small stars near Antares. The meandering lines which form the upper and lower panels, representing the wake of the fish and the canoe, are luminous portions of the Milky Way, near Scorpio, while the stars in the central panel are either included in or adjacent to the Milky Way.

Orion and the Pleiades

At Yirrkalla, the constellation of Orion is believed to be a canoe full of *jiritja* men, called the *Tjirilpan*, with their wives, the Pleiades, in another canoe.

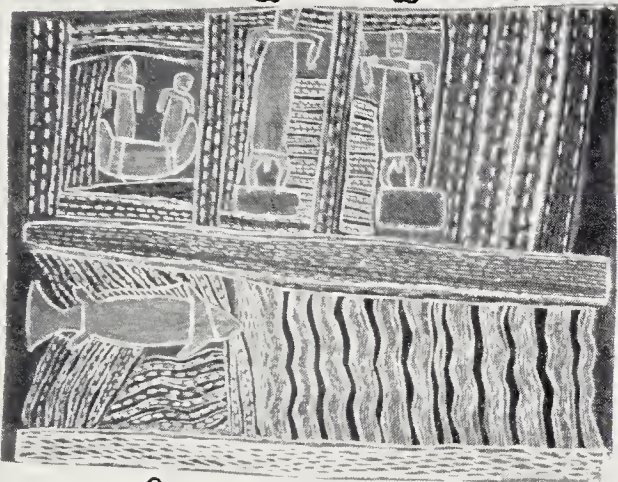
18. The bites of ants are often used by the aboriginal magicians to restore their victims to life. See Warner (1937), p. 204.



α A β γ

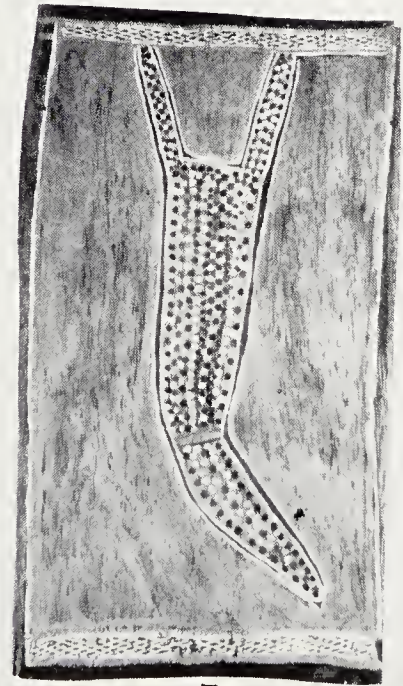


B

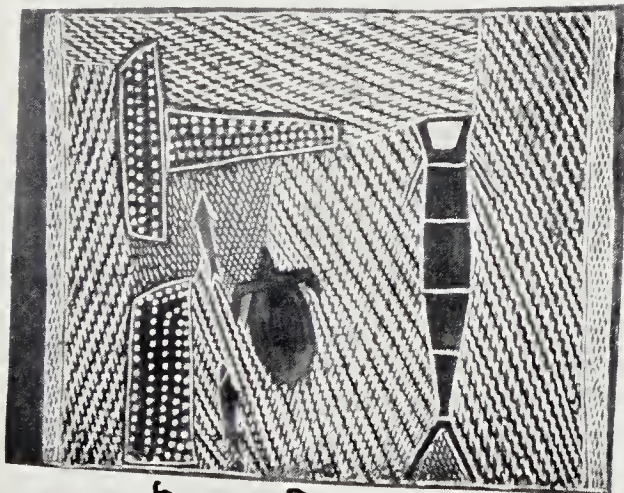


d

e C f



E



β D

PLATE 157. Bark paintings, astronomical, Yirrkalla
 A, C The Milky Way B, D Orion and the Pleiades E The Scorpion

These men and their wives, who came from a land far away to the east, paddled towards the north-eastern shores of Arnhem Land. The men succeeded in catching a turtle and the women two large fish, *kouper*, which they loaded into their respective canoes.

When the *Tjirilpan* and their wives were nearing Cape Arnhem a heavy storm swamped both canoes and drowned all the people. The two canoes, the men, the women, the turtle, the two fish they had caught and a whale, *morokundja*,¹⁹ from Cape Arnhem, are now in the sky, where they can be seen throughout the whole of the wet season. The men are the constellation of Orion, the women the Pleiades; the fish, the turtle and the whale are nearby unidentified parts of the Milky Way. The turtle, the fish and the whale are also large rocks in the sea near Cape Arnhem.

Plate 157B is a companion painting of the constellation of Orion and the Pleiades in which the whale and turtle are shown, but not the fish, *kouper*.

In Pl. 157D the T-shaped design (the constellation of Orion) is the canoe of the men, *Tjirilpan*, and the dots the men in the canoe; *b*, the rectangle below it, is the canoe of the wives of the *Tjirilpan*, the dots representing the women and the stars the two fish, *kouper*, and a turtle. The long design on the right is a whale, *morokundja*, from Cape Arnhem.²⁰ The cross-hatched areas to the left represent the waves which swamped the canoe, and that to the right, the wake of the whale.

The Scorpion

The aboriginal constellation of the scorpion is contained in the constellation of Lupus, the wolf. Lupus is situated near the tail of the European constellation of Scorpio.

Plate 157E illustrates the aboriginal star group of the scorpion in Lupus. The dots inside the main design, which is a highly conventionalized form of a scorpion, indicate the smaller stars within the main constellation.

The Magellan Clouds

The Magellan Clouds are believed to be the homes of two sisters, each of whom has a dog. The elder sister, *Nujai*, with her dog, *widji-git*, lives in the greater Magellan Cloud; the younger sister, *Narai*, with her dog, *gurai-gurai*, in the lesser Magellan Cloud. During the middle of the dry season the elder sister, *Nujai*, leaves the younger because at one time *Narai* went into the bush to defecate, but instead gave birth to three children. During the wet season, however, the younger sister persuades *Nujai* to return so that they can go out together gathering yams.²¹

19. Almost certainly the hump-backed whale (*Megaptera australis*) which frequents these waters.

20. Bark painting of whale, Pl. 106D.

21. At Yirkalla, only the lesser Magellan Cloud is visible in the evening sky during most of the dry season (April to September). Both 'clouds' can be seen during the 'wet'. This accounts for the belief that the elder sister leaves the younger during the dry season.

Plate 156A represents the Magellan Clouds and the southern sky. In the lower portion of the central panel is the older sister, *Nujai*, with her dog, *widji-git*. The oval figure is the fire and the parallel lines are the burning logs. In the upper part of the painting are the younger sister, *Narai*, her dog, *gurai-gurai*, and her three children. The symbols of *Narai's* fire have the same meaning as those of her sister's fire.

The two women, their dogs and *Narai's* three children are stars adjacent to the Magellan Clouds, and the fires, two bright stars near by, possibly Canopus and Achernar. No explanation was given for the cross-hatched areas on either side of the central panel.

The Crocodile, the Opossum and the Ibis-men

There are two aboriginal constellations in Scorpio, the crocodile-man, *Ingalpir*, and the opossum and the ibis-men.

The constellation of the crocodile includes all the stars of Scorpio from 'the sting', i.e. Lambda and Upsilon Scorpio, to the third magnitude star, Sigma Scorpio, next but one to Antares. In the opossum and ibis constellation, Antares is the opossum-man and the two smaller stars, one on either side of Antares, Tau Scorpio and Rho Scorpio, the ibis-men. A small unidentified star near by is the camp-fire round which the three men are seated, the opossum-man blowing his wooden drone tube and the two ibis-men beating their sticks and singing.

When, in early December, the opossum and ibis constellation and the head of the crocodile constellation first showed in the morning sky, the aborigines knew that they would soon see the praus of the Malay traders who came each year, prior to their expulsion by Commonwealth law, to collect fish and trepang. The Malay traders left their own country in late November on the north-easterly winds and returned in April on the south-easterlies. The crocodile is associated in a minor way with the making of fire.

Plate 156B shows both the constellation of the crocodile and the opossum and the ibis-men. It also shows, in a rather interesting manner, the creatures themselves. In the constellation on the right of the painting the crocodile and its related stars are grouped in one design. The other constellation is differently presented. In the upper left-hand corner are four stars. The large one on the right, Antares, is the opossum-man; the two stars on the left are the ibis-men and the central white dot is the fire around which the three men are seated. On the left of the crocodile's tail, the three men are again shown seated around their fire. The opossum-man, the darker colour, is blowing his wooden trumpet; the ibis-men are beating their music sticks together and singing. These creatures are drawn for yet a third time. Near the hind leg of the crocodile is the opossum with his wooden trumpet, the nearby long rectangle. On the left-hand edge of the painting, in white, are the two birds.

The Sun-woman, Walo

The sun-woman, *Walo*,²² lives at Turinjina, a place far away beyond the eastern horizon. She has one daughter, *Bara-bararinja*, whose father is the mythical man *Djungkao* (p. 270).

When the sun-woman²³ starts on her daily journey across the sky, her daughter wants to accompany her, but the mother always refuses her, because the heat of two suns in the sky would be so great that it would scorch the hair of the aborigines and might even set the country on fire. So, every morning, according to the Yirrkalla aborigines, *Walo* rises out of the sea over Cape Arnhem and with a ceremonial digging stick in each hand (similar to those used by her husband, *Djungkao*, and his sister, *Madalait*, Pl. 134C, D) walks across the sky until she reaches Biminura, which is far away to the west.²⁴ As soon as *Walo* disappears beneath the western horizon she changes herself into a wallaby and, entering a long underground tunnel, hops quickly back to Turinjina so that she will be in time to start on her journey next morning. When the sun-woman sets or rises, the intense heat of her body causes the horizon and the clouds to become incandescent.

In the right-hand panel of Pl. 156E the sun-woman is rising from her camp at Turinjina, and in the left she is setting at Biminura.

The radiating lines in both panels represent the rays of the sun breaking through the clouds at sunrise or sunset, and the transverse and vertical lines, *a, a, a, a*, the light reflected from the crests of the waves as they break on the shore.²⁵ The two bars across the sun indicate the red feathered string ornaments given to her by *Djungkao*, which she always wears round her waist and forehead when she is in the sky.

CONCLUSIONS

Although the bark paintings and the related myths of the astronomy of the aborigines of Arnhem Land give us but a glimpse of the rich star lore of those people, their analysis has revealed several points of interest: the importance of the moon and the relative unimportance of the sun; the similarity of the beliefs surrounding the Milky Way, the constellations of Orion and the Pleiades, and the Magellan Clouds; the wide variation in the myths concerning the Southern

22. Berndt (1952), p. 46, states that the place of *Djanggalawul* (*Djungkao*) is the sun's place. He also records that the sun-woman had two daughters, *Barinangu* (almost certainly my *Bara-bararinja*), who used to accompany her across the sky. But she finally sent them back, because the heat from three suns was too great for the aborigines. Waterman (1953), in a personal communication, stated that some of the Yirrkalla aborigines believe there are two suns in the sky at the same time, a man and his wife.

23. Berndt (1952), p. 82, refers to a *dua* moiety sun-woman, rising out of the sea and walking across the sky with a *mauwulan rangga* (ceremonial digging stick) in each hand.

24. The Yirrkalla aborigines consider that Biminura is near Milingimbi. Berndt (1952), p. 139, records a song in which the *Djungkao* sisters saw the sun setting behind Milingimbi.

25. When *Djungkao* was at Bilapinja Island he noted the sunrise and the light on the breaking waves. These were the subject of a song, p. 271.

Cross; and the probable existence of a simple calendar, based on the movements of the heavenly bodies.

The myth of the moon as a man appears to be both universal and the most important in aboriginal astronomy.

At Groote Eylandt, the moon did no more than abduct a woman and her children as companions, p. 484; but on the mainland of Arnhem Land there are several myths which tell of how the moon brought death to the world, whilst he himself is eternally reincarnated, p. 493, p. 488, p. 495. Spencer and Gillen²⁶ record a similar myth from the Aranda tribe of Central Australia. This belief, however, is not universal, for Parker²⁷ states that, in the Euahlayi tribe of western New South Wales, the moon brings the children to the woman, and Mountford²⁸ was told by the natives of the northern Flinders Ranges of South Australia that the moon was once a man, who, having been coaxed into the sky by his sister's sons, had been unable to return.

The Groote Eylandt and Yirrkalla myths which link the waxing and waning of the moon with the tides are of interest. On the other hand, the sun, who is a woman, takes a minor place in aboriginal mythology. Spencer and Gillen²⁹ describe a sun ceremony. There are also Groote Eylandt and Yirrkalla myths of the sun, p. 481, p. 502.

Throughout the aboriginal star myths the stars in the constellation of Orion are regarded as a man or men and those of the Pleiades as a group of women. In Arnhem Land, p. 482, p. 493, p. 498, in the Wheelman tribe of Western Australia,³⁰ and among the aborigines of northern South Australia,³¹ the Pleiades are wives and daughters of the men of Orion. In western Central Australia, the women of the Pleiades are always being pursued by the man of Orion,³² and in Victoria³³ the Pleiades are a group of young women singing a tune, to which the men of Orion are dancing.

The myths associated with the Milky Way are usually, but not always, similar to each other. In Arnhem Land, p. 479, p. 487, p. 496, the Milky Way is a watercourse from which the sky people gather food. Maegraith³⁴ found that the Central Australian aborigines believe the Milky Way is a river which divides the sky people into two adjacent tribes. Parker³⁵ states that the Euahlayi tribe of New South Wales looked upon the Milky Way as a watercourse, and Howitt³⁶ mentions a similar belief among the aborigines of Queensland, New South Wales and northern South Australia. Smyth,³⁷ however, describes the Milky Way as the body of two enormous snakes which made the River Murray. The body of the snakes, however, may be a sky river.

The Magellan Clouds are always camps of sky people. At Groote Eylandt, p. 484, they are the camps of an old man and woman, and at Yirrkalla, p. 500,

26. Spencer and Gillen (1899), p. 564.

28. Mountford (1937), field notes.

30. Hassell (1934), p. 237.

32. Mountford (1948), p. 155.

34. Maegraith (1932), p. 19.

36. Howitt (1904), p. 432.

27. Parker (1905), p. 50.

29. Spencer and Gillen (1899), p. 549.

31. Mountford (1939), p. 105.

33. Smyth (1878), p. 434.

35. Parker (1905), p. 95.

37. Smyth (1878), p. 434.

those of two sisters. Among the Aranda³⁸ the Magellan Clouds are the camps of the two evil men of whom the aborigines are afraid, but further west among the desert tribes the clouds are the camps of two spirits, one of which is a good and one an evil spirit.³⁹ In western New South Wales, a mother and a daughter live in the Magellan Clouds.⁴⁰

In contrast to the widespread and similar myths of the moon, the Milky Way, the constellations of Orion and the Pleiades and of the Magellan Clouds, those belonging to the Southern Cross vary widely. At Groote Eylandt, p. 485, the stars of the Southern Cross are two fishermen and their cooking fires; at Yirkalla, p. 496, a shark (the Pointers) chasing a stingray (the Cross) around the sky; and at Oenpelli, p. 487, a family of star-people. In western Central Australia, the Cross is the track of an eagle,⁴¹ and in western New South Wales it is an eagle in the sky⁴²

From the limited data collected on Arnhem Land astronomy, one can see in it the beginnings of a calendar, the arrival of the stars and their positions at sunrise or sunset denoting the time for certain happenings. Thus, at Groote Eylandt, p. 94, the wet season stops and the south-easterly winds start to blow when the constellation of Scorpio reaches a certain position in the evening sky; at Yirkalla, the showing of Scorpio in the morning sky was a sign that the Malay fishermen would soon arrive to collect trepang, and when Arcturus is visible at sunrise the spike-rush, *rakia*, is ready for harvesting. There is little doubt that fuller investigation would show that the aborigines have evolved a workable calendar based on the movements of the heavenly bodies.

38. Spencer and Gillen (1899), p. 566.

40. Parker (1905), p. 97.

42. Parker (1905), p. 97.

39. Mountford (1948), p. 156.

41. Mountford (1940), field notes.

REFERENCES

- Adam, L. (1951). The Bark Paintings of Groote Eylandt (Gulf of Carpentaria) in the Melbourne University Collection. *South Seas Studies*, Museum für Völkerkunde, Basle.
- Angas, G. F. (1847). *South Australia Illustrated*.
- Balfour, H. R. (1951). A Phallic Stone from Central Australia. *Mankind*, vol. 4, no. 6.
- Barnett, C. L., and Croll, R. H. (1943). *Art of the Australian Aboriginal*. —
- Basedow, H. (1925). *The Australian Aboriginal*.
- Battiss, W. W. (1948). *The Artists of the Rocks*.
- (1951). The Source of Art. *The Lantern*, vol. 1, no. 3.
- Berndt, R. M. and C. H. (1948). Sacred Figures of Ancestral Beings of Arnhem Land. *Oceania*, vol. 18, no. 4.
- Berndt, R. M. (1948a). A 'Wonguri'-Mandzikai Song Cycle of the Moon-Bone. *Oceania*, vol. 19, no. 1.
- (1948b). Badu, Islands of the Spirits. *Oceania*, vol. 19, no. 2.
- Berndt, R. M. and C. H. (1949). Secular Figures of the North-Eastern Arnhem Land. *American Anthropologist*, vol. 51, no. 2.
- (1951). *Sexual Behaviour in Western Arnhem Land*. Viking Fund Publications in Anthropology, no. 16.
- Berndt, R. M. (1951a). *Kunapipi*.
- (1952). *Djanggalawul*.
- Black, Lindsay (1941). *Burial Trees*.
- (1943). *Aboriginal Art Galleries of Western New South Wales*.
- (1944). *Bora Ground*.
- Bleek, D. E. (ed.) (1940). *More Rock-Paintings in South Africa*.
- Brown, A. Radcliffe (1926). The Rainbow Serpent Myth of Australia. *Journ. Roy. Anthropol. Inst.*, vol. 56.
- Brown, G. B. (1932). *The Art of the Cave Dweller*.
- Bunce, D. (1857). *Australasiatic Reminiscences*.
- Campbell, W. D. (1899). *Aboriginal Carvings of Port Jackson and Broken Bay*. Memoirs of the Geological Survey of New South Wales, Ethnological Series, no. 1.
- (1921). Description of Certain Phallic Articles of the Australian Aborigines. *Man*, vol. 21, no. 10.
- Clark, J. C. (ed.) (1938). *The Codex Mendoza*.
- Curr, E. M. (1886). *The Australian Race*, 4 vols.
- Davidson, D. S. (1936). *Aboriginal Australian and Tasmanian Rock Carvings and Paintings*. Memoirs of American Philosophical Society, vol. 5.
- (1937). *A Preliminary Consideration of Aboriginal Australian Decorative Art*. Memoirs of American Philosophical Society, vol. 9.
- Elkin, A. P. (1930). Rock-Paintings of North-West Australia. *Oceania*, vol. 1, no. 3.
- (1938). *The Australian Aborigines*.
- (1945). *Aboriginal Men of High Degree*.
- (1948). Grey's Northern Kimberley Cave-Paintings Re-found. *Oceania*, vol. 19, no. 1.
- Elkin, A. P., and Berndt, C. H. and R. M. (1950). *Art in Arnhem Land*.

- Etheridge, R., Junr. (1918). *The Dendroglyphs, or "Carved Trees" of New South Wales*. Memoirs of the Geological Survey of New South Wales, Ethnological Series, no. 3.
- Flinders, M. (1814). *A Voyage to Terra Australis*, 2 vols.
- Frazer, J. G. (1933-36). *Fear of the Dead in Primitive Religion*, vol. 3.
- Frobenius, L., and Fox, D. C. (1937). *Prehistoric Rock Pictures in Europe and Africa*.
- Goddard, R. H. (1941). Aboriginal Rock Sculpture and Stencilling in the Carnarvon Ranges. *Oceania*, vol. 11, no. 4.
- Gombrich, E. H. (1950). *The Story of Art*.
- Grey, G. (1841). *Journals of Two Expeditions of Discovery in North-west and Western Australia*, 2 vols.
- Hale, H. M., and Tindale, N. B. (1933). Aborigines of Princess Charlotte Bay, North Queensland. *Rec. S. Aust. Museum*, vol. 5, no. 1.
- Hassell, E. (1934-35). Myths and Folk Tales of the Wheelman Tribe of South-western Australia. *Folk-lore*, vol. 46.
- Howitt, A. W. (1904). *Native Tribes of South-East Australia*.
- Kaudern, W. A. (1944). *Art in Central Celebes*. Ethnographical Studies in Celebes, vol. 6.
- Lips, J. (1937). *The Savage Hits Back*.
- Love, J. R. B. (1917). Notes on the Wororra Tribe of North-Western Australia. *Trans. Roy. Soc. S. Aust.*, vol. 41.
- (1930). Rock Paintings of the Worrora and their mythological interpretation. *Journ. Roy. Soc. W. Aust.*, vol. 16.
- Luckman, L. E. (1950). The Aboriginal Rock Carvings at Mt. Cameron West, Tasmania. *Papers Roy. Soc. Tas.*, vol. 85.
- McCarthy, F. D. (1938). *Australian Aboriginal Decorative Art*.
- (1953). The Snake Woman, Jiningbirna. *Rec. Aust. Mus.*, vol. 23, no. 3.
- McConnel, U. (1935). Inspiration and Design in Aboriginal Art. *Art in Australia*.
- (1953). Native Arts and Industries on the Archer, Kendall and Holroyd Rivers, Cape York Peninsula, North Queensland. *Rec. S. Aust. Museum*, vol. 11, no. 1.
- Maegraith, B. G. (1932). The Astronomy of the Aranda and Luritja Tribes. *Trans. Roy. Soc. S. Aust.*, vol. 56.
- Mountford, C. P. (1929). Aboriginal Rock Carvings in South Australia. *Report, Aust. and New Zealand Assoc. for Adv. of Science*, 1928 meeting, vol. 19.
- (1935). A Survey of the Petroglyphs of South Australia. *Report, Aust. and New Zealand Assoc. for Adv. of Science*, 1935 meeting, vol. 22.
- (1937). Examples of Aboriginal Art from Napier Broome Bay and Parry Harbour, North-Western Australia. *Trans. Roy. Soc. S. Aust.*, vol. 61.
- (1937a). Aboriginal Crayon Drawings . . . [of] Aranda Tribe of Central Australia. *Trans. Roy. Soc. S. Aust.*, vol. 61.
- (1938). Aboriginal Message Sticks from the Nullarbor Plains. *Trans. Roy. Soc. S. Aust.*, vol. 62.
- (1938a). Aboriginal Crayon Drawings, III. *Trans. Roy. Soc. S. Aust.*, vol. 62.
- (1939). An Anyamatana Legend of the Pleiades. *Victorian Naturalist*, vol. 56.

REFERENCES

- (1939a). Aboriginal Decorative Art from Arnhem Land. *Trans. Roy. Soc. S. Aust.*, vol. 63.
- (1939b). Aboriginal Crayon Drawings, IV. *Trans. Roy. Soc. S. Aust.*, vol. 63.
- (1939c). Phallic Stones of the Australian Aborigines. *Mankind*, vol. 2, no. 6.
- and Berndt, R. M. (1939d). Ornamentations of a New Hebridian Flute. *Victorian Naturalist*, vol. 55.
- and Harvey, A. (1941). Women of the Adnjamatana Tribe of the Northern Flinders Ranges, South Australia. *Oceania*, vol. 12, no. 2.
- (1943). Aboriginal Art in South and Central Australia. In Barrett and Croll: *Art of the Australian Aboriginal*.
- (1948). *Brown Men and Red Sand*.
- (1949). Exploring Stone Age Arnhem Land. *National Geographic Magazine*, vol. 96, no. 6.
- (1954). A Carved Human Figure from the Durack Ranges, North-Western Australia. *Trans. Roy. Soc. S. Aust.*, vol. 77.
- (1954a). In *Australia: Aboriginal Paintings—Arnhem Land* (UNESCO World Art Series, no. 3).
- (1955). The Lightning Man in Australian Mythology. *Man*, vol. 55, no. 141.
- Obermaier, H., and Kühn, H. (1930). *Bushman Art; Rock Paintings of South-West Africa*.
- Parker, K. L. (1897). *Australian Legendary Tales*.
- (1905). *The Enahlayi Tribe*.
- Péron, F. A., and Freycinet, L. (1807-16). *Voyage de Découvertes aux Terres Australes*.
- Putman, P. (1948). In Coon, C. S.: *A Reader in General Anthropology*.
- Ridley, W. (1875). *Kámilarói, and other Australian Languages*, 2nd ed.
- Rose, F. (1942). Paintings of the Groote Eylandt Aborigines. *Oceania*, vol. 13, no. 2.
- (1947). Malay Influence on Aboriginal Totemism in Northern Australia. *Man*, vol. 47, no. 142.
- Roth, W. E. (1897). *Ethnological Studies among the North-West-Central Queensland Aborigines*.
- Schuster, C. (1951). *Joint Marks, a Possible Index of Cultural Contact between America, Oceania, and the Far East*. Royal Tropical Institute, Amsterdam, Communication no. 44, Department of Cultural and Physical Anthropology, no. 39.
- Sheard, H. L. (1927). Aboriginal Rock Shelters and Carvings—Three Localities on the Lower Murray. *Trans. Roy. Soc. S. Aust.*, vol. 51.
- Smyth, R. B. (1878). *The Aborigines of Victoria*, 2 vols.
- Spencer, W. B., and Gillen, F. J. (1899). *The Native Tribes of Central Australia*.
- (1904). *The Northern Tribes of Central Australia*.
- Spencer, W. B. (1914). *Native Tribes of the Northern Territory of Australia*.
- (1928). *Wanderings in Wild Australia*, 2 vols.
- Squires, W. A. (n.d.). *Ritual, Myth, and Custom of the Australian Aborigines*.
- Thomson, D. F. (1949). *Economic Structure and the Ceremonial Exchange Cycle in Arnhem Land*.
- Tindale, N. B. (1925-6). Natives of Groote Eylandt and of the West Coast of the Gulf of Carpentaria. *Rec. S. Aust. Museum*, vol. 3, nos. 1, 2.

- (1928). Native Rock Shelters at Oenpelli, Van Diemen Gulf, North Australia. *South Aust. Naturalist*, vol. 9, no. 2.
- Walker, H. (1949). Cruise to Stone Age Arnhem Land. *National Geographic Magazine*, vol. 96, no. 3.
- Warner, W. L. (1937). *A Black Civilization*.
- Worms, E. (1942). Die Goranara-Feier im Australischen Kimberley. *Annali Lateranensi*, vol. 6.
- Worsley, P. M. (1955). Totemism in a Changing Society. *American Anthropologist*, vol. 57, no. 4.
- Worsnop, T. (1897). *The Prehistoric Arts, Manufactures, Works, Weapons, Etc., of the Aborigines of Australia*.

INDEX

- Adam, L., 19
 Alligator Rivers, xxvii, xxix, 163, 264
 Amalipa, 19, 39
 Angoroko River, xxiv, 19, 33
 Aparina Island, 271
Arawaltja ceremony, 21-60; bark paintings, 25-39; ground, 39-40; houses, 39-40; myths, 23-39; non-secret ritual, 54-8; opening ritual, 46-8; poles, 40-4; secret ritual, 48-54; songs, 27, 28, 30, 31, 33, 35, 37
 Arnhem Bay, 271, 275, 289, 404
 Art, aboriginal: comparison with other primitive forms, 77, 117, 120, 163, 189, 194, 228, 256-62; distribution of styles, 3-6, 7-8; function of, 6-7; mediums, 8-9; techniques, 10-12
 Artists, 13-15
 Astronomy, 479-504
Baijini, x, 271, 333-6, 389
 Bark paintings: GROOTE EYLANDI: canoe, dug-out, 100; ceremony, 60; family, 60; fishing, 97; Malay prau, *mitjuna*, 98; mud-crab, *Unwala*, 31; wind, north-east, *timbura*, 97; —, north-west, *bara*, 97; —, south-east, *mamariga*, 96
 ANIMALS: bandicoot, *Banguruk*, 31; dingo, 65; dugong, *inunguluna*, 65; frog, *dadukanupa*, 65; kangaroo, *karatjimba*, 67
 ASTRONOMY: crab, *Unwala*, 479; Magellan Clouds, *Jukara*, 484; Milky Way, 479; moon, *Jumauria*, 484; Orion and the Pleiades, 482; Pointers, *Meirindilja*, 485; scorpions, *Miaipra-pria*, 481; Southern Cross, *Wanamoumitja*, 485; sun, *Mamoura*, 481
 BIRDS: brolga, *tuka-rukara*, 73; crow, *ji-inwa*, 73; goose, *Inigia*, 37; jungle-fowl, *inigubura*, 28; kestrel, *inikaraka*, 71; peaceful dove, *teracucu*, 69; sea-eagle, *iniwakada*, 69
 FISH: barramundi, *ukulpaindi*, 86; hammer-headed shark, *Munwana*, 86; long tom, *maracuru*, 81; mackerel, *amaturuna*, 86; parrot-fish, *jambirikwa*, 84; saw-fish, *Ingurudungwa*, 35; shark, unidentified, *nungwana*, 84; stingray, *Inadoija*, 33, 36; tiger-shark, *bangudja*, 82
 INSECTS: black ant, *uaiipa*, 89; centipede, 89; honey bee, *Ilaukwa*, 91
 MEN: *Gurumuka*, 63; *Junduruna*, 62; medicine man, *mungada*, 60; *Nabira-mira*, 63
 REPTILES: crocodile, *tungarapia*, and wallaby, *ubraitja*, 75; fresh-water tortoise, *Jumununda*, 25, 30; gecko, *ipilja-ipilja*, and rain cloud, 75; goanna, *jaraitja*, ray and curlew, 75; green turtle, *imoraka*, 79; snake, *kundura*, 79; water-goanna, *Tilbukuna*, 37
 SERPENT: *Aitja*, 27
 SHELLS: bailer, *jukuna*, 88; conch, *maini-unda*, 89
 TREES: coco-nut, *Kaluka*, 94; cycad, *mununa*, 94; hibiscus, *mabunda*, 92
 Bark paintings: OENPELLI: children, *Mamailait*, 220; didactic, 224; emu eggs, 248; hunting, crocodile, 240; —, dugong, 242; —, fresh-water tortoise, 242; —, jabiru, 240; —, kangaroo, 242; —, kangaroo rat, 240; —, sea-going turtle, 242; —, wallaby, 242
 ANIMALS: bandicoot, 244; bats, 244; echidna, 244; frogs, 246; kangaroo, 246; kangaroo, *Narabuk*, 246; kangaroo, rainbow-serpent and rain-making, 218
 ASTRONOMY: Milky Way, *mungabou*, and Coal Sack, *munguibau*, 487; Morning Stars, *Garakma*, 487; Southern Cross, *Nangurgal*, 487; *Tjirupun* and *Walagugu*, 488
 BIRDS: emu and chicks, 246; emu, *Gurugadji*, 212; jabiru, 246; plain turkey, 248; royal spoonbill, 246; sea-birds, 248; unidentified, 246; unidentified water bird, 246
 FISH: cat-fish, 254; coral-fish, 250; division, 252; gar-fish, 252; gurnard, 250; *japanbulka*, 252; saw-fish, 254; skip-jack, 252; star-fish, 250; stinging jelly-fish, 252; sweep, 250; trevally, 252; unidentified, 250
 MEN: *Baluknuk*, 218; *Biwit*, 214; cannibal, *Karowailai*, 232; dancing at ceremony, 218; kangaroo, *Kandarik*, 224; *Junaduria*, 232; *Malamuju-jalkjalk* and wives, 236; *Muluwulji-kaitja*, 235; *Nimbawah*, 221; snake, *Jirbaik-baik*, 225; crocodile, *Gumangan*, and plover, *Birik-birik*, 216; cycad, *Mundiga*, 240; echidna, *Narabet*, fresh-water tortoise, *Nalunia*, and heron, *Nananduka*, 238; SPIRIT PEOPLE: *Bamunit*, 185; *Baruu-baruu*, 200; *Boubit-boubit*, 205; *Bumabuma*, 185; *Dalbudia*, 208; *Dauandja*, 189, 191; *Dignuk*, 194; *Gadji-mungaini*, 189; *Garkain*, 199; *Gradau*, 196; *Guruwuldan*, 191; *Mamaragan*, lightning-man, 208; *Mamgunmal*, 185; *Marli-ili*, 202; *Matjiba*, 200; *Mik-nik*, 185; *Mimi*, cave painting, 182; —, unidentified, 192; *Munimungan*, 187; *Nadidjit*, 192; *Nadubi*, 203; *Nalbidji*, 183, 191; *Naljanio*, 196; *Naluk*, 196; *Namarakain*, 199; *Noulabil*, 187; *Pitari*, 189; *Timara*, 196; unidentified, 183; *Wala-undajua*, lightning-man, 210; *Wavamuntjuna*, 202; *Warluk*, 197; *Wilintji*, 210; *Wili-wilia*, 194
 REPTILES: crocodile, 248; goanna, 248; lizards, blue-tongue and gecko, 248
 SERPENTS: rainbow-serpents, 210; rainbow-serpent, *Narama*, 212; rainbow-serpent, *Ngaloit*, 210; unidentified, 212; water-snake, *Aniau-tjuna*, 214

- Bark paintings: YIRRKALLA: aboriginal visit to Malaya, 293; aborigines gathering sea-gull eggs, 294; Bartalumba Point (Groote Eylandt), 383; Cato River, 381; conception, *dua*, 308; —, *jiritja*, 309; final burial, *dua*, 313; —, *jiritja*, 315; heaven, *dua*, *Purelko*, 325; —, *Djiraia* (Milingimbi), 329; —, *jiritja*, *Nalkuma*, 331; —, journey of morning star, 327; hunting, 360; — turtle, 345; — dugong, 345; island (*Garabi*), 380; Port Bradshaw, 383; sea and sky, 374; sea scene, 381; swamps, fresh-water, 381; —, mangrove, 383; —, *Milungwira*, and men, *Laitjun* and *Bourngawili*, 376; totem, *Galdar* (Milingimbi), 387
- ANIMALS: dugong, *merinjunga*, 363; frog, *Garakman*, 358; kangaroo, *Gardjambal* (Milingimbi), 387; whale, *morokundja*, and stingray, *kawangalk-miri*, 349
- ASTRONOMY: Magellan Clouds, *Nujai* and *Narai*, 500; Milky Way (Milingimbi), 491; — (Yirrkalla), *milinwia*, 496-8; moon, *Alinda* (Milingimbi), 489; —, *Alinda* (Yirrkalla), 495; —, *Nalimba* (Yirrkalla), 496; opossum-man, *Kapali* (Milingimbi), 492; Orion, *Tjirilpan*, and Pleiades (Yirrkalla), 500; Orion, *Tjilulpuna*, and Pleiades (Milingimbi), 493; Scorpio, crocodile, opossum and ibis, 501; scorpion, 500; Southern Cross and Pointers, *Balung*, 496; sun, *Walo*, 502
- BIRDS: geese, *wurumatji*, 365
- FISH: — and eggs (Milingimbi), 387; devil-ray, *mulara*, 349; queen fish, turtle and octopus, 349; saw-fish, *nalgan* (Milingimbi), 389; shark, *Maia*, 372; totemic (Cape Arnhem), 348; — (Port Bradshaw), 340; various, salt-water, 374
- INSECTS: honey bee, *koko*, 374; — (Milingimbi), 385
- MEN: *Balonarati* and paper-bark trees, 307; *Banaitja*, 281; *Borolo-borolo* and wives, 343; *Djunkgao*, 267-75; — at Aparina Island, 271; — and *Baijini* at Aparina Island, 273; — at Bilapinja Island, 271; — and lizard, *tjunda*, 275; — and *Madalait* at Arnhem Bay, 275; — and *Madalait* at Jelangbara, 273; — at Waipingboi Island, 271; echidna, *Tjiramuna* and plovers, *Tjutju*, 354; hawk, *Wabula*, and butterfly-girl, *Bounba*, 354; *Minjapa* and *Wuluwil*, 303; *Muruma*, 301; *Nakundia* and *Munuratan*, 301; *Nalili*, 298; native-cat, *Baracuma*, and hawk-man, *Wabula*, 358; *Nguru-gujameri* and his wife, *Njimpitlingou*, 298; *Oijal* and his sister, *Neri-neri*, 292; *Rualko* and turtle, 307; serpents, *Jurlungur* and *Gadjalan* (Milingimbi), 387; thunder-man, *Bolngo*, 287; thunder-man, *Tjambuwal*, 285; — at Arnhem Bay, 289; — and *Maijaunguri*, 289; *Tjuna-tjuna*, *Wururunga* and the *Bukalatji*, 305; *Wai-kinbu*, 296; *Walanwanga*, 294; wallaby, *Moutia*, and cockroach, *Borok*, 356; *Wan-atjai*, 299; *Wirili* and bush-fire, 293; *Wulu-wulwi*, 299; *Djunkgao* at Goulburn Island, 276; — at Milingimbi, 276; — at Milmingarak, 276; *Miwal* and *Wanu-wanu*, 387; *Wawalik*, 279; SPIRIT PEOPLE: *Delururu*, *Rangi-rangi* and *Kultana*, 346; *Jambula* and *Bulanuna*, 346; *Mokoi* and dugong, 346; *Turi-turi*, 329
- REPTILES: crocodile, *barou*, 366; fresh-water goanna, *bije*, 371; fresh-water tortoise, *minala* (Koolatong River), 371; — (Milingimbi), 385; snake, *dua*, 369; —, *jiritja*, *borodji*, 369; turtles, 372; —, *wilira* (Milingimbi), 389
- SERPENTS: *bilumbira*, 351; lightning snakes, *wununga*, 366
- Basedow, H., 111
- Battiss, W. W., 113, 262
- Beliefs: conception, 96, 308-9; creation, 21-2; death, 358, 489, 493
- Berndt, C. H. and R. M., 111, 264, 418, 419
- Bickerton Island, xxv, 81, 84
- Bilapinja Island, 271, 273, 402
- Blue Mud Bay, 289, 294, 299, 372, 402, 443
- Body paintings, 400-2; *dua*: 407-9; geese, *wurumatji*, 404; *Djunkgao* and *Madalait*, 402; *jiritja*: 406-7; bush-fire and eucalyptus trees, 404; water-lily, *jouku*, and wild bees, *kamou*, 402
- Calendar, astronomical, 504
- Camps, xxiii, xxv, xxviii
- Cannon Hill, 166-81
- Canoes, 100, 316, 398
- Cape Arnhem, 332, 341-53
- Cape Don, xxv, 271, 221
- Cape Keerweer, ix
- Carrington, Capt., 111
- Cave painting sites: GROOTE EYLANDT: *Amailpa*, 19; *Angoroko*, 19; *Chasm* Island, 19, 102; *East Bay*, *Mangala*, 19; OENPFLI: 109, 112; *Cannon Hill*, 163-78; *Cooper Creek*, 109; *Inagurdurwil*, 143-63; *Nimbawah*, 109; *Obiri*, 163-78; *Tor Rock*, 109; *Unbalanja Hill*, 112-43; YIRRKALLA: *Jelangbara*, xxvii; *Wessel Islands*, 267
- Cave paintings: as increase centres, 214, 227, 238, 252, 262; comparison with *Ayers Rock*, 159; — with other states, 3-4; development of, 264; magic, 183, 262; method of recording, 178; monochrome *Mimi*, 112, 123, 125, 127, 169, 256, 258; polychrome X-ray, 112, 134, 136, 256; sequence, 260; (subjects): figures, coupled, 123; —, hocker, 155, 260; —, hook-shaped face, 148, 256; —, joint marks, 143, 258; —, running, 115, 161, 165; *Mamandi*, 152, 170; *Matjiba*, 202; *Munimungan*, 120, 122, 125; *Nadubi*, 203; *Nalbidji*, 128; *Namarakain*, 157; rainbow-serpent, unidentified, 212; water-snake, *aniau-tjuna*, 214

- Ceremonial objects: barramundi, *Kimbarikara*, 463; diver-duck, *Bon-bon*, 464; —, *Jinia-laitja*, 463-4; jungle birds, *Caujut*, and *Iunga-iunga*, 460; mackerel, *Maidba*, 464; MEN: *Mandelwilpa*, 460-2; *Marouwil*, 466; rainbow-serpent, *unjaut*, 462; snake-bird, *Kulu-baii-baii*, 462; water-lily man, *Magau*, 464-6; *see also* Ceremonial poles, Figures, wood
- Ceremonial poles: GROOTE EYLANDT: 40-2; fresh-water tortoise, *Junununda*, 42; jungle-fowl, *Inigubura*, 44; serpent, *Aitja*, 42; stingray, *Imadoija*, 44; OENPELLI: rain-pole, 218; YIRKALLA: *Wawatik* sisters, 437
- Ceremonies: circumcision, 60; death and burial, 191-2, 311-17; rain-making, 218; *ubara*, 460-2; *see also* *Arawaltja* ceremony
- Chasm Island, 19, 82, 102
- Cobourg Peninsula, 221
- Coffins, 317; brolga, *tungaldji*, 319; fresh-water fish, *kiwarina*, 323; fresh-water tortoise, *mimala*, 321; green turtle, *gariwa*, 319; serpent, *kundwa*, 321; thunder-man, *Tjambuwal*, 317; totem, unidentified, 323; water, *kapu*, 319
- Cooper Creek, 109, 225
- Dances: bandicoot, *Banguruk*, 52, 54; hre dance of jungle-fowl, *Inigubura*, 58; goose, *Inigia*, 59; mud-crab, *Unwala*, 52; opening dance, 48; serpent, *Aitja*, and tortoise, *Junununda*, 49, 55; stingray, *Imadoija*, 50, 51, 55; tortoise, *Junununda*, 50
- Designs: *mata*, 409; crabs, *gunjun*, 298; *dua*, 407-9; *jiritja*, 406-7; origin, 409; relationship to social organization, 405
- East Bay, Groote Eylandt, 19
- Elkin, A. P., 111, 264, 418, 419
- Figures, bark: man, *Wuluwait*, 444; woman, *Bunbulama*, 444; toys, 448
- Figures, sand, 404
- Figures, wax: bandicoot, *warnt-kura*, 445; dugong, *batwakmeri*, 445; emu, *marluwai*, 445; fresh-water fish, *paipinga*, 445; green turtle, *gariwa*, 445; kangaroo, *karitjambal*, 445; man, *Oijal*, 445; night-bird, *karawak*, 445; queen fish, *tinimbu*, 445; woman, *Neri-neri*, 445
- Figures, wood, carved and painted, 415-16; (HUMAN) function, 418; methods of manufacture, 418-19; origin, 416; MEN: *Baijini*, *Gurumuluna*, 441; *Banaitja*, 427; *Bauaramin*, 439; Chaseling figure, 417; *Djunkgao*, 423; *Duwuliaua*, 439; *Jindjaraii*, 441; *Naruwilja*, 434; *Tankupou*, 441; *Tjambuwal*, 419; *Wulu-wulu*, 443; *Wuruma*, 436; *Wururunga*, 439; WOMEN: *Bunbulama*, 431; *Madalait*, 423; Macassan, *Jubara*, 434; *Malwulwi*, 431; *Muralunangau*, 431; unidentified, 454; *Urapali*, 443; *Wurati-laku* (Groote Eylandt), 436; (OTHER) bandicoot, *warnt-kura*, 448; ceremonial staff, night-bird, *karawak*, and opossum, *marungo*, 447; club, *barlait*, 421; —, *burungunda*, 421; digging stick, *Djunkgao* and *Madalait*, 425; echidna, *tjiramuna*, 448; fish, unidentified, 448; Fresh-water tortoise, *Mimala*, 437; —, unidentified, 448; goanna, *bije*, 448; green turtle, *gariwa*, 447; lizard, *tjunda*, 427; music stick, *Djunkgao*, 423; —, *Madalait*, 425; object, ceremonial, 425; —, mosquito totem, 439; penis of *Borolo-borolo*, 343; serpent, *Wununga*, 447; shark, *Maua*, 447; —, unidentified, 448; snake-bird, 448; spear, *larapan*, 421; yam, *bualku*, 421
- Films: Arnhem Land, xxx; Central Australia, ix
- Fish Creek, xxix
- Fish trap, 395
- Fishing, 97
- Flinders, M., x, 19, 102, 410
- Frobenius, L., 260, 262
- Goulburn Island, 271, 276
- Harney, W. E., xi, xxvii, 485
- Heads, carved and painted, 439-43
- Hemple Bay, xxv
- Implements and weapons, decorated, 416, 450-4
- Inagurdurwil, 109, 143-63
- Increase centres, 84, 91, 214, 227, 238, 252, 262, 343, 345
- Jelangbara, xxvii, 273, 402
- Koolatong River, 371
- Liverpool River, 111, 416
- Log gongs, 223-4, 456-60, 462
- Magic, 183, 262
- Malay praus, 80, 95, 98-100, 176
- Malaya, aboriginal visit to, 292-3
- Mata* designs, *see* Designs
- Message sticks, 466-7; ceremonial, 471-3; secular, 467-71, 473-5
- Milingimbi, xxv, xxvii, 385-9, 488-93
- Mortuary posts, 415, 436
- Myths: GROOTE EYLANDT: bailer-shell, *jukuna*, 88; bandicoot, *Banguruk*, 31; barramundi, *ukulpaindi*, 86; black ant, *uaipa*, 89; coconut tree, *Kaluka*, 94; conch-shell, *maini-unda*, 89; crocodile, *tuugarapia*, and wallaby, *ubraitja*, 75; crow, *ji-inwa*, 73; cycad, *muuuna*, 92-4; dugong, *inunguluna*, 65-7; fresh-water tortoise, *Junununda*, 30-1; frog, *dadua-kannpa*, 65; gecko, *ipilja-ipilja*, and rain cloud, 75-7; goanna, *jaraitja*, shovel-nosed ray, *maka-paramala*, and cutlew, *duwaltja*, 75; green turtle, *imoraka*, 77-9; hammer-headed shark, *munuana*, 86; hibiscus tree, *mabunda*, 92; jungle-fowl, *Inigubura*, 28-30; kestrel, *inikaraka*, 71-3; long tom, *maracuru*, 81-2; Malay praus, *mitjuna*, 98-100; man, *Juuduruna*, 62-3; moon and

- tides, 484; mud-crab, *Unwala*, 31-3; night-dwelling spirit, *Gurumuka*, 63; *oranikapara*, 24; parrot-fish, *jambirikwa*, 84-6; peaceful dove, *teracucu*, 69-71; pied goose, *Inigia*, 35-7; sea-eagle, *iniwakada*, 67-9; serpent, *Aitja*, 25-7; snake-woman, *Jiningbirna*, 79-81; stingray, *Imadoija*, and saw-fish, *Ingurudungwa*, 33-5; tiger-shark, *bangudja*, 82-4; two men, *Nabira-mira*, 63-5; water-goanna, *Tilbukuna*, 37-9; wild honey, *Ilaukwa*, 89-91; winds: 94-7; north-east, *timbura*, 97; north-west, *bara*, 96-7; south-east, *mamariga*, 95-6; *wirinikapara*, 23-4; woman, *Wurati-laku*, 436
- Myths: OENPELLI: *Adwinja*, 216; *Akurindipa*, 234; *Biwit*, 214-16; cannibal, *Karowailai*, 232; crocodile-man, *Gumangan*, and plover, *Birik-birik*, 216; cycad-men, *Mundiga*, 238; echidna, *Nabebet*, fresh-water tortoise, *Nalunia*, and heron, *Nananduka*, 236-8; emu-man, *Gurugadji*, 212-14; *Gumundili* and *Mamula*, 234; jabiru-man, *Tjagana*, and crow-man, 228-30; *Junaduria*, 232-4; kangaroo, rainbow-serpent, and rain-making ceremony, 218; kangaroo-man, *Kandarik*, 223-4; kangaroo-man, *Kurabara*, and dog-man, *Buruk*, 221-3; log gong, 458; *Malamuju-jalkjalk*, and his wives, 236; *Malintji*, 224-5; *Mamalait*, 220; mopoke-men, 216; *Muluwulji-kaitja*, 234-6; *Nadjibit* and their sons, 230-2; *Nimbawah*, 220-1; rainbow-serpent, *Ngaloit*, 210-12; rainbow-serpent, *unjaut*, 462-3; rainbow-serpent woman, *Naramar*, 212; serpents, 210; snake-man, *Jirbaik-baik*, 225; *Waraguk*, *Ilamilik*, and *Mamuralarin*, 227-8; water-snake, *aniautjunu*, 214; *Wi-in*, 227; SPIRIT PEOPLE: 181; MAMANDI: 197; *Adungun*, 205; *Barun-barun*, 200; *Boubit-boubit*, 205-8; *Dalbudia*, 208; *Garkain*, 199-200; lightning-man, *Mamara-gan*, 208; lightning-man, *Wala-undajua*, 210; *Marli-ili*, *Moia* and *Mali*, 202; *Matjiba*, 200-2; *Nabarakbia*, 203; *Nadubi*, 203; *Nalbadji*, 183, 191-2; *Namarakain*, 166, 199; *Waramuntjuna*, 202; *Warluk*, 197-9; MIMI: 112, 181-2; *Bamunit*, 185; *Buma-buma*, 185; *Dauandja*, 189, 191; *Diguuk*, 194; *Gadjimungaini*, 189; *Gradau*, 196; *Guruwuldan*, 191; *Mamgunmal*, 185; *Mik-mik*, 185; *Mimi*, unidentified, 192; *Munimunigan*, 187; *Nadidjit*, 192; *Naljanio*, 196-7; *Nahuk*, 196; *Noulabil*, 187; *Pitari*, 189; *Timara*, 196; *Wilintji*, 210; *Wili-wilia*, 194
- Myths: YIRRKALLA: *Balonarati* and paper-bark trees, 305; *Baijini*, 333-8; *Bauaitja* and *Laitjun*, 279; bandicoot-men, *Warut-kura*, 365; *Borolo-borolo* and wives, 341; *Bumabuma*, 471; crocodiles, *barou*, 366; *Djungkao* (man), 267-75; *Djungkao* (sisters), 275-6; dolphins, *injipana* and *bulanbir*, 452; dugong, *merinjunga*, 350, 363; echidna-man, *Tjiramuaa*, and plovers, *Tjutju*, 354; fresh-water goannas, *bije*, and yellow ochre, 371; fresh-water tortoise, *Mimala*, 371, 391; geese, *wurumatji*, 365; hawk-man, *Wabula*, and butterfly-girl, *Bounba*, 353; hawksbill turtle, *kouwaradji*, 350; honey bee, *koko*, 374; island (*Garabi*), 378; *Julpaipai* (Milingimbi), 456; *Laitjun* and fish-trap, 395; lightning snake, *wununga*, 366; *Minjapa* and *Wuluwil*, 301; moon-man, *Alinda* (Milingimbi), 488; moon-man, *Alinda* (Yirkalla), 493; moon-man, *Nalimba*, 495; *Muruna*, the fisherman, 299; *Nalili*, 296; native cat, *Baracuma*, and hawk-man, *Wabula*, 357; *Nguru-gujameri*, and woman, *Njinpili-lingou*, 298; night-bird, *karawak*, and opossum, *marungo*, 362; *Oijal* and his sister, *Neri-neri*, 289; opossum-man, *Kapali*, 491; serpents, 365; serpent, *bilumbira*, 351; shark, *Mana*, 372; snakes, *dua moiety* (Tjutjulili swamps), 368; snake, *borodji*, *jiritja moiety*, 369; thunder-man, *Bolngo*, 287, 393; —, *Tjambuwal*, 282-9; totemic creatures (Port Bradshaw), 340; *Waikinbu*, 296; *Walanwanga*, 294; wallaby-man, *Moutia*, and cockroach, *Borok*, 356; whale, *dianmeri*, 360; whales and stingray, 349; three men and bush-fire, 293; woman, *Malwulwi*, 299; *Wuluwait* and *Bunbulana*, 444; SPIRIT PEOPLE: 338; *Balu-balu*, 452; *Dehururu*, *Rangi-rangi* and *Kultana*, 338, 346; *Jambula* and *Bulanuna*, 346; *Maranatu* and *Bunjin-kun*, 450; *Mokoi*, 338; *Mokoi* and dugong, *merinjunga*, 345; *Tjambuwal* and *Maijaunguri*, 289; *Tjunajuna*, *Wururunga* and *Bukalatji*, 303
- Nimbawah, 109, 221
- Obiri, 109, 163-77
- Paddles, painted and engraved, 450, 454; devil-ray, *mulara*, and hawksbill turtle, *kouwaradji*, 350; dolphins, *injipana* and *bulanbir*, 452; spirit people: *Balu-balu*, 452; *Birikiri*, 348; *Maranatu* and *Bunjin-kun*, 450; *Rangi-rangi* and *Kultana*, 338; totemic creatures, Port Bradshaw, 340-1
- Pennifold, W. R., 111
- Pipes (smoking), engraved and painted, 389-90; crocodile, *barou*, 391; fresh-water goanna, *bije*, 396; —, *djerilka*, 395-6; fresh-water tortoise, *Mimala*, 391; honey bee, *Jarapang*, 393; —, *Lirawar*, 393; men: four *jiritja*, 400; *Laitjun* and fish-trap, 395; *Ngulamung*, 396-8; *Oijal*, 396; thunder-man, *Bolngo*, 393-5; *Wanamungaria*, 398; wrecked canoe, 398; yam, 398-400
- Port Bradshaw, xxvii, 269-71, 332-41, 402
- Ritual, see Ceremonies
- Rock engravings, 3-4
- Rose, F., xxiv, 95
- Schultz, A., 180
- Schuster, C., 155, 258
- Serpents, 210-14, 218, 365, 462-3

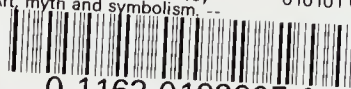
INDEX

- Shields, painted, 5
 Skull, painted, 317
 Songs: GROOTE EYLANDT, 20; bailer-shell, *ju-kuua*, 88; bandicoot, *Banguruk*, 31; black ant, *naipa*, 89; coco-nut palm, *Kaluka*, 94; conch-shell, *maini-uuda*, 89; cycad palm, *mununa*, 92; dugong, *iuuguhua*, 67; goose, *Iuigia*, 37; green turtle, *Iuoraka*, 79; hammer-headed shark, *muuana*, 86; hibiscus tree, *mabuuda*, 92; honey bee, *Ilaukwa*, 91; jungle fowl, *Iuigubura*, 28; kestrel, *iikaraka*, 71; long tom, *uacacuru*, 81; Malay prau, *mitjuua*, 98; man, *Junduruna*, 62; men, *Nabira-mira*, 63; parrot-fish, *janbirikwa*, 84; peaceful dove, *teracucu*, 69; saw-fish, *Ingurudungwa*, 33; sea-eagle, *iuiwakada*, 69; serpent, *Aitja*, 27; stingray, *Iuadoija*, 35; tiger-shark, *bangudja*, 82; tortoise, *Juuuunda*, 30; water-goanna, *Tilbukua*, 37; OENPELLI, 218
 Spear-throwers, 416, 454
 Spencer, W. B., 11, 109, 111, 141, 460
 Spirit people: Groote Eylandt, 63; Oenpelli, 181-210; Yirkalla, 338-40, 343-8
 Stencilled hands, 178, 258
 Thomson, D. F., 267, 405, 467
 Tides and moon, 484, 495-6
 Tindale, N. B., 11, 19, 22, 111
 Totemic places: bailer-shell, *Jukuua*, 88; bandicoot, *Banguruk*, 31; coco-nut palm, *Kaluka*, 94; honey bee, *Ilaukwa*, 91; kestrel, *iikaraka*, 71; long tom, *uacacuru*, 81; Malay prau, *mitjunga*, 98; men, *Nabira-mira*, 63; mud-crab, *Uuwala*, 31; parrot-fish, *janbirikwa*, 84; serpent, *Aitja*, 27; tiger-shark, *bangudja*, 82; tortoise, *Juuuunda*, 30
 Tree carvings, 4
 Tribal names, 22
 Umbakumba, xxiv, xxv, 39
 Unbalanja Hill, xxviii, 112-43, 180
 Waipingboi Island, 271
 Warner, W. L., 267, 405
 Wessel Islands, 267
 Westall, W., 19, 102
 Winchelsea Island, xxv, 19, 84
 Winds: Groote Eylandt, 94-7; Yirkalla, 433-4
 Worsley, P., 19
 Worsnop, T., 111
 X-ray paintings, 112, 134, 136, 256

Brown, Prior, Anderson Pty. Ltd., 430 Little Bourke Street, Melbourne

DU 398 .A7 R4 v. 1
Mountford, Charles Percy
Art, myth and symbolism. --

010101 000



0 1163 0192905 9
TRENT UNIVERSITY

DU398 .A7R4 v. 1
Mountford, Charles Percy
Art, myth and symbolism

DATE	ISSUED TO
	160094

160094

